

TEMPEST OF STELLAR WAR

BOOK 01

Skeleton Wizard

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Tempest of the Stellar War

(星战风暴)

by

Skeleton Wizard

(骷髅精灵)

Synopsis

In a distant future, the empires of mankind span the galaxy, and glorious Earth has devolved into a peripheral backwater.

In Shanjing city in the Asian region, Wang Zheng's dreams of becoming a mech pilot are crushed when his college entrance exam genetic score turns out a pathetic twenty eight, barely above an animal.

To make things worse, people get the impression he attempted suicide after being rejected by the campus beauty.

Then the closest thing to a family he has, the old man in the book store across the road, goes missing, leaving him only a mysterious birthday present.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: November 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Robo, Lovelyxday @ Radiant Translations

Translation Edits by Ruze, Phi, Deyna, Uxorious, Warlock, Sir Jynx, Argos, Yesu, Roboarc @ Radiant Translations

Translation Edit by Xex & Dogboy90 @ Wuxiaworld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Volume 1 – Spatial Rubik's Cube

Chapter 1 – Rubik's Cube

Human history has never lacked incredible scientists who have changed the world: Newton's law of gravity, Einstein's theory of relativity, Mark Hughes's antimatter thruster, Higgs' god particle... and with the appearance of Lauren Lee's curved velocity theory, humanity took a giant leap towards their dreams — formally entering the era of interstellar travel, turning exploration and interstellar colonization into the greatest desire of mankind.

Three hundred years ago, war, peace, followed by war again, finally led to the establishment of the Galactic Coalition, and humanity entered a new order.

The Galileo deep space research station, an S-class research station of the Galactic Coalition, and also the research station presently closest to the heart of the galaxy, with the purpose of researching links to parallel universes.

"Doctor, parliament rejected our funding application, we have to discontinue the Rubik's Cube project." Inside the research station, scientists encircled a white bearded old man. Even if he was very old, his mind was sharp, and his head of silver hair rather seemed dazzling. Hearing what was said, the old man immediately cursed, "Those idiots, all they know is money, money, money! Science is God, incredible, all important, how can it be measured by money!"

Even the youngest of the surrounding scientists was fifty or sixty years old, and also didn't know whether to laugh or cry. They were helpless, after all, there hadn't been a bit of progress in more than twenty years, being shut down was just a matter of time. Twenty

years ago, space physicist Alan Tuck had published a paper —— the theory of connecting parallel universes. The paper hadn't drawn much attention at the time – even if humanity's science and technology was advanced, parallel universes were still as mysterious to mankind as the moon was in the stone age. But one financial group supported Alan Tuck's research, organizing an exploratory team, and captured a mysterious cube in the area closest to the center of the Milky Way that mankind could reach, the Galileo star field.

The news instantly caused a sensation in the Galactic Coalition, Alan Tuck was hailed as the fifth person who would change the course of mankind, making him renowned throughout the Coalition. But after twenty years there was a complete lack of progress. Even if the so-called Rubik's Cube was incomparably hard, there was nothing else special about it, nor did it provide any astonishing technology. Rumors rose all around, people said that this was all hype produced by Alan Tuck in concert with some famous trading group. The research station was to close, the equipment mothballed, the scientists disbanded, and Alan Tuck was to face Coalition inquiry.

Alan calmly watched the barbarous actions of the soldiers, a faint smile hanging at the corners of his mouth. To science, especially great science, what was twenty years?

"Doctor, you can't wander about!" One soldier blocked Alan Tuck.

The old man's eyebrows rose, speaking without anger but with prestige, "An old man wants to go to the toilet, what, don't tell me

I can grow wings and fly off!” The soldier was also silenced by his imposing manner, dropping his arm. After all, this old man in front of him was once the most celebrated person in the Galactic Coalition, twenty years ago.

Twenty minutes later, alarms blared. A spaceship had launched. The soldiers were immediately blocked by a group of scientists, and didn’t dare be forceful. This group of people were all elites of the Coalition, and none of them could take responsibility for harming any one. With such a delay, that small spaceship flashed, entering subspace.

“A group of little bastards whose pubes still hasn’t grown want to catch me!” Alan Tuck pushed a button. Ten seconds later, he entered curved flight……

The entire space station was in chaos, one warship launching after another, flying off randomly like headless houseflies. They had underestimated the insanity of this gang of scientists……

The Coalition spent ten years without finding Alan Tuck’s whereabouts. As a result of the Galileo star field suddenly turning magnetically chaotic, the probability of a small craft successfully leaving was extremely low, and the Coalition gave up on spending more time. After all, this matter in itself was a disgrace, and was gradually forgotten.

——

In distant Sol, the origin of mankind, Earth. One of the

advantages of interstellar emigration was that Earth's environment improved. Even though it was no longer the most developed place in the Galactic Coalition, it still kept quite a high level.

Two youths lay on a lawn by a graceful artificial lake. They each had a beer can in their hand, and the ground around them was a mess with piles of cans. One had a rather stocky appearance, square jawed, big ears, a Roth limited edition Milky Way chain around his neck that could feed an entire family for half a year. The other youth had a very ordinary appearance, but the faint smile at the corners of his mouth was unforgettable, giving a kind of indescribable impression.

"Boss, all roads lead to Rome, heroes all grow from grass roots, the military school counts for farts, as long as you give the word, we brothers will go roam the galaxy, proclaiming us kings of the world!" The slightly stocky youth leapt to his feet, using the beer can in his hand as microphone, with an air of talking idly about important things.

Next to him, Wang Zheng raised his foot to kick him, "Royally proclaim your farts, I can take this tiny bit of setback without consolation from you."

The Asian region Wargod military academy was one of Earth's three great military academies, and the cradle of ace commanders and pilots, but not long ago the two of them had received the results of the genetic testing. Yan Xiaosu scored sixty eight, Wang Zheng twenty eight.

Genetic score was a genetic evaluation to help select the best. With a score over eighty you were “elite”, and would become famous in any level of society in the future. Sixty points was a pass. In order to study the core majors, you had to have a score over seventy, and even the other fields required a score over sixty. The intent was to efficiently allocate federation resources. Testing for Wargod College’s core majors had three main parts: genetic testing, theoretical testing, and interview. Wang Zheng had stumbled spectacularly on the very first step on the path to greatness.

Yan Xiaosu was also speechless. Wang Zheng unexpectedly only got twenty eight points. A score below forty was practically hadn’t been seen for years, it was on the level of animals.

“Boss, it was definitely something wrong with the machine, let’s go try again!” Yan Xiaosu said.

“It’s not the worst case, military school is just one option!” Wang Zheng laughed self derisively. Where would there be such a fluke where he alone got an error? Remembering the first time he saw the mech armor recruitment advertisement as a child, Wang Zheng had been drawn in by that spectacular scene and had set it as his goal. The result was that he hadn’t even gotten the chance. Yan Xiaosu couldn’t believe it either, with a gene score of twenty eight, let alone military school, it might not even reach the requirements for conscription. This was like strangling Wang Zheng’s dreams in the cradle, but it wasn’t something anyone could help with.

“Right, I have something to ask of you!” Yan Xiaosu sat straight,

his expression serious.

“Speak, don’t pretend to be serious.”

Yan Xiaosu fished out a fragrant golden letter from his bosom, “Boss, I’ve admired Yue Jing for a very, very long time. Since I’m about to graduate, I’ve decided to confess to her!”

Wang Zheng sat up, “Very good, I’ll support you. Go, men must sing of conquest!”

“Boss, this, you know, I’m shy, I’m asking you to help me deliver it. Brothers for a lifetime, I’ll leave the next half of my life to you!” Yan Xiaosu held Wang Zheng’s hands tightly, opening his big puppy eyes wide, looking at him with his most sincere expression. Wang Zheng promptly flung his hands off, “Fine, don’t nauseate me, you use the same tactics every time!”

Wang Zheng was actually indifferent about delivering the love letter, but he also knew that Yan Xiaosu was deliberately changing the topic.

“Come, a walk, best wishes for me bringing back the beauty!” Yan Xiaosu shouted, and the two drank wildly, finishing off the remaining beer cans.

Gazing at Wang Zheng’s back, Yan Xiaosu shook his head. Actually, he really had rechecked the circumstances of Wang Zheng’s test, and there really was nothing wrong. Squeaky clean,

these were the ways of the world.

Returning to the dorm, Wang Zheng sat cross legged and began to adjust the rhythm of his breathing. This was an “ancestral secret skill”, reputed to be the treasure of a thousand years of human civilization. Just in case he lost his job he could rely on this ancestral skill to make a living. This eight step breathing method was something he had practiced since childhood, and over time it had become habit. There were no other effects, but it was quite good at calming emotions.

An enormous poster was stuck on the wall, that dazzling mech armor was something Wang Zheng could only dream of piloting some day. The gene score notification not far away seemed even more unsightly.

Yan Xiaosu hadn’t returned, he was definitely playing “Wargod Covenant” again, a mech armor war game, very popular. Wang Zheng didn’t know just how popular, he wasn’t interested. What he needed wasn’t virtual entertainment, but rather the true tactile sensation, the rumble of mechanized warriors stepping on the earth. That moment, he would definitely be like a god!

From now on he could only dream. Wang Zheng tore down the poster that had hung there for four years, gazing at the ceiling in a daze. Suddenly, he turned over and picked up the poster again, pasting it back up bit by bit. The goal he had pursued since childhood was lost, what could he do?

Daybreak was one of the focus intermediary schools of the Asian region, and the campus was extraordinarily dazzling in the

morning, filled with vitality and the taste of youth. Wang Zheng still followed the routine morning training, early to bed and early to rise could let him reach the highest efficiency, and at the same time he could gradually accumulate confidence. Even if it was useless now, several years of habit wasn't easy to break.

Of course, today there was still one important matter. Training over, Wang Zheng turned and headed straight for the school building.

Two girls were walking over in the distance. One wore a yellow halter top, exquisite diamond earrings, golden curls of hair, like a gorgeous princess. The girl next to her was also dressed all in brand names. Even though Wang Zheng couldn't tell the difference, for good or bad Yan Xiaosu was also a lover of brands, just the logo made the value considerable. The girls walked hand in hand with heads high..... Walking in the middle of the road, two pairs of slender perfectly straight beautiful legs followed a light and quick graceful rhythm, rippling with the energy of youth, dazzling.

Yue Jing and Ye Zisu were the twin peerless beauties of Daybreak intermediary school, one's father was a legislative member of the Asian region, one's family were billionaires, and even though they were students they still frequently appeared on the news. To the eyes of the ordinary students they were like bright stars.

Honestly speaking, beauty was beauty, very attractive. But for some reason, Wang Zheng never felt anything towards these girls. Yan Xiaosu described it as frigidity, or perhaps childishness, but hanging out with Yan Xiaosu had given him enough theoretical

research to put into practice. These two before him were treating the school road like a runway, enjoying the admiring gazes from all around.

Wang Zheng walked straight towards them. The two girls seemed used to such circumstances, and slowed their steps.

Notes:

The Galactic Coalition should be literally translated as “Silver Way Coalition”, “Silver Way” being Chinese for the Milky Way. As such, in future chapters the “Galactic Coalition” will more often than not be shortened to the “Silver League”.

Chapter 2 – It Really Was A Slip

Wang Zheng finally arrived in front of Yue Jing, “May I ask if you’re student Yue Jing?”

Yue Jing’s gaze swept across Wang Zheng, dismissing him completely in zero point three seconds. He was dressed entirely in cheap goods, and was moreover unfamiliar. Being obscure and unknown at the school was equal to being rubbish.

Chin rising slightly, she said indifferently, “I am.”

“Hello, this is for you, I……” Wang Zheng took out Yan Xiaosu’s love letter, but was impatiently interrupted by Yue Jing before he could finish half of what he had to say.

“I’m not interested in you, you can keep that trash.”

Yue Jing walked past with head held high, fairly practiced and relaxed, directly placing the other side in a glacier ice cave. Next to her Ye Zisu smiled, glancing at Wang Zheng, shaking her head.

“Zisu, I’m up to twenty nine this month, five more than you!”

Yue Jing declared proudly. She acted differently towards different confessors, if it was useful there was no harm in consoling the counterpart. But this one was a toad, and completely cutting off any intentions was best.

Ye Zisu was still beaming, “If you believe a fellow with a gene score of twenty eight still counts, then that doesn’t matter to me.”

Yue Jing stared blankly, “You’re saying he’s the Wang Zheng that set the school record?”

Next to her Ye Zisu couldn’t hold back her laughter, but Yue Jing’s face was ashen. With her outstanding reputation, to be liked by a person like that was simply humiliating.

The two girls didn’t avoid letting Wang Zheng hear, and each line fell into his ears.

Wang Zheng chased up to the two, and Yue Jing turned even more impatient on seeing him, “What else is it!”

“Student Ye, you’re mistaken, this love letter is my friend Yan Xiaosu’s, he likes you.” Being fellow students, what the other side said was unpleasant, but Wang Zheng didn’t get angry.

“Yan Xiaosu?” To the side Ye Zisu held her sides from laughter, “Little Jing, you’re brilliant, this Yan Xiaosu’s family is a nouveau riche producer of sanitary napkins, Little Lucky Star sanitary napkins.”

Yue Jing’s expression grew angry, directly grabbing Yan Xiaosu’s love letter, tearing it up and throwing it in Wang Zheng’s face, “Get lost!”

Shouting angrily, she turned around and left. Ye Zisu just found it too hilarious. Even though the two were friends, they were also rivals, and she had never seen Yue Jing so humiliated.

The laughing Ye Zisu suddenly discovered that Wang Zheng next to her was only watching quietly, without anger, and without dejection.

“Ah, you’re actually not angry?” Ye Zisu was a bit curious.

Wang Zheng smiled slightly, “If a dog bites a person, he wouldn’t bite the dog. My friend is lucky to discover how shallow she is.”

Student Wang left at ease. This outcome was excellent, a woman like that really didn’t suit Yan Xiaosu, it’d shorten his life.

Ye Zisu looked distracted a moment, a bit surprised gazing at Wang Zheng’s back. This fellow knew how to act cool.

This event was just a brief interlude to Wang Zheng. He had thought about it since yesterday, and always felt that he couldn’t give up. Perhaps he’d try to directly join the army next, even the logistics corps was an option. It was said that soldiers who did well would also be sent to study at military school, and that way it was also possible to directly be promoted to mechanized soldier.

He truly felt that he could be a good soldier.

With his parents never around from childhood, Wang Zhen was

very independent. In close to sixteen years he had never had any doubts, but this test really was a blow.

Wang Zheng, you believe in yourself, like you believe in the test?

Not much later, Wang Zheng stood on a large rock next to the lake, looking at the gleaming lake surface, his mood relaxed a lot. Twenty eight was twenty eight, so what, in human history there were a lot of untalented successful people. Albert Einstein was an idiot as a child, Alan Tuck also almost failed his university entrance exam!

“I, Wang Zheng, will definitely become a glorious mechanized soldier, Wargod College, prepare to meet the glorious arrival of your master, charge!”

Roar~~~~~ Youth needed passion!

What fucking gene score!

With a resonant howl, student Wang passionately leapt with his full strength, as if the Wargod Academy gate was before him, charging ahead.

.....

In midair, student Wang suddenly remembered something critical. Damn, he couldn’t swim.

Splash……

A string of shouts came from nearby, “Someone jumped into the lake, quickly save him!”

After gaming for a night and morning, Yan Xiaosu finally left seclusion. His luck really was tremendous, “childrens’” holidays were always so pleasurable, ten fights and eight wins, quite comfortable.

He was a super VIP here, so after freshening up, lunch was already delivered. Bringing up his skylink, he habitually went through the campus news. Graduation was approaching, so the atmosphere around campus was a bit serious, the gene test score had struck a lot of people.

A red headline flashed, only smoking hot news would have such a color. Yesterday Ye Zisu’s gene score had reached ninety two, fiercely striking a blow to the hardcore admirers. The perfect combination of appearance, intelligence and wealth, she was a goddess.

Some hot blooded man had failed his public confession to Yue Jing —— and jumped into the lake!!

Below were more than a thousand comments. Perhaps it was because everyone had been under too much pressure recently, but this news was like rain in drought, immediately arousing everyone’s fervor.

Student Xiaosu was cheerful. Tch, to dare compete with him, that guy would have a tragic outcome!

Good things of course had to be shared with brothers!

Immediately dialing up Wang Zheng's skylink, when the other side connected, student Xiaosu was like a suddenly exploding little puff mushroom: "Boss, have you seen the news, some new idiot failed his confession to my goddess and jumped into the lake, say if there's anyone in the world more idiotic than him, this fellow will go down in the history of our Daybreak middle school, wahaha!"

He felt that the other end was a bit quiet, "Hey, boss, you listening?"

On the other end, Wang Zheng was laying on an infirmary bed, holding the terminal, saying word by word: "Student Yan Xiaosu, I'm that idiot you said was about to go down in Daybreak middle school history!"

Spit……

Yan Xiaosu spit his soup at the waitress across from him, "Don't tell me……"

"That woman doesn't suit you." Wang Zheng sighed, then recounted what had happened.

“Boss, originally I was just trying it casually, too touching, you actually jumped into the lake for your ideals!”

Yan Xiaosu was beside himself with agitation. That really was a true brother, when he couldn’t succeed he would actually die in apology.

“Fuck off, I slipped!”

Wang Zheng roared, but Yan Xiaosu on the other end was already rolling around with laughter.

He really was someone who’d get something stuck in his teeth when drinking cold water. At this moment the doctor walked over, “Okay, you go home and rest. Kids, can’t even take a tiny blow, what can you do in the future!”

Wang Zheng blushed, truly embarrassed, carrying the blame.

He could only smile wryly and nod. Fortunately tomorrow was the weekend, at least there’d be two days for this to calm down…… What bastard played with the school paper.

Wang Zheng had thoroughly made his mark. Gene score twenty eight, jumping into the lake. Having been unknown for three years, on the eve of graduation he became a celebrity.

From the school it was just twenty something minutes by public maglev, but…… it was really quite distant, he’d long since left the

urban area.

He didn’t go home, there wasn’t anyone there anyway, instead Wang Zheng headed straight for the bookstore across the road.

Running the bookstore was an old man who everyone called old merchant. He had been coming here for more than ten years, and by now reading at the bookstore had become a kind of hobby. But problem was that old merchant’s bookstore only had some rather profound things, especially scientific materials, leading to the place being deserted. Wang Zheng had come here to chat with the lonely old man, and the two had soon become friends.

Old merchant had two pleasures, drinking and lecturing.

His only student was Wang Zheng.

“Stinking brat, sooner or later you’ll eat me out of my house.” An old man was just leisurely reading books, “Did you finish the sub-square number theory I gave you?”

“Finished long ago, wasn’t anything new. Really, I’ve told you, why don’t you get a skylink, it’s way more convenient.” Having lost a day, Wang Zheng really was hungry.

By finishing old merchant’s assignments, Wang Zheng could eat and live here for free, such a marvellous arrangement had already been going on for more than eight years. At the beginning it had been numbers theory, until now when the things Wang Zheng

learned were on a completely different level than what he learned in school.

Old merchant didn't say anything either, silently waiting for Wang Zheng to finish eating, then pointed to the chair across from him, "Come, chat, do you believe Ya Fang's belief that the spatial laws cannot be touched is correct or not?"

Wang Zheng wiped his mouth, "Compared to Ya Feng, I'm more partial to old man Tuck's parallel theories. There really is some kind of cosmic energy walling off parallel spaces, but according to the laws of momentum and motion, in time there should be some chances for natural connections to occur, but of course the chance of one triggering is close to zero."

Old merchant nodded with satisfaction, "Kid, you have the makings of a natural scientist. What mechanized warriors, that kind of all brawn and no brains work is a complete waste."

"Ah, how come you know my gene score is only twenty eight?" Wang Zheng blurted out.

Old merchant stared blankly, also dumbfounded, "Twenty eight..... You..... Are you even human!"

Wang Feng really wanted to slap his face, what was this stinking mouth talking so fast for.

Helplessly shrugging, "Life is given by one's parents, there's no

way to change it, I'm not interested in being a scientist, life is motion, old people can't understand!"

Old merchant was still mirthless, "I hope that no matter what you encounter, you can keep your optimistic spirit. If you want to become a great person, you must laugh at life."

"Old merchant, don't say you've met great people. Once I have the graduation certificate, I'll go enlist in the army. I might not be able to come see you afterwards." Wang Zheng said.

Old merchant smiled slightly, "Kid, you're your own treasure, but reaching this stage at your age is pretty good. Remember that mathematics is the basis for all living things, you can use it even when you become a mech warrior in the future. Physics is observing the conditions of the universe, grasp this and all else will follow. Be a soldier with brains!"

Old merchant was zealous about science, but nobody really knew why he'd open a small bookstore here, each time he spoke it was with this difficult to describe arrogance.

"Kid, you've already grown up, this is my gift for you."

Old merchant took out a very simple package and placed it on the table.

"Wow, no way, the legendary miser actually gave a present? Is the sun rising from the west? You wouldn't be conning me!"

Wang Zheng promptly looked out the window.

“You brat, how can I be the same as your old man, my learning is profound, he was a major con artist!”

Old merchant laughed, back when old merchant just arrived, he became friends with Wang Zheng’s family, and later when his parents left they entrusted Wang Zheng to old merchant.

Chapter 3 – Wah, Such A Big Skeleton!

Wang Zheng had no retort. He really hadn't ever seen a more learned book store owner than old merchant, even if this level wasn't enough to shake a university professor, it was still enough to sway others.

"Kid, life is luck. Even if you wanted something as improbable as passing through to another dimension, it still depends on luck. Luck is one hundred percent. The breathing method you inherited is actually one of humanity's treasures. Twenty eight. Haha, that which is rubbish in this world, might be genius in another!"

"Old merchant, can't you be a bit tactful? You really don't know how to comfort people."

This old guy typically took his pleasure in others' suffering.

"Haha, unseen, doesn't mean non-existent!"

Old merchant now giggled and said.

"……Old merchant, do you have a fever?" Wang Zheng felt that old merchant was a bit strange today. Only, strangeness didn't stop him. For the past few days, Wang Zheng had always had bad luck.

"Fuck, drank too much and got a bit dizzy. I'll close up shop and rest. You can get lost!"

Old merchant waved his hand.

Wang Zheng grinned, grabbing the present and disappearing like a wisp of smoke. Gazing at Wang Zheng's back, old merchant revealed a smile.

"Twenty eight points. The people of this world, how could they understand talent? One day, you will shake the world!"

Wang Zheng returned home, as usual first doing eight sets of breathing exercises, otherwise he really wouldn't be able to calm down. Let alone shocked, he wasn't even depressed, Wang Cheng always felt it was miraculous.

Would he really have to go study? Thinking about sitting in an office, writing and drawing all day, Wang Cheng felt dizzy. He really wasn't interested, even if he felt that scientists were the highest community of mankind.

His gaze fell on the table, on the present old merchant had given him.

Wang Zheng leapt to his feet and picked it up. This thing wasn't very heavy.

Tearing away the newspaper, the box that was revealed was a bit unexpected. The silvery case was unexpectedly metal, seemingly quite high grade, not quite compatible with what he knew about old merchant. Wang Zheng couldn't help looking forward to it.

Opening the box, inside was a dark metal lump..... It seemed a bit similar to the rubik's cube he'd played with in his childhood, but what was this thing?

Turning it over, there wasn't even a manual in the box. Wang Zheng watched the iron lump, knocked on it, rubbed it..... Solid.

Bite it..... Still solid, his teeth almost fell out.

What use was this toy? Hidden weapon?

If you hit someone in the head with this, they would be left half dead.

There wouldn't be gold inside? The little money grubber immediately raised his sleeve and rubbed it fiercely, just in case there was a golden glimmer under the dark surface.

Wang Zheng laughed at himself. This was the first coming of age present he had received, and even if it was a lump of scrap iron, he was still thankful to old merchant.

A sudden stab of pain. This iron lump seemed very smooth, but it suddenly broke his skin, and what's more, it sucked his blood like a leech!

He abruptly threw it away, but he couldn't, there was a sudden

burst of golden light, and Wang Zheng felt as if he had been hit by a maglev train.

Fuck..... What was this, even a tragedy needed some justification in its plot!

This was student Wang's last thought.

Drip drip drip drip drip drip.....

It sounded like water dripping. Wang Zheng slowly opened his eyes. His surroundings were dark. What was this damn place? His forehead ached..... His spare parts were still intact.

Silently touching, there seemed to be some kind of floor below. Ice cold. Nothing was visible in the pitch black darkness.

"Can someone turn on the lights?"

Wang Zheng asked cautiously. He had never experienced something this strange in all his life.

Bang~~~

In flash there was white light, almost blinding Wang Zheng.

With great difficulty recovering his vision, when Wang Zheng

saw the thing in front of him he was so scared his soul almost separated and flew off.

In front of him, almost touching the tip of his nose was a red..... thing!

Skeletooooooon~~~~~~~~~

Ske-skele-skeletooooooooooooon~~~~~~~~~

Thundering echoes resounded in the space, almost knocking Wang Zheng unconscious.

After shouting a moment, he discovered nobody joined him, and some guy felt a bit embarrassed.

All around him was a spotless white square patterned sealed room, in front of him stood something like a robot. But he didn't know who designed it, it actually locked like a set of bones, fatal aesthetics!

"What damn place is this? If someone's alive, make a noise!"

Wang Zheng shouted. What he had met with today surpassed anything in his previous fifteen years. This last piece was even more excessive. How did he come to such a strange room?

"Initiating genetic scan!" The skeleton model robot suddenly

stretched out a hand, a beam of red light enveloping Wang Zheng.

Fortunately…… It didn't hurt. It tickled a bit.

Before long, a string of information appeared in front of Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng, male, primitive genes completely preserved, fifteen years ten months, genetic survey score——18!

This number was most eye catching.

Wang Zheng wanted to curse, fuck, bullying people like this. Twenty eight was already embarrassing enough, how come he dropped another ten in a few days? If this went on he wouldn't be any different from a pig.

This was definitely a nightmare!

The skeleton robot suddenly made a salute, "Congratulations Wang Zheng on passing the test, the grade is genius, possessing the potential of a war god, one hundred percent implementation rate, do you wish to initiate the super soldier program?"

Wang Zheng blushed,

"Cough cough, don't mock me. No matter how lacking my talent is, it was given me by my parents, I'm very grateful to them!"

“The basic test has no inaccuracies, do you wish to initiate the super soldier program?”

The robot spoke somewhat conscientiously.

Communication unhindered, Wang Zheng very soon came to understand. This was the super soldier training system from some Randt Empire, specially picking outstanding talents to cultivate. The Rubik’s Cube was a special training space, the passage of time stood almost still inside. This was also a major killing tool for the Randt Empire’s conquest of the universe..... But the Galactic Coalition didn’t have any bullshit Randt Empire, and even less any time stop technology, it was all science fiction.

“Hey, whoever is pranking me, let me out or I’ll get violent. If you don’t believe it you’ll lose your family fortune!”

Wang Zheng decided a bit seriously. Three seconds later, student Wang believed.

The skeleton robot launched a round of especially fluent electric shock attacks. Force of arms really was quite persuasive sometimes.

Watching the skeleton robot’s oppressive gaze, and that hand cannon flickering with electricity, Wang Zheng didn’t hesitate to choose the super soldier program. Only an outstanding talent can recognize the current trends, that was a family precept.

“Initiating super soldier training program first stage, matching gongfa!”

Two balls of silver light appeared in the air, constantly sweeping around Wang Zheng. This time it was a bit painful, and Wang Zheng curiously opened his eyes wide, everything before him was like a dream, just what kind of tricks was old merchant playing?

“Unity Arts”

Three ancient characters appeared in the air, these days they were already very rarely seen.

“Congratulations, you’ve been matched with Unity Arts, ten thousand methods united, a gongfa only three people in Randt Empire have ever been matched with. The first cultivation task is gathering elements to feel the first heavenly tier—— thirty two stage cultivation method!”

Thirty two points of light appeared on the skeletal robot, and Wang Zheng finally understood why it had this shape; nothing was more clear than this.

In another parallel universe, humanity’s development had followed another route. Science and technology existed, but even more important was to tap into intrinsic power. Like the genetic test, the directions were different, and so the results were also different.

Simply put, in one the body was subsidiary, relying mainly on science and technology. In one the body was the focus, technology assisting. But Wang Zheng felt that the other side was a bit more frightening.

The skeletal robot's explanation was very detailed, as if it felt this method was very difficult to comprehend. But Wang Zheng thought it was very clear, this thing was a bit similar to the eight stage breathing technique handed down in his family, just a bit more complex. When Wang Zheng was three years old, his old man had used lollipops to lure him into start practicing the breathing technique, who could have thought it would end up being useful here?

"Should the meridian link-up technique be initiated?" The skeletal robot asked.

Hearing words as cruel as 'link-up' being used, Wang Zheng had a somewhat unreassured feeling, "Cough cough, is there another choice?"

"None!" A mass of silver needles appeared in the robot's hands, glittering.

Damn it, those toys were more than thirty centimeters, what was he doing!

"Goddamn, if I can't choose then don't ask!" Even mud statues had some temper, Wang Zheng flipped out.

Preaching to deaf ears. Thirty two silver needles instantly pierced Wang Zheng's body. At that moment student Wang trembled all over..... But it actually felt alright.

Three seconds later, the space once again echoed with Wang Zheng's howls. Behind each silver needle trailed a silver string, through which intense electric currents poured into Wang Zheng.

"Connect your acupuncture points according to the direction of the electric currents, guide with your mind!"

Wang Zheng was already half dead, but somehow not unconscious. But exercising cultivation techniques or whatever was still lunatic ravings, his body already completely refused to listen. But at this moment, the eight stage breathing technique he had practiced since childhood automatically started working, bizarrely guiding the electric current. From eight stages it extended to sixteen stages, then again from sixteen to thirty two. With acupuncture point attacked, Wang Zheng's pain decreased somewhat. An unknown amount of time later, Wang Zheng's consciousness gradually returned, and he began to focus his mind on attacking the acupuncture points.

As the thirty two acupuncture points were finally connected into a complete cycle, the electric currents disappeared, and shortly after so did the intuitive feeling.

As Wang Zheng once again opened his eyes, that skeletal robot was still in front of him.

“Congratulations private Wang Zheng, you’ve created a new awakening record, completing the initial cycle in ten days!”

The robot praised meticulously, even making a standard military salute.

Hearing such praise, Wang Zheng didn’t dare lower his guard in the slightest. This skeletal robot talked politely, but it acted too savagely.

“I can leave, right!”

“At this stage, you must consolidate the cultivation technique, completing the first heavenly tier, and at the same time undergoing some relevant basic soldier training.”

The robot said said. Perhaps wanting to seem a bit more gentle, it actually exposed a human-like smile, but..... so scary!

Clearly the robot didn’t subscribe to hypotheses about humans needing to rest, and training began immediately afterwards.

Horse stance!

Fuck, anyone who crouched for a full day would also have an urge to just drop dead. He had trained before, push ups, long distance running, short distance sprints, but that was all in the range of normal humans. The robot seemed rather respectful towards him in other matters, but once training began, it was only

one thing—— the devil!

The first day, Wang Zheng couldn't help asking, "Can I become a super soldier by always half squatting like this?"

"Apologies, your question exceeds the range of answers."

Student Wang gave up. Actually, he could feel some improvements to his balance, but that far?

If it started, he couldn't stop. A single non-standard movement by Wang Zheng would be met with electric shocks.

Even worse than training horse stance for a full day, was crouching for six months!

Wang Zheng wondered whether his legs had deformed. Most crucial was that it was boring. Insanely boring. After going insane he discovered that the only way to spend his time was to cultivate Unity Arts. Wang Zheng felt that his optimism had reached a its limits.

After six months, the robot finally gave him another task.

In the space appeared a set of columns. Wang Zheng's mission was to walk across them.

Where was that fun, as soon as he stepped up, the that pillar he

stood on disappeared. What do do if it disappeared?

Nothing strange, it was to fall six meters and hit the ground.

Like hovering at the brink of death. Wang Zheng felt he was dreaming, but it hurt like he'd lose his life. But Bonehead's red light could cure him.

Humanity's potential will always be aroused in moments of hardship. In order not to drop into lunacy, Wang Zheng jumped back and forth like a kangaroo every day, gradually growing proficient in the thirty two stage Unity Arts.

One month later, Wang Zheng extraordinarily cockily and confidently jumped around on the pillars. He'd been told this was called Plum Blossom Stakes, but it was actually a numerical and graphical permutation, and once marked in Wang Zheng's brain, everything became simpler.

"Bonehead, this toy isn't challenging, I'm already unequalled."

"Yes!" The robot was always simple and direct.

After the pillars were more pillars, but the diameter changed from twenty centimeters to ten centimeters.

The six meters were still six meters, but the ground changed into thickly dotted nails.

Fuck, I have trypophobia!

Chapter 4 – Wargod Covenant

Wang Zheng felt numb all over. Due to his mood being influenced, he very soon understood what “ten thousand arrows piercing the heart” meant.

The anguished wails continued uninterrupted…….

Wang Zheng finally understood. What genius? It was all a fraud. How had he been so stupid, completely taken in by honeyed words.

He wanted to leave, but Bonehead said he couldn’t until he completed the training.

Wang Zheng wanted to stop training, but Bonehead said there were one hundred and eight methods to rouse the spirits of lazy soldiers. Wang Zheng had no interest in trying even one.

Wang Zheng spent half a month getting familiar with these plum blossom stakes. He astonished himself. He could only say that his potential really was vast.

He really wanted to know how this toy was related to super soldiers; could it be people in the Randt Empire could become super soldiers by being able to bounce?

Never mind other things, at least he wouldn’t have to worry about dancing in the future.

Peoples potential was unlimited. Very soon Wang Zheng understood that what was called acrophobia, trypophobia, aichmophobia, could all be overcome. In half a month, student Wang began to provoke Bonehead again. This was his only pleasure.

“What fresh tricks are there today? Whether it’s slugs, bedbugs or their old mother, I’m not afraid!”

Wang Zheng leapt around on the plum blossom stakes, not forgetting to raise a middle finger at Bonehead.

However, what waited for Wang Zheng wasn’t any unlimitedly nauseating thing, but rather a flawlessly beautiful naked woman, spotless and tender skin that could be broken by the snap of a finger, those watery tender big eyes…….

Aaaaah~~~~~~

Wang Zheng once again issued an anguished wail, I’m a minor!

To the side, Bonehead seemed to smile very happily. Of course, the electric shocks from both his hands still flashed very crisply. Failure meant punishment!

In another half month, student Wang also understood. Form is emptiness, emptiness is form, the fair sex is also skeleton.

When he thought the plum blossom stake training was finally

over, the permutations changed again. What he trained before was all Big Dipper Stakes, afterwards came the Three Star Stakes, Innumerable Stars Stakes, Plough Stakes, Bagua Stakes. Seemingly very simple, the result was that it took more than five months to finish the stake training.

Disturbance tactics emerged in innumerable succession. Bonehead changed into viper pits, knife edge formations, corpse piles, maggot nests, and even some types that were unheard of. As long as it could influence, could nauseate Wang Zheng, they came.

Wang Zheng's only pleasure was to hide in the corner after training to draw circles, in each circle was a Bonehead.

Ultimately, this hellish year passed. Wang Zheng's Unity Arts practice was also exceptionally good, already quite familiar with it. Within his body flowed a warm gas, the size of a pinky finger. It would occasionally appear before when he practiced the eight stage breathing, but very faint, and now it was completely different.

"Congratulations, next is the third stage training. This is also the last part of the first phase of your program." The robot said.

For the first time in a full year, Wang Zheng felt that Bonehead was so cute and handsome, hugging Bonehead, "Darling, you really are good, I will finally be liberated, God tells us that nightmares will come to an end, hallelujah!"

The robot was unmoved, "A simple technique —— Leaning Landslide. I will demonstrate it for you once."

An obelisk appeared in the space. Bonehead dropped his shoulder, and that thin like lightning body suddenly knocked against it.

Boom……

Wang Zheng promptly applauded, “Good tackle, continue!”

In his heart he thought, best that Bonehead breaks, as good as pork cutlet and potato soup.

“This is Leaning Landslide, next is training.”

“That’s all?” Wang Zheng was already used to talking to himself, since Bonehead basically didn’t answer most of his questions.

There was no ‘most boring’, only ‘more boring’. Wang Zheng suddenly remembered the plum blossom stakes very fondly, because at least those changed. Every day was nothing but tackle and tackle, he really suspected he had a concussion.

Each time he had to use his full strength, because only by using his full strength would the pillar brighten. Otherwise, what waited for Wang Zheng……

One day was split into three parts. The first was cultivating Unity Arts, the second was to tackle until he knocked his life out, the

third was to squint and stare. Wang Zheng's had to watch tree leaves. He'd been told there was a design on top, and he would pass when he could see them clearly.

Gradually, Wang Zheng's days of meditating, tackling walls, and staring, passed. He felt his eyes grow bigger and bigger, developing double eyelids. Finally Wang Zheng really saw clearly, the design on that leaf was a Bonehead, gah!

Another year passed. Wang Zheng was already used to the start of the new day, but the hall had unexpectedly returned to that harsh grid of the first day when he just arrived.

"Congratulations, you have completed the first stage of training. You can now leave."

"Leave?"

Wang Zheng stared blankly. Honestly, he had almost grown used to these two years, it had to be admitted that his adaptive capability was peerless. Moreover..... Maybe because he'd gotten used to being oppressed, but he also had some affection for Bonehead. Even if it was a bit cruel, this fellow really was very conscientious.

Only, with the chance to leave, Wang Zheng absolutely wouldn't hesitate.

After a burst of wild laughter, Wang Zheng gave Bonehead a hug.

“Ah, Bonehead, even if you’re really ugly, you’re quite soft. I will miss you.”

“Once you’ve amassed enough battle energy, you can start your second stage training.” Bonehead spoke quietly.

Wang Zheng laughed wildly in his heart. Your sister, damned if I come back, you can dream beautifully of the four seasons, miehahahaha!

“Training prompt, according to the confidential super soldier training program, if you are unable to amass sufficient battle energy within two years, the humane extermination program will be initiated.”

Bonehead said deadpan.

“Wha, extermination, extermiwhat, fuck, you’re humane!?”

Wang Zheng couldn’t help wailing.

“I look forward to your next arrival.” For the first time, Bonehead exposed a rigid smile.

Wang Zheng then felt the space fade, giving him a kind of abandoned feeling.

GOD, Bonehead, you still haven't told me what battle energy is!!!

"Bonehead, don't play around like this!" Wang Zheng roared, abruptly sitting up.

Wang Zheng opened his eyes. He was still in his house, the whole room smelling like a thousand fermented farts. At the first whiff, Wang Zheng hastily opened the window, almost fumigated to death. Fuck, what was that!

Ah, sunshine. Ah, Earth. Ah, gods, he really was back!

Slowing down a moment, he looked at the clock on the wall..... How was this possible!!!

He remembered staying in the super soldier training system for two years, but just two days had passed here. It was now Sunday night. Opening his skylink, it really was right. There were only a few dozen missed calls from Xiaosu.

The Rubik's Cube was missing. If it wasn't for that empty box, Wang Zheng would have suspected everything was a dream. A very, very long dream.

He suddenly jumped, boom.....

Wang Zheng suddenly crouched, holding his head and brimming with tears, damn, almost killed him!

But there wasn't time to think about that. Wang Zheng charged towards old merchant's bookshop with a sudden big stride. But the house was empty, a letter on the table.

"Kid, don't ask, I don't know either. Keep a low profile, don't get caught and dissected. I wish you good luck. Also, I took your stashed money, consider it tuition for these years!"

Stashed money?

Goddamn, death by a thousand cuts! That was Wang Zheng's coffin foundation! This meant that the still five months and ten days away from majority student Wang only had three hundred silver dragons left to his name!

How many days could he eat with this?

Wang Zheng used ten minutes to get his thoughts in order. He was still alive, the Rubik's Cube had turned into a tattoo on his stomach, he really was different, this wasn't a dream, and old merchant clearly wasn't an ordinary old geezer!

He was an old villain!

He actually had the heart to work over a poor student, Heaven has no justice!!!

Several hundred meters away from the little shop, in a window facing the currently miserably wailing Wang Zheng, old merchant had already changed his appearance, his face rueful, excited, and happy: “Little fellow, I knew you could do it. I really hope I can live a few more years.”

Wang Zheng brought all the remaining food in the bookstore, not letting off even what had expired. Grandma’s legs, now he was completely and thoroughly destitute. He had to save what he could. Fortunately he was used to it from dealing with his father as a child, after all, in this era it wasn’t that easy to con people with some thousand year inheritance. He really didn’t know how that beautiful mother of his had ever liked him at all.

As for battle energy?

Damn, who would still fear death after two years of such hellish training!

Ah, youth! Ah, sunshine! I, Wang Zheng, have returned!

“Boss, boss, I thought you were missing!”

Yan Xiaosu was desperately urgent. The reason why he called Wang Zheng ‘boss’, was in order to copy school assignments, and with repetition it became habit. Wang Zheng was absolutely a genius in writing school assignments, and this was something student Yan Xiaosu admired endlessly, but each time Wang Zheng took an exam he just barely passed.

“What missing, I just woke up.” Hearing Yan Xiaosu’s voice again, in Wang Zheng’s heart, was comparable to the goddess of beauty.

“Cough cough, boss, I have something to ask your help for. Five lacks one, I know you’re not interested, but today is my first rank promotion match, I’ve waited for three months! Originally we were all set, but that damn Xie Yuxin dropped out, do you have the heart to lend me a hand?”

Yan Xiaosu said tearfully.

On the other end, Wang Zheng was unexpectedly straightforward, “No problem!”

“Boss, I will love you all my life!”

“Get lost. Give me five, no, ten minutes!”

Wang Zheng had to wash, he felt that he really stank. He wasn’t interested before, but he was interested now. Grandma’s legs, being alive was good!

Brothers Net Café.

This was the most popular net café near the school, the name was also good. Without brothers there was no hot blood, and without brothers it would also be very difficult for you to manage in Wargod Covenant.

Even with four experts, as long as you had one noob, the team would be buried.

One against five?

Fantasy!

Wargod Covenant, CT for short, was a galaxy wide mech warrior game. Mechanized warriors had already become the most widely used tools and weapons of mankind, the perfect combination of biotechnology and mechanical engineering.

Through tactile feedback, the motions of the pilot in the cockpit would translate to movement of the mech armor. Of course, the burden on the pilot's body wouldn't be small, but CT didn't have any requirements in this respect. Starting out was extremely easy, but in order to become an expert, you needed extremely powerful battle awareness, skill, and experience.

Author's Note:

You can understand it as similar to the operating system in Pacific Rim, but single use mechs. A bit more advanced.

Tranlator's Note:

How does "Wargod Covenant" abbreviate to CT? Actually, CT is the name of the major tech conglomerate that owns the game studio. This is explained in a few hundred chapters.

The author occasionally uses English in the text. I'll represent this through all caps.

Chapter 5 – Brittleskin

On launch, it immediately became popular in the whole Milky Way, and there were moreover large numbers of girls joining. The galactic finals that took place every four years even had ratings in the top ten programs.

There was nothing to do, the young decided mainstream.

Each match, the winner would earn 1-10 points, and the loser would lose 1-5 points. With one thousand points you could fight a promotion battle to become a bronze contestant, and also earn the qualifications to fight ranked matches.

The professional terminology was, brother, you're finally not a noob.

According to strength, it was split into the major ranks of bronze, silver, gold, platinum, and diamond.

Among these, the ten strongest players of each planet were known as Kings.

In fact, each star only had ten, so their influence was no less than idols.

As for Yan Xiaosu, even though he bragged in front of Wang Zheng all day, he was actually still an unranked unskilled rookie.

The one thousand points promotion battle was very important, since if you lost, you'd lose fifty points and had to gather them again. That's why some people took every chance to invite experts to help, like Yan Xiaosu.

Xie Yuxin was Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu's other best friend, but completely different from the two of them. Xie Yuxin had a gene score of ninety, and even though his name was effeminate, he was ultra-handsome and cold. A lot of people at Dawnbreak didn't understand why someone like Xie Yuxin would be together with Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu, it was simply lowering his level.

Presently at Brothers Net Café.

Yan Xiaosu was busy apologizing, "All gurus, just wait a moment, my brother will be here immediately."

"Tall Rich Handsome, hurry it up, we will charge for the time."

"Understood, understood, thank you, thank you!"

Yan Xiaosu had no choice but to smile obsequiously, it hadn't been easy for him to invite three bronze level players to help him out here.

Originally it was settled with Xie Yuxin, that fellow wasn't just handsome, his strength was also robust. The only reason he didn't promote was because he didn't play enough.

“If that person doesn’t want to play it doesn’t matter, let him stay at home.”

“Understood, don’t worry guru, I will justify it.”

The three people in the video feed nodded. Three bronze rankers could easily suppress five newbies.

This difference in strength was like clouds and mud.

In CT, starting was easy, becoming god was difficult. It didn’t have the physical burdens, but in order to operate it properly, you still had to have half the qualities of an official pilot.

Wang Zheng arrived before long. He had some understanding of CT, you could still recognize a pig on the road without eating pork. Even more so when the people around him played, including Xie Yuxin.

“Boss, you’re really reliable in a crisis. Quick, quick, this station is yours, go inside and register some name. Listen to the captain’s orders later.”

These people were really expensive. Calculating the expenses, Yan Xiaosu didn’t dare hold it up any longer.

Wang Zheng entered the simulation cockpit. Let alone anything else, it really was a bit lifelike, no wonder so many people liked it. One headband, two each of hand and foot bands. A light screen

flashed, with an inhumanly beautiful girl.

CT's game guide, very adorable, very NICE, it was said that a lot of men were attracted to this girl at the start.

"Welcome to Wargod Covenant, please confirm your ID and choose the mech warrior you need."

Five platforms with mech warriors appeared in front of Wang Zheng. Even aware they were fake, student Wang still felt a surge.

As for the name? Wang Zheng suddenly smiled, he'd call himself Skeleton!

Initial players were offered five kinds of mech armor:

Demon Wolf Type V (Assassin)

Wild Beast Type 3 (Tank)

Bata Type V (Warrior)

Hunter Type 3 (Sniper)

Wargod No 1 (Optional weapons)

Among these, the Demon Wolf and Wild Beast were beast type series. Demon Wolf was extremely agile, suitable to hills and complex terrain, leaning towards assassin. Wild Beast was specialized in storming fortifications, breaking forts. Bata and Hunter were humanoid mech armors, Bata comparatively balanced, and also a common training mech in the army, very classic, by now it was already on the fifth generation. The Hunter

was a sniper type, expert and stealth and long range sniping.

Wargod No 1 was a humanoid mech specially for newbies..... Without notable features, mainly suitable to help familiarizing with and understanding basic operations. It was equipped with a choice of alloy war blade and laser rifle. The most common type, newbies could use it to fight bots.

“Have that newbie hurry up and choose, don’t waste time.” A voice came through, ID: Fanatic Soldier, his main was bronze level two, the highest among the three bronze players, and with the worst temper.

Yan Xiaosu hurriedly nodded, “Boss, just pick one, as long as you make up the numbers.”

Wang Zheng originally wanted to look them over first, but seeing Yan Xiaosu was in a hurry, he casually picked the Wargod No 1. The name was quite catchy.

Light flashed, presenting the five mech armors of their side. Small windows listed the details on the other four.

Yan Xiaosu’s ID was Tall Rich Handsome, no title, Wild Beast Type 3, thick skinned, ferocious, assault type mech armor. But movement was its weak spot. Not unexpected with student Yan’s fear of death.

Wang Zheng used Xie Yuxin’s account, ID Xie Yuxin. In keeping

with this guy's character, he directly used his real name.

The portraits of the other three flashed bronze, this was the symbol of their status.

ID: Fanatic Soldier, Demon Wolf Type V

ID: Love Beating Noobs, Bata Type V

ID: Beating To Death Without Speaking, Hunter Type 3

The three were all assistants Yan Xiaosu had paid to invite, the captain was without a doubt Fanatic Soldier.

He had played such promotion matches a few times before. Basically, as long as they were a bit dependable, it wasn't much of an issue. The three of them were in charge of fighting, it was fine if the other two noobs cleared away those robots.

But..... the three were all stunned when they saw Wang Zheng's choice.

"Fuck me, kid, how come this guy is using brittleskin, is his head broken!"

Fanatic Warrior blew his top.

The others' expressions were all a bit speechless, "What rock did you crawl out from? Fuck, stay in the fort later, don't go out, don't feed!"

Fanatic warrior said: "Tall Rich Handsome, this increases the difficulty, twenty percent to the reward!"

Yan Xiaosu wiped his sweat, "No problem, thank you guru, I really am sorry, I've caused you trouble."

Yan Xiaosu really was too hurried, he'd forgotten Wang Zheng had never touched this thing before. He promptly explained to Wang Zheng.

Wargod No 1 had an impressive name, but wasn't much use in a fight. That wasn't to say the mech armor was no good, it still functioned, balanced offense and defense, but the biggest problem was that it didn't have an energy shield. Mech armor without energy shield was equal to being naked against someone fully armed, completely undoable, even a mindless cannon fodder bot could finish it.

The mode was team 5v5. Each side had a fort which would produce robots to attack the other side at fixed intervals. The ultimate goal was to dismantle the enemy fort.

Free matchmaking. You could invite friends to help, but you didn't know who the opponent was. It was all down to luck.

The five counterparts appeared. Wang Zheng completely didn't care about the disdainful gazes. He couldn't describe his current mood. He hadn't expected such an intensely lifelike feeling, it was no wonder so many people were attracted.

Battle countdown.

Ten……Nine……Three……Two……One.

Light flashed, everyone entered the battlefield. The tactile sensation was no different from reality. The other four completely entered battle readiness, but Wang Zheng was like a newborn baby.

He had dreamt about piloting mech armor, but he hadn't expected it to happen this way. Wang Zheng tentatively took a step forward.

Crash……

A completely real feeling of mech armor stepping on the ground. Wang Zheng gazed up at the sky, he really wanted to howl.

It was really fucking fun, no wonder Yan Xiaosu would be so obsessed!

The other four were already rushing toward the outside. The three bronze level players ahead, Yan Xiaosu in the middle, bringing up the rear. Yan Xiaosu really was too excited.

At this time they remembered the forgotten Wang Zheng.

On the screen, Wang Zheng exercised the Wargod No 1's arms, turned his head, twisting lamely, slowly stepping forward, then back again.

Fanatic Soldier and the others also noticed Wang Zheng's behaviour, "Tall Rich Handsome, from what kindergarten did you get that top quality child."

Yan Xiaosu choked back a reply. He wanted to curse, but couldn't. Gurus couldn't be offended, let alone when the other was part of the Hunter Legion.

"Haha, guru, it's my brother's first time playing, beg your pardon."

The three faced the calamities of others in return for money, and also couldn't be too excessive. Actually, in his heart he was also a bit choked. He had planned to share some of their burden, but now it was completely hopeless.

The opponents were also pushing forward. Matched with Yan Xiaosu, the opponent's wouldn't be too lacking either, but facing three sock puppets, they would still have to surrender.

Wang Zheng suddenly accelerated, and the mech armor immediately swayed and almost fell. But in the cockpit, Wang

Zheng revealed a brilliant smile, like a child with his favorite toy.

Even though it wasn't real mech armor, Wang Zheng was still enchanted.

On the other side, the cannon fodder bots produced by the forts had already fought some, artillery fire exploded, flames shooting all around.

Left behind, Wang Zheng was like a baby learning how to walk.

Wang Zheng didn't follow. Since his mission was to stay here, then he'd stay here. When he had time later he'd really play a bit. Ever since being bullied by Bonehead, Wang Zheng had moved on. Life had to be enjoyed!

Fighting over the centerline, the war was already underway in the middle battlefield. Over the radio came Fanatic Soldier's curses.

"Fuck, there's sock puppets on the other side too, everyone be careful!"

Fanatic Soldier and the others were still very professional. After all, this related to their reputation. Business relied on public image.

Yan Xiaosu's intestines trashed. They'd unexpectedly encountered someone else doing promotion. It had turned into a

fierce battle, but he didn't believe the other party could spend as much money as him.

Indeed, the other side had only invited two, but their level was higher than Yan Xiaosu, and they had the numerical advantage.

There was a burst of chaotic fighting in the central battlefield. Yan Xiaosu's laser rifle vented ruthlessly, when suddenly alarms blared.

"Tall Rich Handsome, retreat, you're exposed." Fanatic Soldier yelled, but it was too late.

Chapter 6 – GODLIKE

The Wild Beast was originally slow, and Yan Xiaosu was further excited, and basically unable to keep up with Fanatic and the others' tempo. He suddenly discovered that he had charged ahead alone.

There was a flash of flame ahead, fuck!

Fanatic Soldier didn't retreat, retreating now really would be hopeless. Using Yan Xiaosu as bait, the three swiftly launched their attack, combined staking their lives to get rid of the opponents' Demon Wolf.

The Wild Beast Type 3's energy shield held up under enemy fire for a few seconds, then turned into a blaze in the the blink of an eye.

Tall Rich Handsome OVER!

Damn!

Yan Xiaosu fiercely flung out an arm. The other side immediately retreated after finishing Yan Xiaosu. Fanatic Soldier's movements were clearly unusually powerful, beating the Demon Wolf mech armor to the point of crisis. But the other side still held the numerical advantage, and under fire suppression, allowed the Demon Wolf to escape the battlefield.

This one wave was a major deficit, turning into 5v3. Fanatic Soldier was also angry. As a bronze expert, he was actually pleasing noobs. He also had a temper.

“Tall Rich Handsome, there’s nothing we can do at this point, and that one isn’t a bit helpful. This match is hopeless.”

Fanatic Soldier said.

Yan Xiaosu’s chubby face held a trace of anger, his tone changing slightly, “Guru, don’t do this. Before you were boasting to hide the sky, then letting me down at the key moment, and also blaming my brother. You won’t have a cent. But if you can win, I’ll pay double!”

Never one with a good temper, Yan Xiaosu couldn’t stand this group always talking crap about Wang Zheng. It seemed this time was finished. Such a good chance, he didn’t know how long he’d have to wait for the next one.

The power of money was great. The three substitutes blinked at each other. Creating trouble could increase income, who could have thought this Yan Xiaosu was so generous? They nodded. With generous compensation, they too would play for real.

Beating To Death Without Speaking grinned, “Since brother Tall is so generous, not showing a couple of moves would be too ungenerous. Old rules, kill them.”

Fanatic Soldier and Loves Beating Noobs nodded. Suddenly, Beating To Death became the captain.

Even though Fanatic Soldier had the highest rank among the three, Beating To Death Without Speaking had the highest skill level, he just didn't have enough wins. The trio's movements clearly went up a level, and Yan Xiaosu now became aware that he was taken in. This was a seller's market.

Beating To Death Without Speaking went up the left side alone, drawing attention, such brazenness was clearly the result of complete confidence in his own skill. Meanwhile Fanatic and Loves Beating Nobs followed up on the flank.

The fierce battle left the watching Yan Xiaosu as if drunk and stupefied, and Wang Zheng on the side, enjoying the pleasure of piloting the mech, also observed the battle. A kind of intense thirst for acting flowed through him, his hands twitching.

It had to be said, this was serious!

People most feared seriousness, because as CT experts, once they became serious they forgot about everything else. The three displayed their level, and even though they were at a numerical disadvantage, they pulled it back bit by bit. The other side's Demon Wolf was already broken, ultimately it was still destroyed even if it wasn't an instant kill.

That one shot was exceptionally beautiful, and Yan Xiaosu couldn't help applauding.

Gurus were gurus!

But Beating To Death Without Speaking's position was also exposed. Ten minutes later, both sides were in a surging battle.

Fanatic Soldier exploded, Loves Beating Noobs also exploded. Beating To Death Without Speaking took down three opponents, but it was still hopeless for him. At this moment, the enemy Wild Beast Type 3 charged over.

A sniper mech being cornered by a tank in close quarters, that was a miserable spectacle.

The bloodlust was high on both sides. The Wild Beast Type 3 grabbed the Hunter, boom……

The Hunter was torn into pieces by the Wild Beast's head blade. The other side cheered, and the Wild Beast roared.

On Yan Xiaosu's side were sighs. If they'd fought casually, then a loss was just a loss, but having been serious for so long, yet failed by just a hair at the last effort, Fanatic Soldier and the others also fiercely hit their consoles.

The Wild Beast mech armor charged towards the target fort like a hot knife through butter, incomparably relaxed. To his surprise, he suddenly discovered a target not far away.

The Wild Beast player jumped with fright, first thinking it was a trap. The result was..... a Wargod No 1. Damn, no wonder it never came out, some idiot had picked the wrong mech armor.

Wang Zheng had left the fort at some point, and Beating To Death Without Speaking couldn't help roaring, "Use your laser rifle, there's still a chance, blast him, blast him to death!"

Yan Xiaosu was also urgent, "Boss, open fire, aim and shoot, shoot!"

Wang Zheng also wanted to shoot, the problem was.....

"Rifle? Where?"

Have you ever seen an unarmed soldier on the battlefield?

Yan Xiaosu also knocked his head against the wall..... Top quality.

The opposite Wild Beast mech armor was quite cheerful. In all the time he'd been playing, this was the first time he'd seen such a noob. He directly opened the public channel, "Little kid, this big brother will leave you with a deep memory of your first time, haha!"

The Wild Beast mech suddenly accelerated, charging towards Wang Zheng with rock-breaking, heaven-startling momentum.

Yan Xiaosu sighed towards the sky. The other three were silent, not even in the mood for cursing. This wasn't a pit, it was simply an abyss!

They just thought they'd grabbed a life saving straw, but discovered it was an illusion.

The Wargod No 1 also seemed to know his fate, standing there stupidly.

Brittleskin vs heavy armor demon beast!

Death, was the only result.

Crash bang..... rumble..... sparks!

In a suffocating silence, the extremely emotional computer referee's voice:

Ironheart Berserker, OVER!

Team annihilated!

Red side WIN!

The other side started to celebrate, but the next moment

everyone were struck dumb.

Hang on, red side won????

A fucking error!

System fuckup!

However, the only one left standing on the battlefield was Wargod No 1. The Wild Beast Type 3..... exploded!

Wang Zheng closed his eyes, experiencing the feeling of that attack. When he opened his eyes again, they radiated light, a bit impassioned.

GOD!

The last kill replayed in slow motion.

The Wild Beast battlemech charged over. Wang Zheng's hands that had been trembling from excitement were suddenly cool as ice, the Wargod mech leaned forward at a forty five degree angle, and was instantly pushed out four or five meters from the violent impact. But he unexpectedly withstood it, and the next scene was even more miraculous. Taking advantage of the remaining inertia, the giant Wild Beast Type 3 was actually thrown into the air, falling headfirst!

The Wild Beast's head slammed into a giant boulder, buckled in on itself, then exploded.

A defenseless Wargod No 1

"Damn damn damn, did you see, this is an expert, you're all pits, your whole families are all pits!"

The five on the other side quickly logged off, not wanting to stay even a second longer. A fully equipped Wild Beast was dealt with by some unarmed brittleskin, this was practically throwing your face in the Pacific Ocean.

The other three bronze level players didn't show themselves any better, going offline without even saying goodbye.

Leaving Brothers Net Café, Yan Xiaosu still couldn't hold back his excitement, he was even happier than over passing his rank promotion.

"Boss, your luck is filled to bursting, I say, reversing the wheel of fortune, a comeback from the bottom!" Yan Xiaosu wasn't any rookie, if a brittleskin blocking a Wild Beast charge wasn't luck, then what was!

Wang Zheng smiled slightly. Inwardly he completely wasn't as calm as on the outside. In that split second Wang Zheng had felt alive, as if a door had swung open.

So this was battle!

Suddenly, Wang Zheng started to long for the day he returned to the Rubik's Cube. If this was just the first stage, then what marvels lay ahead?

Originally Yan Xiaosu was planning on inviting Wang Zheng to a grand meal, but in the end he was called home by his old man's irascible skylink call..... This guy had actually used his tuition to recruit players, no matter how open-minded old Yan was, he still exploded with anger.

Returning home, Wang Zheng took off his clothes, carefully sizing up the Rubik's Cube imprint on his stomach. Because the instant the battle ended, the Rubik's Cube had actually flashed with scalding heat. He remembered, Bonehead had once said that battle energy was battle comprehension. Technique was rigid, fusing it with the body required real combat, ultimately creating a combat system compatible with oneself. This was the Rubik's Cube's battle energy.

Each super solider was unique and unmatched.

Wang Zheng carefully observed the Rubik's Cube tattoo. At the bottom inside the faint white outline was a small red dot, this was his battle energy mark!

No need to think about military battle, and he couldn't go street fighting in the underworld, but CT was practically made for him.

There was no need for humane obliteration. Wang Zheng couldn't help whistling a tune.

When we get to the mountain, there will be a way through!

Dawnbreak senior high.

In the last time before graduation, the only ones still busy were those who were nervously preparing for the Wargod College entrance exam. The majority were enjoying the their last high school life.

Wang Zheng was famous for the gene score results, but Yan Xiaosu on the other hand was busy calling out and greeting people the whole way.

"Boss, am I especially handsome today? How come so many girls are eyeing me?"

Yan Xiaosu didn't have the slightest amount of awareness. Wang Zheng smiled wryly, it was basically this kid who caused trouble, and he wiped his ass.

Two girls straight ahead walked towards them, as if they had been waiting for them. It was the idols of Dawnbreak, Yue Jing and Ye Zisu. The two women were meticulously dressed, their spotless white skin naturally needed no makeup, but delicate ornaments and custom made uniforms set off their figures to its fullest. The surrounding men were already gaping.

“Student Wang, my birthday is this Sunday, would you have the time to attend?”

Yue Jing exposed a sweet smile, like a hundred flowers blooming. Yan Xiaosu to the side had already gone stupid, he’d never seen Yue Jing speak so tenderly.

“I don……” Wang Zheng didn’t feel his path would ever intersect with someone like this, but Yan Xiaosu next to him couldn’t wait.

“We do, of course we do, to participate in miss Yue’s birthday party is our honor!”

Xiaosu immediately invited himself.

“Haha, you must be Yan Xiaosu, truly very adorable.” Ye Zisu said from the side.

Yan Xiaosu felt like he was about to ascend to immortality, straightening his chest, making himself as tall as possible, for the first time he felt he was very manly.

The surrounding students were all stupefied. What was this? The goddess’ birthday party wasn’t something just anyone qualified for.

Chapter 7 – Little Shi

Rumour said that this time, besides Dawnbreak elites, there would even be some Wargod College students there. This was a major opportunity to ask for advice.But why would she invite these two?

“Good. I look forward to your attendance. I will send you invitation cards later.”

Yue Jing and Ye Zisu’s attitudes were exceptionally good today. It was the first time Yan Xiaosu was this close to the person he admired, and he practically didn’t remember his own surname.

“Boss, tell me, what are my odds?”

Wang Zheng shrugged. These two girls were mythical creatures. If Yan Xiaosu fell in, there wouldn’t even be bones left. But what could he say?

Everyone had their one in a million, he wished him good luck.

Distantly, Yue Jing and Ye Zisu were also giggling very happily, “Those two idiots are definitely feeling very happy and surprised.”

“They will be even more surprised on Sunday!” Yue Jing said coldly.

She had heard about Wang Zheng's disregard for her from Ye Zisu. Being someone who thought highly of herself, she would let this retard know the meaning of unreachable!

Lazy toads eating swan meat was a crime, but lazy toads ignoring the swan was even more criminal!

The classrooms had basically turned into a tea party. Everyone were chatting about their future and dreams, and those who were certain were even more impassioned and elated. Yan Xiaosu could finally sleep in peace, the teachers didn't care about him now. Wang Zheng also pondered his future.

No need to think about military school, with his gene score he wasn't qualified to try. He could only wait for enlistment in three months. Now he had to think about how to survive until then. Right now he was just waiting for graduation, all that was missing was the diploma. He would ponder tomorrow's rations.

Opening his skylink, he glanced over the nearby job listings. But the majority all required work experience, ages twenty and up, and the educational background wasn't something highschool could match. Wang Zheng swept past them a bit gloomily, would he have to starve?

Wang Zheng started his job hunting career immediately after school was out, but his current circumstances were still awkward. He couldn't reach the heights and didn't deign the lows. Anyway, Duck Row restaurant was looking for unskilled kitchen labor that seemed possible.

Standing at the doorway, Wang Zheng adjusted his expression. Smile, smile honestly and sincerely. He assumed unskilled labor didn't need any technical qualifications.

Just as he prepared to open the door, the door opened on him. Was he that sincere?

A silhouette bumped against Wang Zheng, and he dodged almost instinctively.

"Help, villains are chasing me!"

A pair of hands as fair as jade grabbed Wang Zheng's arm, a peaked cap rising slightly, revealing a dirty little face.

Ai, a comrade in poverty.

Two black suited black waiters rushed out, one of them immediately bursting into curses, "Little bastard, you dare eat without paying? Looking to die! Pay up, or both of you get a beating."

To tell the truth, Wang Zheng really wanted to easily wave his hand and leave without trace. But for some reason, that pair of miserable eyes suddenly softened his heart. If Bonehead saw this, he didn't know how he would be remonstrated.

“How much?” Wang Zheng was dumbfounded, eating at this place a few dozen credits was enough, no need to beat people.

“Very good, five hundred thirty credits. I’ll give you a discount, five hundred.”

“Don’t trick me, at this place it’s at most a hundred and something!” Wang Zheng insisted.

“Bullshit, this girl came in and ordered one of every dish!”

Wang Zheng understood another principle. Without money, don’t play hero.

“All I have is three hundred. You can take it, or you can have the police take us away.”

Wang Zheng shrugged like a gangster, “Or, you can hit me for a discount.”

Depressed or not, leaving things halfway wasn’t Wang Zheng’s style.

The two waiters looked distracted, gazing at Wang Zheng’s three hundred credits, one rushed over, “You two little bastards, hurry up and get lost!”

As he spoke he punched towards Wang Zheng. A smack sound,

and the counterpart immediately held his hand and jumped back. Wang Zheng touched his face, immediately withdrawing one bill, “Once for one hundred, come again if you aren’t satisfied.”

When someone hit your left cheek, there was no harm in turning the right. One hundred credits could support him for days.

The waiters looked at each other, one’s hand was already swollen, then they ran off with a fierce glare at Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng shrugged helplessly. No need to try this place, finding work in this day and age wasn’t that hard.

Behind him followed a small tail.

Wang Zheng halted, turning. The little tail also stopped, raising her head. Those miserable big eyes again.

Damn, Wang Zheng forced back the roar that was on the edge of his lips. This filthy girl’s eyes had a strange power.

“Fellow student, as comrades in abject poverty, you don’t have to thank me. But don’t follow me either. To be honest, I’m a poor wretch, that just now was the full extent of my property, I don’t know where my next meal will be. I can still say it won’t be skipping the bill.”

Finished speaking, Wang Zheng turned and left. He had to find work, that was no joke. Without food to eat, even diamonds would

turn into toffee.

But the little tail unexpectedly kept following.

“Little girl, if you follow me, don’t think I won’t beat you up!”

The filthy girl in front of him seemed to be about his size, wearing clearly unsuitable sports wear, plus a pitiful expression that seemed a bit small.

The girl’s tears immediately fell with a pitter patter. Wang Zheng instantly lost his thread. He really was a villain, shouting at a little girl.

“I’m sorry, little..... Cough cough, I’m Wang Zheng, what’s your name?” Suddenly Wang Zheng discovered that the counterpart seemed to be about his age, calling her little girl this and little girl that was no good.

Tears hovered in the girl’s eyes, “I don’t know, I don’t remember.”

Wang Zheng felt dizzy. Not only didn’t he find work, he even brought home an illegitimate child.

Wang Zheng brought “little Shi” back home. Little Shi was the nickname Wang Zheng gave her, since it sounded close to amnesia. Fortunately there was still food at home. Wang Zheng overturned trunks and boxes, almost turning over is whole house. He finally

discovered another eighty credits. One hundred eighty credits, still a good day.

Little Shi became very calm in Wang Zheng's little house, not as terrified as outside.

"Little Shi, you wash up first. I'll go get something to eat." It had to be admitted that this little miss' smell was even a bit unworthy of the revolutionary masses.

Having squandered a day, the sky was already dark. Wang Zheng was long ago so hungry the front of his stomach was sticking to his back.

Instant noodles and cola was still a pretty good meal.

The water in the bathroom stopped, and little Shi timidly walked out dressed in Wang Zheng's T-shirt, "I'm sorry, I only found this to wear."

"Wear it if you want. Tomorrow I'll bring you to……"

Even with student Wang's willpower, he was still a bit absent minded. Seriously, it seemed that luck really was changeable. What he casually picked up turned out to be a little fairy?

Faintly purple, slightly curled long hair, wherever it was dyed, it seemed quite natural. Skin like white jade, glossy and smooth. To be honest, Wang Zheng had never seen a girl as pretty as this. Most

importantly, this girl had pupils like stars, clear, sparkling, even Ye Zisu was like a sweet potato in front of her. Spiritual influence, she was brimming with a fresh and clean smell.

"Seriously, such a pretty little Shi shoud fetch quite a high price!" Wang Zheng snapped his fingers.

Little Shi on the other side jumped with fright, "Zheng-gege, don't sell me. I'm very strong, I can to a lot of work."

"Sweatdrop, I'm joking." Wang Zheng felt that he really was going rotten, bullying an amnesiac girl.

At this moment Wang Zheng noticed that his clothes little Shi wore just barely covered her butt. Those long and slender legs could really be rated as art.

From top to bottom, every part of her was perfect. Someone like this simply shouldn't exist.

Damn, this girl really isn't minor.

"Do I look strange like this?" Little Shi pulled at her clothes. This movement was an even more violent blow at Wang Zheng.

"Cough cough, little Shi, tomorrow I'll take you to check the Skylink Public Service System, then I'm taking you home. You can just stay here today."

Wang Zheng focused his attention on his noodles. Grandma's legs, two years of training in willpower crumbled like that.

"Thank you, gege."

Little Shi's voice was very beautiful, soft, like it could reach your heart.

Finishing the meal quickly and efficiently, releasing a loud burp without regard to image, human life was eating, drinking, shitting and sleeping. Very pleasurable, student Wang was very calm regardless of the difficulties.

"I'll sleep on the sofa, you sleep inside." Wang Zheng threw off his shoes, stretching his big feet very comfortably. Sleep was a very happy thing to him.

In the Rubik's Cube, even sleep was a nightmare. His current dull life was like paradise.

Almost three seconds later, little Shi heard Wang Zheng's snores, this.....

Wang Zheng's room wasn't messy, because there was practically nothing there. Laying in the bed, Xiao Shi's eyes suddenly seemed radiant. The snores outside really didn't have a trace of politeness. Little Shi couldn't help smiling slightly, there really existed an idiot like this.

This night, even though the bed was very uncomfortable, her mood was still unusually good.

At the first glimmer of dawn, Wang Zheng got up for morning exercises. Bonehead said that a super soldier had to be beautiful both outside and in. Cultivation technique was inside, and muscles and endurance and such training was the outside. Both sides had to be mutually coordinated to reach the best results, and physical capability had to be maintained. He had moreover slept very soundly last night. Let alone others, even Yan Xiaosu very rarely came over. Suddenly having the presence of a girl in the house unexpectedly gave it the ambience of a home.

Not long after setting breakfast, the doorbell rang unusually urgently. “Boss, open up!”

Opening the door, Yan Xiaosu didn’t seem to be missing any parts, “Pretty good, all parts intact. Your old man let you off like this?” Wang Zheng teased.

“Gah, my butt is splitting open. But relying on the eloquence of Tall Rich And Handsome, I finally passed the crisis!”

“Oh, what excuse did you use this time?” Wang Zheng was also quite curious, Yan Xiaosu was rather skilled in dealing with people.

“Of course it’s the goddess’ birthday. I said, you can’t lower our Yan family’s demeanor, for good or bad we’re still characters with face in Shangjing.”

Yan Xiaosu straightened his waist and smiled, “The old man best likes face. A representative’s daughter’s birthday party struck his weak point. This time I can make adequate preparations, capturing Yue Jing is my life goal. Shouldn’t you find a goal too? You can’t marry mech armor. About to graduate and still a virgin, if it gets out you won’t have any face!”

“Zheng-gege, who is it?” A melodious voice echoed. Wang Zheng had forgotten about this.

Yan Xiaosu was immediately petrified, stupidly looking at little Shi, drooling like a waterfall dropping three thousand feet.

Student Yan suddenly gripped Wang Zheng’s hands with deep emotion, “Brother, please give your most beloved little brother an introduction, who is this beautiful woman?”

Notes:

Shi, or “poem”, is a homonym for the first character in shiyi, “amnesia”.

Chapter 8 – Soaring Like A Heavenly Steed

Wang Zheng shook of Yan Xiaosu in a burst of abject horror, “Get lost, this is little Shi……”

Little Shi had already walked over and grabbed Wang Zheng’s arm, “Hello, I’m Zheng-gege’s distant cousin, Wang Shishi, it’s my first time on Earth, so please look after me.”

Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu both looked dumbstruck at this elfin girl. Wang Zheng shivered, could it be this girl was looking at becoming dependant on him?

“No way, you don’t look blood related anywhere! If Boss had a tenth of your genes, he’d be the handsomest guy in school!” Yan Xiaosu pounded Wang Zheng’s ego without a trace of politeness.

“Xiaosu, you need a spanking!” After trampling on Yan Xiaosu, the three proceeded to have breakfast.

“Little Shi, besides the goddess of my dreams, you are the most beautiful girl, en, actually, you’re a bit prettier than my dream goddess too!”

“Yan, I’m having breakfast, I’ll get indigestion.” Wang Zheng really wasn’t interested in Yue Jing.

“Ah, why?” Little Shi asked curiously.

“Explaining all of this is a long story, I’ll cut to the chase and give you the summary. I asked boss to help me deliver a love letter, as a result……”

Completely ignoring student Wang’s earnest attempts at stopping him, Wang Zheng’s awkward incident was revealed by Yan Xiaosu like an exploding bean,

Even though little Shi didn’t laugh easily, she couldn’t help it this time. The world had such a silly person?

Only, thinking about it, he’d really done it.

“Tell me, is there anyone in this world who values loyalty more than boss!” Yan Xiaosu acted like he was telling a folk story.

“Zheng-gege, why did you jump into the lake?” Little Shi was as adorable as a curious baby.

“Urges are the devil!” Wang Zheng choked. Ultimately he could still only helplessly shrug, he couldn’t stand recalling past events.

Hearing Wang Zheng’s true story, little Shi laughed without the least attention to image, “Zheng-gege, you really are cute.”

Wang Zheng touched his nose, did that count as a compliment?

After breakfast, Yan Xiaosu insisted on showing the scenery of

earth, and little Shi also quite wanted to go play. Originally Wang Zheng was planning on sending little Shi to search the public service system, but when he saw her happy expression he still left that for later. They didn't lack time. In fact, when little Shi smiled he felt warm. Wang Zheng really felt as though he had a little sister.

Asian Historical Museum, here were accounts of humanity's bronze age, silver age, even the now ended golden age of interstellar grand voyaging. Yan Xiaosu was a novice in this respect, so Wang Zheng was in charge of explaining.

"This is the mankind's earliest earthquake detector, a thing from ten thousand years ago. The principles behind the current super shock star probes are a about seventy percent similar."

Wang Zheng said. Having followed old merchant as a little assistant in the book shop for so many years, he really had read a lot.

"Eh, that's one of the masterpieces of doctor Jacques Rogge, you understand it, Zheng-gege?" Little Shi asked.

"Haha, even if I don't know whether it's coincidence, but compared to this seismograph it only includes some subspace wave theory, it's actually quite simple to combine. Of course, the person who could figure that out is definitely very amazing."

Unconsciously, Wang Zheng imitated old merchant's tone. Of course the last part was his own addition. Old merchant was quite

disdainful, and the number of people that could be valued by him were..... almost none.

A trace of astonishment flashed through little Shi's eyes, but this was only the beginning. As the two talked they touched on all manner of knowledge, astronomy and geography were comprehensively covered. Wang Zheng also discovered that, besides not remembering who she was, little Shi's memory was intact in other respects, and had also received a good education.

The curved flight memorial hall was especially large. This was the key to mankind's access to the stars. Lauren Lee was also a citizen of the Aslan Empire, it had to be admitted that this empire had produced countless scientists, with an extremely important effect on the development of human history.

"At present the highest speed we can reach is your Aslan Empire's fourfold curved flight, but the future mainstream should be curved leap flight, that should be an enormous improvement."

Wang Zheng smiled, Yan Xiaosu to the side had almost fallen asleep. Studen Yan had been very conscientious at the start, but along with the subjects getting deeper and duller, he really couldn't endure it. Anyway, there were no people here, so he sat on the shoulders of giants, then leaned on the heads of giants to sleep. Besides, it gave him quite a feeling of modelling.

But little Shi really was alarmed, the curved velocity leap theory still hadn't been published!

This was still a high level galactic secret, and each nation was conducting tightly guarded research. She had also just heard her tutor mention it by accident. But Wang Zheng actually knew about it, and it seemed he quite understood it.

How was this possible!

“Zheng-gege, you’re definitely a top student at Wargod Military College!”

Wang Zheng blushed, “Cough cough, I still haven’t passed the exams, and I still have a few days before high school graduation.”

“You’ll definitely pass. Compared to you, I feel I’m too ignorant.”

Wang Zheng smiled, “I’m also just chatting casually.”

“Zheng-gege, do you have a girlfriend, you’re definitely very popular at school!” Little Shi exposed an adoring expression.

Yan Xiaosu to the side immediately woke up, “Little sister Shi, I swear before Heaven, boss is a virgin!”

“Yan Xiaosu, you’re talking bullshit again, I’ll wring you into a dough twist!”

No matter how thick Wang Zheng’s face was, he still couldn’t stand up against Yan Xiaosu’s eloquence. Little Shi looked

distracted before covering her mouth and breaking into laughter, her charming face deep red, looking at both Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu.

“Cough cough, we’ve been walking for so long, let’s find a place to rest.” Seeing Wang Zheng flipping out, Yan Xiaosu hurriedly changed the subject.

“You wouldn’t be thinking about going to play CT again?”

“Haha, little sister Shi, I’m an expert, I’ve promoted to bronze level!” On mention of this, Yan Xiaosu immediately got cocky.

“Really, I still haven’t played, is it fun?” Little Shi really was interested in anything and everything.

“Fun? No, it’s super fun! This is the hottest game in the Milky Way, it’s not a game, it’s a lifestyle! The life of battle, life of passion, men’s hot blood, women’s charm, all blossoming in the sparks of mech armor!”

Yan Xiaosu swung his arms, as if he stood on a stage in front of ten thousand spectators.

Like this the three quickly took the public high speed system to Brothers Net Café.

“Owner, my private room!” Yan Xiaosu yelled when he entered, and was immediately greeted by a smiling owner. This was a high

level VIP.

“No problem, how many stations?”

“Three, this is my brother, and my brother’s little sister, if they come again just put them on my tab!”

Yan Xiaosu patted his breast and said.

“No problem, please go inside, ……. Anything to drink, we have Nebula Water, all kinds of beverages, everything that should be here, free of charge today.”

The proprietor was also shocked by little Shi’s sweet smile, always miserly, he suddenly grew generous.

“Three bottles of coca cola!”

This was what Yan Xiaosu liked the most. Why?

Only because Coca Cola was very domineering, possessing a long history, with even more power to speak. As long as mankind wasn’t extinguished, as long as humanity still needed water, there would be Coca Cola. This most suited Tall Rich Handsome.

Entering CT, Yan Xiaosu immediately grew completely excited, calling friends left and right.

“Crud, I forgot, both of you are newbies. First get familiar I’ll go fight first.”

Wang Zheng opened his account. Skeleton already had ten points, one successive win.

And the ID little Shi entered next to him was “Aslan Little Free Spirit”.

Yan Xiaosu shook his head, really not creative. Looking at his own ID Tall Rich Handsome, how formidable and domineering.

“It’s best for newbies to first play 1v1 to get familiar with the mech controls and function. Know yourself and know your enemy, and you can come unscathed through a hundred battles. I’ll duck out first. …… You two do whatever you want, there are no cameras here.”

Yan Xiaosu smiled wickedly. What ‘little sister’, he had been with Wang Zheng since childhood and never heard of any relatives. Since boss was so slow on the start, he needed the helping hand of a romantic expert like him!

Little Shi looked distracted, “Do whatever we want?”

“Don’t listen to him, that kid has been in heat recently.”

Little Shi didn’t seem unfamiliar with this, and also seemed eager to give it a try.

The two smiled at each other, both starting their CT careers in full spirits.

Skeleton!

He also really wanted to know to what extent he could use the things he learned in the Rubik's Cube.

Light flashed.

1v1 mode.

ID: Skeleton Wargod No 1

Automatic matchmaking……

Matchmaking was based on the sum of win rate, level, and successive wins.

Meanwhile, in a luxurious room, three youths were also just waiting for matchmaking to finish. The five hundred square meter private game room really was extravagant, even the bathroom was bigger than Wang Zheng's home.

"Captain, today you definitely have to let us experience your Soaring Steed Five Successive Slashes."

“Is using the Soaring Steed Five Successive Slashes very difficult with the Demon Wolf Type V?”

The two youths standing behind Ma Xiao were filled with expectation.

Ma Xiao, Asian region diamond level expert, the two behind him were new members of his Dragon God Team. As captain, he was using an alt to demonstrate a skill, and at the same time establish his prestige.

“The Demon Wolf Type V is still pretty flexible, its weak points are something only those high level experts can target. It’s unequalled in a place like this.”

Ma Xiao said indifferently. As a first rate expert, he would sometimes use a false name to play around. His main was too famous.

Ma Xiao’s alt: Dragon God 007, complete victory in three fights.

Automatic matchup:

Skeleton VS Dragon God 007.

“Whoa, it’s actually a little newbie, this really is like killing chickens with the bull cleaver.”

“To be able to die under the Dragon God’s five successive kills is still his good fortune.”

The two behind him were a bit excited. They could watch from the captain’s POV, that was a rare chance to learn. They were both gold one level, part of the team’s important backup strength, and also first year students at Wargod College.

“Fuck, got to be a mistake, it’s actually a brittleskin. He’ll die in one move……”

Ma Xiao was also speechless. The level of this account was fairly low. The opponent didn’t have computer trouble, but in any case it was an issue of IQ. But the opponent actually picked a brittleskin, he’d die in one hit.

Light flashed on the stage, and two mech warriors slowly appeared.

Ma Xiao didn’t want to waste time. As soon as the battle started, the Demon Wolf Type V made a pull. This was commonly used by experts, by pausing a bit, you could increase the mech’s instant burst power, and even more so for beast type mechs.

All his movements were as fluent as moving clouds and flowing water, and the mech charged towards the Wargod No 1.

In practically an instant he had arrived, “Watch closely, Soaring

Steed Five Successive Kills depends heavily on timing!”

Chapter 9 – Explosive Noob

Even though a brittleskin couldn't let him show his power, he could at least warm up.

The Demon Wolf Type V issued an attack in a flash. Practically everyone dealing with the Demon Wolf's flexible and vicious attack used their energy shield to lock up the opponent and then attack. But a brittleskin had no energy shield, and could only forcibly block or dodge, but could a Wargod No 1 dodge a Demon Wolf Type V?

The Wargod No 1 retreated half a step as if weightless, just enough to dodge the attack. Ma Xiao smiled slightly, then followed up with the attack combo. If the Soaring Steed Five Successive Kills could be joined up it was unstoppable.

Retreat, was an abyss.

The first lunge could be a feint or could be real, but the following attack was fatal. There was no way to withdraw from this. But the Wargod No 1 actually spun away!

The attack chained up with a sweep attack, followed closely by a leap attack. The Wargod No 1 was like an apparition, dodging the leap attack by a hair's breadth, each dodge at the limit. But Ma Xiao's Soaring Steed fatal blow appeared.

A deadlock after a series of moves, the effect of motion waning.

The Demon Wolf opened its mouth—— Laser cannon!

Almost within reach, undodgeable!

Boom.....

The perfect killing move!

But the Wargod No 1 unexpectedly shifted sideways like a ghost, without the slightest pause, the whole set of dodges was like something practiced countless times. The Demon Wolf just opened its mouth when he attacked.

The blast attack failed!

Alarms instantly blared, transitioning to the left side, the Wargod No 1 was actually charging. In the end he was a diamond player, he didn’t dodge, there was no time, so he instantly started the energy shield.

The Wargod No 1 was already flying forward, kill!

Boom.....

Energy sparked from the collision. Ma Xiao retreated, but the Wargod No 1—— dashed in to attack!

As quick and violent as an artillery shell. What kind of violent burst strength was required to make such a charge with a humanoid mech armor?

The Demon Wolf Type V hadn't dodged completely, at least it suffered some force. But next the Wargod No 1 made a sweep attack. The Demon Wolf had an incomparably fast mechanical tail, but the Wargod No 1 used its foot, its speed should be a beat slow, but..... Ma Xiao felt unreassured.

Boom.....

Hit!

The next moment, the Wargod No 1 was already leaping up, the titanium blade slashing at the Demon Wolf's belly.

Sparks flashed for an instant. Ma Xiao also erupted, the already unbalanced Demon Wolf Type V suddenly stepped hard and flew back.

But at this moment the mech armor abruptly swayed.

God!

The Wargod No 1 grabbed the Demon Wolf's leg, titanium blade already at its head.

Boom.....

The energy shield shattered, the titanium blade rudely thrusting into the Demon Wolf Type V's head. Sparks flew in all directions.

Rumble.....

The Demon Wolf crumbled and collapsed.

Skeleton WIN, two successive wins!

The extravagant training room was dead silent, everyone were dumbfounded.

How was this possible!

A humanoid mech's Soaring Steed Five Successive Kills???

Used against the inventor Ma Xiao!!!

With the Wargod No 1!!!

Was this a hallucination?

Ma Xiao was motionless. The whole series of events from just

now played through his mind. Mistake?

He hadn't made any mistake. This was definitely an alt, the opponent's operation was diamond level, and was moreover planned quite unashamedly!

"Who are you, Carlos, is this your alt???"

Ma Xiao typed in a series of question marks. Carlos was his main rival, and moreover someone who frequently liked acting like a pretentious prick with the Wargod No 1.

Wang Zheng on the other side didn't pay him any attention. The opponent was a bit nooby, storming up to attack like that was something you could only use when you were vastly superior to the opponent. But as an unfamiliar opponent, he could only give him one point. If Bonehead was here, there would definitely be a ten thousand volt electric shock waiting.

Ma Xiao was furious, the counterpart actually took a disinterested attitude and directly went into matchmaking for an opponent.

He immediately launched matchmaking, but very unfortunately, his luck wasn't that good.

Meanwhile, in the CT Asian region official forum's newbie section there were two popular videos stickied.

The subject was “Guess whose alt this is!”

Skeleton, two successive victories, using Wargod No 1.

The click through rate was already in the tens of thousands, and there were even thousands of replies. Even though it didn’t compare to celebrities, it was already very popular in the newbie section.

“Fuck, capable of flipping over a Wild Beast without using weapons, this guy is the alt of European region’s number one Wild Beast player Maru!”

“A fluke. It’s not impossible, the Wild Beast was charging too recklessly, how many gurus would have this much time and leisure!”

“The mods are bored, stickying even a post like this. A very ordinary bronze level promotion match.”

But with the appearance of the second video, the wind direction changed sharply.

“This is Carlos’ alt!”

“Guess who Dragon God 007 is, it wouldn’t be Dragon God Ma Xiao?”

Couldn’t you recognize a pig on the road without eating pork? Even though very rarely people could use the Heavenly Steed Five Successive Kills, the skill this Demon Wolf Type V was used with was too admirable. But that Wargod No 1 could actually dodge completely, it was simply demonic skill. And afterwards the humanoid mech armor actually used the Soaring Steed Five Successive Kills that only beast type mechs could use.

Last time clearly wasn’t a fluke, it would be difficult for this post not to get popular.

“Textbook level dodging. This is absolutely a veteran who’s made special research and training in Soaring Steed!”

Some veterans couldn’t bear not spitting bubbles.

Watching the video in slow motion, the Wargod No 1’s dodges were practically all by a hair’s breadth, and his prediction was even more unusually good. Even though Dragon Good’s motions were almost perfect, clearly there were no perfect styles, only perfect tactics.

Little Shi also won one round, but as someone accustomed to handling real mechs, a toy like this wasn’t that interesting. She was actually more interested in Wang Zheng, how did he operate it?

Wang Zheng’s third opponent appeared.

ID: Chaos Gunner Hunter Type 3 130 wins, 53% win rate, bronze five level.

Wang Zheng's two successive victories weren't rare, but his win rate was too high, so the system would match him against stronger opponents. Only a player who just had two fights was actually matched with a bronze five player, even though it was low level bronze, it was enough to kill any rookie.

If they had a level, the gap to common players would be quite large.

Skeleton VS Chaos Gunner, this was originally a match that wouldn't draw attention, but a lot of the players who saw the video on the official forum grew interested. Such a common battle actually drew several hundred paying viewers.

Chaos Gunner was also quite surprised. Still something this good?

In a match like this, CT would definitely take the bulk, but would award a bonus depending on the level of brilliance, both for the victor and loser, but of course a bit more for the winner.

Who was the opponent, two fights two wins……this was clearly a sockpuppet, huh.

Chaos Gunner was cheerful. Still such a good thing. He immediately opened galactic search, and very quickly found the

comments on the opponent.

A fellow expert in close combat, level pretty good, but he was out of luck running into Chaos Gunner. Whether he was a real sockpuppet or a lucky rookie, he would be eliminated.

Wargod No 1 VS Hunter Type 3, battle site: Jungle

The jungle was a great place for sniper type ambushers. In circumstances without energy shield, it was a one hit kill.

However, Wang Zheng's choice left little Shi speechless.

Wargod No 1, weapon choice titanium alloy saber..... He didn't bring a gun???

This.....

Let alone little Shi, Chaos Gunner was all smiles. This world still had someone so conceited. His rush to pick the scenario already gave him a major advantage, and the opponent actually only brought a rotten saber. Could it be that he thought he would get a physical fight?

Of the more than three hundred people watching, half were already regretting it. Impulses really were the devil. Even a common match cost ten credits. The money was secondary, but this really wasn't worth it, everyone were a bit depressed.

But the matches gave no refunds, even when it was on the official web. For sales, the official web would publish some players people were interested in. Throwing the net wide, someone would inevitably be taken in.

“This Skeleton would die if it didn’t act like a pretentious prick, he even picked Wargod No 1 in a situation like this!”

“Fuck, he didn’t even bring a laser rifle, he treats the opponent like an idiot!”

“Fraud, defrauded again!”

“Those two matches were probably staged!”

“Who knows, fuck, that Gunner is an expert, he’s already in ambush!”

Entering the battle scenario, Chaos Gunner quickly found his ambush location. Having seen the videos of the previous two matches, he understood clearly that he couldn’t let the opponent get in close.

This was a Norton Star style jungle, tall and strange plants with small cracks in between. At the same time as it was easy to hide, it offered a sniper a pretty good field of view.

Chaos Gunner didn't pick an ordinary high position ambush, but chose a low lying depression.

The chances that the opponent was an idiot was extremely low, very likely it was an expert acting dumb. Therefore the opponent would definitely place heavy importance on the high points, so Chaos Gunner found a hollow depression and camouflaged himself, only waiting for the opponent to appear.

Everyone sighed at this opening, but what made them the most speechless was the Wargod No 1 walking around without concern.

"Is it a mistake? Confronting the Hunter, and he's still walking in a straight line, does he have a brain!"

"This is a rhythm of departing this life!"

Little Shi didn't know the opponent's circumstances, but she was still very worried. The opponent was definitely lying in ambush, so how could Wang Zheng walk so relaxed?

Little Shi subconsciously looked at Wang Zheng's expression, and immediately looked distracted. He was unexpectedly smiling, as if enjoying it.

What kind of state was this?

Wang Zheng really was enjoying it. Even if it was virtual, he was still half a step towards his dreams.

As if relaxing, Wang Zheng's every cell was unusually lively.

Danger, it was a kind of scent!

The mech armor easily advanced, gradually approaching Chaos Gunner's field of view.

Chaos Gunner was motionless, quietly waiting for the opponent's arrival. Soon, soon, a bit closer!

Everyone's hearts clutched. In around five meters or so, was the rhythm of heads exploding.

Just at this moment the Wargod No 1 suddenly stopped, starting to hesitate in place, as if looking for something. He unexpectedly turned his head and abruptly walked away.

No way, what was going on!

Chaos Gunner was a bit depressed, but his moved improved very quickly, because the Wargod No 1 appeared again, and moreover entered his range!

..... The screen constantly flickered, damn, this fellow was really fast, not easy to aim at, cutting across trees almost every second. A sniper's doctrine was to hit with every shot, especially someone focusing on ambushes, but he couldn't completely target the

opponent at each step, and didn’t dare act blindly without thinking.

Chapter 10 – Noble Little Sister

The players were also baffled, was this Chaos Gunner an idiot, how come he still didn't shoot!?

An outstanding sniper had to be patient. Suddenly, alarms blared.

Not good!

The Wargod No 1 had accelerated in his direction, he was discovered!!!

As he was constantly looking for a good opportunity to act, Wang Zheng was just piloting the Wargod No 1 to close in on the Hunter Type 3 at high speed.

Chaos Gunner couldn't pay attention to being disposed, the opponent's speed wasn't enough!

Light radiated in all directions, the laser rumbled, a beam of light blasting towards the Wargod No 1.

Practically the instant the light flashed, the Wargod No 1 suddenly leaned forty five degrees left. The beam shot past his side, the intense energy seeming like it would strip the paint from the Wargod No 1.

With only a slight pause, the Wargod No 1 continued forward. Due to not having dodged too widely, his speed wasn't that influenced.

Calm!

Chaos Gunner told himself countless times, circumstances like these weren't rare in team battles, only a calm sniper could live till the end.

Sniper cannon locked on!

Second shot blasted out!

Wargod No 1 soared through the air!

Fuck, why did he choose to jump this time???

The second shot missed as well, and the distance was growing closer and closer. Chaos Gunner was just gathering energy for a third shot, this was the moment that decided life or death.

The Wargod No 1 charged at high speed when it landed. At this moment there was no shelter between the two sides, but the distance was still too far, the third shot had already charged.

"Drop dead!"

Chaos Gunner roared and fired the third shot. He was excited all over, but his hands were incomparably steady, this was the experience accumulated over more than one hundred battles!

The Wargod No 1 had nowhere to dodge, the light beam thundered, but at this moment, the Wargod No 1 moved in a dazzling arc……

Everyone present went imbecilic, fuck, for ten credits they could actually see the Arc Slide Step!!!

The Wargod No 1 freakishly cut a thirty degree arc from his straight line charge, and practically the instant the light beam passed, he was already back to a straight line.

This was the super skill of assassin type mechs when confronting sniper mechs head on!

The intense movements made the Wargod No 1 creak and groan from the strain. Chaos Gunner was mute, standing there motionlessly.

Fuck, this was just the rookie player area, there was such a bully???

Arc Slide Step!

The Wargod No 1 flashed, the Hunter Type 3’s head flew up, mech burst!

Skeleton WIN!

Somewhere on Earth, a twenty something youth fiercely beat a machine, “This is fucking barefaced bullying, whose alt is this!!!”

The spectator area was moment of quiet, followed immediately by an explosion of cheering. Ten credits to see a classic underdog killing a sniper, absolutely worth it!

Little Shi was next to Wang Zheng, and could clearly see into the cockpit. Wang Zhen was smiling from start to finish, as if unspeakable confident and relaxed, as if the battle was a kind of sublimation.

Arc Slide Step, such a comparatively difficult maneuver was absolutely impossible to perform without corresponding physical strength, even in CT.

And even before that, the judgement in crisis was even more something only veteran soldiers could produce!

Wang Zheng took off the tactile equipment and left the cockpit, seeing little Shi outside, “Wasn’t it very boring?”

Little Shi didn’t have time to reply before a miserable howl came from the side of the room, “This group of pits, pulling me in as well! Ah, my points!”

Yan Xiaosu walked out with a depressed expression, “Not playing, the children are all on summer vacation, running around being pits everywhere!”

“Zheng-gege is an expert, it’ll be fine if you bring him.” Little Shi smiled slightly.

“Damn, today is boss’ second time playing, no matter what kind of genius he still needs to practice.”

Yan Xiaosu said, “Boss, I’m not saying you won’t do, but understanding the mech armor environment and battle tactics, it’s not possible without several hundred games. Those diamond level experts are veterans who have experienced tens of thousands of battles.”

Comprehensive knowledge, outstanding battle awareness, diligent training, even Wargod College students wouldn’t do, how many in the Asian region could reach this stage?

“It’s quite interesting, and plenty of experts.” Wang Zheng nodded. Training was rigid, real combat had countless permutations, it really could offer quite a bit of help.

“We’ll go window shopping, that’s what girls love most.” Yan Xiaosu said. What ordinary girl didn’t like window shopping.

Little Shi was on the contrary indifferent, it was actually Wang Zheng who thought he would see little Shi off later, and should

buy her some souvenirs.

“Little Shi, if you see something you like just say it, I’ll get it for you!” Wang Zheng rubbed little Shi’s head. It hadn’t been long since they met, but he really felt like he had a little sister. If he really had such an adorable little sister it would be a blessed thing.

“How rare, I’ve already been together with boss for half our lives, and he’s never given me a present.”

A square jawed and blunt person acting cute, little Shi couldn’t hold back her laughter if she wanted to.

Besides, on the way little Shi had gotten a lot of information out of Yan Xiaosu, especially that Wang Zheng’s gene score was unexpectedly just twenty eight. Little Shi’s first reaction was disbelief, but when she got confirmation from Wang Zheng himself, little Shi’s interest reached a peak, how was it possible?

Yan Xiaosu, that loudmouth, indeed revealed Wang Zheng’s embarrassments from when he wore open crotched pants.

“Little sister Shi, if you still have some younger or elder sister without boyfriend, there’s no harm in giving me an introduction. We’re all friends, don’t let your own fertile water flow into others’ field, eh.”

“Even though I have a younger cousin, you already have a goddess. Really unfortunate.”

“Ai, for one tree I have given up on the whole forest, I really am too faithful!” Yan Xiaosu habitually praised himself further.

“Boss, I’ll go settle some personal business. You stroll around first, call me later.”

Saying so he pressed a card into Wang Zheng’s hand, winked, then vanished with his big butt like a wisp of smoke.

Wang Zheng smiled knowingly, brothers for life, at this time he wouldn’t be polite.

“Your friend really is passionate.”

“He’s my best brother.”

“Zheng-gege, will you still remember me later?” Little Shi’s tone was suddenly melancholic, because she knew that the time to leave had finally come. Even if Wang Zheng didn’t mention it, she still had to go.

“I will. You’re the sole highlight in this time of darkness, even if I almost lost my family fortune in the process.” Wang Zheng smiled.

Little Shi also couldn’t help laughing, she really had no concept of money, but she knew it was different in Wang Zheng’s circumstances. In her heart she was very thankful, that day she

was already regretting her impulsiveness, until she met Wang Zheng.

Suddenly Wang Zheng's expression fell, abruptly throwing himself towards little Shi. At practically the same moment, with a cheng sound, a hole appeared in the ground.

"Sniper!" Little Shi cried out in fear, she had undergone anti-assassination training.

Wang Zheng used his body to shelter little Shi, pulling her along to hide in the crowd. Practically at the same time came another thump thump thump consecutive shots.

One of them grazed Wang Zheng's arm, blood splashing out. Wang Zheng held little Shi, urgently dashing in behind a billboard. Grandma's legs, they really came for little Shi.

"They're after me, you leave quickly!" At this moment little Shi wanted to push Wang Zheng away.

"You're my little sister, they'll need my permission if they want to touch you." Wang Zheng said indifferently.

"They're all professional killers, you don't know....." Little Shi said hurriedly, this wasn't something a student could handle.

The next moment Wang Zheng carried little Shi and leapt away, as the billboard was blasted into fragments. The entire block was

in chaos.

A panicked middle aged man in the crowd instantly charged at little Shi, a dagger glinting with cold light in his hand.

The opponent's movements were incomparably fierce and practiced, approaching little Shi's neck in practically an instant, without a trace of wasted motion.

Little Shi's eyes widened, blankly staring at the dagger thrusting at her. The killer's pupils contracted, the corner of his mouth revealing an incomparably excited expression, but a hand grabbed the knife blade, the killer stared distractedly, hand flicking. Barehanded against a bare blade, you really think you're made of diamond!

The sharp pain in his hand didn't even make Wang Zheng frown, the outcome would change with even a second of hesitation.

—— Leaning Landslide!

Boom~~~

The killer instantly shot out more than twenty meters as if struck by a cannonball.

Almost at the same time, there was another gunshot. Wang Zheng leaned over, and the bullet only grazed his stomach, but Wang Zheng pulled little Shi to burst into a shopping mall, hiding

in the corner of a store.

One hand held little Shi, one hand grabbed..... pink underwear. Damn, this was a lingerie store.

Little Shi silently leaned against Wang Zheng's chest. Originally she believed they would definitely die, but little Shi had already calmed down. It may be assumed that the imperial guards should already have reacted. If they still hadn't, they wouldn't be fit to be imperial guards.

Sirens blared outside, the whole block cordoned off by police, there were even SWAT among them, as well as a group wearing special livery, who were especially fast.

Hearing the sirens and shouts outside, the situation should be under control.

"Little Shi, next time don't wander off alone." Wang Zheng smiled slightly, the feeling of danger receding.

Before little Shi could speak up, the shop door was blown open, SWAT charging inside.

The two were tightly surrounded and brought outside. A noble and graceful woman was already leading a group of imperial guards to take charge of little Shi. From start to finish, the SWAT didn't give the two the chance to speak again.

Wang Zheng shrugged, tearing his clothes and bandaging his hand.

Yan Xiaosu pulled at Wang Zheng. The crowd wa chaotic, but worried about Wang Zheng he always hid nearby, “Bo..... Boss, what happened, damn, how come you’re injured?”

“It’s nothing, a scratch.”

“Little Shi?”

“Her family picked her up.”

“That girl wasn’t an ordinary person at first look, she was brimming with a wealthy air. Maybe even more than me. A pity, we should have asked for a reward.”

“Get lost, that’s my little sister, let me be a man for once.”

“Haha, boss, there’s always something to admire about you!”

Yan Xiaosu forcefully grabbed student Wang’s hand, gah, it’s injured!

Speaking of money hurts feelings, speaking of feelings hurts money, this was an old Yan family motto.

It seemed little Shi's family situation really was quite good, there were unexpectedly this many people mobilized when she went missing. But being wealthy wasn't necessarily a good thing, there were actually even killers looking to drop in.

Chapter 11 – You Really Don't Suit Him!

Little Shi, like the wind came in a hurry and left in a hurry, but this didn't change Wang Zheng's life. Training according to the prescribed order, waiting for the graduation proof to arrive. Wang Zheng found a part time job at the Shangri-La grand hotel. Dawnbreak School students working part time while studying was still a gold lettered promotion, let alone when the work didn't involve any technical qualifications.

Little Shi didn't contact him again either. Thinking about it, they didn't actually exchange contact information. Let alone when her family definitely wouldn't let her out after such a major incident.

Wang Zheng's life was still very rich. Unity Arts had displayed a frightful efficiency in that incident, the premonition of danger was quite accurate. Bonehead also always said that he was simply a natural warrior. His hand also recovered quickly. His body really was a lot stronger than an ordinary person's after undergoing Bonehead's remodelling.

If ordinary people experienced something like that they might have nightmares, but Wang Zheng actually faintly looked forward to it. He felt in his bones that he really was brimming with the hot blood of battle, thirsting for the battlefield!

Starting the music, this was the galactic charts' number one NOT AFRAID. Strength, courage, the hot blood of battle, it was what Wang Zheng liked the most.

Wang Zheng was busy exercising on his side, and Yan Xiaosu wasn't staying idle either. For the weekend, for the goddess' birthday party, Yan Xiaosu had been so busy the sky faded and earth darkened these few days. Preparing clothes, buying presents, inviting a modelling master to plan poses. In student Xiaosu's words, he would appear before the goddess in glittering golden light.

Wang Zheng withheld his opinion of this. If she liked him, she wouldn't stop because of his clothes. If she didn't……

Of course, beating down others was no good.

The weekend still arrived with Yan Xiaosu's expectations. These past days he unexpectedly hadn't even played CT, very rare. Early at dawn he took his old man's new model Arrowhead maglev car to go looking for Wang Zheng, and spent the whole day chattering on about his plans to show off. It seemed he really was quite nervous.

At five in the afternoon, the two arrived at Shangri-La grand hotel. Wang Zheng found it a bit unexpected, but still within reason. This was the most lavish hotel in the Asian region, it was said some major characters had checked in here, booking everything from the fiftieth floor and up. Originally the birthday party reservation was going to be cancelled, but for some reason, the other party didn't mind and rescheduled it again, this was also giving face to the Yue family.

Yan Xiaosu specially wore disguised platform shoes, bringing his height up to one seventy, "Boss, is my bow tie crooked?"

“Very awesome, go on!”

Yan Xiaosu by himself held a bouquet of ninety nine Milky Way Beauties and stepped onto the red carpet.

Entering the ballroom, it was already exceptionally bustling inside, but as soon as they entered they spotted Yue Jing and Ye Zisu. Yue Jing wore a white evening dress, a coral necklace around her spotless white long neck. This was her night, she was the princess here.

Ye Zisu wore a sky blue evening dress. Even though this was Yue Jing’s home ground, she had ways to draw eyes.

Close next to Yue Jing was an unusually imposing middle aged man, representative Yue Long, a true authority of the Asian region. At this banquet were not only youngsters, some friends and family of the Yue family had also come.

It really was a major event.

At the banquet, some youngsters in formal wear were already chatting, men and women both, all maintained grace and pride. The people qualified to come here clearly weren’t ordinary people.

Of course there were still some exceptions, these were all Yue Jing’s classmates, each and every one exposing admiring expressions. After all, this setting might be something they

couldn’t aspire to in their lifetime.

People, only death was equal. Even though they were fellow students, everyone inwardly understood that, if they came from a small family, everything was different.

Dreams were ample, reality skinny. If they could grab onto this classmate camaraderie, perhaps they really could look to Yue Jing for help later.

Today, Yue Jing had come to bask in admiration.

As she gazed towards the doorway, Yue Jing revealed a brilliant smile, and took the initiative to go to the door to greet them. This astonished some youngsters who were always hovering around her, and one after another they looked in that direction.

“Classmate Yue Jing, I wish you a happy birthday!” The always eloquent Yan Xiaosu was actually a bit tongue tied, promptly handing over the flowers in his hand.

But Yue Jing didn’t accept them.

“Ah, incredible, ninety nine Milky Way Beauties, this is quite expensive!”

“Haha, little sister yue Jing, who is this? A bit dusty, what era brought these things over?”

Yue Jing smiled slightly, motioning an attendant to take away the flowers, “Let me introduce everyone, this is my fellow student Yan Xiaosu. You should all know of the grandly famous Little Lucky Star sanitary napkin manufacturer, that’s his family’s business.”

The surrounding people looked distracted a moment, then burst into laughter, “Little Jing, when did your level fall to this state? No matter how approachable you are, people of this level aren’t qualified to come!”

Yue Jing still maintained a gentle smile, “We’re all fellow students, everyone who comes to participate is a guest. Next to him is Wang Zheng, the elite of our Dawnbreak, very prideful, coming here is giving us face, ordinarily he wouldn’t deign to acknowledge me.”

The more amiable Yue jing was, the more hurtful her words. Wang Zheng knew the invitation wasn’t well intentioned, but they were still fellow students, and he hadn’t expected Yue Jing to be this fierce.

“Dawnbreak’s elite? If you didn’t say it I would have thought he was an attendant, he really is dressed too casually.”

Wang Zheng shrugged indifferently. This was who he was, he didn’t feel the need to disguise himself.

Very soon another guest arrived, and nobody paid attention to

them. Yan Xiaosu was very frustrated. Even if he was even more stupid he knew that they were basically treating them as laughingstock.

Wang Zheng patted Yan Xiaosu, “Defeat is the mother of success. Come, come, we’ll eat to break even before going back!”

Yan Xiaosu fiercely swung his fist, “Grandma’s legs, the day will come when I snatch back this pride. What about Little Lucky Star, what about sanitary napkins, it’s inseparable from women!”

Wang Zheng gave a thumbs up. Could it be Yan Xiaosu’s ambition was to sell sanitary napkins all over the galaxy?

The two really were incompatible with a situation like this. Everyone here were so called upper class figures, even Yue Jing’s classmates were busy exchanging contact details. Knowing people when facing graduation, more friends meant more roads, let alone when just meeting these people was an honor in itself.

“Let alone other things, I’ve been working here so many days, but it’s the first time I try the food here. It’s really pretty good.” Wang Zheng ate unrestrained, it wasn’t necessary to make things difficult for himself.

Yan Xiaosu was also a natural optimist, and very soon he was eating happily. Cheh, those milky Way Beauties were really expensive, however much he ate was however much he got back.

The bustling scene here was unrelated to them, until the light dimmed, all the spotlights focusing on the central stage. A three meter tall birthday cake appeared, and in the surroundings echoed a happy birthday song, followed by applause. As for the two in the corner, they were already thrown beyond the topmost clouds.

Ye Zisu looked towards the fellows gorging themselves in the corner as if they were the only ones present. They really didn't understand Yue Jing, this great miss' temper wasn't such that she would leave it at that.

"Jingjing, if you have something you wish, everyone will help you achieve it!" The surrounding people all said.

Yue Long smiled and nodded, "Your uncles are all here today. Speak, we will help you achieve it."

Yue Jing smiled slightly, "Today I want to help someone achieve a wish. Even though he feels I'm shallow, we are after all fellow students. Right, Wang Zheng."

On hearing these words, everyone knew something was up. They all knew this great miss' character, they just didn't know what poor ghost had provoked her.

Yue Jing pointed, and light immediately flooded the corner. Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu immediately became the focus of everyone present, with nowhere to hide.

“Student Wang Zheng is the elite of our Dawnbreak Academy, I wish he could have the opportunity to take the exams for Wargod College. Every talented student in the Asian region should have the chance.”

A youngster in white evening gown smiled and stood, “Little Jing, anyone has the chance for an unbiased test. As the chairman of the Wargod Military College student union, this I can guarantee!”

“Senior Wu Jin, I know that, but Wang Zheng’s gene score is only twenty eight.”

Yue Jing smiled and spoke, but her gaze was filled with pride. Everyone immediately commented among themselves, was this a pig?

Wu Jin also looked distracted, the school still had standards. Let alone twenty eight, nobody under sixty would be tested..... Twenty eighth, this level really was unheard of, barely above animals.

Wang Zheng also hadn’t though Yue Jing would take it this far. It really was no joke that you could offend narrow villains, but never women. But this didn’t have the power to wound him.

The corners of Yue Jing’s mouth carelessly revealed a sneer. What she could stand the least was Wang Zheng’s calm expression believing himself infallible, poor ghost trash should know themselves, she didn’t believe she couldn’t break down that

inferior ego!

To the side Yan Xiaosu suddenly slammed his wineglass onto the table surface, “Fellow student Yue Jing, Wang Zheng still won’t look at you. Actually, don’t you feel we’re quite well matched? Menstruation and sanitary napkins, a natural couple, we’ll give birth to tiny lucky stars.”

(TL Note: Untranslatable pun, menstruation (月经) is a homonym to Yue Jing’s name.)

Yan Xiaosu spoke unusually sincerely, making his big eyes as watery logged as possible.

Everyone looked distracted a moment, menstruation..... Yue Jing, sanitary napkin?

Immediately everyone present burst into choked laughter. Actually, nobody wanted to laugh, but they really couldn’t hold it back,

Yue Jing’s complexion was ashen, “Get lost, trash like him isn’t suited to carry my shoe!”

“You really don’t suit to him!”

An angelic voice echoed. Everyone’s gazes turned to the doorway, where a line of azure guards rushed inside, all with a golden trident emblem on their chests.

Moving away from the center of the group of guards a radiant girl. This moment, the stars all paled. Faintly purple long hair elegantly coiled, so graceful, spotless like jade white skin a bit dazzling, features so beautiful it made all the girls present lower their heads, matched with peerless starry beautiful eyes, this was the first princess of the Aslan Empire, Aina Aslan!

The brightest star in the galaxy.

Yue Long and the others showed deferential smiles, bowing in greeting. This was giving them gargantuan face.

Aslan Empire, one of the nine great permanent member states of the Galactic Coalition, and also one of the top three nations in the Coalition in overall strength, famed as an elite empire. Her highness was just visiting Sol, and the Asian region was her last stop, only some minor incident had led to the press conference being postponed. Who would have thought that such a major character would actually appear here. Even though Yue Long was a representative, he wasn’t qualified to participate.

Chapter 12 – Soy Milk And Fried Breadsticks

Gazing at these people, Aina only nodded slightly. This moment she wasn't little Shi, but rather the first heir of the Aslan Empire. Not Earth, not Sol, but the focus of the Galactic Coalition.

Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu were also shocked. They had guessed that little Shi might be the child of a wealthy family, but this was still too exaggerated.

Yue Jing, this so-called princess, was a ground beetle in front of a true princess.

What was a ground beetle? A soft shelled tortoise!

Unable to withstand a single blow!

Gazing at Aina Aslan, Yue Jing opened her mouth, but no words came out.

But the princess paid no attention to her, instead walking directly towards Wang Zheng.

Their eyes met, and Wang Zheng exposed a brilliant smile. Friends didn't need to care about status.

The accompanying guards didn't care what place this was. Wherever the princess went was an Aslan diplomatic area.

Unrelated people were separated.

The princess extended a hand. Yue Long and the others were all stunned, the princess wouldn't do that even for the Asian region speaker……

"Today's little Shi is really beautiful, really smart!"

Aina smiled slightly, winking stealthily, then immediately returned to her princess demeanor, "The Asian region is the cradle of humanity, I really am very happy to be here, especially to meet a lot of new friends. Before coming I believed that only the Aslan Empire was elite, but Wang Zheng has let me experience my ignorance. He is the future pride of the Galactic Coalition!"

This assessment was high enough to alarm Heaven!

The whole banquet changed flavor. Yue Jing was dumped as thoroughly as menstruation. It had to be said that Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu had firmly made their mark.

These two were the princess' friends?

What was the connection here!

The princess' visit to the Asian region formally began.

The next day it was the lead story of every newspaper in the

Asian region. Of course the focus wasn't Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu, but rather her highness' compassionate image. The Aslan Empire had a system of power centralized under elites, and their diplomatic image was excessively unyielding, but had begun to change in recent years. The princess' compassionate diplomacy obtained very good results.

Of course Little Lucky Star sanitary napkins sold well, old Yan was so cheerful he couldn't hide it. To be able to be mentioned in relation to such major news was equal to the most major advertisement.

Yan Xiaosu was always like he was dreaming. He had never thought despair would one day through twists and turns suddenly end up like this.

Next the channels were practically all about the princess' appearance in the asian region.

Aina Aslan conquered Earth with beauty!

The most beautiful princess praised the Asian region, the Asian region looked towards rejuvenation!

The lingering Aslan princess was conquered by Asian culture!

The Aslan princess praised the Asian region's educational system, this was an advanced system that could match the Aslan Empire!

For a time, the entire Asian region hung in a royal whirlwind. Aina's every move and action became trends, star eye cosmetic lenses also became in vogue on a large scale, and at the same time even more people started to pay attention to Aslan culture and philosophy.

Of course the whole process maintained the highest level of security. The princess was gentle outside and firm inside, she wouldn't be frightened by some domestic terrorist actions. The more it was like this, the less she would yield!

At the final press conference, more than a thousand media outlets swarmed the Shangri-La grand hotel, cameras constantly flashing.

"Your highness, I'm from the Daily Times, may I ask whether you will come to the Asian region again?"

Aina smiled and nodded, "Yes, if there's an opportunity I will definitely come again, the beauty here is unforgettable."

"Your highness, I'm from the Financial Weekly, may I ask how you regard the continuously falling influence of Earth in the Galactic Coalition discourse, will the Aslan Empire launch any strategic cooperations with the Sol Federation?"

Watching the calm and unruffled little Shi on the monitor, Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu were both dumbstruck. They were just eating fried breadsticks dunked in soy milk.

“Boss, this really is that little Shi. Oh god, I should have asked for her autograph, it would definitely sell for a lot!” Yan Xiaosu gaped. That hair really wasn’t dyed, purple hair and star pupils were the symbols of the Aslan imperial family, but who would have believed it? Even if little Shi said it herself, nobody would have believed it.

Right now Aina was able to answer quickly and fluently, invulnerable, and the press conference proceeded quite smoothly.

“Your highness, I’m with the Daily Entertainment, I represent all the single men in the world to ask one question, what are your requests for your other half?”

When this question appeared, the whole press conference quieted down, rigidly watching the princess. The romance of this beautiful princess was undoubtedly the focus of the whole galaxy. A press officer was already walking over from the side to curb it, “I’m sorry, the princess won’t answer personal questions.”

Aian suddenly raised her hand, standing up, her face revealing a crafty smile, “One day, he will take me home, make me breakfast of fried breadsticks and soy milk, and softly call my name.”

Pfft……

Yan Xiaosu sprayed a mouthful of soy milk in Wang Zheng’s face, “Boss, you are my idol, no, you’re godlike!”

The press conference ended satisfactorily with thunderous

applause, especially the last answer. Fried breadsticks and soy milk was a local specialty of the Asian region, and this showed that the princess really understood them, winning the good impression of a lot of people. And along with the princess' endorsement, fried breadsticks and soy milk became the latest popular snack in the galaxy.

The princess set out on her way back home. Her visit to Sol had ended satisfactorily. The princess' beautiful and compassionate image had subdued the entire solar system, and also considerably softened the Aslan Empire's unyielding diplomatic image.

A week after the princess left, the enthusiasm of the news gradually faded. Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu also returned to their normal lives. Of course Yan Xiaosu would still brag from time to time, but basically nobody believed him. Even though there was a brief interlude at the birthday banquet, people just thought this was the princess "acting bravely in the face of injustice", teaching a tiny lesson on bullying.

Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu also formally graduated, one just as bad as the other. Worth congratulations was that Yan Xiaosu officially passed the entrance exam for the Wargod Military College interstellar business program. Wang Zheng energetically prepared to enlist.

"Ah, little Yu, you're too unbrotherly, you don't even show your shadow at the key moment!"

Yan Xiaosu grumbled, this fellow seemed to have gone missing.

Xie Yuxin, their other brother, but different from Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu. Xie Yuxin was a genius with a gene score over ninety, his achievements even more matchlessly outstanding. In the whole school he was the only one who was recruited to Wargod College, and moreover to the military command program, the cradle of officers.

This was the coexistence of handsome and wise, and he really was horribly handsome. Even though his expression was always distant and cold, schoolgirls still advanced courageously in waves.

Xie Yuxin placed an envelope on the table, “Wang Zheng, this is for you.”

“Damn you, don’t think a letter can make us forgive you. If i don’t give you a beating today I’ll take on your surname!” Yan Xiaosu grabbed it, but when he saw the letterhead he looked distracted.

“This is qualifications for Wargod Academy’s special entrance exam. I can do this much at least.” Xie Yuxin smiled slightly. He only ever smiled when together with Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu.

“Fuck, darling little Yuyu, I accused you wrongly, come, give your brother a hug.”

“How did you do it?”

“It’s nothing, I sat in front of the headmaster’s house for half a month. Originally I thought it would take a bit longer.”

Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu looked at each other, then gave a thumbs up. Brother, you’re shining, nobody would have thought this grimly handsome guy would play the rogue so awesomely.

“Wang Zheng, I’ve always felt that gene score is just a reference, your strength is enough and spare to enter Wargod College.”

Xie Yuxin said. Actually, when the three first met they had been at odds. Xie Yuxin was the pride of Dawnbreak, but Wang Zheng had let him realize the meaning of heavens beyond heavens. His learning basically wasn’t something he could compare to, just that he didn’t score so well on exams.

Wang Zheng was also helpless. Because old merchant said that he had to maintain his score at passing, unless some day he wasn’t there.

“Come, congratulations in advance!”

“Haha, Boss will definitely pass, we three brothers will rule the galaxy!”

The three raised their beers. This was just a youthful joke, but legends all began from jokes……

“Headmaster Gute, you know I’m very busy, I still have a lot of

experiments to do!”

In the office was a spirited and healthy silver haired old man, this was Wargod Military College’s twenty third headmaster, general Gute.

The other person was a woman, seemingly twenty something, but still a top scientist on Earth. At thirteen she obtain dual doctorates in space and physics, a genius physicist with a gene score of ninety eight.

“Cough cough, doctor Xiao Fei, there’s a special student who might require your examination, reportedly he’s very talented in regards to physics.”

The doctor in front of him gave even Gute a headache. Geniuses were practically all monsters, especially in space physics research.

“Really, I hope you’re not wasting my precious time.”

Gute nodded. Xie Yuxin was his grandson, and that little bastard actually sat in front of his house every day. Gene score really was just a reference, but by unwritten rules it was actually the first criterion, and until now there still hadn’t been too large discrepancies, it could also greatly raise efficiency.

But if it seemed there really was a talent, then it couldn’t be missed.

Outside the office, Wang Zheng was also preparing. He didn't know what the test was.

"Enter."

When Wang Zheng saw the examiner he looked distracted. It was a female teacher at most a few years older than him..... Ah, if all the current teachers were this beautiful, it really was a benefit.

Xiao Fei pointed to a chair, "Sit. Firstly, I am exceptionally disapproving of entering via back channels, I hope you aren't wasting my time. Let's get to the point, tell me your thoughts on space."

Xiao Fei was very proud. Originally something like this didn't sit well with her, but the headmaster was after all the headmaster, she couldn't refuse to give him a bit of face, doubly so when it related to her funding.

Wang Zheng put his thoughts in order. This question was too wide-ranging, but it was actually something he had debated with old merchant at length.

"I personally believe that space technology should be the main direction of mankind's development, but this depends on the foundation of the space theoretical framework. At present the mainstream space theory is a bit one sided..... Curved velocity theory is just a shallow understanding of space, humanity's future definitely lies in the direction of spatial jumps and folding. I believe that some parts of parallel space theory can be examined,

and specially merged with the current space system. Some parts of such a theory are a bit advanced, but some can be researched right now."

Wang Zheng didn't mind, speaking at length. It had become a dispute between him and old merchant, and back then they had argued it until they were red faced. Old merchant was too stubborn, disdainful of the idea of theory "declining", but Wang Zheng still felt it was the best fit.

Chapter 13 – God Pilot

Xiao Fei was initially full of disdain. To start off with a speech on theory, that was biting off more than he could chew. Gradually, though, Xiao Fei was unable to speak, and near the end, her interest had been ignited. When Wang Zheng finished theorising, Xiao Fei was motionless.

“What did you say your name was?”

“Wang Zheng, reporting!”

“Very good, Wang Zheng! You will be enrolling into the Physics Department!” Xiao Fei, suppressing her excitement, finally encountered an enlightened mind! To a genius, the most depressing thing was to give lectures to a group of pigs everyday.

Wang Zheng stared blankly. “Teacher, I have come to take the exam for the Mecha Department.”

Xiao Fei stared blankly. “Out of the question! You are naturally a scientist.”

Wang Zheng scratched his head. Where was this singing coming from?

Xie Yuxin had indeed recommended the Physics Department because Wang Zheng’s understanding really was quite original.

After pondering a moment, Wang Zheng stood up and bowed deeply. “Teacher, thank you for your time, but I genuinely wish to become a soldier.”

“Hold on! Don’t leave. I’ll go find the old man and consult him. You will wait for me to contact you; you’re not allowed to move!”

Wang Zheng was also somewhat puzzled. He had only randomly said a few trivial theories, yet he still passed?

In the headmaster’s office, Xiao Fei had already slammed her hand upon the table.

“Headmaster, this person is a rare physics genius, he must remain here!”

“Haha, but doesn’t he want to enter the Mecha Department?” Gu Te laughed.

“Old man, don’t argue with me! If it were not for the fact that you are in charge, I wouldn’t care what you say. He will have to enter the Physics Department!” Xiao Fei resolutely stated.

Gu Te faintly smiled. “To settle this matter will be difficult. Hmph! Even as the Headmaster, I cannot act recklessly.”

Xiao Fei clenched her teeth. “You win! Speak your terms, but you cannot reduce the budget!”

“Haha, Doctor Xiao. No one would dare change the budget. Alright! You merely need to increase your physics lessons by two!”

The biggest headache for Xiao Fei was giving lectures to a group of idiots pretending to understand without actually knowing anything, so she only taught small classes. However, her subject was very popular and was also the Wargod College’s signature class.

“Deal!”

“Ha ha! Then this won’t be complicated. We’ll grant him Mecha Department qualifications, but he must complete the strict training program. As far as the Physics matter, you are the Director. It’s your decision.”

Gu Te was beaming with joy. This was what was known as killing two birds with one stone.

Leaving the Headmaster’s office, Xiao Fei was immediately aware she was fooled. This old fox wouldn’t raise wages, yet he increased her workload.

Just like that, Wang Zheng became a unique enrollment among Wargod Military Academy students.

Leaving the Wargod College enrollment office, Wang Zheng still had a sense of being in a dream.

Gazing into the distant blue skies, he saw a flock of wild geese spread their wings and soar. He, Wang Zheng, would also be like this one day!

Opening the enrollment details, a series of numbers astonished his heart.

Tuition fee, twenty thousand!

GOD! This was plain robbery, ah!

This amount of money truly gave Wang Zheng a headache. Ah! Even if he left school for a month and washed ten thousand dishes a day, it wouldn’t be enough.

Weng Zheng checked his balance. Over the past few days, he had spent almost all of his money. He had a hundred dollars at most...

Weng Zheng opened his eyes wide. The Skylink displayed that his balance was 683 dollars!

GOD!

Where did it come from? After checking the transaction history, it turned out that a few days ago, there was a remittance of five

hundred dollars from CT!

Wang Zheng immediately searched for a moment. CT had a payment system, It was no wonder those experts were so well off; it turned out they could earn money!

This indeed appeared to be killing two birds with one stone.

Wang Zheng decided a plan in his head!

Originally, he was going to sell himself, but now he thought of a solution. Where there was a will, there was a way!

To battle, youngster!

Brothers Net Cafe.

The boss enthusiastically brought Wang Zheng into the VIP room. Yan Xiao Su hadn't been visiting too often lately. That birthday banquet had helped Yan Xiao Su understand a few things. Although things might have appeared happy and merry on the outside, his heart had been stirred. Whenever he had free time, he would accompany his father to events and sell sanitary towels!

Men must have some experience in order to mature.

Some women would always complain that good men had already gone extinct from this world.

However, what they didn’t know was that the bad men had all been raised by them.

Infatuation would lead to ruthlessness and anger.

As soon as Wang Zheng logged into CT, a bunch of messages exploded open. There were challenges, inquiries, and even some that asked for guidance. He had become quite famous after those three battles.

Actually, there was a lot of discussion about Skeleton in the forums. Carlos had already publicly declared that this wasn’t his alt. Although he had that kind of hobby, it was only towards Dragon God 007, that Dragon God Ma Xiao.

If that was really true, then the Dragon God’s speculations really had been overturned.

Numerous people began paying attention to Skeleton. As soon as his portrait lit up, everyone began patiently waiting for him to begin.

Wang Zheng started the matchmaking process and, not too long after, an opponent had appeared.

His ID was “Indisputable Highway Tyrant” with a Wild Beast Type 3.

Wang Zheng was still using Wargod No.1, equipped with a titanium blade.

Indisputable Highway Tyrant's Wild Beast laughed. This was his hundredth battle, and his win rate was nearly fifty percent. He couldn't be considered a rookie anymore. This Skeleton had some fame in the community; even he had watched the video. However, he was still doubtful. A Wargod No.1 being able to withstand the assault of a Wild Beast Type 3 simply made no sense.

He picked the Common Arena!

The so called Common Arena was just as its name implied; it didn't have any complex terrain or obstacles in it.

Would the other party accept?

Skeleton agreed almost instantly.

Wang Zheng didn't know that numerous players were paying close attention to their choice of arena. After Wang Zheng confirmed the other party's circumstances, all of the newcomers in the forums began to boil.

So domineering and arrogant!

Without any obstacles, how was the Wargod No.1 supposed to deal with the Wild Beast Type 3's attacks?

It seemed that last time really was an accident. Right now, Skeleton could be considered a small star, so his opponent definitely wouldn't treat him lightly. Faced with the heavily armored Wild Beast Type 3, what could a Brittleskin possibly do?

In a flash, the officials had already handed out advertisement fliers.

A marvel had occurred by chance. Brittleskin against a tank in the Common Arena!

Over five hundred paying customers came to watch the battle in a flash. There were even some people watching from the sidelines.

Two mechs slowly appeared on top of the arena.

Skeleton and his Wargod No.1 against Highway Tyrant's Wild Beast Type 3.

"Hey, Skeleton, I don't care if you're a sockpuppet. Today is the day you will lose! Don't blame big brother. If you want to blame someone, blame your pretentiousness!

Highway Tyrant began taunting as soon as he opened the public channel.

However, Skeleton was still as silent as before. The battle begins!

The number of spectators for this battle had already exceeded seven hundred! This was already pretty good for the rookie area.

The Wild Beast Type 3, a rhinoceros class beast type mech, had first-class striking power, fierce defence, and mediocre agility. However, in this kind of open arena without any obstacles, it only had to charge the Brittleskin and instantly turn it into scrap metal.

The Wild Beast Type 3 roared and began charging at the Wargod No.1 as soon as the match started. The Highway Tyrant was shouting in the channel. He had never been this attentive before.

To dodge or not to dodge?

Everyone was asking this question at the moment. In the arena, it was clear that Skeleton's skills were quite good. He was able to use Arc Slide Step to evade the Wild Beast Type 3's attacks, but it was impossible to evade in such a narrow arena.

Wargod No.1 didn't move!

Even though Wild Beast's acceleration was slow, once it started dashing, it had terrifying top speed. This type of speed would place a heavy burden on the pilot's performance.

The Wild Beast Type 3 was only ten meters away from the Wargod. This time, it would be useless to Arc Slide because you would also need to utilize high speed inertia.

In a moment, Wild Beast's attack would be coming!

Destruction in only a split second!

Boom...

The entire live broadcast room was in absolute silence. Immediately after, intense applause burst out, shaking the heavens and earth.

GOD!

Skeleton WIN!

The Wild Beast Type 3 mech exploded. Highway Tyrant gazed blankly at the screen, completely unable to believe what just happened moments ago.

This wasn't an accident, and neither was it a miracle. For Skeleton, this was just a battle.

Wang Zheng was indifferent to this matter. It was just that... The Rubik's Cube didn't have any sort of reaction.

Confused, he pondered it for a moment. This type of battle didn't require any type of skill, so it couldn't be considered as gaining any new understandings.

Wang Zheng had discovered recently that training himself would also upgrade his battle energy. However, if he slacked off a bit, the battle energy he had stored up would also fade away.

Without a decent opponent, there was no point to battling.

The Rubik's Cube really was like a criticizing elder. It was really hard to satisfy it. Furthermore, he was a special recruit. Even though he had entered the college from a backdoor, he would be kicked out and sent home if he wasn't satisfactory.

Anyway, he would go to the arena whenever he had time. Besides, Wang Zheng also found it embarrassing to use Yan Xiao Su's room. Even blood brothers had to settle their debts with each other.

After paying for his own internet fees, Wang Zheng decided to get a second job. After all, two hands preparing was better than one. At the very least, his living and internet expenses would be paid for.

Wang Zheng left in a leisurely and carefree manner, causing the forums to explode into discussion.

Hacks?

That was clearly impossible. His opponent couldn't comprehend what had just happened! How could a Wargod No.1 possibly bear

the direct attack of a Wild Beast Type 3?

The forum was even more heated. There were already more than five thousand people analyzing the battle video.

Although the officials hadn't come out yet, the experts among the spectators already began commentating.

Wargod No.1 and the Wild Beast Type 3 were only in contact for a split second, but in that split second, Wargod had adjusted the angle it received the attack at so that it only had one fifth of its full power! Before the impact was fully transmitted, the Wild Beast Type 3 was drawn in by the tilt and thrown. It was almost like flipping over a turtle. Its underside wasn't protected by the energy shield, so with its underside exposed now, the Wargod No.1 was able to cut through it with its titanium blade like flowing water.

The players were like silent crows and peacocks after watching the video. Comments about the skillful control exhibited were already being submitted.

Even the military admitted to the weak point in the attacks of the Wild Beast Type 3. However, due to the fleeting openings to exploit this weakness, it was basically impossible to take advantage of. Even if anyone was able to take advantage of the brief opening, the mech pilot would still need to execute the proper movements to take advantage of it. Therefore, it was a weakness in theory but was practically negligible in actual combat.

The Wild Beast Type 3 was a mass produced mech, which was

commonly used in the military.

However, it had been completely demolished in CT. This was textbook level timing used to defeat the opponent!

Regardless of whether they were veterans or rookies, they had all roared, ‘Now this is an expert!’

With his tyrannical control, he was able to take advantage of an opening that was revealed for less than one second! If he was just a bit slower, the Wargod No.1 would have been torn apart. But he actually had this kind of domineering confidence and cool-headedness!

God Pilot!

A God Pilot had appeared in the rookie area!

A super soldier had emerged!

Skeleton was rebelling against the gods! Could this be the dawn of a new age?

Chapter 14 – Ye Zisu's Invitation

The Novice Arena had never before been bustling with this much noise and excitement. Experts would sometimes open up alternate accounts for fun, but nobody would play very seriously because sooner or later, they would be discovered and scorned. Not only that, but the Novice Arena's equipment also had limitations, along with the fact that opponents got stronger each matchup. Even experts could screw up, so no one would take it seriously.

The forums were exploding. All kinds of guesses were already made, however many opinions were still changing. Explaining his style, there was truly nothing special about it appearing to match known Diamond players.

Four successive victories! The excitement was only growing much greater!

Naturally, there were not few with a detached point of view. This sort of thing appeared over time quite often. Only, many would just as soon fall from grace, or people would seek out their matching sockpuppet counterpart. It was simply a question of time.

Furthermore, this guy's techniques were very underhanded, focusing completely on close quarters combat. His long range capabilities were close to nil, and thus was a weakness which could be exploited.

With basic mecha existed limitations, but many outstanding

mecha did not have these limitations.

Still, all this controversy over student Wang Zheng had nothing to do with him. What he cared about was whether his earnings this time would exceed the online fee, or else he would have lost big time. Especially, since this times battle did not provide him with even a tiny bit of battle energy. Hopefully, his luck would be better next time.

Solon, Vice President of CT Earth region, was primarily in charge of Asia and the rookie section's performance. In CT, as they were considered unimportant, newbies' affairs weren't even comparable to trash in the higher areas.

If there were no outstanding achievements, then there wouldn't be promotions. No need to even talk about the future. He wasn't stupid. He used his utmost effort to unearth new talents, such as searching through universities, etc. He even invited diamond rank experts to pretend they were newbies, but none of it worked. A diamond class expert wouldn't stay in the lower levels just for a bit of money, not to mention that it was below their status. Most importantly, all of them were, without exception, exposed by the players.

Until, this guy with the Skeleton ID appeared before his eyes on the big screen, displaying his four bouts. Solon was already 55 years old this year. He had a thorough understanding of how intensely competitive this CT company could be. He was already closely approaching retirement, but if he could not seize the light from this small hole, then the chances of him maintaining his position would become questionable.

Regarding CT, Solon believed himself to be a highly experienced specialist. What sort of experts had he seen? However, Skeleton's four bouts nevertheless shook him deeply. Solon watched the replays again and again, his heart thumping like mad.

Would it be better to grab this fleeting opportunity or not?

He was aware that his competition was waiting for things to go wrong. Once a mistake was made, they would immediately attack that opening! However, if he kept staying on defense, the result would cause him to give up his position.

Would this work?

Solon had already spent a full day and night analyzing the data. He did not watch for the results, four successive victories could be found anywhere, but this kind of detailed execution, this kind of absolute confidence, was not something an average person could achieve.

Solon had determined two things: This man was a actually a rookie, while also being an expert!

An old hand would inadvertently exude familiarity to battle and naturally take short cuts, but this individual did not.

As for this expert, it was quite easy to determine, some movements could only be done with excellent physical condition.

This ability was a requirement to walk the distance.

CT was easy to start, to play wantonly. However, to obtain proficiency, especially to attain a certain height, one's body must similarly ascend the path to the highest peak. Granted, while there didn't exist the difficulty of being a genuine Mech Warrior, there were still seven to eight shared degrees of similarity.

Ace pilots were absolutely masters of CT, and experts of CT had a fifty percent chance of becoming top-notch pilots. That is also why the top experts of CT were almost all there because of military school.

Is this person my opportunity?

Turning off his monitor, Solon could hear his own heartbeat, thump...

Solon abruptly slapped the desk, turning on his Skylink. "Publicity Department, tomorrow morning at 9 o'clock, we will be holding a meeting. Everyone must be present!"

Shutting off his Skylink, Solon was once again immersed within the darkness...

After graduation, everyone once again started their journeys. Regarding Wang Zheng, Yan Xiaosu, and Xie Yuxin, change occurred with their objectives in life.

Three people gathered inside the Dawn High School coffee shop. Quite fortunately, these three people were joining the Wargod Military College. Apart from Xie Yuxin, who was a guaranteed case, Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu went through many twists and turns.

Yan Xiaosu's father had solemnly donated a large sum of money to the school so Yang Xiaosu could enter the Interstellar Trade and Commerce Department. The important thing was that Yan Xiaosu was finally taking things seriously. That banquet from before had truly struck him hard. He didn't even play CT anymore. Instead, he spent all of his time studying. Dignity wasn't something given by others!

Xie Yuxin's goal was very clear cut, to become a warship captain, a ranking Sol Federation officer.

Wang Zheng's goals were even more clear. Since childhood, he had wished to become a Mech Warrior, and met many road bumps along the way. Yet, he finally could have his wish fulfilled.

"Boss, Little Yu, I'm going to make a visit to Mars with my father tomorrow. I'll be back before school starts. In the future, they will say that the world's richest man, an ace mech pilot, and a General Commander had all walked together!"

Yan Xiaosu raised his coffee cup, yet no one acknowledged him. "Bah! You guys don't even give me face. What are your plans for the summer then?"

“A part time job, training, just the usual. Little Yu, what about you?” Wang Zheng was actually really grateful to Xie Yuxin. That fellow had been ice cold the whole day, but he was actually a really warmhearted individual.

“I also have some business to attend to. I’m going to go increase my knowledge and experience, to reach an even higher level. Asia isn’t the end, neither is Earth, it is the Milky Way that is our world!”

The three of them longed for the future. Earth was simply too small for them. The outside world was so incomparably vast. They couldn’t even imagine being foolish enough to spend the rest of their lives in this place. They needed to explore the unknown.

After humanity began navigating the sea of stars, many great adventurers had been born. They were like the great explorers of ancient times, such as Magellan. The unknown drove humanity’s thirst for knowledge, allowing humanity to take large strides forward. Naturally, these three youngsters were not resigned to stupidly staying on Earth for their whole life.

Yan Xiaosu was clearly aware that if he didn’t want to sell sanitary towels for his whole life, then he would have to change himself. Wang Zheng and Xie Yuxin’s target was clear, but the fact was, Xie Yuxin and Yan Xiaosu had advised Wang Zheng that without a good genetic rating, becoming a mech pilot was not a good choice. It was exhausting, dangerous and even harder to make it big.

The Space Fleet had higher pay and rank than those of grounds

troops; it naturally suited Wang Zheng's character.

Yan Xiaosu and Xie Yuxin set foot on their journey. They would certainly enjoy the boundless starry skies, providing them with new experiences. Wang Zheng was happy for them, but he had his own matters to attend to.

Still, without these two people by his side, Wang Zheng really was a bit lonely.

On his Skylink, there were two messages. They definitely weren't from Xiaosu or Little Yu; Besides them, did he have any other friends?

The two messages in his inbox were rather unexpected. One was in the inbox, which he had used when registering for CT. When he opened the message, a person appeared.

"Player Skeleton, hello! I am Solon, the Vice President of Earth's CT region. I hope to chat with you tomorrow."

Wang Zheng shrugged, keh! Who would have such a poor moral compass, damnable swindler. Regarding this type of person, Wang Zheng would not be polite, sending back a single character(滚) – Get lost!

Very much without care, deleted. This type of person ought to be arrested, and made to suffer a beating!

The other message was even more unexpected, it was surprisingly from Ye Zisu.

“Student Wang Zheng, I wish to speak with you. Do you have time?”

The image of Ye Zisu’s expression, contrary to what you might expect, was sincere. Only, Wang Zheng’s first reaction was trap.

He hadn’t seen Yue Jing since that occasion at the Shangri-La Hotel. If they had any sort of destiny with each other, then it would be an ill-fated relationship. Ye Zisu wasn’t as extreme as Yue Jing, but did he have any sort of good impression of her?

Yet, since the other party took the initiative to invite him, there didn’t seem to be any reason to fear.

“Time and place?”

After replying to the message, just as Wang Zheng prepared to take a strong bath, his Skylink immediately rang back.

“This afternoon at 2 o’clock. The school’s lakeside pavilion.” Ye Zisu’s reply was brief.

This location, could it be she was trying to handle him by throwing him into the lake?

Wang Zheng shrugged indifferently. He didn't want to have a grudge with a girl unless he absolutely had to. The issue from before was a bit cruel, but because Yue Jing was too excessive, he didn't care much for her or Ye Zisu anymore.

Wang Zheng arrived at his destination at 1:50 in the afternoon. It was here that he got to know Xiaosu until they were best friends. however, he had rarely visited this place afterwards.

He hadn't expected Ye Zisu to have already arrived. She was dressed in a simple white t-shirt today without any sort of LOGO and a short blue skirt. Her hair was simply tied and flowed onto her chest. It had to be said that this outfit was very comfortable.

Seeing Wang Zheng, Ye Zisu smiled. "I didn't think you were going to show up."

Wang Zheng laughed and said, "Regardless of what anyone says, we're still classmates. At worst, you'll throw me into the lake. Just remember to fish me out if you do."

Ye Zisu stared blankly, before showing a knowing smile. Replying, she bowed to Wang Zheng. "Sorry, it was the nearest location. I apologize to you."

Wang Zheng waved in dismissal. "It's really nothing. There's nothing too wrong with these kinds of matters. We don't even have any relations."

Ye Zisu shook her head. “I’m also to blame. Little Jing is actually quite proud and the matter this time has hit her quite hard. She already transferred schools. However, we’re still classmates. I’m also a freshmen in the Mech Department at the War God Academy. We’re still fellow students, Wang Zheng.”

Ye Zisu extended a fair skinned little hand expectantly towards Wang Zheng and in return, Wang Zheng lightly grasped it. Although he didn’t get along with her, the Old Merchant had told him before to be careful of sweet speech and honeyed words, as well as the darkness of the world. Today, Ye Zisu was considered an example of a goddess, but what if he was wrong?

“What? You know I passed the entrance exam for the Mech Department?”

Ye Zisu humbly smiled while she played with her hair which was flowing in the wind. “I don’t know if you believe me or not, but I’ve always felt that you could become a Mech Warrior. Regardless of whether or not you entered the Wargod Academy. Never has there been a man who has trained so ceaselessly for 4 years, regardless of rain or shine.”

Wang Zheng stared blankly. “How did you find this out?”

“Haha, you’re too single minded. Those who train in the mornings all know of you.”

Ye Zisu insisted on additional training and had noticed Wang Zheng long ago. She recalled that during one day, there was a

torrential rain so she stayed in the dorms and rested. She thought that no one would possibly go out and train, yet with her binoculars, she spied Wang Zheng loudly training in the rain. She still remembered his smile in that torrent of rain.

Chapter 15 – Kill Them, Even When They're Thin!

"Heh heh, I did not expect you to also be joining the Mech Department."

The number of female pilots certainly wasn't small. Among the elite human races, there was also a special position for female pilots in the mech combat troops, such as in the Aslan Empire, but on Earth there were still relatively few.

"It seems you forgot what our family business is." Chuckled Ye Zisu.

The Ye family possessed the largest component production and maintenance corporation, OMG, for mechs in the Asian Region.

"Do you have any business to take care of during summer vacation?"

"Not really any business, just a part time job, training, and waiting for classes once school starts." Wang Zheng had no reason to avoid his circumstances. In any case, what was there to keep secret?

"Yeah? I too wish to practice. If you have any interest in coming to OMG, it may be possible for you to gain exposure to mech assembly." Ye Zisu blinked, a twinkle in her eye. She knew this was an offer Wang Zheng would be unable to refuse.

Actually, wages were not important. She was very clear regarding Wang Zheng's fondness of mechs.

Persisting for a single day or month, both were things that could be accomplished. However, ignoring fun things for 4 years was inconceivable. Even though Ye Zisu made great strides to inherit the family business, since she was a girl, her appearance, parties, and window-shopping was still essential.

If it were not for her paying attention, how could she possibly remember the name of Wang Zheng, who shockingly had a gene score of 28.

"If that were possible, then I would take advantage of it. Thank you."Wang Zheng really wanted to get in contact with real mechs.

Ye Zisu smiled, "Don't mention it. Consider it an apology and we'll call ourselves even."

Wang Zheng suddenly felt that girls were pretty good if they were kindhearted.

An internship at OMG would be much better than part time work at a restaurant.

OMG's Beijing Headquarters. Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu were already working there for 3 days, and no one there knew who she was. These two people were viewed as interns, and this eldest

daughter of the family truly came here to learn.

This location possessed all kinds of mech analytic diagrams and components. Its primary task was to research and repair. This meant to sufficiently understand mechs, Wang Zheng had to admit, this opportunity was the best place to do it.

Wang Zheng was in the Testing Department, so he came into a lot of contact with machines, so of course he couldn't not get dirty and greasy. Ye Zisu was in the Design Management Department. It had already been one week. Wang Zheng had a very fulfilling time here.

"Boy, have you finished wiping it clean yet? You need to move more swiftly, there's still a lot of work left!"

A 60 year old man walked in, hearty and full of vigor. Wang Zheng completed his bitter work everyday from early in morning to late in the evening. Sometimes there would be overtime, involving all kinds of filthy work.

"With me working, you can be at ease, Old Luo. This Devil Wolf Type V has been wrecked this much, is it still possible to repair it?"

"There doesn't exist a mech that I, Luo Mu, can't fix. Come, come over and take a break."

Wang Zheng slid down the mech and went over, "Wow, our Asia Region's equipment is so unbelievably bad! I hear the Moon Fleet

no longer has any of the Four Basic models."

"Boy, don't look down on the Four Basic mech models. However, these mech are the origin of those so called advanced things. They merely add few new weapons to the foundation. Many frivolous changes without much deviation from the original. As long as you master these 4 mech types, the others are a piece of cake."

Luo Mu was quite arrogant, but Wang Zheng knew this stubborn old man knew his stuff.

Wang Zheng quite suited Luo Mu's temperament, unlike the usual youngsters who had high standards with little ability. Watching him, he could tell his love of mechs came from his heart, not to mention that he was also hard working. In the week that he worked here, whatever work Luo Mu assigned him he would do with precision. Therefore, if there was time, Luo Mu wouldn't prevent him from exploring, and would thoroughly introduce him to anything regarding mechs and equipment. If one was truly interested in mechs, there was no better place than this.

This week, Wang Zheng was sleeping in the warehouse. The entire holistic designs of the mechs weren't too hard a thing for him, and he was always the best in terms of stereoscopic diagrams, since comparing and analyzing the components in the warehouse was the best place possible to understand mechs.

In the blink of an eye, a week had gone by. Wang Zheng was thrown out by Old Lou. The weekend ought to be for fun. Youngsters shouldn't stress too much, there was still plenty of time for studies.

In fact, Wang Zheng was quite reluctant to leave his complimentary work meals. This saved him a considerable amount of money.

Brothers Net Cafe. The boss, seeing Wang Zheng, became a bit tearful. Ever since Xiaosu gave up CT, he'd lost a big spender.

For the boss to give Wang Zheng a free drink, this was not easy.

In CT, it was not only possible to do battle, there also existed an active community. In fact, it supplied players an interactive, imaginary, one of a kind world for people to gossip, browse the forums, and make new friends. Still, Wang Zheng had no interest in this, and directly entered matchmaking.

It wasn't easy for him to allocate his time to fight a match, he was hoping for an impressive adversary. Internet fees could not be wasted!

Student Wang prayed.

At this moment, a crowd of people were fighting 5v5 with seething enthusiasm and there was a din of cacophony in their channel. Suddenly, the dominant party surprisingly threw the match. What exactly was going on!?

"Skeleton's online!"

“Ah! Who is this guy? Is he very famous?”

“I heard that he is a BUG expert. How about we check it out?”

“What level of achievement can someone in the Novice Arena reach?”

In the rookie area, Skeleton’s name was extremely resounding. Disappearing for a week not only didn’t reduce it’s impact, it instead increased expectations. Players at this level were mostly lacking experts.

Solon these days was sick with headaches at his mistake. He sent out that message, having the opposite effect, scaring away the recipient. As soon as he heard that Skeleton was online, his headache immediately went away.

“Promptly, send out an official notice. Use my A level public advertisement!” Solon slapped the table and stood up.

“Boss, this won’t go well if the Inspector gets hold of this information…”

“Do it now!”

“Yes, boss!”

The staff members hastily rushed outside. Student Wang was

eagerly waiting to be matched with an opponent. Why was this taking so much time? Could it be people were playing less these days?

Less?

The forums already exploded! There was a huge red headline: Skeleton Appeared. The Internet Water Army already started posting like they were on a rampage. The attention paid to this match had already multiplied many times. Other than the newbies watching the match, it had also caught the attention of some experts. Despite the fact that it was probably someone's alt, since as of yet no one had found the corresponding player. However, as the battles progressed, he shouldn't be able to continue hiding.

Of course, if he lost, many would wouldn't find it necessary to look for him.

Ding Ding

Student Wang's opponent was finally revealed.

Due to his 4 game winning streak, even though his accumulated points were low, he was matched with a very strong adversary.

ID: Solitary Crimson Flag – Wargod No. 1

Record: Fifteen wins, 1 draw, 1 loss. The reason he lost a match because his win rate was so high, he was finally matched against a high level mech. There was a very large disparity between a high quality mech's ability, causing the loss.

There was no doubt that this was someone's alt. Although he did not openly admit it, everyone already guessed that it was the Diamond Ranked, Desolate Corps' solo-mid player Justin. After losing that one match, this alt also disappeared so they didn't expect that it would appear at this time.

The stage was lit up, so now everything was very clear. Some people couldn't bear to keep looking, the way this alt rolled his eyeballs made people garner intense hatred for him. A few years ago this was very fashionable, but nobody would do this now. Whoever did it now, there wouldn't be a scarcity of experts coming to beat him up.

They had actually met.

Solon’s heart sank. He really didn’t want for Skeleton to prematurely encounter such a powerful adversary, but this was not something within his control.

It was clear that this Solitary Crimson Flag really was Justin. This guy liked to plant flags in the enemy’s fortress after defeating them, his personality similarly allowed him to brag about it everywhere.

A solo player in the Europe Region’s Top Ten. Justin was displayed on the screen, the corners of his mouth revealing a complacent smile. Fuck your granny! He couldn’t stand seeing others show off. Of course, he himself was an exception.

Justin had a reputation for a comprehensive list of violent techniques. He was able to utilize the formidable power of a human type mech to its pinnacle. For him, the mech was the same as the human body, he was very flexible in these terms.

A fearless rampage with a single titanium alloy cutlass. In battle, everyone’s slogan was: Don’t trifle with Justin in a melee fight. To shoot him is the Way of the King.

The reason that he appeared today was because this guy called Skeleton was acting as lofty as he was. Wargod No. 1, titanium cutlass, he had already played this since two years ago. In the end, he was still intercepted. This time it’s his turn to cut off Skeleton.

Naturally, he would never admit it.

Skeleton VS Solitary Crimson Flag.

This was going to be interesting. Both individual pricks meet each other in the end. Who was going to be more fierce?

It was rapidly given an official announcement: Who is the true Wargod?

The click-through rate rapidly surmounted 100,000. On one hand, it was on account of Skeleton, on the other hand, it was because of Red Flag, who had taken the web by a storm two years ago.

“It must be Justin! Ah, it isn’t possible for someone more popular than him to exist!”

“This will be a spectacle! This Justin is in the European Region’s Big 10 List! Even if you’re unable to win, you still ought to get exposure!”

“Unable to win, are you kidding me!? Justin is his best in a 1v1. The only reason his rank isn’t higher is because he’s too unrestrained and fierce. If they were to pick by ability, he would definitely be in the Earth Region’s top 10!”

“Forget it. No more talking nonsense. I’ll pay money to see this match!”

Ma Xiao also stopped training, a group of teammates grouped

over. “Captain, is that Solitary Crimson Flag Justin?”

“Correct. It’s not a secret in this circle, only he doesn’t know that the account who beat him up is a substitute, haha.”

Ma Xiao said, “This kid was too cocky. During that period of time, Crimson Flag truly caused too much clamor. Even if his equipment was a bit weaker, it was possible with Justin’s BUG close combat operation skills to mitigate that difference. However, if their skill levels were the same, and the equipment was also better, then it was impossible. Justin also realized that afterward. Of course it was too depressing and he had no way to play anymore. It seems like this kid still has some hatred, to seek out Skeleton in a public venue.”

Justin was still very manly to fight with Wargod No. 1’s in battle.

Wang Zheng also looked at his opponents record. This adversary should be good, to also pick a Wargod, he inevitably had confidence in himself.

“Boss, the number of paying people should reach up to 2,000. Our advertisements were far too short notice. On the basis of usual practices, this kind of spontaneous situation, can swing at least 5,000 if properly prepared!”

The staff members were discussing with excitement, but Solon seemed as if he were dead.

This damned guy! Can't you let this sheep fatten up a bit before killing it? We only just started to get a little attention! Whimpers.

Solon waved his hand, motioning. "Go ahead, do your best. I'll rest for a bit. That damned...now my head is starting to hurt again."

Notes:

1] This is another word where the author writes in English. It is meant to be a slang term meaning his skills are so sick that it's like a bug in the game.

2] This is an interesting Chinese term as well. Slang for people who are hired by companies, etc. to post thing on the internet to form public opinion, for both good and nefarious purposes https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Internet_Water_Army

Chapter 16 – Violent Killing Methods

Battle Start.

Random Map: Desert.

Justin naturally didn't need any advantages, but divine intervention seemed to be on his side. As an expert of melee combat with the ability to adapt to various environments, Justin was considered among the best. For the average player, the desert was full of despair. To operate in this type of environment was an entirely different concept.

Skeleton VS Justin!

Two mechs simultaneously appeared in a limitless desert. However, Skeleton's Wargod No.1 suddenly began to sway.

A few of the more experienced players' hearts thumped at the same time. This was an action which indicated unfamiliarity with the desert environment.

Each and every person who couldn't exceed Bronze level or higher were eternally newbies, but even newbies had a dream. They wished for the emergence of a single hero capable of challenging these arrogant guys.

Yet dreams were just dreams. No one believed Skeleton was really a newbie even if he really was one.

The Wargod No. 1 awkwardly staggered a few steps in the desert. This was a distinct trademark of a person's first time piloting a mech in this kind of desert.

Justin didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Come on! If you don't have the skills, why copy others and pretend. He thought that the opponent had come because he had some skills. Wasn't this just going to be a stomp?

However, after a few steps the Wargod No.1 stabilized, the mech sinking down a bit. Justin's facial expression also became tranquil.

A real expert could use his experience to overcome obstacles, as his opponent immediately changed his posture to eliminate any openings.

"Humph. You're amusing scrub. No matter who you are, I will take you down!"

Justin laughed mischievously, showing a smile.

Both parties essentially mirrored each other. One second... Two seconds... Three seconds. The atmosphere was very heavy. The players all recognized the sudden shift of atmosphere.

Almost simultaneously, the two Wargod No. 1's launched.

The Wargod No. 1's soared to the middle of the desert, sand flying up into the air. It seemed as if Skeleton had already adapted to the desert environment. Yet, it was still clear that Justin's Wargod No.1's speed and agility was superior. His movement on the sand was more free. The Violent Solo-Mid title wasn't wasted on him.

Boom...

Justin's attack arrived! This was a clear piloting dominance! His titanium alloy cutlass swung down head-on! So this was the Violent Solo-Mid!?

What followed, everyone understood, was a crazy offense which did not even give the opponents the time to breathe. Filled with killing intent, it was a violent bombardment of the titanium alloy cutlass from every direction. This was Justin's Wargod No. 1. That was to say, it was already over the moment they clashed. Skeleton's Wargod No.1 could only try to ward off the attacks.

Once Justin started his exhibit, the enemies could only close their eyes.

Ma Xiao and others also looked on in dismay. They originally believed that they would be able to watch a battle between a tiger and a dragon, and it ended up like this?

"Captain, this is supposed to be an oppressive situation, huh? However, nobody is able to determine the outcome yet."

“Justin isn’t going to intentionally lose this, right?”

“Very possible!”

Only, Ma Xiao was silent. At the beginning, he also expected him to lose. However, that didn’t seem right. Justin’s attack was fierce, but Skeleton’s defense simultaneously wasn’t losing position.

If Skeleton didn’t reverse this situation, however, it still wouldn’t change the results. It was a hopeless strategy to defeat Justin after letting him reach his maximum output. Even if it was Ma Xiao using the Beast Type Mech, he still wouldn’t allow Justin to do such a thing.

It was the first time Justin encountered an opponent who fought with such resistance. His offense was so fierce, yet the opponent did not lose out to him even by a little!

Even if his balance shook for a slight moment, he could hit him, but the opponent’s center of gravity was excellently maintained.

Fuck your granny! Who was this guy!?

The skeleton robot once said, ‘To lose your center of gravity was to lose your life.’

Whether it was the horse stance or Plum-Blossom Mantis Boxing, a large part of it was all practicing balance. This time, Wang Zheng had already deeply experienced it. The sand would cause the

mech's steps to vary in depth. If the force was too great, they would sink into it, but... it was really interesting, and this opponent was also very interesting!

Patience!

Wang Zheng was very patient; his every strike diffused Justin's attack. Each contact between the titanium alloy cutlasses spewed sparks in all four directions. How long had it been since Novice Area players last fought a battle like this?

Normal players usually couldn't even receive this kind of offense. They either died, were defeated, or both received injuries. Facing Solitary Crimson Flag's attack, Skeleton actually managed to block it all.

The two clenched their fists, suppressed their urges, and silently endured in their minds until the opponent gave an opening. Then they could retaliate!

Unfortunately, Skeleton's opponent was Justin!

Justin's hurricane-like suppression was similarly taxing. If his opponent also had tough resilience and they couldn't achieve results, the outcome of the battle would be debatable. If he didn't put in more effort, it truly may turn out like that.

He immediately chained three stabs of his swift and fierce titanium alloy cutlass together. A fast and violent offense would

thereby create an opportunity which lasted for less than a second.

Solitary Crimson Flag's Titanium Alloy cutlass suddenly became a backhanded blade. Once this move was displayed, even those players who didn't already know guessed what it was. This was Justin's specialty move——Psychotic Executioner!

His Wargod No.1 spun like a spinning top towards the opposing Wargod No. 1.

Ding ding dang ding...

Kill kill kill kill kill!

Sparks lit the entire sky! Only Justin could forcibly find an opportunity to exploit in this unexploitable situation. His opponent had nowhere to hide.

Boom...

Skeleton's Wargod No.1 flew out.

Was this the end?

Bang!

The Wargod No.1 firmly landed on its feet. Justin didn't try to

pursue him because the high speed rotation had caused his mech to sink into the sand. Forcefully pursuing would only give the opponent an opportunity.

Who the fuck was this guy?! Such high endurance!

He even borrowed the ferocious chain of attacks' strength to free himself from the engagement. He didn't know many opponents who were capable of accomplishing something like that.

Now that the battle was back to square one, all the players felt suffocated. The fuck! When had the newbie area ever experienced this sort of battle?!

Even though it did not have the splendor of high grade mechs, it still had a sort of primal brutality!

"Boy, no matter who you are, today shall be the day of your fall!" Justin quietly said. This was a new secret technique that he had just learned this year. He never planned to use it in this kind of match.

Wang Zheng felt the killing intent being released from his opponent. The move that Justin was about to unleash, he really looked forward to it.

The two Wargod No.1's practically made their move simultaneously, rumbling as they sent a fatal blow toward each other.

Twenty meters... Fifteen meters... Ten meters...

In a flash, Solitary Crimson Flag's Wargod No.1 took the initiative. His foot fiercely stomped into the ground! Sand immediately exploded out, filling the air. No one was able to see!

The players supporting Skeleton suddenly had a blank expression. Fuck, so shameless and underhanded!

On the battlefield, there was no difference between good and evil. The reason Justin's melee was so ferocious was because he could fully exploit the surrounding environment to mount a comeback from a disadvantage.

So at this moment, Justin already began to soar into the air. The was his newest skill, Whirling Executioner!

Revolving up and down, the operation difficulty increased by 50%. Finally, after practicing it for the majority of the past year, Justin was able to freely use it. Even if God came, he would still have to kneel to this grandpa!

What was the objective?

Suddenly a mech was out in the open!

It was precisely Skeleton's Wargod No. 1!

Come on! A titanium cutlass being used backhand, was this the technique of a primary schooler?

Justin's upper half began to whirl, engaging frantically. His titanium alloy cutlass crazily chopped toward his opponent. The problem was....

The opposite Wargod No.1 unexpectedly executed the Psychotic Executioner.[1]

Sparks burst out as the alloy cutlasses crisscrossed at high frequency. The jet engines frantically propelled them forward, supporting the two mechs' mobility. The audience area was completely silent.

Both Wargod No.1's fell to the ground. After this brutal exchange, whoever struck first could immediately dispose of the other.

Nevertheless, it was still Justin and Justin's titanium alloy cutlass which was raised first, GOD!

This was Europe's Violent Solo-Mid's strength!

However, before Justin's eyes, he discovered the Mech in front of him becoming larger and larger.

Boom...

Suddenly, the earth and sky started spinning around. The fuck, this was.....a headbutt???

The moment they landed, Skeleton's Wargod No.1 didn't use any weapons and directly attacked with a headbutt. Justin's Titanium Alloy Cutlass had only just been raised!

Whoosh...

The titanium alloy cutlass slid out in a backhanded stroke, chain after chain of fierce sparks flying out. Solitary Crimson Flag's mech's head flew away, landing far into the distance.

The sparks flying out from the severed neck were exceptionally dazzling.

Boom...

Mech exploded!

Skeleton WINS!

The whole audience area was still as quiet as before. Europe's Violent Solo-Mid Justin was actually destroyed???

Not only that, it was due to his own specialty, the Psychotic Executioner -, the top backhanded knife technique???

Wang Zheng felt that the Rubik's Cube in his chest finally heated up the bit. It wasn't easy to achieve this hard-to-get reaction.

When he exited CT, he needed some time to reflect on the battle. Battle itself was originally just an experience. The most important thing was to comprehend and remember it. This opponent's close quarters combat skills were very exceptional. The Whirlwind Backhand Blade[2] the indeed could greatly increase attack speed, but this move was very taxing. It was basically a final resort that didn't leave enough leeway for oneself. It was adequate for a one on one, but if it was a group fight, it was basically sending yourself to the enemy.

What a desperate move!

After contemplating for about ten minutes, Wang Zheng finally opened his eyes, feeling very refreshed. It was time to go; the stingy boss was about to add more to his fees.

Although a normal spot was slightly cheaper, Wang Zheng was already used to the VIP area's tranquility. Not to mention that the simulation cockpits were also somewhat better.

He left carefree, not even leaving a wisp of cloud behind[3]. Everyone else was left wondering.

Who was this guy, so arrogant!

He even crushed Justin!

Not to mention that it was using Justin's best technique, the Psychotic Executioner!

Dragongod's battle team's people were all shocked stupid. What kind of fucking comeback was this?

"You guys look carefully at the replay; I'll go say hello to Justin!"

Ma Xiao had a wide grin on his face as he walked outside, dialing on his Skylink.

Justin was also dazed. How could this happen???

The expert that appeared this time... he searched inside his mind again and again for possible matches. Of the people he knew, absolutely no one could achieve this sort of skill!

Suddenly his Skylink sounded.....could it be Ma Xiao?

"Ma Xiao, don't tell me it's you, brat. Are you taking hormones?" Justin growled.

"Haha, essentially yes – I am feeling quite invigorated. I came to

greet you, Europe's Violent Solo-Mid. How does it feel to actually be crushed by someone?"

"Damn it, get the fuck out. Be careful that I don't PK you in real life!"

Despite being old rivals, their private relationship was actually quite good.

"Don't be depressed anymore, you aren't the first one." Ma Xiao bitterly smiled.

"...That Dragongod 007 was indeed you?"

"Damn it! I originally wanted to show off a bit in front of the newcomers and ended up getting cruelly crushed. This guy really has some skill. He seems to have some ability in imitating others."

"It doesn't matter who he is, just find him! I must have a rematch. A Wargod No.1 can't display my full abilities!"

Justin wasn't feeling very good in his heart. The most depressing thing was, his opponent used his own move to destroy him.

"Haha, if you find him, then tell me."

Solon, at this time was in his office massaging his head. He mulled over the new ideas, but all his cards had already been

played. He was trying to think of a new plan. Anywhere a good new idea existed, you needed to spend money to acquire it. However, the ministry of finances was very strict; it was hard for large sums of money to be approved.

Notes:

1] so he basically comprehend Justin's previous move just through this battle, and uses it to counter his newest move! So hype!

2] so this is basically his name for Psychotic Executioner. He doesn't know the name of the technique, so this is what he calls it in this 'inner thought'

3] this is just a poetic way to say he didn't leave behind any trail for people to track him

Chapter 17 – Apprehensive

“Boss, he won, he won!”

“Won your face! It wouldn’t be normal for Justin to lose. Couldn’t this guy have appeared earlier or later; he chose now to show his face and fight.”

Solon snorted, this one thought causing his head to ache.

“No, boss! Skeleton won! Although, Justin did give him some oppression. The live broadcast broke 5,000 viewers, and the forums are exploding! The click-through rate has already exceeded 100,000!”

Solon stood up and practically flipped over the top of his chair. His old back seemed to have returned to his flourishing era – the age of 18.

How was this possible?

Really, how was this possible!?

As if a depth charge went off, many people were blown away. The fight with Dragongod 007 was different. When all was said and done, everyone had merely guessed. Many players could mimic his style, but everyone was aware of who Solitary Crimson Flag was. The level of skill needed to execute Psychotic Executioner to this extent confirmed that it was Justin.This guy’s temperament was

very straightforward. In private, he would not hold back anything from even his friends.

Yet, the well-known Justin was crushed by an unknown individual like this.

Countless players were in the middle of watching the video. Quite clearly, this person had barely begun and had not yet adapted to the desert environment. Newbie players needed to experience such movements for themselves. When they first entered into the desert, they would also have to react to the discomfort of having one foot too deep and one foot too shallow. More than a small number of newbies slipped and fell.

However, Skeleton seemed to adapt immediately. What kind of ability was that???

Could it be he was putting on a play?

If this was the case, it was truly too realistic. It was good enough to win a Milky Way Oscar!

The slow motion view of Psychotic Executioner showed every violent strike of the engagement. Such a shocking exchange was rarely seen, even in the Advanced Area. Both participants had piloted the Wargod No. 1 to the pinnacle of its capabilities.

The final turnaround was something that no one had expected; it was actually a headbutt....

With this counter, the widely known Justin was destroyed by a headbutt.

Skeleton managed to reproduce the Violet Solo-mid's hidden card!

His newest move —— Whirling Executioner was actually copied!

The legend had just begun. Who was next?

Who could stop Skeleton's advance!

.....

In one hand, Student Wang was eating instant noodles, while on the other he was looking at his bills on his Skylink. Shit, not a single dime was left to be seen. This was... How could this be?

With this kind of deficit, he couldn't even afford to eat instant noodles.

A tick tock noise echoed from his Skylink. It was Ye Zisu.

"Zisu, what's happening?"

Ye Zisu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. At this moment,

Wang Zheng's mouth was stuffed full of instant noodles and a pair of chopsticks. He ate this way at home?

"I can't call you if there's nothing going on? Little Jing isn't here. It's so boring being all alone; let's sing some songs.

Wang Zheng started sweating. "Sigh, that is awfully dangerous."

"What do you mean?"

"When I was boy, I tried my hand at singing and caused a neighbor's pet to faint from fear."

Ye Zisu could not help laughing. "Rest assured, my resistance is quite strong. Furthermore, my own singing is quite pleasant to listen to."

Not to mention, after getting to know her, Wang Zheng felt that Ye Zisu was quite good. Girls being a little haughty was very normal. After understanding her, he thought they could also become friends. Also, they were classmates from the same department, thus staying together throughout middle school and high school. This was something that was very hard to come across.

The outcome was proof. Student Wang Zheng really was not suited to singing even though he was still very fond of humming. It caused Ye Zisu to laugh her head off; whatever ladylike image she possessed was thrown to the wind.

In the blink of an eye a month had past. Life was incomparably full for Wang Zhen in particular. Wargod College was about to have their physical fitness test specifically for students in the Military Department. If you were too lacking, you'd be directly eliminated. Wang Zheng didn't dare slack off. After all, the track he was on wasn't as pure as snow[1], so couldn't afford to screw up.

At the OMG headquarters in the capital, more than a hundred employees were cheering on ten young maintenance technicians.

"Uncle Luo Mu, Wang Zheng has been learning for only a month. Isn't this too hasty?"

Within the crowd of people, Ye Zisu anxiously said these words. OMG regularly held a competition for the maintenance technicians. Although they didn't prevent interns from entering, the results were predictable. This time, Luo Mu signed up on behalf of Wang Zheng.

Luo Mu glanced unexpectedly at Ye Zisu. "Little girl, you spent so much effort getting him in here. Do you not know of his capabilities?"

Ye Zisu was slightly startled. Wang Zheng's capabilities? She felt that Wang Zheng was a hardworking and focused person, but that didn't relate at all to talent. Not to mention his Genetic Score was completely...

“Girl, stop being obsessed with genetic scores! That’s just a reference!” Luo Mu exclaimed. In the beginning he didn’t want to accept Wang Zheng, but he couldn’t resist Ye Zisu’s pleadings. Who could have known that he would actually unearth a gem?

The competition started. The ten competitors were all outstanding technicians who came from the capital and its surrounding area. Wang Zheng could be considered as the most unfamiliar person. This time they were competing in the dismantling of cores.

The ten people quickly climbed the ladder. Their ages were all around thirty, so Wang Zheng was indeed quite young and inexperienced. However, his speed wasn’t slow at all.

Ye Zisu also watched as Wang Zheng quickly climbed up and dismantled it like a veteran. Luo Mu nodded repeatedly as he stroked his beard. This kid didn’t seem like a novice at all! The most important thing was to not have stage fright. Some people could handle it during practice, but once they were in the competition, they became nervous and shaky. Contrary to expectations, Wang Zheng instead became more excited.

“Little girl, this kid is a talent to be cultivated, but his talent is wasted as a technician. Although I haven’t seen the greater aspects of society, I can say that this kid is certainly a gem amongst stones[2]!”

Luo Mu was completely satisfied with Wang Zheng. Ye Zisu’s heart was also thumping loudly. What did he mean by not having seen the greater aspects of society? In terms of solving difficult

problems with mecha, Luo Mu was an expert. He was OMG's trump card, so it wasn't easy to get him to build something. In fact, he could have retired long ago, but he had stayed at OMG since he liked working there. Wargod College had actually invited him before to teach an elective class for mecha as a visiting professor.

"Uncle, you should really consider Wargod College's offer. You could pass down more of your skills."

"Haha, you take me as someone who doesn't know about you youngsters nowadays. Lofty dreams and low ability, afraid of getting dirty or tired. When it comes to seeking fame, one person can be exchanged for two."

Luo Mu declared.

"Uncle, aren't there other students like Wang Zheng? What you need to do is to cultivate this section!"

Ye Zisu continued to persuade him. Luo Mu was a highly experienced technician. The only people in that circle who had a similar amount of influence would be the OMG shareholders. If he could become a Wargod College professor, it would positively influence OMG brand's image.

"Tsk tsk. Little girl, don't believe that I can't see through your schemes. ...Still, there is a bit of a basis. Allow me to ponder and think it over."

He couldn’t help it. Wang Zheng indeed made Luo Mu see these ‘students of great ability’ with new light.

The allocated time had passed. Wang Zheng was the first person to jump down from the mech. Nineteen minutes and five seconds – a new shop record had been set!

Luo Mu laughed heartily and nodded. “Incredible, this boy’s ordinary best record is 25 minutes. During a competition, his usual self explodes!”

The referee had already begun using the assembly testing apparatus. Not a moment later he gestured an OK signal, which was immediately followed by fierce applause!

“A famous teacher trains a fine student!” Ye Zisu started to clap. This was indeed an unexpected outcome.

Student Wang’s expression relaxed significantly. He finally won! With the internship wages on top of his award money, he had enough for his tuition fees!

Solon was like a cat on a hot tin roof[3]! He didn’t know how many messages he had sent Skeleton. To throw a stone and see it sink without a trace into the sea[4] , how could he handle this? He continuously pondered what he did wrong. Not even in his dreams, however, did he ever think that it was because of the insignificant reward bonus!

CT's first batch of award money was instantly sent, but the ones after, needed to reach a certain amount before they would be sent in one go. How could he have known that someone was waiting on it like waiting for rice to be finished.

Wang Zheng wholeheartedly invested himself. Luo Mu was also quite motivated to teach. This kind of fearless, enduring, hard working youngster, who wouldn't be fond of him? Luo Mu's desire to look after this youngster was a fondness that came from the heart.

Wang Zheng finally became the champion of the maintenance engineer competition, breaking Luo Mu's personal record of one hour and thirteen minutes. Wang Zheng used fifty nine minutes, the first time it was finished within an hour. Student Wang's mobility was not something that an ordinary person could match up to.

Finally, Wang Zheng was able to become the Mech Maintenance Drill Champion! This month of rising early and going to bed late was worth it. At last, he didn't need to worry about the tuition fee. In this short amount of time, he obtained very large gains. Wang Zheng's fundamental understanding of mech structure could be described as knowing its correct and the reason why. Still more, he made friends with Ye Zisu. In fact, this goddess didn't at all resemble her outward appearance of being lofty and unapproachable. To make friends still depended on feelings.

Wasn't there a square faced fatty who once said: It's fate!

Yan Xiaosu and Xie Yuxin had both came back already. In this

short time when they left school, everyone had already undergone some changes.

Yan Xiaosu's face had become more rectangular, but his change in character was the most drastic. His trip to Mars had opened his eyes. He was now grateful towards Yue Jing. Otherwise, he would have gone on muddle-headed and living without a purpose.

Although Xie Yuxin didn't talk much about his experience, in the past he was like this as well, it was easy to see that this trip had filled him with fighting spirit.

Wargod College finally started the school year!

Wargod College's entrance was flooded with a sea of people. All kinds of maglev-cars[5] filled the street in front. There were welcoming seniors everywhere.

Especially the older male students. They burst forth with unprecedented passion, their eyes sweeping the crowd like lasers. Once they locked onto a target, they immediately rushed up.

How youthful and beautiful, these female juniors! it was the start of the school year, so whoever acted first would be the mighty, and whoever was late would be considered weak. Therefore, there were numerous volunteers.

But Wang Zheng, Yan Xiaosu, and Xie Yuxin stood there for half an incense stick's time and did not see even half a person pay

attention to them.

These three people just stood there like that gazing at the gate of Wargod College. “This door is too broken down. When I have the money, I’ll replace it with the most magnificent door in the Milky Way!”

Wang Zheng and Xie Yuxin looked at each other and laughed. “Wang Zheng, I don’t believe that you just happened to get 60 points every time. I hope this time we can fairly compare our skills!”

Xie Yuxin suddenly exclaimed.

Wang Zheng paused for a moment before agreeing. “Bring it on!”

The three of them separated to report to their respective departments. When Wang Zheng arrived at the Mech Department, the teacher in charge of enrollment adjusted her glasses while saying, “Are you sure you are in the Mecha Department? Your name isn’t on the list.”

Student Wang Zheng stared blankly. This, this isn’t a trick, right?

“Teacher, may I trouble you to check again.”

“Wang Zheng, is it. Let me check again ...you’re in the Physics Department. You went to the wrong place. After you exit the door,

make a right turn and it's the next one after three intersections."

Wang Zheng was a bit dazed. What was going on? Didn't they say he was going to be attending both the Physics and the Mech Departments? Could it be...

Wang Zheng found the Physics Building. Only after asking many people did he finally find Xiao Fei.

"Doctor, how come the Mecha Department doesn't have me on the list?" Wang Zheng stared at Xiao Fei. He was slightly apprehensive. He didn't want to spend the whole day dealing with a bunch of numbers.

Xiao Fei lifted her head and smiled. "Calm down a bit. Sit down."

"Doctor, this isn't a joke. I remember that you promised I could study in two departments." Wang Zheng's head was dizzy. He had already missed the army's enrollment.

Notes:

1] This is referring to his 'backdoor' method of joining the Wargod College, which was not by usual means

2] The original text here basically says 'this kid is not some thing in the middle of a pond'. Which is kind of a ridiculous notion to describe something as being uncommon

3] I personally like the imagery here. It basically just means he is anxious

4] Honestly, the amount of idioms in this chapter was daunting. I also like the imagery of this one though. Basically to try and do something without any feedback or gains in return. Bonus Pic

5] Simple new term. Cars that use magnetic levitation to fly/float/hover

Chapter 18 – School Opens For Young Companions

“When have I, Xiao Fei, not kept my word? You’ll be coming in with the identity of a Physics Department enrollee. The Old Head has even secured a special seat for you in the Mecha Department as an auditor.”

Xiao Fei looked at Wang Zheng with the expression of a predator.

Wang Zheng only stared back blankly. Ah, shit! Without a Mech Department diploma, how could he join the army after graduation?

“Are there any other options?”

“Student Wang, one should not be impetuous. Rather, they should behave with integrity. Consider things clearly. You already have no way out, as tuition fees cannot be refunded. Moreover, this year’s recruitment has already concluded. I, Xiao Fei, have many more methods that could make things difficult for you. So just be obedient and I can give you the benefit of being my assistant. If you have the ability, then you can enroll into the Mech Department.”

Xiao Fei gave a considerably sinister laugh. This person was a genius doctor who was quite famous for being extreme. It was a shame that Wang Zheng was only confused by her outward appearance. This was also the first time Xiao Fei discovered a student who she could communicate with. Dealing with all those

other damned, foolish guys was a completely different experience. How could she miss this unique opportunity?

Wang Zheng remained silent. What the hell was going on? He wasn't even all that interested in Physics. Originally, he only used it for chatting with the elderly. After all, the old merchant seemed quite pitiful.

"Student Wang, the Headmaster and I actually put a lot of effort into this. Think more about your situation and who would want to accept you. I used my own identity as a professor to recruit you, but I am not a person of the Mech Department who could give you special permissions."

Xiao Fei declared with a face of dejection, as if Wang Zheng committed some injustice that even the heavens and earth could not tolerate.

Wang Zheng was clear, he had already boarded the boat. To get off now was not possible. Fortunately, there were still opportunities.

"Sigh. Thank you, teacher. I shall certainly give it my all!"

"Very good! This is the proper attitude of a capable student. Your ideas as a whole are not bad, but the details are still somewhat rough. Study hard and in the future you will definitely have prospects!"

Xiao Fei stated, proud of her own age and experience.

Wang Zheng forced a smile and nodded. The hell? He certainly didn't want any future in the physics field.

Wang Zheng, resigned to his fate, went to find his dorm room. The three roommates had already arrived, but they weren't present at the moment. Wang Zheng threw his belongings onto the only remaining bed. Just as he did so, with a beep, his Skylink started ringing .

"Boss, let's meet by the flower beds near the entrance. The first social gathering at the university has started!"

Yan Xiaosu was already experiencing the waves of youth; his voice radiating with passion.

Wang Zheng only waited there for a moment when Yan Xiaosu and Xie Yuxin arrived. "How does it feel? Not bad, huh?" Happily exclaimed Xie Yuxin.

"I'm confused. Did you already know beforehand that I would be in the Physics Department?"

Xie Yuxin shrugged his shoulders, "There's nothing I could have done about this. Only professors have the authority for such unique recruitment. Isn't it already quite good that Xiao Fei likes you? In any case, you still have the opportunity to join the Mech Department classes."

Wang Zheng too, was aware that this was still pretty good.

“Little Yu, you’re so sly. Since Gu Te is your relative, why didn’t you say so earlier? It would have felt so great to bring that stack of scholarship money and spend it freely!”

Yan Xiaosu let out a troubled sigh.

“The school isn’t owned by my family. I’m only taking advantage of some opportunities. Judging based on Wang Zheng’s abilities, entering a group is really easy. Don’t ask me for anything that needs special privileges.”

“Tsk. Wow, this is incredible! His reputation as one of the four great school princes really isn’t false.” Yan Xiaosu said with a face full of smiles.

“Which?”

“Are you guys behind on the news? Our group’s Little Yu is the headmaster’s grandson, Daybreak Middle School’s number one student, and also an incomparably tall and handsome youth. He’s already been named as a school prince.”

“You even care about these kinds of useless things.” Xie Yuxin had an indifferent expression. He had never been that interested in these matters.

“Yeah, right. I just knew you’d have this kind of reaction. Being so famous, it must be quite convenient to pick up girls. Later on, make sure you remember to introduce your brothers to some of them. Oh, and also to organize more social gatherings! The rest of our lives are in your hands!”

“Xiaosu, if you’re going to do all of that, then don’t drag me with you.”

“The fuck? Are either of you men of honor? There are girls and yet you don’t woo them. Can you still call this the college life?”

Yan Xiaosu’s frame of mind was excited when he opened up the Skylink and picked out an advertisement. “Well, I’ll just have to rely on you two, since I’ll definitely be a bachelor my entire life. Ye Zisu has been ranked as the newcomer’s NO. 1, so if she can help introduce one or two girls, they’d definitely be pretty good. Especially since we are all alumni of Daybreak Middle School.”

Wang Zheng and Xie Yuxin were both helpless. Although appetite and lust were only natural, this doll was still too anxious. It seemed that Yue Jing’s disappearance from their lives was actually not that bad.

Wherever there were people gathering, there were circles. Different middle schools also had their own circles. Since Ares Military College was hailed as one of the three great colleges within the area, it naturally attracted talented students from all over the world. A new place, a new battlefield. Those talented students naturally wanted to have a good fight in their own areas of expertise.

However, among the talented it was still easy to pick out the outstanding as well as the so-called few who were favored by heaven.

Xie Yuxin, genetic evaluation of A, full marks on techniques. Note: the headmaster's grandson, the son of a rich family which had great influence on both academic and military matters.

Masasi, from the Moon, also had a genetic evaluation of A. Note: This person rejected the invitation from Atlan College, the best on the Moon, to come to Earth.

Carl: From Mars, genetic evaluation of A, full marks on techniques. Note: The headmaster went to Mars three times to recruit this person.

Masasi and Carl were the headmaster's secret weapons. He used not a small amount of connections in order to get these two students. There was no doubt that he had offended Atlan College, since this was the most typical method of poaching.

As one of Earth's three greatest colleges, it has been in a disadvantageous position in recent years during the contest over the student pool. The European area's Zeus Military College and the American's Apollo Military College had stable positions at first and second place. Gu Te had exhausted his options. In order to develop the college further, it was better to act than to sit back and wait. He had to go out and unearth students from stronger areas.

It was only with results that one could attract more outstanding students. Gu Te did not want the reputation of the Ares Military College to degrade in his hands.

Pictures revealed the truth. By the looks of the three freshmen, Xie Yuxin definitely surpassed Masasi and Carl by a large margin. This made Yan Xiaosu feel very proud of himself. When he chased after pretty girls, he could use the name of Little Yu.

“There’s still so many boring people!”

“That’s true, it’s an era of fast news correspondence!”

“Is it? It’s not that fast, Wang Zheng hasn’t been included yet,” said Xue Yuxin. He was engrossed with sizing up Wang Zheng. He always felt that Wang Zheng had a secret, but since this youngster was so calm, he could never catch what he wanted to hide.

Wang Zheng touched his nose. “Don’t gossip about me. Im staying low-key. Low-profile.”

“Hehe, there are instances that don’t work even if you’re being low-key.”

“I plan to enter the Photography Club and take pictures of beautiful lifeforms[1]. What do you plan on doing?”

“I don’t really care. I have no idea right now. I originally planned

on not wasting any time," said Xie Yuxin.

"I think, depending on the situation, I will become Dr. Xiao's assistant."

"Dr. Xiao? As in Xiao Fei? Hold on!"

In a frenzy, Yan Xiaosu flicked a window on his Skylink. An image of Xiao Fei surfaced.

"Boss, is this her?"

Wang Zheng nodded his head, and Yan Xiaosu seemed to be overcome with emotion.

"Fuck, fuck, fuck. I haven't even gotten a girlfriend, yet you're already a step ahead of me. My Teacher Xiao Fei is the number one school beauty. In a dusky laboratory, a lonely man and a widow, dry wood and a blazing fire[2] , a teacher and a student..."

Wang Zheng and Xie Yuxin almost simultaneously cast vehemently disdainful looks at Yan Xiaosu. This guy can associate anything with 'that thing'. Just how desperate was he?

"Sigh. I heard that the great beauty Xiao is actually a little chili pepper. The students who were scolded by her weren't just one or two. People say that her age is not that much greater than ours; how can her mind be so bright?"

“Hehe. Teacher Xiao Fei’s gene evaluation is S class. It belongs to the classified range. Naturally she wouldn’t be like us ordinary people,” said Xie Yuxin. At the time, his grandfather had spent a great amount of strength to get her to stay, because at the time the Aslan empire had extended an invitation.

“In the Milky Way, very few people reject the Aslan Empire’s invitations since it signifies the most grand of treatment and the best benefits. That is a world especially for the elites.

“The Aslan Empire has the most stringent admittance policy in the galaxy. All the talented immigrants are asked for their three generations. Only the most indispensable of elites can enter in every generation. In the past decade, the number of people invited could be counted on your fingers. Xiao Fei’s refusal had become the most talked about subject at the time. Can you guys guess what her response to the opposite party was?”

“I’ve heard about their reaction. It is said that the Aslan Immigration Manager vomited blood three times!” Yan Xiaosu let out a big laugh.

“...it couldn’t be that it wasn’t close to home?” blurted out Wang Zheng casually.

Yan Xiao Su and Xie Yuxin looked stupidly at Wang Zheng. “As expected, you two have a common language!”

The hell? This also counts as an excuse... but this is really

something Xiao Fei would do with her character.

"This event made the Sol Federation very elated. It also raised the reputation of Ares Military College. At our school, there is no one else who could reach her level of popularity. It's a pity that every year she only teaches 30 students. I have to thank you, Wang Zheng. There's a big class this year so everyone can have a taste of her elegance." Xue Yuxin noted that his grandfather once said that in Xiao Fei's eyes, except for Alan Tuck, everyone else in the present age was trash.

Xie Yuxin sized up Wang Zheng once more. He always felt that the young fellow had strange secrets, but could not determine what they were.

The three people briefly congregated for a moment, then each returned to their own dorms. The first few days of school couldn't help but be busier during this period of time.

After returning to the physics dorms, he found that his three new roommates had already come back. Wang Zheng was very happy to be able to make new friends.

"Yao Ailun! I'm from Madagascar. I came to chase Dr. Xiao Fei. She is the world's greatest physicist!"

Yao Ailun had an average height. Along with glasses, he seemed a little bit childish and spoke with his head slightly lowered from slight embarrassment. When it came to the topic of Xiao Fei however, he became fanatical.

“Chen Xiu, from Esteemed Mountain City. You three older brothers, please take care of me from here on out.” Having said this, he promptly bowed.

“Fuck, how could I be with you in a dorm? Yao Ailun, an Earth middle schooler who was the only one to obtain the federation’s first prize for physics. And then there’s Chen Xiu, the fourteen year old prodigy and the youngest person in this college. Fuck your granny! I am called Zhang Shan, you may call me Da Shan!”

Da Shan was close to two metres tall and didn’t look much like someone who studied physics.

Yao Ailun pushed back his glasses. “Zhang Shan, son of Dr. Zhang Deyu and also his assistant. Dr. Zhang Deyu was Dr. Xiao Fei’s college professor. This year he participated in publishing the ‘God Particle in Empty Space Movement Behavior’ theory. Although the credit is mostly given to Doctor Zhang Deyu, the outside world says that you had also participated in it. And that you offered important insights. Very interesting!”

As he brought this up, Yao Ailun’s small eyes twinkled with an energetic light.

Notes:

1] Xiaosu is talking about takes pictures of woman here.

2] Passionate love, irresistible to one another. Similar to ‘Like moths to flame’ but more so love-centric

Chapter 19 – Everyone's An Expert

Chen Xiu scratched his head with an embarrassed look on his face. "I'm actually quite dumb. Dr. Xiao Fei had already independently researched spatial manipulation at my age."

The three of them turned towards Wang Zheng simultaneously. Wang Zheng was shocked dizzy as he heard the backgrounds of these three.

What is this place? I'm just here to mingle around until I can transfer to the Mech Department.

"Cough. My name is Wang Zheng, from the capital. I'm no one special."

At this point, the three stared intensely at Wang Zheng before shouting in unison, "YOU'RE WANG ZHENG!!!"

"Uh, is there a problem?"

The three looked at each other in dismay. "Fuck, who would have thought that the most mysterious individual to be specially recruited by the academy would be in our dormitory!"

"Elder Brother Wang Zheng, I heard that you are Teacher Xiao Fei's special assistant. In the future you must guide us." Chen Xiu said this with a face of adoration as he looked at Wang Zheng.

Student Wang started to sweat. He understood clearly what he was worth, while the three individuals in front of him were the real deal.

Zhang Shan attentively sized up Wang Zheng. “That’s great! Hearing what my father said, it seemed the doctor had found a rare genius. Who would have thought that in our dormitory, we would have the opportunity to spend the next 4 years interact him!”

“Wang Zheng, my aim will be to surpass you. Watch out! I will definitely become Dr. Xiao’s assistant as this is the sole reason for my life!”

Yao Ailun’s small eyes began to sparkle with brilliance.

Wang Zheng was left speechless. What the hell was all this? Although the dormitory was a gathering place for the special individuals of the Physics Department, all he wanted to do was to just get this over with!

Wang Zheng had a feeling that the life of a university student would not be so relaxed.

When three impassioned scientists gathered, the topic of conversation would naturally spiral towards the direction the scientific world was headed. Wang Zheng tactfully excused himself. Hell, Xiao Fei must have done this on purpose. No matter how she arranged it, he was a warrior that lived to pilot mecha. Everything else was just a hobby.

The school was bustling with activity, and the eyes of numerous students burned with the passion of youth and ambition. Wang Zheng was no different, but he felt as if he was just a bystander. It was all Bonehead's fault, training him to become like this.

He checked the day's training schedule from his email. Fuck your granny! That liar was indeed persistent. He had actually sent over a hundred emails! Using the select all function, all of those messages were sent to the junk folder.

Wang Zheng did not even read a single one of the messages and had gotten rid of all of them. He had not battled for some time and felt an urge to do so. He turned around and rushed to Brothers Net Cafe.

Wang Zheng was still considered an old customer, thus the boss who cherished old customers gave him a 20% discount.

☆

Recently, each day felt like a year. This was reflected in Solon's hair which had almost all fallen out. He had previously written an innumerable amount of sincere emails. This was with the same sincerity he had when he wrote love letters at his university! Yet the other party did not even spare him a single look.

After Skeleton had beaten Justin, Solon had already made up his mind. This was his future. He would stake everything on it; he would either succeed or die trying!

But the problem was that his gambling chip had disappeared. What could he do?

It was a real headache!

At this point, the center's assistant rushed in through the door, giving Solon a fright. As Solon prepared to scold him, he saw that the assistant's face was as red as pig's blood. "Boss, he's re-appeared!"

"GOD! You've finally come back. I've nearly waited 'til the yellow lily became cold. Immediately carry out the plan; advertise this in every way possible!"

"Yes Boss! Everyone has been on standby and is ready to do so!"

Even the workers outside were excited. Among CT's achievements, even these eternally low-tier workers had finally had a sense of hope. While CT's welfare was really good, who could withstand the long working hours with little to show for it?

The reason a single fight mattered so much was because the entire CT Publicity Department was distinguished by statistics. Once you entered it, you had to produce results; If not, you had to face the consequences. Additionally, the Rookie Arena was the one place that was most unpredictable.

Since Skeleton's previous triumph over Justin, the usually silent Rookie Arena had become reinvigorated. Especially since kids were

even starting to worship him now! However, whenever Skeleton disappeared, it was usually for a period of a month. This also led to kids waiting anxiously for his return. It was a good thing that on their first day back to school, there would be such a great show.

“Boss, we have an update. Although we have yet to start, the number of viewers have already exceeded 10,000!”

“Excellent, continue onwards. Once he makes a selection, immediately take action!”

Solon drummed his fingers against the table, his face full of excitement. What in the world could he be thinking?

An individual like him shouldn’t lack money or fame. Even if it were just for the fame, he didn’t have to start in the Rookie Area.

What was he thinking?

What must he do in order to secure a long term partnership? This was a headache inducing issue!

If Wang Zheng were here, he would have definitely shouted out just one word: MONEY~~~

Sometimes, the answer was very simple.

☆

Wang Zheng didn't opt to go for 1v1 this time around. Instead, he opted for the 5v5 group battle. Last time he was watching Xiaosu play, but this time he would be able to try it out for himself.

Individual battles didn't actually have many skilled players. However, in group battles there were many learning opportunities.

Entering matchmaking.

Wang Zheng's choice had caused the technicians to scramble hurriedly. Their preparations had to be changed. Who would have expected that he would have chosen to engage in a 5v5?

Twenty seconds later, the matchmaking was complete.

Wang Zheng entered the team mode.

Teammates: "Big Sister Zhou and I", "Donkey Rider Looking for Mules[1]", "Everyone is a Damned Cheater" "Cloud and Rain Dance[2]".

"Hello everyone. Since I'm a girl, I might make mistakes so please bear with me," spoke Cloud and Rain Dance. Although one could not see her looks, her voice was still pleasant to hear.

"Haha, no worries little sister. Brother here is an expert. Leave your contact info here and I will carry you[3] in the future!" Stated

Donkey Rider Looking for Mules before opening up his video link. He was indeed slightly handsome. He tilted his head at a 30 degree angle, showing that he even knew how to present his face. He seemed to be an expert at wooing girls!

“How are we going to fight?” Everyone is a Damned Cheater asked.

“Let’s just do as we please. It’s not like this is a high level fight.” Big Sister Zhou and I replied.

“Okay, as we please then. Let’s wreck ‘em!”

“...Fuck me. What is this? Why did we get matched up with military guys?”

The Rookie Area also had military teams. However, for above average military teams, they would still have to climb their way to the top from the Rookie Area. Then onto the Bronze Arena, the Silver Arena, and so on...

Although the other side also seemed to consist of beginners, it was unfortunate that they were from the Black Tortoise[4] Corps. This was a famous diamond ranked army corps. Your average joe wouldn’t be able to join them!

“Hey, the opposing side has an individual with a 100% win rate.”

“Hehe, coming to the newbie arena to stomp noobs I guess. He must be careful not to get struck by lightning!”

“Kill him!”

“I’d love to break his hymen.[5]”

Game loading, 10%... 50%... 100%...

Map: Norton Star Warped Jungle

“The opposing side is full of professional soldiers, everyone be careful. Our only aim is to lose gracefully. Fuck, Skeleton, do you have a mental problem? Why did you pick a Brittleskin!” Everyone is a Damned Cheater exclaimed.

“Screw this. With a girl, a noob, and an enemy full of professionals, we’re gonna lose for sure. No need to be serious, just goof around.” Big Sister Zhou and I replied indifferently. He activated his Demon Wolf Mark V and charged out without a second word.

“Fuck, today has been full of useless people! I’ve lost the entire day! Now that school has started, why are there still so many kids playing around!” groaned Everyone is Damned Cheater. He similarly rushed out with his Beta Type V.

The other two players also set off immediately after them; two to

the top lane, two to the bot lane. Only Wang Zheng went alone to the mid lane.

The mecha which spawned from the opposing base had already rushed out majestically. It could be said that piloting a mech could expand one's own horizons. Norton Star had a gravity which was 5 times that of Earth's which was also the case for this map.

However, Wang Zheng wasn't worried. He hadn't even discovered any enemies yet.

However, what the players didn't know was that this battle had a surprisingly large number of spectators! There were over 15,000 spectators watching and the number of invitations to watch had exceeded 50,000!

Less than 5 minutes later, there was a system announcement:

Cloud and Rain Dance destroyed!

Although she was a girl, the opponents didn't know that. The moment she exposed herself, she was destroyed by the enemy's Hunter Type 3 with a headshot.

Everyone is a Damned Cheater was flabbergasted. He had notified her a second too late and she was already destroyed! Before he had the opportunity to react, the enemy's Beta Type V had already appeared, savagely slicing towards him with its titanium blade.

Everyone is a Damned Cheater still had a few tricks up his sleeve, but the sniper hiding in the shadows had already fired another laser at him.

In a few breaths' worth of time, another Hunter Type V rushed out to attack him. Being 3 vs. 2, he was done for. After all, Everyone is a Damned Cheater was basically blinded in one eye.

In the 7th Minute, Red Side had lost yet another mech. Everyone is a Damned Cheater, destroyed!

Donkey Rider Looking for Mules had nothing to say. "Everyone is a cheater! Fuck, your father won't care anymore! Killing one of them is enough for me!"

The top lane had 3 mecha, thus the mid and bot lane would definitely only have one mech each. Big Sister Zhou and I along with Donkey Rider Looking for Mules immediately increased their speed.[6]

As expected, there was only one Wild Beast Type 3 on defense! Would he even be able to defend properly?

Within the protection of their mecha, the two started to make preparations for their attack. However, this Wild Beast Type 3 was rather rude. He depended on the bases' fortifications to ward off their attacks and didn't seem to care about fighting properly. Trying to kill the Wild Beast Type 3 while also paying attention to the battle fort did not seem realistic.[7]

The 3 mecha from top lane retreated back to base at top speed. They were planning to carry out another gank[8] bot lane. If not, the single defender might really be annihilated! They would have to do it regardless of the effort it took.

Fuck your granny! There's no one in mid lane? Another trap!

"Skeleton, there is no one at mid, quickly rush! We cannot be beaten without having a single kill!" shouted Big Sister Zhou and I anxiously.

Yet, what Wang Zheng really wanted to ask was if Sister Zhou was his sister or his girlfriend...

The top lane's Hunter Type 3 was not as fast and thus decided to cut through the mid lane. On the other hand, the Demon Wolf and Beta took the longer route by returning to the base and then towards the bot lane.

Mid lane only had a noob using a Brittleskin. Even if the Hunter Type 3 wasn't an ambushing type mech, there was nothing to fear.

Wang Zheng did not rush out aggressively. He could sense the impending danger.

On the other hand, the fight at bot lane had become incredibly intense with large amounts of explosions and gunfire being exchanged. Big Sister Zhou and I and Donkey Rider Looking for

Mules had been surrounded.

Although the two previously had the advantage in numbers, they were still destroyed.

Only Wang Zheng was left.

The four who died did not think too much of the situation. After all, this was quite normal when encountering a trap game. Yet the problem was...

When the four had quit, they encountered a shock. There were so many spectators! Were they all watching their competition?

Could it be that these people were sickos that derived pleasure from watching noobs get rolled?

Big Sister Zhou and I stared blankly ...Skeleton?

Could that be the Skeleton?

GOD!

At this point, Everyone is a Damned Cheater could not stand it any longer and shouted, “Why are you still delaying the fight! Just surrender, don’t waste time!”

Only, he didn't notice the number of viewers on the top right hand corner of the screen.

Bang...

The enemy's Hunter Type 3 had been destroyed. He hadn't even noticed where that Wargod No. 1 had come from. When he had finally realized what had happened, it was already too late as a titanium alloy blade had lunged at him. He didn't even have the opportunity to react.

"Hey, what's the situation? Old Hat has been destroyed by a Wargod No. 1."

"This guy might be a sockpuppet, be careful everyone!"

"Definitely. But so what if he's a diamond player, wreck him. Spam A[9]!"

Four Mecha rushed towards red side's base[10]. The Hunter was in charge of scouting and he rushed forward at full speed. However, he couldn't find even a shadow of the enemy. The rest had already started to surround the base; winning was just a matter of time.

Wang Zheng waited silently for the opportunity to strike. Yet the formation of the 4 mecha was extremely tight. So long as one was attacked, the other 3 would immediately be able to retaliate.

The 4 Mecha began their assault. Explosions and ash riddled the air. At this rate the base would not be able to hold on any longer.

Time was slowly running out.

There was no way to salvage this. If an expert were to use a high level mech, there would still be a chance of victory as the piloting ability and reaction time of these individuals was not that high. However, the Wargod No. 1 was not capable of this. It would not be able to resist such an onslaught.

Could it be that the legend would end here?

☆

Solon was about to burst out in tears. Fuck your granny! Couldn't he have just fought a 1v1? Why a group battle? Did he not know that the rivers were filled with vicious traps?

It's all over. Although a loss didn't really matter, the players and their interest in Skeleton would dwindle. Solon's future plans would be meaningless.

Why in the world was this happening!

☆

Wang Zheng's Wargod No. 1 continued to hide in cover, silently

waiting...

However, looking at humans in general, when one neared success they would inevitably begin to become complacent. This was especially true if one was in an extremely dominating position.

At this point in time, Old Hat, the one who had been previously destroyed, excitedly shouted out over the communication channel. “Brothers! Be careful, that Brittleskin is Skeleton. He is definitely hiding somewhere waiting for an opportunity to strike. Don’t be complacent; when we win this battle we’ll be famous!”

Fuck, so that’s why the opponent’s ID seemed to be familiar. It was actually Skeleton! Didn’t he only play 1v1? We’ve struck a gold mine!

The four enemies who had initially slacked off immediately snapped back to attention. They renewed their assault on the fort with greater effort and watched their surroundings more vigilantly.

Wang Zheng’s 4 teammates sighed in regret. If they had known this earlier, they would not have fought so recklessly. Hell, as of now not even a god could save them.

Notes:

1] This was hard to translate but I believe this should be some sort of clever way to indicate he is looking for casual love making.

You can google how mules are made if interested.

2] The name is 云雨舞 with 云雨 literally meaning Cloud and Rain, while figuratively meaning sexual intercourse. So Sexual Intercourse Dance... It is meant to hint at the later. Looks like we have quite the characters on our MC's team haha.

3] Just incase some of you aren't gamers. To carry means for a good players, to play with a bad player to help them reach a high rating in match making then they can get on their own (example would be to carry them from a low Bronze rating to a higher Silver or Gold rating. It's basically for bragging writes, since higher tier means better players, and since their skill level isn't truly on that level, they'd just be useless to their team, but that's just me venting.

4] In Daoism 'God of the north sky'

5] This is a direct translation. The meaning is actually to give him his first loss. Sorry on behalf of our sometimes graphic author

6] This is a basic MOBA game strat. Since they spotted 3 enemies in the top side of the map, then the bottom side of the map would be a 2v1, with only the possibility of the mid lane being close enough to help the now outnumbered bot lane. So they need to push their advantage. Here is the basic design of a MOBA map, for those who don't play games, or at least this type of game.

7] In MOBA games, there are AI defenses like towers that will attack enemy players within a certain range. These defense are usually slowly destroyed during the course of a game, and is not generally a good idea to fight a player while also being attacked by the defenses of the enemy base.

8] Another gamer term. Basically mean that someone from a different lane, will roam to an allies lane to help them kill their opponent, for various strategic reasons.

9] Like in a fighter game, you would spam an 'A' attack. Basically

barrage him with basic attacks.

10] Teams would be separated into blue side/red side normally so you can differentiate the baddies from the good guys.

Chapter 20 – Godly Pentakill

“What a pity. Since he exposed himself, he’s lost his only opportunity,” Ma Xiao said with regret. He shook his head towards the surrounding opponents.

The opposite party did not attach much importance to losses. Basically, it was impossible for them to lose. Right now, everyone’s attention was completely focused, thus decreasing the chance of an opportunity appearing.

“Justin, in these circumstances, how many could you get rid of?” asked Ma Xiao. Justin was also watching the match on his Skylink.

“Using a Brittleskin, at most two. It’s hopeless. But if I used a superior class fighter mech, there’s a forty percent chance of success.”

“That’s enough! You’re acting as if the opponents are complete idiots. They only need to properly surround him and play some dirty tricks. There still would be no chance for Skeleton to win, because there isn’t enough time!”

Ma Xiao smiled as he spoke. Winning the match required either completely annihilating the enemy, or destroying the opponent’s battle fortress.

☆

Right now, the Red Team's battle fortress was in imminent danger. Time was precious at this point.

After discovering Skeleton's position, naturally, everyone would not scatter to give him an opportunity to launch a sneak attack.

As expected, the Wargod No. 1 could not hide. Instead, he could only relocate.

To move, however, would be death.

As all eyes looked on, the Wargod No.1 actually exposed its whereabouts. He charged directly towards the four mech fighters.

GOD, what is he trying to do???

☆

At that time, in the CT Office, all the employees had stood up. Solon tightly clenched his fist. He couldn't turn back now.

The data for this battle's spectators statistics continued to rise in a linear fashion. The scary thing was that as the news spread by word of mouth, more and more people rushed into the player's room to watch. They were all there to see this Skeleton who used a Brittleskin with remarkable ability.

However, the viewers felt helpless when they considered the

Skeleton’s impossible situation.

Four against one! With his battle fortress in an impending crisis, and having no other choice but to sprint forward, this was the final spark!

☆

Wargod No. 1 was hidden at a distance from the four mecha. Although he was very close, around 50 meters or so, this was still a fatal distance . Two Demon Wolf Type V’s, one Beta Type V, and one Wild Beast Type III, all simultaneously aimed their laser guns at the enemy suddenly rushing their front.

boom boom rumble rumble…

Light radiated all around.

The Wargod No. 1 approached its enemies like a whirlwind. Everyone’s mouth hung open… what sort of speed was this???

Inside the cockpit, Wang Zheng’s speed was in full swing, spurring the mech forward. The Wargod No. 1 was producing booming sounds as it rapidly advanced forward, brushing past the lasers.

The lasers of the four mecha were not obstructed by any trees, but were still avoided. In a flash, the Wargod No.1 pulled into the 20 metre range.

The second round of laser bombardment was close at hand.

☆

Solon and his subordinates felt as if they were being choked. This time there was nothing to shelter him.

☆

Right at this moment, the speeding Wargod No. 1 traced out an arc using slide steps. A left arc... god!

Then a right arc!

After the pair of arcs, he rushed forward.

In a flash, he had entered close combat range. The group of four had fought with numerous players, and thus weren't frightened. The Wild Beast Type III immediately rushed forward. With him acting as a meat shield, even if the Wargod No. 1 possessed abilities from the heavens, he was finished. Moments after pulling off such an action, the Beta Type III, along with the two Demon Wolves, moved into a flanking position. They surrounded the Wargod No.1 and formed an inescapable net!

Right now, the A.I. Bots were exhausting the fortress's final line of defense. In the present situation, it could last at most, 20 more

seconds. Would 20 seconds be enough to reverse this situation decided by the heavens?

☆

Ma Xiao shrugged his shoulders helpelessly. Such a pity. Just moments ago, someone who had broadened his experiences with such a double arc technique, was going to be killed in such a miserable fashion. To lose at this level wasn't awful, but it also depended on how they lost...

☆

Bang...

The Wild Beast Type III... was sent flying?

In a flash, the Wargod was fleeing through the gap between two enemies, breaking through with his titanium alloy blade. The Beta Type III could not comprehend why the Wild Beast was sent flying before the enemy suddenly appeared before his eyes.

The alloy blade cut into the cockpit. Sparks flew everywhere as time seemed to stand still for at least a full second. There wasn't any time to retrieve his titanium blade.

When both Demon Wolves Type V's had went in for the kill!

DOUBLEKILL[1]!

The Beta exploded, but the Beta's player was still expressing a bright, smiling expression. They had already planned for someone to sacrifice themselves[2].

However, what surprised everyone was that the Wargod No. 1 released its grip on its weapon, the mech suddenly swaying. As if there was the same error in their line of sight, both their titanium blades crisscrossed each other.

At this moment, there was simply not enough time to launch their energy shields. The two Demon Wolf Type V players looked on helplessly as they saw their own blades stabbing into each other. They wanted to engage their energy shields, but their fingers were a tenth of a second off from pressing the button in time. So close, yet so far!

Bang...

TRIPLEKILL!

The system's voice stated in elation!

...QUARDAKILL!

The system climaxed!

At this time, the battle fortress was left with barely any defensive line. In a flash, Wargod No. 1 rushed forward, and pulled out its titanium sword. With a somersault, he arrived by the Wild Beast type III. At that moment, the Norton Star's two suns seemed to glow brightly. The titanium sword let out its own dazzling light and stabbed the target through the head!

Rumble...

PENTAKILL!

ACE!

Red side WIN!

Server wide announcement. Congratulations Skeleton! For completing five kills in a row, you have been given one hundred bonus points and a Warrior's Medal. Continue working hard!

The voice of the system sounded incomparably passionate and dignified. At this moment; a through silence.

☆

In the CT work hall, all the employees were struck dumb. What kind of piloting was this?

This was a godly tempo!

Solon’s hand shook as if he had contracted malaria. His cigarette had already burnt down to his fingers but he didn’t even feel it. All the employees gazed worshipfully at Solon. This manager, who was already on the verge of being transferred to another post, had made a seemingly godlike judgement.

Solon waved his hand, coolly indicating to everyone that they should continue working. He returned to his office. Once the office door had been locked, legend had it, people could hear this respected chairman burst into tears.

☆

At this time, the spectators area had already become thoroughly overcome with emotion. Even as late as the final 10 seconds, there were still people joining. Of course, some of them came to watch the myth of Skeleton perish, but as a result, they witnessed the work of god.

In CT, in order to count as a kill, the enemy mech needed to be over 80% destroyed. Just killing three, was already a fucking awesome victory. Getting a full five kills was an extremely rare and momentous event.

A pentakill in an extreme environment!

The work of a god!

The knowledge of a god!

The tempo of a god!

On top of the explosive victory over Justin, Skeleton had once again performed a miracle.

☆

Wang Zheng took off the V.R. gear and cooly reflected on the battle just now. His decisions were calculated correctly; he had hoped for the opponent to let down their guard. This did not indicate that it was a complete mistake on their part. Rather, with that kind of superior advantage, it would lead to the mindset where the enemy team would only be about 70-80% serious. Their formation strategy was also completely within his predictions. Foresight in battles was extremely important.

Seeing that his own work was something that any newbie could do, Wang Zheng was not completely satisfied. He knew that this was still CT's lowest level. Still, in this kind of battle he had actually come to realize quite a bit.

Seeing that his own work was something that any newbie could do, Wang Zheng was not completely satisfied. He knew that this was still CT's lowest level. Still, in this kind of battle he had actually come to realize quite a bit.

Nimble footwork was also extremely important, while adapting

according to this situation was entirely instinctual. If he had broken his titanium sword, the results could have varied significantly.

Luckily, during Bonehead's training, there were no weapons. Every part of the body was a weapon, and the opponent's weapons could also be seen as even more weapons. Why not make use of them?

In the pit of his stomach there was a comfortable and warm feeling. This sensation wasn't bad. Obviously, the Rubik's Cube approved of his own realizations. He didn't need many battles, but ones of good quality, and he needed to properly contemplate them afterwards.

Student Wang was a good kid who loved to learn.

The in person Wang, completely finished off his beverage. He could not squander the boss's sincerity.

☆

Wang Zheng did not see, but the CT forum in the Asian Area had absolutely exploded. Although the battle ended, online players still increasing feverently. This battle deserved to be reviewed.

Their blood was still pumping.

When this kind of video emerged, it made the forum's senior

experts appear on the scene, to officially compete on the speed with which they analyzed the match. It turned out there were still hidden dragons and crouching tigers[3] among the population.

The beginning portion of the video was almost completely ignored by everyone. The final half minute was the best feature.

Legendary pentakill. Even more so, it was a Wargod No.1 pentakill.

No matter what level, what equipment, what situation, the name of a five kill rush was enough to reach the top of the pay-close-attention-to list. This was to say nothing of this kind of Jedi counterattack[4].

☆

“This youngster is too fierce!” Justin was also reviewing the video and was struck with awe. “He deliberately waited until the battle fortress was hanging by a thread before acting!”

Ma Xiao was also still watching. They did not need to analyze it, just watching it again would blow their minds. In their current state they were still ignoring many of the smaller details.

“Hiding like a poisonous snake, he really can endure!”

“Hehe. No matter who it was, they would believe that victory

was already within their grasp. I'm really impatient for him to enter our world."

Justin and Ma Xiao looked at each other and switched off the video. This person would enter their world sooner or later. At that time, it may really become a tempest of blood and foul wind; a revolution!

Effortless?

It really wouldn't be so effortless.

☆

The video analysis came out.

The first sidestep could already be rated as a textbook-perfect maneuver, but the four opponents' chances of victory were still at eighty percent. Then the Wild Beast type III lost its defensive position as a meat shield. This was fatal. In the team battle, this did not serve any role. It was merely wild rushing while believing the opponent wouldn't dodge. They wanted to directly overthrow the opponent, but they didn't expect that the Wild Beast to be sent so steadily flying by the Wargod No. 1.

Accomplishing this task seemed to take little effort. Even with clever maneuvers, although they had launched a big assault on the Wargod No. 1, from the beginning to the end, the Wargod No.1 never lost its center of gravity.

Beta Type V was a complete tragedy. Its only role was to get caught on Skeleton's sword. The two Demon Wolf's could not complain. In a flash, the Wargod No. 1 displaced their movements, completely swaying the center of gravity between the two Demon Wolves. It caused them to attack awkwardly, then immediately the Wargod No. 1 took the advantage to rush forward and completed its godly work.

During the battle, when Wargod No.1 brought the light and killed the Wild Beast, he had already become a god.

This was the common thought of the players watching the video.

There was a kind of battle that could be called done without fault!

Skeleton's godly pentakill!

Master of battle techniques. Master of control. A new era of the Wargod mech was slowly rising!

Most likely, the novice arena was just too dull for far too long. At this time, it was like a heavyweight bomb was thrown in and gave rise to a violent chain reaction.

Usually, a review of any video could maintain around ten minutes of high concern and attention. Following that, attention would rapidly decline. However, this video was not like that. The

rate of increased views had already frightened the employees.

This was not just an ordinary battle that existed. It shouldn't even occur by chance! The scariest thing was that every view of the video would lead to further discoveries of things that were previously overlooked.

The opponents were also regarded as capable in their own right. Among the Black Tortoise Corps' newbie ranks, their battle skills and potential capacity were excellent. If it was said that this team was killed by a single person, no one would believe it.

Notes:

1] This is counting the kill from last battle.

2] Just incase anyone is having trouble following the action here. Basically, he gets the kill from last game, then when they all approach, he knocks back the one acting as the tank, then juts through two people. At this time, it is in the enemy's plan to let him attack one of them while the other two attack before he even has a chance to pull his weapon out of the cockpit of the one he just killed.

3] Just means talented people hiding among normal people. May also be a intended as a movie title reference.

4] Yes. the raws really do say Jedi! Movie references are the best.

Volume 2 – Skeleton's Legion

Chapter 1 – Dormitory 007

In the office, a fully focused Solon began to write sincere emails to all of the ranked players. If a hundred emails were not enough, he would write a thousand!

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng had just left the Brothers Net Cafe when his Skylink began to ring incessantly.

It was Ye Zisu.

“What’s up Zisu?”

“How’s your new dormitory? On behalf of my dormitory roommates, I would like to invite you guys to join us for a gathering!”

Ye Zisu had seemed pretty embarrassed. It seemed as though she was being coerced into doing so.

Wang Zheng paused to consider the offer. Today’s girls were pretty enthusiastic is what he thought to himself before replying, “Your offer is pretty enticing.”

“Alright, then it’s settled. I’ll be there this weekend to get everything organized.”

After which she hung up the Skylink call. In the background, one could hear sounds of excitement coming from numerous girls.

Wang Zheng nonchalantly shrugged his shoulders. He felt the call of a university life from this invitation.

Regarding the aspect of student life involving girls, Student Wang was pretty cool about it. He would occasionally recall to mind a beautiful silhouette, but Yue Jing should already be more than a hundred million kilometers away.

☆ ☆ ☆

At night, the dormitory was ablaze with chatter — a common occurrence.

Firstly, they had to decide who would serve as the dormitory head. Yao Ailun gently adjusted his spectacles and said, “In the future we will all become brothers in arms. Naturally, the dormitory head will have to be the most capable individual. I am a meticulous individual. With regard to lesson curriculum and information gathering, I am an expert.”

A glimmer of light could be seen in Yao Ailun’s eyes.

Zhang Shan gave a slight smile, “I was my intermediate school’s MMA champion, I will ensure everyone’s safety!”

Similarly, Chen Xiu bashfully said, “I’m the youngest here and hope to serve the rest of you.”

The three of them then looked in Wang Zheng’s direction. Wang Zheng was sincerely disinterested in this competition for role of the dormitory head.

“Wang Zheng. Although you might hail from the capital, this alone is not a legitimate reason for you to become the dormitory head,” spoke Yao Ailun. Wang Zheng was a student that was

specially admitted into the academy. Furthermore he was the Doctor’s personal assistant. He could be considered an individual with significant influence.

“Cough. I have no strong points so to speak. What I would like to say, however, is that this weekend, the Mech Department’s girls would like to have a friendly gathering. Are you interested?” Wang Zheng asked.

Zhang Shan’s eyebrows creased, “The Mech Department? Do you intend to feed us to dinosaurs!”

Yao Ailun laughed mischievously, “Being uncultured is truly frightening. The girls from the Mech Department might not necessarily be pilots. Wang Zheng, are they beauties? Don’t throw us into the fire!”

Wang Zheng pondered for a moment... if all the girls were of the

same caliber as Ye Zisu... “I have not met these girls personally before, but they should be beauties. One of them was known as the school flower in my previous school.”

The three of them then looked at each other momentarily. Zhang Shan suddenly reached out to grab Wang Zheng. “Even if you’re a tyrant, it’s fine! I strongly recommend Wang Zheng to serve as our dormitory head. In the future, we three brothers will rely on you!”

“Ah, a school flower? That’s my favourite!” Yao Ailun said as he wiped his spectacles, his eyes glittering with radiance.

“But... what about me?” a pitiful Chen Xiu said as he pointed at himself. Sometimes, being the youngest was not an advantage.

“Little Xiu, don’t be anxious. We will take up and share your burden so rest assured!” Zhang Shan said as he patted Chen Xiu vigorously, almost knocking him to the floor.

Thus, Student Wang was chosen to be the dormitory head. Sometimes, the reasons men come up with are nonsensical. Wang Zheng however, had a feeling that if Ye Zisu’s friends were indeed dinosaurs, these guys would definitely have him overthrown.

Thus, this was how Ares College’s first day of chatter had unfolded. Wang Zheng was a good listener and these three had interesting backgrounds. Zhang Shan had chosen the Physics Department over the Mech Department, the exact opposite of what Wang Zheng would have chosen. There were indeed people from all sorts of backgrounds here!

To Zhang Shan, physical exercise was just a hobby which was incomparable to the greatness of the scientific realm. Developing the mind was a never ending journey.

Just by looking at his large frame, it was impossible to tell that he was actually such a thoughtful youngster of the new generation!

In Wang Zheng's case however, he was mulling over how he could quickly get rid of his attachment to the Physics Department and return to the embrace of the Mech Department! That day would come eventually!

Despite Wang Zheng going to sleep with those lovely thoughts in his head, that night, he had a nightmare. He did not dream of Bonehead. No, it was worse. Xiao Fei was using his face to sharpen a sword...

"Boy, while you live, your body belongs to me. When you die, your soul belongs to me. No matter how vast and wide space might be, you will always be a part of the Physics Department..."

In his dreams, Wang Zheng repeatedly reassured himself that this was only a dream. Once he woke up it would all be over.

As the first rays of light lit up the sky, Wang Zheng opened his eyes. Last night, the other three's discussion had already reached the level where they schemed to conquer all of the beauties under the cosmos. It seemed that even those of the Physics Department were extremely passionate about such matters.

Wang Zheng was not the sole one to wake up early. Zhang Shan's bed, the one opposite his, was already empty. When Wang Zheng arrived at the gym court, he understood. He was not the only early bird, there were already numerous individuals carrying out their own forms of morning exercise. Zhang Shan's size was too eye catching. He was only wearing a short sleeved sweatshirt, and one could see the muscles rippling explosively underneath as he did his single-armed chin ups. He looked extremely relaxed as he smoothly executed his chin ups.

Without paying any attention to the stares of those around him, Zhang Shan leaped to the ground with a single somersault. If there were any girls around, they would surely scream in excitement.

Seeing Wang Zheng, Zhang Shan was slightly surprised, "I did not expect you to have the habit of training in the morning."

Wang Zheng gave him a smile and replied, "My aim is to be a mech pilot after all. I have to keep on training."

Zhang Shan looked at Student Wang's small physique, "Looking at your body size, I think you should just give up. Entering the Officer's Department would be more like it. A mech pilot suffers large burdens on the body and thus not everyone is suited for it. This is why the Earth's forces are insufficient. You should instead focus on your strengths and develop them."

Wang Zheng noncommittally replied, "Your body's toughness and flexibility are excellent, yet you're wasting your own talent by

not being a mech pilot.”

Zhang Shan laughed loudly as he now saw him in a different light. Wang Zheng did not mention his muscles but rather the flexibility of his body, as though he was trying to hint at something.

“Do you want to compete?” Zhang Shan said without thinking.

Wang Zheng waved his hands, “I think you should continue training, if the opportunity arises we can exchange pointers.”

Wang Zheng’s started practicing the first step of the Return To One secret art. The best effects were produced when facing the morning sun. This was actually not taught by Bonehead, but rather his father. This Return To One secret art allowed him to be one with the heavens. A newborn fetus was able to absorb the Heaven and Earth spiritual qi, but once one grew older they would be less and less able to do so. Thus, this breathing technique allowed one to condition themselves to achieve such a state and absorb the qi. Wang Zheng had previously thought this was a load of nonsense. After cultivating the first level of the art though, he had felt that it seemed slightly reasonable.

He sat down after finding an empty space and faced the morning sun. The first level of the breathing technique began to slowly circulate within his body.

On the outside, it seemed as though the first level of the breathing art’s operation was more difficult than the Rubik’s

Cube. The effects were actually slightly superior. Wang Zheng understood that the reason his father had tricked him into learning it was not due to ill intent. Yet, if he had not encountered the Rubik's Cube, perhaps he might not have had this opportunity to develop.

After the qi finished circulating around the body, Wang Zheng felt utterly refreshed and reinvigorated. The morning sun's energy had already left his body. Although the vast majority of it had returned back to nature, a trace amount still remained inside Wang Zheng's body.

"Wang Zheng, are you actually part of an evil cult?"

A delicate, smiling faced Ye Zisu entered his field of vision. When did she arrive?

Wang Zheng stood up and blinked his eyes, "I was praying for my luck to improve, to enter the Mech Department, and to become classmates again. That would be the dawn of a better era."

Ye Zisu clicked her tongue, "You're not as simple as I thought. You're even making me the butt of a joke."

As the two laughed and chatted, they didn't notice that the people surrounding them had focused their attention on them. When Ye Zisu entered the school, she became the centre of attention. Her profile picture on the Ares College's site placed her in the top 10 of the most popular individuals. Furthermore, along with being a beauty, she was also OMG's little princess.

“Who is that shifty looking individual? He actually dares to stand next to Ye Zisu and chat with her for almost 30 minutes!”

“I don’t recognize him, but he should also be a student. I have never heard of him.”

“Fuck, the wolves are numerous and the meat is limited. We will have to do something.”

As there were an innumerable amount of senior students, the new male students had to give 120% to show off their fighting spirit.

There weren’t many girls who liked to exercise in the morning. Ye Zisu was definitely the crane in a flock of chicken. Wearing a white T-shirt and azure hot pants, coupled with her white sports shoes, she was the very definition of an unparalleled beautiful youth. Her looks had excited the hormones of numerous male students as they stared at her.

“Wang Zheng, are you going to introduce me? Who might this be?”

He hadn’t noticed when Zhang Shan had walked over.

“This is my classmate from Daybreak Middle School, Ye Zisu, also known as Beauty Ye.”

Before Wang Zheng could finish his introduction, Zhang Shan had already stretched his hand out towards Ye Zisu. “Name’s Zhang Shan, Wang Zheng’s dormitory roommate. If there’s anything bothering you in future, do not hesitate to find me.”

Ye Zisu raised her hand and shook his lightly, “I have been looking forward to meeting you for some time. Dormitory 007 of the Physics Department is the pride of our school.”

“Hehe, well somewhat. Actually, if you knew me better you would have already known, I am a person full of strong points.”

Wang Zheng didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. This brother of his was indeed slightly forthcoming. He had thought that those from the Physics Department were more low profile, but instead he even took the initiative to stand out.

Zhang Shan hurriedly gave Wang Zheng a wink and secretly gave him a thumbs up. This situation was one of a kind; he could not wait for the upcoming gathering.

Wang Zheng helplessly shrugged his shoulders. Looks like they would not overthrow him from his position of dormitory head any time soon.

“Does our dormitory have such a name?” Wang Zheng asked.

Ye Zisu looked at Wang Zheng in surprise. Zhang Shan, who was also standing at the side looked at Wang Zheng as though he was

an alien.

“Why are you looking at me like that?”

“I suddenly feel dizzy! I don’t understand why Doctor Xiao Fei would hold you in such high regard. The Physics Department’s 007 four special individuals, as well as Masasi and Carl, are considered the pride of the school for this year. Under my guidance, the Ares College will definitely achieve new heights!”

Zhang Shan was still unashamed.

Wang Zheng scratched his nose, he had always struggled in poverty thus he had never understood Zhang Shan’s lofty ambitions and aspirations.

“Excellent, the Physics Department will be left in your hands. I will tell Doctor Xiao Fei to let you replace me as her assistant.”

Zhang Shan was thus excited. Why would he not be satisfied with himself?

A shocked Ye Zisu stood there mouth agape. Although she knew that Wang Zheng had loved mecha, she did not expect such a situation to occur. Ares College’s sole specialty was Xiao Fei’s Space Physics Research. She was the Milky Way’s pinnacle expert in this field. The other Departments may be top tier on Earth, but compared to the rest of the galaxy? They could not even hold a candle to them.

“Brother, thank you for giving me face. I will continue to strive harder!” Zhang Shan heavily smacked Wang Zheng’s back.

Wang Zheng nonchalantly nodded his head. To him, being able to be rid of Xiao Fei was a wonderful thing. He had always convinced himself that Xiao Fei was nothing but trouble.

Zhang Shan’s eyes shone with curiosity. He had spared no force when he smacked Wang Zheng’s back but the man did not even budge. In fact Zhang Shan had even felt an extremely strong recoiling force from Wang Zheng’s shoulders.

Clicking his tongue, he felt that there was now meaning to the idea that this year’s batch of students from Ares College contained some crouching tigers and hidden dragons.

Chapter 2 – Distinguished Community

Even though Ye Zisu was around, Wang Zheng did not allow her to affect his usual training routine. However, to circulate the first level of his breathing art, it also required one to match it with vigorous physical activity. The body had to be developed alongside the art, to ensure a harmonious development.

“Student Ye, Wang Zheng should have been Daybreak Middle School’s trump card, correct?” asked Zhang Shan. He had already calmed down significantly. It seemed he no longer had that lecherous expression on his face, yet the lust in his eyes was still evident.

Ye Zisu gave a slight smile. “How do you see it?”

“Haha, I also want to better understand him. A person able to change Doctor Xiao Fei’s opinion, how strong can he be?!”

When Zhang Shan spoke of Xiao Fei, his eyes shone with admiration and fervor.

“I’m afraid you will have to be disappointed. In all 4 years of intermediate school, Wang Zheng had always struggled and barely maintained a pass on his subjects. He was only able to enter Ares College after the final term.”

“What?!” shouted Zhang Shan as he lost his calm. “That can’t be the case!”

“Actually, I also felt the same way you did; that it wasn’t possible.”

Ye Zisu glanced at the slowly jogging Wang Zheng. She didn’t understand it herself. Just how in the world was his brain wired?

“No need to worry, there will be plenty of time for us to get to know him better.” Zhang Shan laughed. A new school, a new environment, there would definitely not be a dull moment.

School had started for two days already, but this was the time school clubs were most ardently searching for new members. The two sides of the school yard were astrewn with club banners. All of the clubs with plenty of beautiful girls, such as the drama club, the dancing club, etc. were well received. However, there certainly were exceptions. For example, the CT Wargod Club. It was considered to be a club bustling with students. Although there were no beautiful girls, having brothers was fine too! It was probably the only distinguished club among all of the men’s clubs.

Other clubs, such as the Wushu, MMA, and boxing club, also managed to attract new members. Still, they couldn’t compete with those other clubs.

In regards to dear Student Wang, well he was completely neglected... This was because he had the Physics Department’s insignia on him.

To the guys of the Physics Department, everyone politely

declined them.

CT's club was bustling with activity and Wang Zheng was actually extremely interested in it. Yet after thinking about it, it was easier if he could move around as an individual. Especially since this would allow him to train more efficiently. Letting it purely become a form of enjoyment, would be waste.

After finishing his breakfast, Wang Zheng left for the school's service system. He had matched up the school's curriculum with the associated material while his Skylink was downloading information. Some of these books ...Wang Zheng had already read several years back.

Directly opposite the Physics Department building was the Mech Department building. The students from the Mech Department were engaged in excited conversation. Despite the majority of them being males, the number of students who wanted to be mech pilots were innumerable.

Regardless of whether it was a childhood dream to become a hero, or if one was duped into doing so, it was difficult to resist the allure of becoming a mech pilot.

Wang Zheng was one of those that was duped into becoming a mech pilot, Looking at how excited the others were, he himself almost drooled.

His Skylink began to ring... It was a call from Xiao Fei asking Wang Zheng to come over. Today was only the second day and

classes wouldn't officially begin until tomorrow.

Just as he prepared to leave, there was a shout from the crowd. An extremely handsome youth wearing a Mech Department uniform walked out. This was the first time Wang Zheng had met someone who could compare with that guy Xie Yuxin. In fact, this guy seemed even more perfect. It was hard to find any faults. Could this be the legendary Mr. Perfect?

"Is that Masasi from the Moon?"

"Yep, it should be him. The Headmaster personally invited him! He's the cream of the crop."

"Fucking hell, what is he doing on Earth. He should have just stayed on the Moon! Then the Moon would have had the highest standards in the Sol System!"

"Only a ghost would know what he's thinking. Perhaps he's unable to continue living on the Moon and was forced here."

"This scumbag has already been voted to be the most handsome guy of our generation!"

"Tsk. I have to admit, this fucker actually looks pretty good."

Masasi, who was totally relaxed, had a wry smile on his face. It seemed as though he had not heard any of the words the surrounding individuals were saying about him. This was one

aspect of him that was better than Xie Yuxin. Xiao Yu, that guy, would only be relaxed when he was with Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu.

The crowd clamored noisily once again. This time on the opposite end, an individual approached. He had a head of flaming red hair. While he chewed at a piece of gum, arrogance and obstinacy were written all over his face.

His hair was actually not dyed, but rather it was the defining feature of a Martian. Carl was quite tall and he exuded a heroic spirit, yet his thick lips caused his sharp temperament to become even more overbearing, such that it would repel anyone within a thousand miles radius.

“Masasi, I told you we would meet again!” Carl said provokingly.

Masasi merely gave him a warm smile. “Who would have thought that I would meet you here.”

“Haha, did you actually think that Gu Te, that old bastard, had the skill to convince me? I rushed here just to meet you. However, what I would really like to know why you gave up the opportunity to study at Atlan College and come here instead.”

Carl licked his lips. He was clearly extremely interested, and this time there was no need to be worried. In this school, there would be many chances to spar and it would be impossible to hide.

They were both well-known individuals in the Sol System intermediate academies and were naturally well acquainted.

Masasi gave a wry smile, “Headmaster Gu Te was very sincere.”

“Bullshit! Apart from some young maidens, there exist few distinguishing features to this damnable place. Honestly, only a bit of those leftover historical sites aren’t to be damned!”

In Sol System’s intermediate academy student ranking, Masasi had consistently suppressed Carl. He would never believe that this proud and arrogant individual would be swayed by someone’s sincerity to come to this god-forsaken place.

Masasi continued to smile and didn’t pay any attention to Carl. Then casually spoke, “Earth has Earth’s unique points. The new school term has started. Let us mutually improve on our weaknesses.” At this point in time, the Skylink had finished its download.

Carl wrenched open Masasi’s hand, “The moment I beat you in a battle will be the moment I leave this damned place.”

He held no regard for the fury the surrounding people had towards him. He was full of unadorned hatred, yet he had failed to realize that this was Earth and not Mars.

The signature wildness and ferocity of the Martians could clearly be seen emanating from Carl’s body.

“Youngster, you must be Carl. Don’t be so ferocious. Ares College is Earth’s number one academy. In the entire Sol System, there are countless academies. If not for the fact that you’re a freshman, I would have knocked you down long ago.”

A 3rd Year Mech Department student, who had been previously restraining himself, stood up with unbridled aggression.

Carl’s face turned into a sneer, “Are Earthlings only good at talking? Or should I say that Earth’s soldiers are only adept at talking?”

“Fuck you!”

The Mech Department’s senior student could no longer restrain himself. He threw a punch at Carl which landed squarely on the side of his face.

Carl rubbed his cheek, “Brother, you have yet to finish drinking breast milk.”

A kick smashed across and with a bang. The student who was kicked, flew across the field by over 5 meters and crumpled in a heap on the floor.

“Too weak. This place is just full of weaklings. Masasi, what do you think you can learn here?”

They were in the main courtyard of Ares College and this was a provocation to every individual here! A group of people moved to surround Carl.

“What, do you want to gang up on me? Rubbish like you, no matter how many come at me, it wouldn’t make a difference.”

In a brief moment, 5 to 6 individuals had been knocked down. They were definitely not heavyweights. That Carl was like a ball of unbridled wrath. It was said that the Martian military academies fostered a barbaric culture and style as their foundation.

Was it really necessary to use it at a military school?

Masasi did not lift a finger but merely watched silently from the side. A trace of disappointment could be seen in his eyes. He knew that Earth’s standards had deteriorated significantly these last few years but even he didn’t expect that the standards had fallen to such an extent.

The students here were too comfortable, they did not seek to improve themselves.

Bang...

Carl’s hand was blocked by someone. Xie Yuxin held still with an icy expression. “Carl, we are not on Mars, don’t push it.”

“Haha, who might this be. Is this not Xie Yuxin? I thought that

you had gone to the Aslan Empire. Excellent, things are getting interesting. Today, for your sake, I will not push the matter."

Carl shot back, separating from Xie Yuxin. After adjusting his uniform, he said. "Within the year I will beat the two of you and then leave this shit-hole!"

The Aslan Empire possessed the best military academies in the Milky Way Galaxy while also representing the highest standards. For individuals like Carl, Masasi, and Xie Yuxin, they all possessed the ability to enter those schools.

At the Aslan Empire's military academies however, it was not only difficult to enter but difficult to be retained. In these few years, the students from the Sol System who were expelled were more than a few. They were the best of the Sol System, but when they returned, they were completely devoid of spirit. They refused to speak of their experiences there.

Carl had also wanted to go there, but at the very least he had to beat all of his rivals in the Sol System before he had the confidence to be there.

Xie Yuxin did not continue to bother with Carl. That person had a very domineering and haughty personality. He turned around and saw Wang Zheng and was extremely happy. At this point in time, Carl suddenly lashed out with a kick towards Xie Yuxin.

The crowd roared in displeasure. Who would have expected someone as famous as Carl to launch a sneak attack?

Xie Yuxin didn't expect it either and he retreated on instinct. However, as the second kick neared him, Xie Yuxin had managed to block it, but his body lost balance and he flew backwards. Yet, Carl did not relent. He followed behind with two large steps he launched a vicious shoulder tackle.

Fighting on Mars was commonplace, and there could never be too much deception in war. This was Mar's tradition.

A shadow appeared on the court grabbed Xie Yuxin while simultaneously receiving Carl's ferocious shoulder tackle.

"Fellow classmates. We might all be angry, but we will have plenty of opportunities to exchange pointers in the future." Wang Zheng said as his left hand grasped Carl's right shoulder tightly.

Carl tried to exert strength but he realized that his opponent did not budge even a single inch. Twisting his right shoulder, he managed to escape from his opponent's grip.

He looked at Wang Zheng with interest as he sized him up ... Physics Department...

Xie Yuxin grabbed Wang Zheng, "Let's go. This guy is no more than a rabid dog."

Xie Yuxin was not easily provoked and thus he was suited to join the Officer's Department.

“Actually I realized this place has become quite interesting.” Said Wang Zheng as they walked off. He did not pay much heed to the sneak attack, furthermore, Carl was previously ganged up on by several individuals. Even if their strength was insufficient, one could not use that as an excuse.

“Carl is this Mars generation’s most well-known individual. The fact that he and Masasi chose to come to Ares College is quite strange. In fact, grandpa had called on many people to join us, but in the end only those two chose to accept. To be frank, grandpa did not expect anyone to accept.” said Xie Yuxin.

Wrestling was not his strong suit. Even if they did fight, he was not Carl’s match. Furthermore, he could not afford to offend him as despite Ares College being excellent on Earth, compared to the rest of the academies in the Milky Way Galaxy, its standards had dropped and were still dropping. Being able to attract Carl and Masasi was a mystery and he earnestly wanted to avoid a fight. Furthermore, if he were unable to defeat him, he would most likely be unable to let it go.

“If I can beat that guy, does that mean I can enter the Mech Department?” asked Wang Zheng as his eyes glittered with a golden light.

“ ...Well, if you can perform exceptionally during military training, I can raise this situation with my grandpa. However, this guy only used 50% of his power just now. All those from Mars are just freaks.” Xie Yuxin shook his head.

Chapter 3 – Shit Gets Real

"That Masasi is quite the looker. He's on the same level as you," said Wang Zheng with a smile.

Xie Yuxin did not know whether to laugh or cry. "That Masasi did not have to test to enter Aslan's best military college. I don't know why he would want to come here. If I hadn't heard this news first hand, I would've doubted whether I'd heard correctly."

"That little white face is that great?" Wang Zheng asked curiously.

Xie Yuxin gazed blankly at Wang Zheng. "I cannot see if your qualification are just as good."

"Fuck, this is all muscle!"

Wang Zheng teased.

☆ ☆ ☆

Very soon, the entire school knew of this disturbance. These two people had been specially recruited from the outside and were not ones from a good crop. Especially Carl, who had even came to blows with a senior.

This incident showed off Carl's tendency towards violence.

Martians respected the strong, but as for the weak... their lives were a bit cruel.

When Gu Te had first received the news of the disturbance between Carl and the Ares College senior students, he understood that the rest of the administration would no longer feel so pleased about their new, special students. Their views would definitely not be the same.

“Headmaster, that Carl acted out of hand within our Ares College. To beat up his senior means he should be given severe punishment. He must understand the relationships within society or else he may even have the idea of overturning the heavens!”

“I also feel this way, this kind of student has not learned and does not know the complexities of the world!”

“How should we punish him?!”

As they met in the conference room, teachers had roused their ires. To the side, however, Xiao Fei continued to play with a space grid game designed to train one’s 3-dimensional capabilities.

“I had just been saying that you guys have far too much idle time on your hands since you’re making such a big fuss over nothing!” Xiao Fei said this while playing. A silence fell over the conference room.

“Haha. Doctor Xiao Fei, how do you see it?” asked Gu Te,

smiling.

“The present Ares College is very rotten. He didn’t say anything wrong, and it was a group of people versus one. The losers still have the face to complain? I say we just straightforwardly expel these kind of students. If that’s still not enough shame, then it’s no wonder why the Earth’s military rankings have gradually been slipping.”

Xiao Fei had no qualms about using a blunt bamboo pole to overthrow everyone else’s opinions. This included the headmaster, but he was still smiling brightly.

“Dr. Xiao Fei, you are the number one in Ares College,” Said the Teaching Director, Zhong Liang. “You shouldn’t say such words. As a student of the college, he should be…”

Teaching Director, Zhong Liang was saying.

Xiao Fei waved her hands to directly cut him off. “I say, oh ‘Great Director Zhong’, can you wake up? Do you feel he cares? Schools must make students respect them and become a place that makes other people respect them. Don’t bother bringing up the old Almanac, that was published before he’d even been born!”

Zhong Liang was so angry that his mental state was fluctuating wildly. To be lectured by a teacher so many years younger than himself! Unfortunately, this girl was the college’s trump card.

“Haha. You two should calm down. I think that what Dr. Xiao said has reason. We cannot soak ourselves in old yellow history, and we cannot cover our ears while stealing a bell. This time I travelled to ten-plus military colleges. Every one of them was innovating. We have already fallen far behind and must make efforts to catch up at once. It will start during this year’s military training. We will adopt the use of an actual army strengthening program. The students of Ares College must, in the future, become mainstays of the army. They should have even higher requirements demanded of them!”

Gu Te borrowed Xiao Fei’s words, to determine directly the nature of the issue. He fiercely believed that the Earth’s students were not innately inferior. What the students lacked was a kind of spirit. The school needed to dig up this spirit and bring it forth!

It could not be said that Carl’s actions were not necessarily correct, but a serious illness required a vigorous medicine. What Ares College needed right now were people like Carl to arouse the student’s passion.

“Ah, you guys can continue. I almost forgot, I still have something to attend to. You carry on drinking your tea and chatting.”

Xiao Fei quickly left, leaving behind a group of teachers to look at one another with helplessness. The school’s inner section atmosphere had a progressive faction and a conservative faction. Innovation always touched upon a few traditions and had its benefits. Gu Te knew that change would not be easy.

But if they could not change, then Ares College would really have no honor to keep for itself. Besides the point that mankind originated from Earth, what honor was left for the people still on Earth?

Using Masasi and Carl's high level to awaken that spirit in these students, Gu Te believed that Earth, being mankind's origins, could definitely not be replaced by any other places.

This was his eternally held belief!

☆ ☆ ☆

Student Wang arrived at Xiao Fei's 'temple'. The reason why it had become a temple was because the physics faculty laboratory was the school's most beautiful and most expensive place.

...The laboratory doors were still closed. Student Wang helplessly waited for half an hour before Xiao Fei arrived late.

Upon seeing Wang Zheng, Xiao Fei's mood became better. Sizing up Wang Zheng from head to toe, she made Wang Zheng feel completely terrified. "Doctor, what were you looking at me like that for?"

"Come. I am first bringing you inside so you can get familiar with your surroundings. After all, you are my assistant. You must understand your domain."

Xiao Fei spoke very proudly. It must be said many times that Xiao Fei's mood was like that of a small child ...though originally she wasn't all that old to begin with.

Wang Zheng had mentally prepared himself for an extravagant place, but the spectacular sight of the laboratory still shook him.

"This is a particle separator. Whatever you want you can have. This is the only one on the entire Earth!"

Xiao Fei said, extremely complacently, "If you stick with me, I'll guarantee it'll never be boring!"

Wang Zheng wiped off his sweat, this... Doctor gave off the feeling of one trying to lure little kids.

"Doctor, I am but a new student. Saying these kinds of things to me are too high level. I cannot understand at all."

"Relax, I'll teach you. With your gifts, it will be very easy to master. Physics is mankind's greatest science; you will fall in love with it."

Xiao Fei's eyes gleamed with a splendid light. This was the genius who had immersed herself in the world of physics! Student Wang was already desiring to leave, only at the present stage, it would be better to continue on.

"Doctor, my dormmate Zhang Shan is also very gifted. Could you

let him be your assistant?”

Wang Zheng stated. With Zhang Shan’s circumstances, he should be qualified enough.

“That kid ah? He’s pretty good, but you’re a bit better.”

Gazing at Xiao Fei’s boiling hot expression, Wang Zheng became dizzy. He would have been more comfortable if Xiao Fei age had been a little older, but unfortunately she wasn’t much older than him.

He was dragged around by Xiao Fei on a tour for a long time until he was finally released. It was easy to tell that Xiao Fei had finally found someone who she could share ideas with.

Being in the science world was definitely lonely. Teaching others was one thing, but having an intimate friend could only be found by chance, not sought. Xiao Fei did not think that a middle school student would actually have such power of comprehension.

The original introduction was equivalent to a decent view of the general situation. This student possessed potential to become an outstanding physicist. It’s no wonder Xiao Fei was so impassioned.

☆ ☆ ☆

The second day of the beginning of school was passed busily. Following, military boot camp would officially began.

The military drill instruction was divided into two sections. One section was at the level of the standard military department, while the other was much easier at a non-military department level. The former was much harder, but students could choose.

Without the slightest hesitation, Wang Zheng chose the former. What was more unexpected was that he was not the only one. Zhang Shan also chose the former.

That day, students were assigned to suburban and urban sectors. Previously, military instructors from the capital's military district were asked to teach at the school as a favor. However, a large majority of the students were not conscious of the fact, so it felt more like a school outing with new friends.

Changing into simple military uniforms, all personal belongings were stored until the end of the military boot camp. Dorms only contained simple and crude beds; moreover, a room housed one hundred people. It rather felt like they took a warehouse and cleared it out to turn it into a makeshift dorm.

Many people complained for days. With the never ending sound of complaints in their ears, Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan calmly found their positions. The two looked at each other.

"I did not think that you would also choose to follow the Mech Department's basic training."

"I said that I wanted to test into the Mech Department. What

about you?”

“A brilliant mind must be paired up with a similarly strong physique. Besides, the level of the Mech Department isn’t all that wonderful,” Zhang Shan said loftily.

His build and strength actually gave him the capital for arrogance.

The two people did not have much to say to one another. Work and rest time were all very scheduled. When it came to sleep, other people still continued to complain and gossip, as if this were at a tea party. There were even some who directly used their Skylink to link up and start a game match.

Zhang Shan thought his will power was strong, but with such noise, he could not sleep. But when he turned his head, he discovered that Wang Zheng had closed his eyes and and already entered a state of peaceful sleep.

This level, to Student Wang, could be said to be a mere trifle. When you know tiredness, you can sleep comfortably even when standing up. In any case, was only a little noisy.

☆ ☆ ☆

At another place, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were already complaining incessantly. They were regarded as pure intellectual types. Towards this kind of situation, they were not adapting at all.

“I really don’t know what those two guys Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan were thinking. As intellectuals, it unfortunately seems like some guys with developed limbs got mixed in,” said Yao Ailun.

“Big Brother Ailun, Actually, Zhang Shan’s four limbs are very developed,” said Chen Xiu.

On this side, the Physics and Math Department students were in a completely different state. They only bothered with each other. Speaking with soft voices, each side seemed to be in their own world.

But no matter what was said, the college’s military training had begun.

☆ ☆ ☆

Very early the next morning, an ear-piercing ringing sounded out. The doors were kicked open and everyone looked blankly at the military personnel standing at the entrance door.

“I am your military instructor, Luo Yun. I will give you five minutes to assemble at the drill grounds.”

“Fuck, have you made a mistake, what time is it right now!?”

“I still haven’t slept enough. This military training is really

tyranical! I, your father, will be reporting you!”

Luo Yun smiled slightly. “Each and every person who fails to meet the qualifications must directly quit school, as your admission notice already explained. Right now, you still have four minutes and twenty seconds remaining.”

After speaking, Luo Yun turned and left. The people in the room seemed to have their minds woken up a bit.

Actually, when Luo Yun had finished speaking, Wang Zheng had already finished tidying up. Zhang Shan’s speed was also very quick. It seems they had anticipated that this kind of thing would happen earlier.

Two people went out first.

“It seems like this Gu Te is playing for real,” said Zhang Shan as he laughed.

On the training grounds, they were not the earliest to arrive. Masasi, Carl and Xie Yuxin were already there.

Students continued to pour into the training grounds. In the end, the Mech Department and Officers Department had prepared their hearts. Even if they talked about what they would do, they still didn’t dare put it into action.

In the surroundings were ten or so soldiers who made a record of

the people who were late.

Once everyone was present, approximately ten minutes had passed.

“All you late comers, turn around and run 10,000 meters!”

Immediately, there were people who didn’t want to. Luo Yun said coldly, “Quibblers can immediately leave. No one is being forced. This is an army. Everything is carried out according to military standards!”

The corner of Carl’s mouth was lifted into a smirk. This was but a trick on the level of playing house, that was all.

Chapter 4 – Minor Test

Luo Yun sighed. Just by observing Masasi and Carl, one could identify the standards from which they came. It was on a wholly different level.

“For today, your training will be to stand at attention until the sun rises.”

Suddenly, 6 spotlights flashed on.Their intense beams dazzling everyone. Such was the beginning of the first day of military training.

Speaking from the perspective of the Military Department students, this was the start of a hellish journey.

Five hours later, there were only 7 individuals who could maintain the appropriate posture without moving.

They were none other than Wang Zheng, Masasi, Carl, Xie Yuxin, Zhang Shan, Ye Zisu, and Meng Tian.

Disappointment could be seen in Luo Yun and his fellow drill instructors’ expressions. This current standard was just too low. This sort of trial could not be considered significant and yet there were only a few individuals left.

Furthermore, for those who were made to run 10 kilometers, they collapsed one after another! In fact, it would be considered

decent if those individuals could accomplish the task by walking.

Ye Zisu looked at Meng Tian while Meng Tian returned the glance. They were the two most welcomed female students. Meng Tian was from the Officer's Department and her whole family was part of the military. She was 180 cm tall with a perfect figure. She did not expect that Ye Zisu could continue to persevere.

"The seven of you aren't bad. Today's training officially begins. I will be in charge. Now, go and run 10 kilometers as fast as you can," Said Luo Yun. The other three instructors were in charge of the rest of the students.

When the rest of the students heard him, they were delighted. Sometimes, the greatest happiness comes from another's misfortune. These seven individuals were too dazzling and that led the rest of the students to feel quite smug. After standing they still, they had to run 10 kilometers!

Luo Yun started the timer and with a bang, the seven individuals rushed forward.

Surprisingly, the fastest was Meng Tian.

There was no need to ask why, Meng Tian possessed A Grade Genetics. As such, she did not feel much strain in running.

Carl gave a smirk, "Masasi, there's no point in taking this leisurely, lets race."

“Up to you.” Replied Masasi calmly, such was his personality.

As they were speaking, a shadow lanced across, overtaking them. Zhang Shan stared blankly at the sight. Fuck, how can this guy be so fast!

Wang Zheng had no choice but to be the fastest. He had to be exceptional in his Military Training if he wanted to enter the Mech Department. His reason to excel was completely different from the rest of these guys.

Carl naturally did not forget about Wang Zheng. He immediately rushed to catch up. However, 10 kilometers was neither a particularly short nor particularly long distance, so rushing from the start was unsustainable.

Carl roared and he rushed at Wang Zheng. Masasi only had a wry smile on his face but he clearly increased his pace. Xie Yuxin only had a bitter smile on his face. Wang Zheng was on dangerous ground here.

Ten minutes later, everyone on the field was stunned.

Wang Zheng’s speed did not show any indication of slowing. Luo Yun stared at the timer, what in the world!

What kind of speed is this?

Although Wang Zheng had completed almost half of the 10 kilometers, his speed had not decreased!

Right behind Wang Zheng could be seen two individuals, Masasi and Carl, fervently chasing after him. Although the distance between them was only several tens of meters,

Carl cursed and swore. Even if he used his ass to think, it didn't make any sense! How could this bastard be running so fast?

The distance between the lead group and the rest had increased significantly. Speed was never Zhang Shan's forte, thus Meng Tian was in 4th place with Xie Yuxin, Ye Zisu and Zhang Shan right behind in that order.

Many people were surprised at Ye Zisu's speed, but not Wang Zheng. He knew that she was one who'd often train her body.

Wang Zheng however, that bastard, was just too fast. Soon, the entire field was watching them speechlessly. Whether it was those who were standing, lying down, or being lapped, everyone could feel in their hearts that this training exercise had now become an intense competition.

After half the distance had been completed, the body would usually be overcome with fatigue. The more one rushed at the beginning, the stronger the effects of the fatigue. This was not something that can merely be conquered by willpower alone. This was a physical constraint!

Carl laughed mysteriously. Following that, he roared explosively, unexpectedly increasing his running pace. There were no weaklings on Mars! He rushed towards Wang Zheng with larger and larger strides.

Although he was panting heavily, Masasi also silently increased his pace.

Seeing Carl sprinting was like watching a tank! He was absolutely ferocious. Masasi was different however, as he had a certain grace to his running as he caught up to Wang Zheng.

At this point in time, Wang Zheng unexpectedly increased his pace to almost inhuman levels. Originally, he had only wanted to be first. Yet who would have thought that those two guys would chase after him so viciously? If he wanted special treatment, he needed to have the results to show it. Otherwise it would also cause problems for the headmaster. Hence, if this was the case, he just had to run a little bit faster.

Bang…

Smoke and dust was kicked up from the floor. Wang Zheng's blood started to pump faster, his feet looked as though they were flying. What fatigue? In a breath's time he had once again increased the distance between him and the two who had almost caught up!

Sixteen Minutes after they began…

Wang Zheng had finished the 10 kilometer run.

The entire field was silent. Was this guy still a human? What kind of speed and persistence did he have!

Luo Yun couldn't believe his eyes. He would not lose his composure however, especially in front of a group of rookies. Fuck, this was a new record in the entire capital's military academies[1]!

"Reporting to instructor, I have completed the assigned task."

Wang Zheng respectfully stated.

Luo Yun nodded his head in satisfaction. This bastard not only had ability, his attitude was excellent, especially the feeling he exuded. He felt like a true soldier, a soldier that had undergone training for a long time.

Wang Zheng had been trained by Bonehead. Thus, he had cultivated many habits from that period of time and did not feel that he was different from anyone else.

Masasi was the 2nd to finish, with a time of 17 minutes. Carl was 3rd with a time of about 18 minutes. Closely following behind was Meng Tian and Xie Yuxin. At the last moment, Zhang Shan had pushed forward with all his strength he could muster and arrived at the end together with Ye Zisu. He was a guy; if he was last, even if it came to running, it would have been embarrassing.

Even if he were last to arrive, his results would still be considering breathtaking. At least if he were to be compared with the rest of these rookies, this result would definitely be acceptable.

Luo Yun looked at the time and shouted, “Gather!”

After such a trial, the students were naturally very obedient and thus assembled quickly. Although it was not too organized, their attitude had vastly improved.

“From today, military training will be segregated into groups, high, medium and low levels. The total score will also take into account your age. Those who do not meet the standards will be expelled. Ares College is training future generations to become Gods of War, not cowards. Hence you better give me 120% efforts from now on. Following, these 3 instructors Sergeant Zhao Teng, Sergeant An Si, and Sergeant Waynes, will drill you in troop formations! Begin!”

Following which, Luo Yun looked at the seven individuals and said, “You guys, follow me.”

Luo Yun could detect the heart rates of this group. Although it sped up, they could still control themselves ...Wait. Why were there two unaccounted for?

Luo Yun turned around. Wang Zheng and Masasi, these two individuals were completely unaffected!

How could this be!

“The seven of you have shown remarkable perseverance. Next we will test your explosive strength, who will be first?”

Luo Yun was slightly curious. Of course, Gu Te wanted to see how the students fared in every aspect. Apart from Masasi and Carl, the rest were not as weak as they had expected.

“I will go!” Zhang Shan had been looking for an opportunity to showcase his talents. It was too humiliating earlier. He was a slow runner but physical strength was his strong point.

Ye Zisu looked at Meng Tian but Meng Tian kept staring in Wang Zheng’s direction. She had never heard of him. Where in the world did he appear from?

“Instructor, must I use a fist or will anything do?” Zhang Shan asked as he removed his shirt, showcasing a body full of toned muscles.

“It doesn’t matter, I just want to see your strongest explosive strength!” Luo Yun waved his hand.

Zhang Shan moved back several steps. Suddenly, his footsteps sped up as he rushed across towards the target and with a ferocious roar he executed a roundhouse kick at the strength testing machine.

Boom...

Four hundred and sixteen pounds lbs!

This amount of strength could allow him to be a wrestling champion in the old era!

Zhang Shan retracted his foot slowly, his mouth drawn in a grimace. Although he was not in his peak condition, but this show of strength should be enough to dispatch his opponents.

Luo Yun nodded his head, this Zhang Shan was a martial artist.

“Next.”

Xie Yuxin could only produce 280 lbs of force, still lacking by a considerable amount when compared with Zhang Shan. Such a result was not bad however, as he was not an individual that focused on training his physical strength.

Carl gave Masasi a glance, “Let me give it a shot.”

At the strength testing machine, Carl took a deep breath, his body lunged forward like a leaping tiger. His fist looked as though it emitted a red light and he struck directly at the strength testing machine.

Ring~~~~~

Five hundred and twenty eight pounds!

Ding Ding Ding...

Luo Yun was shocked, someone this strong was rarely seen even amongst regulars. No wonder Gu Te had specially tried to recruit him. Sometimes, it was impossible to be unconvinced. In the Sol System, there were occasional competitions between military corps, Mars and the Moon were always at the top. Earth's soldiers could only ever be a side show.

This could be attributed to Mars' and the Moon's special environments.

Sometimes, people could only sigh in secret. Could it be that those who were left on Earth could only reminisce over the past?

"Comparing strength, you guys cannot compete with me!" Regardless of where he was, Carl was always arrogant.

"Next." Although he sighed in his heart, his face did not betray any form of emotion; after all, Luo Yun was still a soldier of Earth.

"Ladies first." Masasi smiled faintly, with an inviting gesture.

Ye Zisu's explosive strength was 130 lbs.

“Haha. You’re still a girl. Why don’t you be a secretary instead? War is a man’s game!”

Carl laughed. On Mars, patriarchal culture was the dominant ideology.

Meng Tian moved up and silently stood in front of the strength testing machine, coldly staring at Carl. Carl looked extremely interested at how Meng Tian would perform.

Bang...

Four hundred and ninety pounds!

Although she could not match Carl, but Meng Tian was still a female. Furthermore she did not look like a dinosaur, rippling with muscles! At this point, Carl was extremely surprised.

Wang Zheng looked surprised as well. Meng Tian’s fist had been extremely profound. Although it looked like a single strike, it was actually three simultaneous strikes impacting at high speed. Luo Yun did not look surprised, precisely because it was Meng Tian.

What was most breathtaking was the fact that Meng Tian still looked extremely calm and collected!

Carl had stopped with his sarcastic comments, instead he now saw Meng Tian in a new light. She was also another competitor to be subdued.

Luo Yun recorded down the result and nodded his head, “Next.”

Masasi gave Wang Zheng a glance but Wang Zheng gestured for him to go ahead first. Masasi then moved in front of the machine and like Zhang Shan, took several steps back before exerting his full force. He was not quick and violent like Zhang Shan but rather fast like lightning!

Bang...

Five hundred and thirty five pounds!

He looked as though he had executed it with ease. Carl couldn’t help but mutter under his breath. The previous summer vacation he had spared no effort in bitterly training. Yet he was still weaker than that bastard! He always lost to him by a slim margin, how infuriating!

Masasi gave a smile as though he did not care, it could be seen that he did not exert his full strength.

“Wang Zheng, just give it your best shot. Don’t hurt yourself, the recoil from this plaything is quite large.” Said Xie Yuxin. He knew why Wang Zheng had put in so much effort. His grandpa had promised, if Wang Zheng displayed exceptional results in military training, this would be one more reason he could use to convince the Mech Department teachers. If not, things would be more difficult.

Notes:

1] So here, one of our editors cough Argos cough had the initial reaction that this was an average pace. He soon after did the math determining that this was about 37.5 km/h average speed which is about 23 mph. Some might know about a Mr. Bolt who's top running speed is 28mph in a 100 meter dash. So it may indeed seem sorta average, but remember that 23mph is an average speed over 10k kilometers, and not his top speed. The world record for the mile is about 3.43 minutes. So if that person maintain top speed for the full 6.2xxx miles(10k kilometers) it would around 23 minutes. But as stated in the text, people slow down at these lengths. The world record for a 10k kilometer race is actually 26.17 minutes. Quite the difference. (Also worth mentioning is that the world record for woman is 27.01 seconds) So our MC running a 16 min 10k kilometer run, while taking 10 minutes for the first half, and never going full speed, is very impressive! In fact, he was averaging 18.6mph for the first half of the race and 31mph for the second half. So he was running faster than Usain Bolt's (world current fastest man in real life) 100 meter dash speed for over THREE MILES!!! Average my butt Argos...

Chapter 5 – Ability X

Wang Zheng paused, he briefly touched the strength testing machine. Carl looked impatient, “Hurry up, don’t dawdle!”

“Carl, if you’re looking for trouble, I’m happy to keep you company!” Zhang Shan frowned as he spoke. This bastard was asking for a beating. He looked like someone who deserved a beating from head to toe!

“Just you wouldn’t be enough!” Carl’s mouth twitched.

Luo Yun gave a slight smile, “Don’t be anxious, within this month, there will definitely be an opportunity for you to vent your frustrations.”

Wang Zheng paused for a moment, even he did not know how strong he was. In order to beat Masasi however, he had to use what he was good at.

“Wang Zheng, be careful!” Ye Zisu said. She did not feel that injuring oneself to triumph once was particularly heroic behavior.

Wang Zheng nodded his head and took a step back. His eyes flickered with energy. Bang…

Fuck! When he released his fist, Wang Zheng knew a problem was going to arise!

Crack... Ding.... Bang...

Some workers by the door heard the explosion and rushed in. Everyone in the strength testing room could only stare agape at the sight.

The strength testing machine had been completely destroyed...

The audience looked at Wang Zheng silently. Wang Zheng was also speechless. Deep down he scolded himself, “You really are an idiot Wang Zheng! I shouldn’t have to pay any compensation for this, right?”

Luo Yun was shocked but he controlled himself and gave a slight cough, “I think the strength testing machine has had some issues, swap it for a new one.”

Seeing that Luo Yun had not raised any notions of asking for compensation, Wang Zheng gave a huge sigh of relief. The Earth’s corps were still quite reliable!

After a new machine was swapped in, Wang Zheng tightly controlled his strength. Surprisingly, he was still able to give out 580lbs of force in a single strike! At this point, everyone else was utterly flabbergasted.

Ye Zisu looked forced as she walked over and beat Wang Zheng’s shoulders fervently, “Wow you bastard, you’ve hidden a lot of things about yourself!” She said as she gave Meng Tian a

meaningful glance.

Xie Yuxin gave Wang Zheng a thumbs up. Looked like he was wrong, Wang Zheng's true potential might actually not lie in the field of physics!

Carl was speechless while Masasi looked at Wang Zheng with great interest. Arrogance required some form of backing. They had originally felt that no one on Earth could compete with them.

Yet Wang Zheng was still very innocent. He only had one thing on his mind. His largest worry was that Luo Yun would suddenly turn around and tell him, "Wang Zheng, this strength testing machine's compensation will be on your tab!"

Thankfully, Luo Yun immediately moved onto the next part of the test. The testing facility was extraordinary. It could be seen that the next machine for testing was significantly more complex than the last one.

Masasi stopped and then said, "Instructor, there's no need to test me, I possess Ability X."

Luo Yun nodded his head, "Do the rest of you want to try the test?"

Carl looked distracted. He shrugged his shoulders and replied, "I don't have it. No need to test."

The two girls also shook their heads while Zhang Shan waved his arms, “I don’t have this thing either.”

“I do,” Said Xie Yuxin.

Everyone had a look of surprise on their faces. Especially Carl. How could he expect that someone on Earth would have this...

“Um, what is Ability X?” Wang Zheng asked curiously.

“If your genes are of Grade A, which is to say above 90 points, there will be a special test that scans your brain region. Some people possess extraordinary abilities, commonly known as extrasensory perception,” Explained Ye Zisu. She then remembered Wang Zheng’s gene score...

Wang Zheng gave a bitter smile, “I don’t have it, I have no need to test.”

“Could you all record this down?” Luo Yun asked.

“My apologies instructor, this is a secret,” Masasi declined.

Luo Yun did not continue to push the issue. Those who had Ability X were the elites among the elites. Thus, it could be said that whichever department had one would definitely place that person in a critical role.

Ability X did not assure that one's brainwaves would react with greater activity, perhaps there was no practical application. However, in the younger generation, this was all part of one's identity showing that they had the potential for great talent.

Furthermore, for Ability X users, they would all become members of a particular department.

Due to this fact, Carl could no longer afford to look down on Xie Yuxin.

The probability of possessing Ability X was extremely low. In fact, even among elites, out of every ten thousand would there be only one individual with it.

"The seven of you have had decent performances. In the future, there will be more exceptional students that will be joining us. You can all go back now; future training will be tougher than this. You better be mentally prepared," said Lt. Commander Luo Yun. He still wanted to assess the training situation of the rest of the students.

In the past, training was not as complicated. This time however, Gu Te mobilized a significant amount of resources to teach the students. Firstly, to obtain an understanding of their standards. With Gu Te's influence, the military would naturally cooperate. Furthermore, the military urgently required capable fresh blood to join them.

People like Masasi and Carl would definitely not stay on Earth.

However their presence could serve to motivate the rest of the students and this situation couldn’t be better.

To the new students of Ares College, this would definitely be a period that would be hard to forget.

To the new students of Ares College, this would definitely be a period that would be hard to forget.Regardless of if they were part of the Military Departments or not, this also included people like Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan who actively looked for torture-like training.

After the first day where they were taught a lesson, the entire first week was spent on grueling and strict basic training. Military appearance, drills, marching, running, rolling around. Without needing any further words, it could be said that it was extremely tiring and depressing. Being oppressed day and night, everyone’s spirit had gone through a qualitative change.

Furthermore, those who could enter Ares College all possessed similar basic abilities. No one wanted to be weaker than someone else. Thus gradually, the atmosphere improved.

After the first week, the most outstanding individuals were none other than Wang Zheng, Masasi, Carl, Zhang Shan, Meng Tian and Ye Zisu.

The two beauties were in the limelight. They were the two goddesses of this hellish training who could reduce the pain of everyone.

Meng Tian was 1.8 meters tall. Wearing her military uniform, one could feel an incomparable valiance and formidable air from her. The large group of the males all fell head over heels for her. Unexpectedly, one of the most fervent competitors was actually Carl.

Ye Zisu was from the capital. She was originally Daybreak Middle School's flower, OMG's little princess. She looked delicate, but had performed exceptionally. Many people saw her with a whole new level of respect. When beauty, wealth, and fitness combined together, it would result in one who was envied by everyone as Ms. Perfect.

The one in most pain would be Yan Xiaosu. The hellish training that skinned him alive. Compared to the days where he would only need to rely on his street smarts, the contrast was so drastic that he had long wished to quit school! The thought of how scary his father would be led him to persevere. If he really did quit school, his father would definitely cut off all of his allowance, regardless of what he excuse he gave.

Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan had another sort of notoriety. The two were Physics Department students, yet they were famous in the Military Departments! They had caused a large number of Mech and Officer Department students to feel inspired. Most importantly, the instructors often used their names to provoke the other students!

With regards to the instructor's method in sowing hatred to motivate them, Zhang Shan was naturally quite unaffected. He

was a Physics Department student after all, he did not see these individuals in any light.

For poor Student Wang, it was a headache. He would have to join the Mech Department in the future and yet before he even joined, he had offended everyone there!

Wang Zheng enjoyed the training immensely. This intense training helped him sharpen his body and his cultivation had also improved. Even the Rubik's Cube's battle energy had increased.

Of course strange situations also occurred... Meng Tian would occasionally glare at him icily, but when did poor Student Wang ever owe her any money?

Wang Zheng had not touched CT for a week and he had felt a sense of longing. Unfortunately, the only source of leisure here was training. The rules were strictly enforced. If one wanted to play games on their Skylink that was fine, but they had to be careful not to get caught. The penalty would be a negative evaluation.

The second week of training had finally improved. The students were finally rid of the boring and simple exercises. Now they could enjoy the beautiful mountain scenery!

Yet this was not a casual outing. Everyone had to carry a heavy pack filled to the brim with bricks!

Don’t think that this mech pilot’s training is tough and tragic, because there was no training that was the most tragic; only training which were more tragic than the last. Mech pilots were mostly soldier types. Not every pilot could become a mech pilot. Most became engineers, tank operators, ship pilots, or even infantrymen!

Physical strength was the most important aspect regardless of whatever one would do.

Soon, everyone understood how they were extremely fortunate to just spend their time running around the track. They had to climb over mountains and ridges while carrying bricks. They really wanted to take those bricks and fling them at the instructor’s brains!

After the first day, everyone was too tired to think. They ate as if their life depended on it and slept as though their life depended on it. This was because they would be woken randomly during the middle of the night!

After one week of this torture, even Masasi and Carl’s usual calm and collected appearance changed slightly. On Carl’s face, fatigue could be seen. This training was too intense!

His original haughtiness had also disappeared, but this was not due to the training but rather, Wang Zheng.

Carl strongly suspected that little bastard was a robot in human skin! How could there be no discernable signs of fatigue on him!

Student Wang ate well and slept peacefully. Concurrently, he also had to serve as a psychological counselor, listening to Yan Xiaosu complain. Actually, the intensity of the training had already been reduced, but Xiaosu needed to vent.

One week's wilderness training had led to the condition of the female student's skin being affected significantly. Yet there were also exceptions. For example, no one knew what sort of skin product Ye Zisu was using, but her skin became more and more sparkling! This had led her to become more popular among the girls, with many asking how this was possible.

During the third week, it was a blessing as far as anyone was concerned. Although basic training still continued, the quantity had reduced significantly. The key thing was to better understand their firearms. This was everyone's happiest moment.

Wang Zheng's elite class had increased to a size of 50 individuals. They were those who had displayed exceptional ability and willpower in the earlier training exercises.

With the firearms class about to officially begin, military training was thus simpler.

In the monitoring lab, Gu Te had arrived.

"General, the students of this batch are generally not bad," Luo Yun saluted.

“It must have been tough. I have received your report, your analysis has been extremely accurate,” Gu Te nodded his head.

“The headmaster taught me well!” replied Luo Yun as he smiled. He too, was a student of Ares College, a member of the army’s Innovation Faction.

In order to bring back Ares College’s glory, relying on Masasi and Carl’s abilities had no value. Everyone was clear that they were only two individuals and the school would not regain its glory by relying on them. Gu Te was extremely clear on that point. He had gotten these two to join mainly to motivate and incite the rest of the students.

Looking at the sight before him, the results were not bad. Especially Carl’s provocative personality. It had spurred many students to improve.

“Headmaster, this Wang Zheng is an extremely important matter. I have been in the military for almost 10 years and I have never met such a prodigy. It is like he was born to be a soldier. Yet, he is actually part of the Physics Department.” Luo Yun said with regret.

Chapter 6 – This Kind Of Shooting!

“Haha. This guy’s situation is quite extraordinary.” When Gu Te received the test results, he had thought there had been a mistake. Wang Zheng’s results were better than that of Masasi’s! Even if Masasi was not trying his best, these results were still surprising.

He had originally thought that this guy introduced by Xie Yuxin would be nothing but trouble. Who would have expected that he would have unearthed such a gem!

The problem was that if he were to transfer him out of the Physics Department, Xiao Fei would definitely object violently! That woman would certainly blow up his office.

On the field, regardless of gender, everyone was extremely interested in the shooting practice. The sounds of discharging weapons blanketed the area. When it came to this particular field of expertise, Xie Yuxin displayed his absolute skill! None were comparable to him. In fact, he was better than Carl by quite a bit.

Masasi’s usual expression was unchanged. It was as though he had no weaknesses.

Wang Zheng’s performance wasn’t bad, and it could be seen that he was quite interested in shooting.

Military training was just about to get into the thick of things. Future training would gradually decrease in intensity. Furthermore, everyone was just a student and had to settle back

into the rhythm of school life.

With regards to shooting skills, the instructors were not particularly strict. The important thing was to cultivate interest in this aspect.

Taking the initiative, Masasi walked over to Wang Zheng's side and asked him, "Would you like to engage in a small competition?"

This was the first time Masasi had taken the initiative to invite someone to a competition ever since he arrived on Earth! Even Carl, who was standing at the side, was shocked. Masasi's actions showed that he held Carl in no regard!

Sadly, shooting was not one of Carl's strengths.

"Wang Zheng, accept his challenge! We'll encourage you!"

"Yeah! There's nothing to be afraid of since you've always been number one. Ruin him!"

Before Wang Zheng could reply, all of the surrounding students were already riled up. Masasi and Carl's existence had ignited everyone's curiosity and competitive spirit. The two of them were just too fearsome. Other than Wang Zheng, no one else could hold a candle to them. Carl's arrogance led others to be irritated, yet Masasi's calm and aloof personality provoked others even more! It was rare to see Masasi, an elite of the elites, challenge Wang Zheng on his own initiative!

“Masasi, are you sure you don’t want to compete against Xie Yuxin instead?” asked Zhang Guodong, the instructor in charge of the shooting practice. He too was excited at such a development.

In his eyes though, Masasi was definitely very experienced in gun handling. Although the Earth’s and the Moon’s training was slightly different, to Masasi, there was no difference. From his body posture to his firing technique, it was skillful and precise. His stability was like an example in a textbook. As an instructor, even Guodong himself felt slightly pressured.

Yet, Wang Zheng was clearly a novice touching a gun for the first time. He followed every instruction during training to the letter, and his results weren’t bad. Although at times he could hit all 10 targets, other times he only managed to hit 7 or 8.

Compared to him, among the rest of the students it was clearly Xie Yuxin who was the best shooter among them.

“Boss! Overthrow him! I will support you!” This little competition had attracted the attention of numerous individuals and even the military support department’s students had come over. Obviously, this would include Yan Xiaosu!

The surrounding students looked at him as Yan Xiaosu as he puffed out his chest and proudly exclaimed, “This is my older brother! We have been together since we were in diapers!”

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly, “Sure, how

will we compete?”

Zhang Guodong nodded his head, “Existing targets, 10 shots each.”

“Count me in as well. Masasi, this is Wang Zheng’s first time, this is just a one sided slaughter!” Xie Yuxin angrily replied.

Masasi gave a slight smile, “If he were really a novice, it would be embarrassing for me to even fire my gun.”

Zhang Guodong stared blankly. Everyone else had a similar expression on their face. What in the world were they talking about?

Up till now, Masasi had the best training scores followed by Xie Yuxin. Wang Zheng had followed the instructions to the letter and was not even in the top 20!

The three prepared to fire. Ten Bullets each.

The rest of the students gathered around them and held their breaths in anticipation. No one could distract them from this.

The three started firing at the same time. Bang!

Ten Hits!

Ten Hits!

Ten Hits!

Wang Zheng's shots had suddenly become accurate. Ten shots. Ten Hits.

Xie Yuxin was slightly surprised. Did he surpass his limits?

"We won't be able to determine the victor like this. When I was on the Moon I often competed with my friends with another method."

Masasi introduced a new set of rules. They would have their backs towards the target and after 3 seconds, act simultaneously. The first one to open fire and hit the target the most number of times wins.

The level of difficulty had increased substantially.

Zhang Guodong readily agreed. These little bastards were really too vicious.

☆ ☆ ☆

In the monitoring room, Gu Te and Luo Yun watched the show with keen interest.

“There is some difficulty involved in this. If one is too rash, the hit rate will definitely fall.”

“I really can’t tell if it’s Wang Zheng’s first time touching a gun. That bastard is really quite amazing.”

“Let’s see how he performs.”

☆ ☆ ☆

The three turned around while Zhang Guodong prepared to countdown.

While Masasi and Xie Yuxin used a single hand shooting style, Wang Zheng used a two-handed shooting style as that was what was taught by the instructor. Masasi and Xie Yuxin could be said to be of another world! Although the two-handed shooting style was more stable, using that method while turning around meant Wang Zheng would definitely be slower.

Three… two… one!

The three individuals moved at the exact same time. Masasi and Xie Yuxin turned to their right simultaneously, arms following accordingly. They turned around quite quickly and took aim in a dead heat. Quickly and violently turning their bodies. Not only was Masasi experienced at this, but so was Xie Yuxin. It was difficult to see who was the better man.

Yet at this point, a gun had already fired.

Bang...

Ten Hits!

The entire place was silent. Masasi and Xie Yuxin froze. They had just turned around and Wang Zheng had already fired?

Wang Zheng did not even bother to turn around. He had placed his hand behind his back and fired!

At this point, the entire field had burst into raucous applause. Yan Xiaosu was the most spirited one, “Did you see that! That was my older brother! The one I grew up with since we were in diapers!”

☆ ☆ ☆

In the monitoring room, Gu Te and Luo Yun looked at each other. It was like they had seen a ghost.

Wasn’t firing behind one’s back a skill only certain veterans possessed?

“Display all of the targets he previously shot at,” Lt. Commander Luo Yun suddenly commanded.

One target after another was displayed on the screen. Gu Te and Luo Yun could only stare in disbelief. What in the world was this....

Although he had indeed only hit 7, 8 and sometimes 5 times in the earlier bouts, the problem was that every single target had a pattern on it! There were ‘Smiley Faces’ and ‘Milky Way Currency Symbols’. Fuck your granny! Some even had the school crest on them!

“Headmaster! Congratulations!” said Luo Yun as he gave a salute.

It was easy to raise an army of a thousand, but hard to find a good general! Gu Te had never once imagined that this accident would reap such gains.

This student had a genetic evaluation of 28 points?

Even 82 points would be considered low for someone like him!

☆ ☆ ☆

Masasi gave a bitter smile, “Looks like I underestimated you.”

Among everyone there, Masasi was the only one who had noticed Wang Zheng’s target’s details.

This bastard was too carefree. He felt that the shooting practice

was extremely pointless despite him being interested in it. Clearly he was different from the rest.

Wang Zheng had no choice. At the same time he finally understood why Bonehead had forced him to open his eyes wide. It was to train his visual acuity.

He could feel that the Rubik's Cube in the pit of his stomach heat up. A good sign.

Once his foundations had been set, it was akin to him owning a treasure! What he needed now was to train in the midst of battle.

Yet this was still just the results of the first part of training. He did not know what things would be like once he had completed it.

Would he really be able to become a God of War?

"This was very thrilling. Everyone should set their sights on surpassing them. Train well, the military training is about to end. I hope that the experiences you have had during this period would be helpful," Zhang Guodong said. Everyone gave a round of applause. This time's military training had changed everyone. Whether one had learned anything or not, at the very least, everyone's willpower had gained aspects of a soldier's resolve.

As for Student Wang, he had become the man of the moment despite being previously unknown.

One month later and military training had officially ended. Wang Zheng had completely surpassed Masasi in results to become the one with top scores. It was not until now, that the Mech Department students realized that he was from the Physics Department...

Wang Zheng was slightly reluctant to part with the training. Bitter suffering awaited him in the Physics Department and a tough life would once again be resumed.

After the conclusion of military training, the students were given two days of rest. Everyone wanted to rest on Saturday and Sunday would be at the gathering with the Mech Department girls. After the military training, it seemed that the girls had a much more favorable impression of the Physics Department.

Wang Zheng's Saturday was free. Yan Xiaosu and Xie Yuxin had returned to their respective homes. Since, the Old Merchant had left with all of his belongings, Wang Zheng finished his breakfast, and headed towards Brothers Net Cafe.

When the owner saw Wang Zheng, his eyes brimmed with tears of excitement. Ever since school started, business had been poor. Why couldn't schools have holidays all year round!

Wang Zheng similarly used the VIP6 booth as per usual. He had not played for some time, and he could feel a genuine itch to do so.

Skeleton's ID lit up. Wang Zheng changed his profile picture to that of a skeleton's head as well, even if it was not as adorable as

the real Bonehead.

☆ ☆ ☆

A month to most people would be over in the blink of an eye. To some others who had been bitterly waiting, it felt like a year.

Solon had a massive headache. He was unable to contact Skeleton at all. He had disappeared for a month, and hopefully not lost forever.

Had he been kidnapped?

Solon had never felt this concerned; not even for his own son!

“Boss! Boss! He’s here!”

“Fuck! He’s finally here! Begin all the preparations!”

“Yes!”

On the forum. This time it was not only the beginner arena page engage in chatter; now even the main page had a notice.

The pentakill from last time had become the pride and legend of the beginner arena. Skeleton’s video from last month had already been released in numerous editions.

“Huh, who is it? It’s so early in the morning. Are you looking to die!”

“Liu Zi, hurry up. Skeleton is online!”

“Fuck! I’m coming!”

There were usually less players in the morning. However, this time, the number of users started to increase. In fact, it increased as quickly as a rocket taking off!

“Boss, everything is in position. Do we begin?”

“Begin!” said Solon nodding his head.

“ ...This bastard is slightly hard to deal with. He only commentates high level games. I’m afraid that...”

“No matter! Directly broadcast!” Solon slammed the table as he shouted.

The person they spoke about was gold medal commentator ‘Fawn’. In the commentator world, he was relatively famous. He only commentated for popular livestreams and videos. This time, Solon personally invited him.

Everyone was extremely engrossed. He strongly believed that this

would be his trump card!

The players directly entered but were surprised to see that a broadcast had already started.

“Good day everyone! I am Fawn of Great Menfolk. Fawn of Recklessly Smashing Fawn. Recently, I heard of a user by the name of Skeleton who has been exceptionally outstanding, and I’m here to see for myself!” Although his ID was Fawn, this brother was definitely one of the menfolk. He had long beard split in two and seemed to float in the air.[1]

“We still have a bit of time. Can everyone remember the last battle? It was truly not bad. He even managed to score a pentakill. Of course, he only killed noobs, so I think he deserves the title of Noob Farmer!” Fawn mocked. He had not prepared for this livestream and if not for Solon’s invitation, he would not have been interested in this at all. This guy was just bullying noobs. What was he worth?

As he finished speaking, the chatbox[2] erupted with messages, spamming with words of ridicule.

Notes:

1] I imagine this guy here (30 years or so ago ofc)

2] For those of you who aren’t familiar with streaming sites. Example here

Chapter 7 – Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian

Fawn personally felt that he was very popular. As he watched the stream however, he couldn't stomach it any longer. Fuck! What kind of bastard would use the Wargod No. 1 to such an extent!

"Cough. Fawn has to make a slight correction. This guy seems pretty decent after all. Everyone, please await his next battle!"

Pausing the live stream temporarily, he let the users listen to some of his preferred music. Fawn hurriedly started to watch all of Skeleton's videos. The more he watched, the more surprised he became. This fucker was a monster. He was an expert in close combat! Looks like this was slightly meaningful after all.

Including the battle where he had assisted Yan Xiaosu, Wang Zheng had already achieved five consecutive victories. This game was one that he would definitely lose! The matchmaking system would naturally assign him tougher and tougher opponents.

☆ ☆ ☆

"Boss, there are numerous high level experts who have appeared in the matchmaker. I think they wish to battle Skeleton."

"Hehe. This is the exact result I wanted!"

"But wouldn't this match Skeleton up with higher level mecha? Wouldn't this be a problem?"

Solon had a knowing smile on his face, “Battles like these cannot be avoided. He would have to fight them eventually. At most, he would just be forced to swap out his mech. So long as he wins we will continue to do this.”

“...But Boss, he has never replied to us. What if he doesn’t change his mech?”

Solon was stunned for a moment. Fuck. How could he have forgotten such an important thing! “What are you waiting for! Hurry up and inform him then! Are you a pig[1]!?”

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng did indeed see his system message inbox blink repeatedly, but since he was preparing for battle he was too lazy to reply.

Matchmaking Complete.

ID. Northwest Wind, Bronze III[2]. Mech: Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian

Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian: High-End Mech. Exported mech model. Overwhelming long distance firepower. Inbuilt magnetic field for interfering with enemy systems. Commonly used by soldiers of the Moon.

On the other side, Solon felt like he was an ant on top of a burning wok[3] . Why was the opposite party not responding to him!

ID. Skeleton, Wargod No.1

Fawn couldn't help but to be jubilant. The battle ahead would definitely be very interesting. Although, he couldn't fully understand how a Wargod No.1 would try to beat a Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian.

When he saw the number of paying audience members, he was shocked speechless at the sight. Fuck your granny! There were 30,000 viewers already. In the high level arenas, this would be considered pretty decent. Looks like this guy was pretty well received here.

"Hello everyone! I would like to welcome everyone on this sunny morning to enjoy this battle in the beginner's arena. A Wargod No.1 vs. a Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian. I'm very curious as to how Skeleton will plan to use his titanium alloy blade to stab the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian to death!" ridiculed Fawn. "Everyone should know that the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian's nickname is the Thunder God. It is an extremely balanced export type mech, commonly used in the high level arenas. It has an inbuilt magnetic field which is specialized for inhibiting long range sniping. ...Fuck, did I see something wrong? Our courageous Skeleton has chosen his weapon... and for today, he has chosen the laser rifle! GOD!"

While Fawn was explaining, he couldn't help but to give a sigh of admiration.

This time, there were numerous viewers who had been invited by their friends. They couldn't be bothered to watch the video. Some had just entered and once they did, they saw a shocking scene before them.

This expert was being a prick! Using Wargod No. 1 in jest was fine, but at least have some common sense!

The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian was the bane of long ranged attackers. Although usually, just using the Wargod No. 1 was as good as digging your own grave. The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian's key ability was to disrupt long ranged combat; if one were to wait for the right opportunity and engage in melee combat, then with Skeleton's close combat abilities, there was definitely a chance to attain victory. The problem was that he didn't bring a blade, but instead chose a laser rifle. The laser rifle of Wargod No.1 was a basic one too. It would definitely be disrupted by the magnetic field.

Fawn did not expect to run into such a situation this morning. "Hello my fellow early risers. It looks like this competition will be over soon. Our little friend Skeleton looks like he has yet to wake up. He's continued to use Wargod No.1 and even brought a laser rifle. I think he feels that his opponent, Northwest Wind, is a follower of Catholicism[4]!"

The atmosphere in the broadcast had changed. The rest of it was just ridicule after ridicule.

☆ ☆ ☆

In the office, Solon hit the table angrily, “You group of IDIOTS! You can’t even contact a single individual!”

Communication. Communication was extremely important. He greatly wished to interact with Skeleton. He wanted to let the opposing party know what a great financial opportunity he was. If the two of them worked together, they could have created a miracle.

Yet this opportunity was about to be destroyed!

Even a kindergarten child could tell you that one cannot utilize the laser rifle against the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian.

The biggest problem was that Skeleton was clearly a close combat expert. Why in the world would he choose a laser rifle!

Suddenly a thought arose in everyone’s mind. He must have selected the wrong weapon!

He definitely selected the wrong weapon!

Fuck.

It was unfortunate that the competition had no option to back

out. Begin!

☆ ☆ ☆

Battle Location: City Battleground

The city possessed numerous buildings which could serve as cover. Was he planning to use the rifle to literally beat the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian to death?

The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian had an energy shield, so even if he were to bash it with the rifle for an entire day, the shield would not break.

“Excellent, Skeleton my little friends, is planning to come out in public with a stunning appearance! He seems to be slightly perplexed as he examines his laser rifle. Looks like he really did choose the wrong weapon. To everyone watching this livestream, I am Fawn and I will be commentating on this battle of CT in the beginner’s arena. This battle will teach everyone an important lesson: lacking common sense is indeed quite a scary notion!”

By now, Skeleton already had numerous supporters. Yet under the insults and scolding of the other viewers, they had no way to defend Skeleton’s actions. Everyone possessed common sense after all.

☆ ☆ ☆

“Boss, the battle has begun, but viewers continue to rise. Attention to it is also increasing.”

Solon did not want to watch, but at this point, even if it was to be his final firework, he had to personally witness this battle.

☆ ☆ ☆

On the screen, the Wargod No.1 hefted his laser rifle and started spinning it around in circles. He seemed extremely curious. Then he fired a shot to the east and a shot to the west.

This clearly exposed his current position. The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian had already started moving in Wargod No. 1’s direction.

“Excellent, looks like this will be a quick defeat. Contestant Skeleton has nonchalantly revealed his position. Based on previous analysis, within a 100 meter range, the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian can completely disrupt the enemy mech’s shooting assistance system. Although some experts might be able to compensate for the interference caused by the magnetic field and adjust the laser, as mentioned, only experts are able to do so!” smiled Fawn as he explained.

At this point in time, Fawn’s Skylink received a message. If it were a more exciting match, he would definitely have left the message for later, but at this point in time, there was nothing worth paying attention to and hence he opened the message. Fawn was instantly overjoyed.

“Dear viewers, I have just received a message. Our contestant, Northwest Wind’s user is none other than the Asia Region’s 9th ranked player with the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian, Zhang Hao! Congratulations contestant Skeleton, he will not have lost to an unknown challenger!”

This implied that there would be no chance for victory.

☆ ☆ ☆

The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian trod carefully, his sides against the walls beside him. Even if the enemy ambushed him, he would have a way to react.

Actually, Zhang Hao did not feel that the enemy had any chance of victory. However he did not want to take any chances.

Wargod No.1 did not have any intention of hiding. Within a few minutes, the two individuals clashed. Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian unreservedly began to fire his lasers at him. The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian possessed high explosive ‘A’ lasers which had significantly more firepower compared to a Wargod No.1’s small gun.

“Facing the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian’s ferocious assault, the Wargod No.1 retreated! Excellent, this is an extremely smart move. Looks like contestant Skeleton has not given up. Please forgive me for not being professional, but I want to drink some milk. For the sake of this battle I have not even had breakfast!” as

Fawn finished speaking, he immediately took out a bottle of milk.

Having an incisive personality was a commentator's characteristic. Especially since he was coerced to come and commentate such a low level game; it was indeed humiliating.

Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian's magnetic field had been activated. It covered the battlefield. Zhang Hao quickly took the initiative. In this sort of situation, so long as he was able to suppress the enemy, it would be easy to crush the opponent.

Using the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian, it was important to keep some distance away from the enemy.

Thus even as he chased, Zhang Hao continued to maintain a safe distance.

Looking at the capabilities of the mech, exported mecha usually did not possess significant speed. The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian, however, could not possibly be worse than the Wargod No.1. Once he caught a trace of the enemy, it would be impossible to escape from his grasp.

Once Wargod No.1 appeared, he would be subject to vicious assault. The enemy would have no way to retaliate.

Zhang Hao slowly approached the corner around which the Wargod No.1 was hiding. One would eventually run out of space to retreat.

“Everyone should be familiar with the City Battleground’s layout. Within the next three minutes, Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian will definitely corner the Wargod No.1 and it will be the moment everyone is waiting for. Fellow viewers, give me a moment to drink some milk. Whenever I see bad performances, my stomach feels hungry.”

Fawn’s insults had let those previously depressed viewers become exceedingly angry. They began to flood the chatbox with comments of their own. Both sides were arguing with each other. At this point in time, a small minority still believed a miracle would happen.

Fawn drank milk as he watched before laughing, “I can’t believe contestant Skeleton still has some die-hard fans. At this point in time, some still believe he can win. I, Fawn, have broadcasted for three years already, and even livestreamed the power struggle of Monarchs! So let me tell you, this situation has no chance for reversal. None at all. If Skeleton were to win, I will eat this milk carton.” Fawn spoke as he laughed loudly. He didn’t understand what Solon was trying to do.

He had heard Solon would not be able to work for much longer and wanted to give him some face. But who would have known it was a trap! Livestreaming such a performance would be considered a joke in his circle of friends, and the more he thought about it the more he regretted it.

Just as Fawn spoke, the Wargod No.1 was located. Suppressed under Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian’s firepower, he continued to

retreat backwards with very little space left.

At this point in time, the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian had forced its way across. At this rate, within 10 seconds, they would meet face to face.

From the start of the battle till now, the Wargod No.1 had not fired in the enemy's direction. Thus it led people to wonder if he knew how to use the laser rifle.

"Ten, nine... excellent! Contestant Skeleton has decided to make his last stand. He is awaiting the moment his opponent appears. A pity."

When Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian was about to appear, he suddenly stopped and then he rushed out. This prevented the enemy from peeking out and spotting him causing the Wargod No.1 to lose his element of surprise.

The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian stood face to face with the Wargod No.1. Both sides' guns were already facing each other.

The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian began to fire. Rumble rumble rumble...

Four lasers beams were fired directly at the Wargod No.1.With a commentator, the finale had to be commented on.

"Magnetic Guardian fires. Excellent! His shots are very accurate.

The Wargod No.1 has climbed behind the wall. This is his life's final wall."

Bang...

Eh? The Wargod No.1 returned fire. Without the assistance of the shooting system, the laser raced towards the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian. Zhang Hao broke out in cold sweat and immediately activated his energy shield. This was a basic function of the magnetic field, but the laser had not been disrupted! The laser hit the cockpit directly.

Notes:

1] Just a funny way to call someone stupid

2] Reminder: This is a MOBA style game, and League of Legends was the most popular on in China at this time. So the ranking system is similar to that system. Bronze three is his division, and III is the rank

3] Wok is a large black frying pan.

4] A joke here meaning he is a good person, won't return violence, won't kill, will turn the other cheek etc. etc.

Chapter 8 – Fawn! Your Mother's Calling For You To Go Back Home And Drink Milk

"Ah, not bad. He indeed does display the skill of one of Asia Region's top 10 Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian users. His ability to displace the laser is very precise, Wargod No.1 will be down to his last breath soon!" laughed Fawn.

This shot had led everyone to feel shocked. Those that were following the scene closely, sighed in admiration. It was a pity Zhang Hao had turned on his energy shield before he was almost destroyed. However, now the energy shield had now been turned on.

With its activation, Zhang Hao could not afford to waste energy and he rushed in the direction where Wang Zheng was hiding. His charge pulverized all the debris in his way as far as the eye could see.

The Wargod No.1 jumped into the air… he was definitely looking to die…

Bang…

A laser fired. The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian wanted to return fire but the mech was rocked by a vicious explosion. He was hit!

Was it a lucky hit?

As he prepared to adjust his machine, rumble. The mech was rocked by another impact. This was caused by Wargod No.1 who had landed a distance away in front of him. He was no longer going to hide and instead prepared to suppress the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian.

Boom!

Rumble!

The magnetic field should have been able to interfere and disrupt one's shooting assistance system!

But what if the pilot did not require it???

What if the pilot was a godly gunner???

The magnetic field could indeed cause the laser to deviate!

But what if the pilot could make calculations and correct the deviation???

What if the pilot had made adjustments in advance???

Technically speaking such a feat was possible. However, practically speaking, it was impossible for anyone to execute it!

The laser hit the energy shield repeatedly resulting in the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian rocking endlessly. Still, Zhang Hao exerted excellent self-control and calmed his heart. All he needed was one chance. One chance and he would be able to turn the enemy into scrap metal!

Time was of the essence.

Even if his energy shield was hit, with the Wargod No.1's rifle, it would still require more than 10 shots to deplete its energy.

Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian raised his high explosive laser rifle, bang...

The whole world went silent. A trail of light burst from the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian's rifle. However... this ray of light wasn't shot out, but rather, it was Wargod No.1 who had shot it into the rifle!

The tables had turned!

The high explosive laser rifle had been destroyed. The Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian had become an unarmed pretty little girl! Wargod No.1 continued to advance. Those in the chatbox whom had previously held on to the very end had suddenly been filled with burning fervor!

Bang... Bang...

Every hit on the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian caused it to rock. Zhang Hao immediately withdrew his alloy blade and rushed towards Wargod No.1. He had to rush into the enemy before his energy shield depleted.

Wargod No.1 did not show any intention of dodging. He continued to fire round after round at the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian.

There was only a distance of 10 odd meters between the two. The 8th shot depleted the energy shield of the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian.

Six meters!

Bang...

Headshot!

Nine rifle shots!

Skeleton WIN!

Resounding applause flooded everyone’s ears. Everyone’s eyes were full of fireworks.

He could even win in such a situation?

At this point in time, Fawn was cut off from the screen. Actually, while he commentated, he had been holding the carton of milk. The straw which he had been drinking from was jammed into his nose. He had taken a deep breath in surprise and half choked to death!

The chatbox erupted into a frenzy of activity.

“Fawn! Your mother’s calling for you to go back home and drink milk!”

“Hurry up and eat the milk carton, we are waiting!”

☆ ☆ ☆

Although the battle was over, this matter was not settled. Zhang Hao opened the public channel. He had originally broadcasted his identity in order to use this opportunity to become famous. But who would have thought such a situation would occur!

“There was a bug. Wargod No.1’s laser rifle would definitely require at least 10 shots to deplete my energy shield! This has been tested!” Zhang Hao exclaimed.

If the shield had blocked one more shot, he would have been the victor!

At the same time, the viewers were also whispering among themselves. Although no one was really paying attention to this issue, it was true that people had done tests. Especially in the higher level arenas, the amount of damage one could sustain was calculated very precisely.

Especially since the Wargod No.1 was such a basic model, it was best used for such testing.

Could it be that this Wargod No.1 had a problem???

Solon was so happy he looked as though he was on drugs. “Quickly analyze the video!”

No one else was clearer about the facts than Solon. There were definitely no bugs. Since there were no bugs, then it was definitely due to skill!

Whether one agreed or not, everyone, including Fawn, was waiting for the analysis. As a professional commentator, he was extremely clear. With Wargod No.1’s laser power, it would definitely require at least 10 shots to deplete the shield. If the shots were badly placed, it would take even more hits.

The analysis of the video had come out.

Even the chatbox had become temporarily silent. Everyone’s movement had slowed down.

Wargod No.1's shots had been affected slightly by the displacing effects of the magnetic field. However even under these conditions, he was still able to hit. Although it was easy to say, this actually went against a pilot's instinctual habits. Even under close scrutiny, no one could believe he was able to do this. Wargod No.1 was extremely accurate with the laser rifle!

At this point in time, no one was concerned with his monstrous ability to calibrate on the fly and his accuracy. The problem was he had only fired 9 shots.

Everyone knew that 9 shots was not sufficient to break the shield. Furthermore, one shot even hit the gun.

At this point, the eagerly awaited analysis had come out. Other than the single shot that had hit the gun, the other 8 shots had all hit the exact same position!

Energy superposition consumption law!

When the same position is hit by repeated fire, the energy consumption for shield deflection would increase!

The analysis showed the energy shield's energy consumption. By the time the 7th shot had hit, the shield had only 8% of its energy left. Thus when the 8th shot had hit, it destroyed the shield and hit the mech.

This was the epitome of attacks!

He had just succeeded by a slim margin. The shield had been destroyed as a result, and the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian was unable to leave even a scratch on the enemy despite sacrificing his life.

This was a miracle!

It was a string of coincidences that had led to this occurrence. If just one thing went wrong, Wargod No.1 would have lost.

Yet as a result, Skeleton won!

At this point, the livestream had a new attraction. Fawn had wordlessly started to tear up the milk carton, cramming it into his mouth piece by piece... he was really swallowing the milk carton!

The last mouthful had to be washed down with water. He looked as though he had been constipated for over 10 days.

The worker beside him suddenly spoke as though prompted and asked, “Commentator Fawn, I’m sure everyone would like to ask what your opinion on this battle would be.”

Fawn calmed himself and then replied, “Cough. I admit, I almost peed my pants. This was the work of a god!”

Invulnerable God Skeleton!

All of you had been tricked. Skeleton was actually a long ranged expert!

Revealing CT's largest secret – Wargod No.1 is actually an all rounded mech!

Student Wang was currently recalling his gains. The Rubik's Cube had a reaction to the battle, but it was not exceptionally large. This gain was not as significant as the military training he had gone through. The battle was not exceptionally difficult either.

Although the viewers had watched with exceptional fervor and trepidation, in reality, once the first laser had been deflected, the battle was already over.

Calibrating for the magnetic field was nothing special. Wang Zheng's strongest suit was his mathematics and spatial judgement. Once he fired a single round he was able to calibrate for the magnetic field's interference.

Ah, actually, if he was able to fire faster, 8 shots would have been sufficient. Perhaps then he would have gained a larger amount of battle energy. Wang Zheng felt that he had to work harder. Such an easy battle, and he didn't perform better.

After his self-review, he paid his bills and left.

If his enemy had known how Wang Zheng was feeling, he would probably have quit CT altogether.

☆ ☆ ☆

“Boss, there are currently 46,000 paying viewers! It’s a new record!”

The entire office was filled with applause. Solon then noticed, he was covered in sweat.

Trying his best to show a relaxed expression he spoke, “It has been tough on everyone. Our next task will be to figure out a way to contact Skeleton!”

“Don’t worry! We will continue to message him. One day he will be moved by our sincerity!”

Solon strode back to his office steadily. Closing the door, he jumped up in excitement like a little kid.

This was too sweet!

☆ ☆ ☆

Those that woke up early on a weekend morning to watch the match were few. They would definitely go and play a few rounds themselves. Suddenly, everyone was wondering: Why were there

so many people choosing Wargod No.1?

After watching Skeleton's Wargod No.1's godly performance, everyone felt that Wargod No.1 was an extremely strong mech. Actually, other than the fact that it had no energy shields and an average offensive capability, despite the limited choices for equipment, it had an excellent ability to pay attention to its surroundings allowing for better judgement!

This was a mech that could allow one to become a god!

Thus, numerous passionate kids were all tricked. They lost so quickly and so much that they even lost their pants[1]!

They cried out desperately. Many of them were unable to dodge other mech's assaults. Even more often than not, before they could even unsheathe their alloy knives, they would already be reduced to a fiery heap. Of course, there were also those who were able to operate it better. Ambushing an enemy from a corner and relentlessly attacking, once the fight began they would began to realize they could not even deplete the enemy shields and as a result, they too would also be reduced into a smoldering heap.

Wargod No.1, at the end of the day, was still Wargod No.1; a training mech.

After using it one would finally realize, this wasn't a fucking mech. This was a trap!

The more professional gamers, all formed their own corps. It was a form of glory. Of course, forming a corp around a single elite made more sense. All of the famous corps were built like that, just having several strong elites were enough.

All the corps that were slightly more famous usually had a diamond level player as the leader. At the same time, they set high standards for entry in order to develop promising talents. This was the only way to maintain a corp's glory and fame. Likewise, this would help spread the corp's fame.

Yet on this day, a special corps had been formed. This corp was known as the Skeleton Corps. It was different from the rest. This corps had no requirement for the player's skill level. However, the leader was not part of it yet. No one knew who this leader really was.

The most important part was that to enter this corps, one had to believe in miracles.

When this corps was formed, there were thousands of people who rushed to join. More accurately, thousands of noobs joined.

In actuality, Wang Zheng's recent battle had already entered the top one hundred searched Sol Federation CT games. Particularly noteworthy was the fact that it was the only game from the beginner arena.

There were too many experts, and the King's Confrontation had numerous exciting matches. Even in such a situation, such a match

was worthy of being placed among them. It also had to be said that Fawn was a courageous man. He actually ate the entire milk carton. The battle was a blessing in disguise for him.

At the start of the match, everyone only believed Skeleton was only capable in close combat. Usually, a professional player would only focus on a specific type of combat and not be a jack of all trades. Furthermore with the Wargod No.1, the laser rifle was as good as a decorative ornament. Yet, after this match, it showed everyone that even 'spring would eventually come to the field of lilies'. No one would now dare to say that the Wargod No.1 could not shoot someone to death!

Compared to his close combat ability, Skeleton's long range skill was even more unfathomable.

This battle could not satisfy a craving. Especially to the players who had used the Wargod No.1 and had been tyrannically oppressed. They could only watch the videos to feel recharged and after that, continue to battle before getting destroyed again.

Yet, for some unknown reason, their hearts would be filled with passion. Every male longed to become a god!

Such a sight was quite common. When they lost, it would give rise to numerous insults among players. Even then the teammates would hope, what if one day they were matched with the real Skeleton?

A torrent of new usernames cropped up, "The Real Skeleton",

“Skeleton Number 2”, “Skeletonoo” and so on. These would lead those kids who were eagerly hoping for a fluke to want to cry yet have no tears.

This was truly oppressive!

Notes:

1] I laughed pretty hard here. It is a reference to gambling and losing so much you even bet away your clothes.

Chapter 9 – Recruiting Soldiers, Buying Horses

Some of the players were extremely resolute. Therefore, their battle points were like that of Mt. Lu's waterfall —, flowing down a thousand meters.

On the other hand, the one who had caused this entire disaster, Student Wang, was currently deciding what to have for lunch.

His choices were quite plentiful. Old Tan Pickled Vegetables and Beef Noodles, Old Tan Pickled Vegetables and Pork Noodles, or perhaps he should have Old Tan Pickled Vegetables and Lamb Noodles.[2]

In the end, Student Wang opted for a bowl of Chef Kang[2] instant noodles.

As he was paying, Wang Zheng suddenly realized something was amiss. ...How come his bank account had more than ten thousand???

That was a massive fortune!

Where did it come from? What if it was a mistake? Then he would have to return it. If he didn't do this properly, he would be seen as untrustworthy. This wasn't a joke!

As he ate his instant noodles, he continued to figure out how this could have happened. As he ate, tears welled up in Student Wang's eyes. God, he could finally see the light! He would no longer have to eat instant noodles!

Quick as a bullet, Wang Zheng rushed towards the canteen and immediately ordered three dishes and a soup. Even the canteen operator was stunned at the sight of what had just transpired.

After eating and drinking his fill, Student Wang once again felt the joy of living. When one's car reaches the mountain, there will definitely be a road[3]. When he saw the large number of emails, Wang Zheng finally understood. This was not a mistaken transaction. Instead, it was given to him by the CT system. That guy by the name of Solon was the real deal. In order to let Wang Zheng believe him, Solon had fully researched every aspect of Wang Zheng.

In actual fact, it would be better for Wang Zheng to find opponents closer to his skill level. Fighting weak opponents was meaningless. That was a significant problem. The Rubik's Cube could not only grow hotter, but could at times grow colder. When it became cold, the battle energy would decrease. This would happen when Wang Zheng's performance was poor or when he made mistakes.

Sometimes it would not be due to the fact that Wang Zheng performed poorly, but rather that the opponent was too weak. Even if there were no other options, this did not matter to the Rubik's Cube. The less often such situations occurred, the better for him.

Randomly picking an email, Wang Zheng gave a reply. He did not want to be entangled with the opposing party. He wanted things to be simple. If the constraints were too significant, it would affect his daily life.

☆ ☆ ☆

Solon was in an extremely good mood. Although he had patiently suffered while waiting for the reply, it had finally bore fruit. Skeleton would always give him a surprise. When the Skeleton Corps had formed, the CT officials had even created a special advertisement for their publicity. This was treatment only reserved for the most elite corps!

The workers were currently giving Solon a report on the numbers as they were constantly creating new entries. Most importantly, in the beginner arena, the Asian region had not had a decrease in numbers.

Solon finally felt that he could finally sit firmly on his laurels. His retirement sum was waving at him.

Suddenly, the Skylink rang. There was a new email.

Solon lazily glanced over, but very quickly his large frame stood up. He hurriedly opened the message. As he was too nervous, he constantly opened the wrong mail. In the end he managed to open the email.

There was only one word – Okay.

Outside, the workers were busy with their tasks. As player activity increased, their workload increased as well. At this point, loud laughter could be heard from the chairman's office. It was absolutely terrifying.

To Wang Zheng, for this period of time, he would no longer have any worries. Even the sun seemed exceptionally radiant.

In addition, if he became rich, he could find a more specialized place to train his body. Simple running was not sufficient for him to further train his body. He also required more nutrients to accommodate his training.

Back at the dormitory, the other three coincidentally happened to be there. Zhang Shan was meticulously combing his hair, Yao Ailun was currently engrossed in his computer game while mumbling to himself and nodding continuously while Chen Xiu was sitting by his side with sparkling eyes sparkling.

"You're back? How's my hair?"

Zhang Shan was preparing for tomorrow's gathering. Beautiful ladies were like spring; if one did not get a girlfriend in college, it was as pathetic as a monk with a wooden fish[4].

"Not bad. What are the two doing?"

“Don’t bother with those two nerds, they’re playing some computer game. What’s the point?” Zhang Shan could not understand and shrugged his shoulders. He could not imagine himself being excited over such pointless things.

“Zhang Shan, don’t be such an unsophisticated plebeian. This is the most modern game in the Milky Way Galaxy, CT!”

“Cheh, so what? If you want to satisfy your cravings, why don’t you just pilot an actual mech!” Zhang Shan disdainfully replied. His thinking was the same as Wang Zheng’s in the past.

“This guy’s skill defies the natural order!”

“Ah, his calculations are very exact. His math ability isn’t bad!” said Chen Xiu as he watched from the side. The two of them were stereotypical noobs who loved the game and were theorists.

When one discussed CT tactics, the two of them were “professors”. In actual combat however, they were no different from kindergarten kids. The two of them were rather powerless as their body could not keep up with their minds.

Wang Zheng gave them a look and was speechless. Yao Ailun was currently creating an avatar.

“Wang Zheng, didn’t you say that you wanted to become a mech pilot? Come here and take a look at this guy. His skill is unnatural,

and he's a real expert. He doesn't use those high end mechs like those other, arrogant players. If he was a military school student, it wouldn't be a small matter."

"Haha. It's just a game, no need to be so serious," replied Wang Zheng.

Yao Ailun's small eyes sparkled with light beneath his glasses. "Just you guys wait, this guy will definitely create a miracle!"

"Do you have interest in joining the Skeleton Corps? It was created by Brother Yao and me,"

Chen Xiu was very enthusiastic.

After understanding the situation, Student Wang was slightly speechless. These two were truly passionate and carefree.

Zhang Shan grabbed Wang Zheng. "Don't let these two nerds lead you astray! Follow me, your older brother, and your future opportunities will be boundless. Don't associate yourself with them!"

"Cheh. Zhang Shan, we have already made preparations for our leader. What 'ways of the world'. The time of the muscular male is long over. In this era of the elite, one will have to walk the path of an elite!"

Yao Ailun opened his cupboard and removed a parcel. Within 5

minutes he had completely transformed.

In a brief moment, he was dressed in a western suit and fixed his hair. He really looked like that of an ‘elite’. Student Yao changed to a pair of golden rimmed spectacles and adjusted his collar while looking disdainfully at Zhang Shan. “When dealing with girls, one must have the poise of a gentleman. One will have to go the mile to look the part.”

Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan stared at each other in disbelief. Who could have believed that this hardcore nerd could transform in a snap. This transformation was too fearsome.

“Isn’t this just being in disguise!”

“Don’t be envious brother. Did you not hear of my legend? At Tai Feng middle school, who hadn’t heard of Yao Ailun’s distinguished playboy nickname!”

Chen Xiu looked on enviously at Yao Ailun. “Actually, I have made my own preparations. Mother said that age is not an issue. In university, it would be better to find more girlfriends for the sake of the future.”

The dormitory was filled with silence. Wang Zheng and the other two were slightly petrified, what kind of modern age mother was that!

“Wang Zheng, what about you? Are you planning to wear your

school uniform?”

Wang Zheng replied helplessly as he shrugged his shoulders, “I’m fine with anything. Anyways, like this, Ye Zisu will instantly recognize me.”

“Fuck, the two of you are so close. You wouldn’t have already acted, have you? Shit it’s just a trap for the rest of us. Wait, wrong. We are all brothers-in-arms, so she is yours. I will not fight with you over her,” Zhang Shan replied with a spirit of loyalty and self sacrifice.

.“No, everyone please work hard; we are only classmates.” Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders. Although they were friends, he felt quite strange since Ye Zisu was always helping him. If he looked at it differently, Yue Jing had also left the city because of his actions.

“Brother Zheng, you wouldn’t happen to prefer males, right?” Chen Xiu asked curiously. “My mother used to say that times have changed. The best guys are now being snatched up by other males.”

The other three in the dormitory once again looked on speechlessly. They suddenly felt that there was a generation gap between them and Chen Xiu.

“Student Chen Xiu, you are already in college. Your heart should be that of an adult. You must have your own opinions in the future!” Wang Zheng used to think that his train of thought was sufficiently weird, but when compared to Chen Xiu, he felt way too

normal.

“But… you have not answered my previous question?”

“Scram, big bro likes women!”

Student Wang stomped off in a fury while the other three roared with laughter. They had all tricked Student Wang; Chen Xiu was merely pulling his leg.

Although Chen Xiu was the youngest in the dormitory, he had the largest number of devious ideas.

“Brother Yao, someone is here to quarrel with you.”

Yao Ailun rushed to the computer. “Fuck, these noobs. They took the king’s arena videos to commentate on. Damn it. When will Skeleton wreck these experts? I will see how they scream then!”

“Brother Yao, I have compared the Sol Federation’s mecha. Theoretically speaking, Wargod No. 1 does possess an upper limit. When competing against the King’s Struggle Arena’s mecha, the odds of victory are extremely low.”

“As devoted members of the Skeleton Corps, we have to believe in miracles. We must believe that Skeleton will represent us and beat those guys silly!”

“Hopefully he will see the article I have written on the merits and drawbacks of the mech. Brother Zheng, do you want to take a look? It has been posted on the official site,” said Chen Xiu.

He was an avid fan of CT. At the same time he was a noob that was eternally struggling in the beginner’s arena. He would basically get scolded by his teammates to the point where he could not utter a single reply.

However, when it came to theoretical discussion, no one could best him there.

“Sure, I am quite interested in this.”

“Okay, I will send a copy to your Skylink,” said Chen Xiu. He enjoyed sharing his work with other individuals.

Wang Zheng also wanted a better understanding. Fighting against the Tyrannical Magnetic Guardian was quite interesting. It was great that he had been matched against a slightly weaker opponent. If the opponent was any stronger, and they even brought a frequency converter, it might have been too tough to win.

☆ ☆ ☆

On the outskirts of the European Region’s Central LD District, there existed a grand villa which spanned 2/3’s of a hectare.

In a spacious and shining gym, a young man was currently engaged in training with his bare hands. Beside him were 4 individuals who were wielding sabers. They were using… the sharp edge of the sabers.

The 4 simultaneously attacked, their sabers flashing. There were no blind spots, yet with a single clash of the knives, the 4 who were assisting in the training lay sprawled on the floor, unable to get up.

The young man walked off in a relaxed fashion, “Give them twice the usual compensation for medical fees.”

A butler immediately appeared and produced a towel for the young man while bitterly smiling. “Yes. Young Master, these 4 were considered to be within the top 10 for MMA. With your viciousness, in the future I’m afraid no one will be willing to come.”

“Find individuals from the underground arenas then. Those who are able to harm me will be able to win a million dollars!” replied the young man dryly.

The butler helplessly nodded his head. “Yes, Young Master. In addition, Representative Yue Long has already been here for 3 days; will you pay him a visit?”

The young man’s visage turned cold. “Yue Long?”

“Yes. He has been implicated in Aslan’s situation and has been

sacked. Looks like he is here to ask for your help.”

Notes:

1] This is an idiom for raising forces

2] Old Tan is an instant noodle brand

3] Like a ‘grass is always greener’ like saying.

4] Obviously, the monk wouldn’t be pitied if the fish were real

Chapter 10 – True Men Among Men

The young man smiled indifferently. “A sneeze from the Aslan Princess can make a representative resign. What great ability. All right, let’s go see about his circumstances.

“Used by someone as a pretext to make a fuss. His daughter also came. It seems…” The butler said, while lowering his head.

The corner of the youngster’s mouth smirked coldly. “When will the mecha from Aslan arrive?”

“At most a week. As you know, going through customs is quite troublesome.”

“Give them three days!” The youngster didn’t leave them much leeway.

“Understood, three days,” The butler said indifferently.

This measurement of a day is the same as a day on Earth. However, it later became the measurement of a day in the whole Sol System, and then eventually the standard measurement across the Milky Way.

☆ ☆ ☆

In the same world, living different lives, on Sunday. Four people

arrived early for the meet-up.

Tea Mine. It was a small store specializing in black tea. The owner was very warmhearted and decorated Tea Mine very uniquely. It had quite the reputation around the school.

Four people sat perfectly still and upright. “Since our dorm head has no demands, then I will go first,”

Zhang Shan stated.

“According to IQ, I have the highest so I should choose first.” Yao Ailun was not to be outdone.

“Shouldn’t you take care of me? Respect the old and cherish the young!”

Chen Xiu said with a face of being wronged.

The three of them had already made their play. Wang Zheng did not know whether to laugh or cry. It seemed that the lure of a woman was truly powerful.

Chen Xiu said with a face of being wronged.

The three of them had already made their play. Wang Zheng did not know whether to laugh or cry. It seemed that the lure of a woman was truly powerful.

At this time, a girl walked in energetically. She looked around, and then walked towards them with giant strides.

The four of them sat ramrod straight. Don't tell me that...? It couldn't be? GOD!

This girl... When the masculine girl's butt fell onto the chair opposite the four people, they clearly felt the ground shake.

"They're not coming. They said that I could pick one, so you choose amongst yourself!" While saying this she clasped the teapot on the table and guzzled it down.

The four, dressed in their splendid clothing, fell under a spell of petrification and looked at each other with dismay.

"Cough. Zhang Shan, I think that in all aspects, you are the most suited!"

Yao Ailun held onto his gold glasses and spoke deadpan. Sizing her up, her weight was around 180 lbs and both hands had calluses. She was probably from a martial arts family; one strike from her wouldn't kill him but it could hit him half to death.

With a smile on his face, Zhang Shan suddenly exhibited a graceful hand movement. "Oh, could I? How wonderful!"

The masculine female's face turned ugly, "Get out you sissy!"[1]

Zhang Shan's face bore an expression of being wronged, like he was extremely regretful. Wang Zheng and the others cursed 'shameless' out loud.

"I can. I only want to tell my Mom. If my Mom agrees, then I can promise you. Can you wait for me?"

Chen Xiu took the initiative to speak[2].

The tomboy directly disregarded him. "Get lost. Go home and drink milk!"

Student Chen Xiu smiled complacently. The girl's gaze focused on Wang Zheng and Yao Ailun.

Yao Ailun pushed up his very chic eye glasses. From his dress to his temperament, it was obvious the bullish girl would be very interested in him.

"When a man speaks, he should be sincere. I don't gasps... gasps ah, ah, gasps!" Student Yao's face suddenly fell ashen. Trembling, he dug out something from inside his pocket and stuffed it into his mouth. He inhaled deeply. "Ah, have a problem with it!"

The masculine girl's expression lost hope. Her sights could only fall upon Wang Zheng.

The other three looked innocently at Wang Zheng. Chen Xiu, with his eyes full of worship said, “Bro Zheng, as the dorm head, you can’t shrink from your duties!”

“Military trainee number one, you really deserve the title!” Zhang Shan slapped Wang Zheng’s shoulder.

“The pride of the Physics Department, only you can take up such an important duty. Your brothers will not forget!”

The corner of Ailun’s mouth turned upwards into a very gorgeous smile.

“Yi, you’re that Wang Zheng? You’ll do!” The masculine girl fiercely slapped the table, and immediately the surrounding people looked over. “What are you looking at it? If you look again, I’ll beat you to death!”

Fearless, fierce. The Murderous Four Volts[3]

Even if there was a nearby military college, the minds of the surrounding people were completely terrified.

Wang Zheng complained bitterly in his mind. What the hell is Ye Zisu doing? He thought about it again. Ye Zisu had helped him so much. If he made her friend go back like this, it wouldn’t be too good. Anyway, he only had to deal with her for one day. At least it wouldn’t make the opposite party as embarrassed.

“If it’s a day, I can do it.”

The masculine girl scowled. “What day? It has to be at least a fucking month!”

The three people at Wang Zheng’s side held in their laughs with great difficulty. Such a fierce ‘fuck’, how could he survive a month?

The masculine girl seemed to discover the abnormality. “What are you playing at? Isn’t this just modeling for the Fine Arts Club? You don’t need to strip naked!”

Fine Arts Club?

The legendary loli garden? With girls as beautiful as jade?

Model?

The four were stupefied. At this moment, Ye Zisu and three gorgeous girls came in. “Sorry, something came up and we were late.”

“Yi! Club President, why are you here?” asked a girl with long hair that swept over her blue dress.

“Qingqing, is this not him?”

“Club President, I said next to Tea Mine, not in Tea Mine.” Qingqing laughed.

“No matter, this guy looks pretty good. The new student’s military practice no. 1, Wang Zheng, is him!” The masculine girl pointed at Wang Zheng and said.

“Classmate Wang? Then we’ll depend on you from now on. I am Zisu’s dormmate and the vice president of the Fine Arts Club, Du Qingqing. This is our club president, Zhang Runan4.”

Du Qingqing smiled and said, “It seems like we’re tied by fate.”

“Okay, you guys chitchat. I’m going!”

Having said this, she left with giant strides. Fuck me, was this even like a man? It was ultra-manly!

After this brief episode, everybody could easily mingle together.

Student Yao Ailun, since the four great beauties appeared, started to act like a gentleman, which could be called elegant. Chen Xiu, this kid, put away his act of a mama’s boy and looked around with big, watery eyes. Such a moe figure; cute shotas like him were rare goods in the military college.

Zhang Shan hated to be unable to immediately cast off his clothes

and show off his splendid muscles. In terms of build, who could compare to him?

Ye Zisu's four dormmates. Du Qingqing, Officers Department with a strategy specialty. Vice-president of the Fine Arts Club.

An Mei, Officers Department with a strategic management specialty. A member of the Theater Club.

The other one came unexpectedly. Originally, Ye Zisu's dorm only had three people. This one originally did not live at school and had just transferred in. Mech Department student, Meng Tian.

Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan were naturally not unfamiliar with her. Height approaching 1.8 metres, a slender build, ice-like coldness. The most important point was that she was pretty. In total, she was imprinted on people's minds.

"Please sit, please sit. Seeing four great beauties is my honor!" Student Ailun promptly assumed a pose. "Please choose whatever you like, I'll buy."

Fuck. This young guy has already made his move. Chen Xiu immediately went to pull out a chair.

"Tsk tsk. This stud muffin really has manners," said An Mei with a smile. Her mouth was quite wide with ample lips. Very sexy.

Student Chen Xiu sincerely smiled. "To be at the service of

beautiful older sisters is my honor.”

He was definitely a ‘wouldn’t harm a fly’ type.

Fuck your granny. Nowadays, the smaller, the fiercer. As a matter of fact, they had already struck first.

Zhang Shan and Wang Zheng were thinking of what to do, only to discover that there already wasn’t anything to do.

“It seems that our school separates the dorms according to appearance,” Zhang Shan said. Girls all like praise, especially ones with class.

The big and tall Zhang Shan had a delicate side.

“Wang Zheng, I want to compete with you!” Meng Tian suddenly declared.

“Our Tian Tian is a part of the MMA Club. Don’t look down on girls!” said Du Qingqing.

“Today, we came here for a meet-up; to talk about romantic things, no?” said Ye Zisu, completely disregarding Meng Tian’s electrifying expression.

“Seeing you four, I finally understand why the ancients came up with the idiom ‘a feast for the eyes’.”

At this time, Student Ailun did not have a trace of his computer/gaming otaku characteristics. He was entirely an expert in affairs of the heart. His acting skills were too strong.

The whole afternoon, the two sides talked cheerfully, without any awkward silences. The opportunities for student Wang Zheng to cut in were not many. The girls on the other hand were also surprised. They originally thought that physics boys were a little more eccentric, and didn't think at all that the four before them would be this special

Very normally, the two parties exchanged Skylink numbers. It could be said that the meet-up was a success; at the least there would be opportunities later on down the line.

After separating, the four hooked their arms around each other's shoulders and walked to the school. "Wang Zheng, the matter with the Fine Arts Club, if you can't do it, us brothers will help you and share the burden."

"That is, we are all brothers-in-arms in the trenches, sharing all happiness and sorrow."

"I think they could find lots of inspiration from my body," added student Chen Xiu very cutely.

The three people stared at him, and at the same time pointed a finger. "Shameless!"

Wang Zheng could not continue participating in the talk about girls. He was called over by Xie Yuxin.

Little Yu was a comparatively shy person. He Yan Xiaosu usually went together to find him.

When he arrived, Yan Xiaosu and Xie Yuxin were already there, seeming very solemn.

“What’s going on?”

Yan Xiaosu pouted. “Ask him. This guy is so secretive. I also don’t know what he’s doing.”

Xie Yuxin smiled slightly, and brought out a deck of cards. “You guys can pick any card.”

Yan Xiaosu was cheerful. “Little Yu, don’t tell me that you learned magic tricks. Actually, if you change your style to that and you smile a bit, pretty girls will go out with you.

Xie Yuxin looked at Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng picked out a card of his choice.

“Hearts, K.”

Wang Zheng looked blankly. “That’s right. How did you guess?”

Yan Xiaosu grabbed the card. “This is a stage prompt, what are you kids getting so excited for.”

Yan Xiaosu pulled out a card. As a result, Xie Yuxin also guessed right. Yan Xiaosu shuffled the cards again, even picking out one randomly behind his back and making Xie Yuxin close his eyes. In the end, the results were correct.

Yan Xiaosu also realized that something wasn’t right. With a pair of large-eyes he looked at Xie Yuxin and then abruptly slapped his thigh. “Fuck, afterwards we should buy lottery tickets so that we can become rich and rule over the universe!”

Xie Yuxin was terrified. Finally he couldn’t bear it any longer and cursed vehemently, “Can you think about anything else!”

Yan Xiaosu gave a flattering smile, saying, “Lottery tickets are more dependable!”

“I can’t guess lottery tickets. Wang Zheng, you’ve probably guessed it.”

Wang Zheng nodded his head. “Is this the elite, one-in-ten thousand, Ability X?”

“Yes, my ability is a little bit of perception.”

“Shit, seriously? Comparing yourself to others only angers you to death. Your popularity is so high, and you are already sufficiently handsome. Adding this, how could you have a rival when chasing girls!” Yan Xiaosu was fairly dejected.

The two were helpless towards Yan Xiaosu who thought of only lottery tickets, besides girls.

“Don’t you to think that our becoming friends was very strange?” Xie Yuxin laughed and said.

Yan Xiaosu rubbed his nose, which was learned from Wang Zheng. “Sigh. It’s more like we offered to shelter you.”

Notes:

1] Zhang Shaun is quite clever and risky here. He determines that this buff/strong looking girl is a tomboy and doesn’t like sissy men. So acts flamboyantly to remove himself an an option.The risk pays off!

2] The mommas boy act. Also a nice goto move!

3] This is reference to a Chinese drama (I think) I know nothing about. So it might not be the correct translation. I am assuming it is a mildly well known drama, featuring 4 very scary and dangerous mafia like people. This reference should be the crowds reaction when they looked at these 4 roommates, and in response the 4 give them some sort of death stare that invoked this kinda reaction. Just imagine a scene where you are in old school New York or something, and you look over at a table you shouldn’t have, and there are a bunch of scary thugs giving you the “What are you looking at? Keep looking and I’ll gouge out your eyes!”

kinda look, or so I am guessing. Should be something close to this anyway.

4] Runan means ‘like a man’. The author has a pretty funny naming sense sometimes. I will try to be more proactive at pointing out the funny ones

Chapter 11 – The Crafty Gu Te

Xie Yuxin gave a knowing smile. “My days with you guys have definitely been the happiest of times. There was only one mistake. From the beginning, I noticed you because of my ability. In the whole of Daybreak Middle School, Yan Xiaosu you are first.”

“Ah, you say I am a genius? I know this!” Student Xiaosu laughed hard.

“My ability is perception. In every person exhibits a kind of life form or pattern. Yan Xiaosu’s is the brightest. But the more important thing is, because of Xiaosu, I met Wang Zheng. That was the first time I discovered someone with a life that shines!”

Xie Yuxin said seriously.

“That must be so, otherwise how could he be the boss? But what are you doing right now, being so emotional, it’s not your style.” Yan Xiaosu felt that something was up. This guy was normally so cold, never excessively praising others.

“Xiaosu, decide on a goal. Even if it is becoming the richest man in the earth, it probably won’t be a fantasy.”

“Fuck, you’re looking down on bro too much. Bro will become lord over the universe!” Yan Xiaosu, as typical of him, will from a single point of color will dye everything.

“Wang Zheng, previously, your light had radiated all around. Only recently, the light disappeared. I thought you were rattled by the blow from gene testing, then I found that it was actually not so. You have entered a realm where I cannot see into. I don’t know what you’ll be like in the future, and I don’t know if you’ll become stronger. I can only say that you will definitely become a person who will influence the world. I’m not joking. Even if it is Masasi, there is no one who compares to you!”

Xie Yuxin’s gaze burned brightly as it turned towards Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng admired that perception in his mind. His experience with the Rubik’s cube was unfathomable, but Xie Yuxin could actually perceive it. The name elite of the elite was not unfounded.

“Little Yu, is something up? We are brothers. Say it so that everyone can bear it together so it won’t be a big deal.”

Xie Yuxin smiled. “I’m leaving.”

“Leaving, leaving where?” Yan Xiaosu became serious. “You fellow couldn’t really have won the lottery and are about to be happy by yourself!”

“I cannot speak of the details, but I can say I have met an opportunity. The one who urged me to make this decision was Wang Zheng. This recent military training woke me up to reality. I want to become stronger, but Ares Military College cannot give that to me.”

Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu understood. It can be said that with Xie Yuxin, if he wanted to develop, then he could not use the conventional path, but rather he should take a step towards improving and studying his special abilities. With talent like his, the Federation will place importance on nurturing him; thus, he could rise to a greater world.

“Wang Zheng, Xiaosu, I hope that we will meet again one day, when we have all realized our goals!”

Xie Yuxin extended his hand. Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu also extended their hands. “No matter where we go, we will be brothers!”

Xie Yuxin had not touched a drop of alcohol in the past, but now he drank till he was dead drunk. It was plain to see that he did not want to separate from his brothers. Status and ability had rendered him alone since he was small. That was until he met these two buffoons who didn’t care about his status. From that moment, Xie Yuxin was very happy. As long as a person lived, their dreams could not stop. Otherwise, Xie Yuxin would not be Xie Yuxin.

To leave now, was only to meet again later.

“Wang Zheng, do you know? I’m actually very frustrated. Your innate talent is definitely not worse than anyone else’s. Your hard work and focus is better than others, but I will definitely surpass you, so you definitely cannot slack off. Next time we meet, you will definitely bow to me!”

Xie Yuxin, who had drunk a lot, hugged Wang Zheng while saying this. Student Wang also did not think he would have such an awesome fucking moment, but he also knew this was Xie Yuxin encouraging them on the cusp of his departure.

“Wherever you go, you have to remember; you are the pride of the Three Heroes of Daybreak. Whoever dares to provoke you, trample them.”

“That’s right, we are the Three Heroes of Daybreak, and we will make the world tremble!”

Classmate Yan Xiaosu started to take off his clothes. Flashing his stomach, he jumped onto the table.

Xie Yuxin was leaving for an unattainable stage, faced with mankind’s strongest elites. That kind of improvement could not be compared with someone from a normal background.

These were brothers!

We are the strongest!

☆ ☆ ☆

When school started, Xie Yuxin left. The school explained it as transferring schools. The girls really despaired, as there was one

less stud muffin to see. They needed to look for a new target.

The first day of Physics Department courses also began. Wang Zheng had a quite sturdy foundation and view of the general situation. He basically understood all the things the teacher talked about. He had no conflict with physics, but to use it for a living was completely unthinkable for Wang Zheng. He went directly to the principal's office after class ended. As the number one in military practice, how could there not be a little wiggle room for transferring?

Gu Te was very polite when he saw Wang Zheng. "Here I thought that you were very patient. This is only the first day, and you are already impatient."

"Sigh. Principal, I really am not physics material. You saw my results in the military drills — can you think over my transfer?"

"Ah, your performance really was extraordinary. Instructor Luo Yan also told me that a lot. But, Student Wang, this matter is very difficult!"

Gu Te showed an embarrassed look on his face. Wang Zheng's heart clenched.

Suddenly, Gu Te smiled. "Actually, it's not like there's not a single way to transfer departments. The first thing is that just your performance in the military training is not enough; after all, that was just the basics. You need to win an honor for the school, then the board of directors will pass you. The second thing, you need to

get Teacher Xiao Fei's permission. Get this goal and then you can go the Mech Department to visit. You can choose freely between two department courses, but you cannot flunk the Physics Department exams. Otherwise, no one can help you."

"Principal, you really are a good person. I will definitely work hard!"

"En, go forth." Gu Te waved his hands and looked at Wang Zheng's happy expression. In his heart, he secretly smiled. 'Little guy, good days are yet to come. You are a trump card, and I must use it well!'

Xie Yuxin was also originally one, but the young man had a better opportunities elsewhere. As his maternal grandfather, he could not stop him. He also didn't think that Little Yu's ability would attract such... attention.

In the afternoon, Wang Zheng escaped the Physics Department for the Mech Department's classroom where the air was fresh and cool.

There were many people in the big class, so no one noticed Wang Zheng. It was on the developmental history of mecha.

This was a class focused on understanding the process of mecha integration and its gradual ascent to importance in the history of mankind.

Previously, mecha were only used as machines of assistance. At the time, science and technology were not as developed. Robots and conventional weapons were still the main force. But after the first generation of developed mecha were forged, the original form of Wargod No. 1, the mecha's superior functionality replaced conventional weaponry in a flash. This was almost an unstoppable historical process, as such cases are in the majority of scientific and technological advances.

Due to the mecha's adaptation for all-weather combat, it rapidly became popular among every nation in the Milky Way Federation. Each state's arms race shifted from the study of forbidden weapons to mecha. Moreover, the technology derived from mecha could also have civilian applications.

From initial development to the present, mecha have had over a hundred years of history. The original ten kinds of base mecha have given rise to over a hundred types. It is said that every nation now has its own hidden mecha, so called super mecha capable of reversing the tides of war.

Operated by men, mecha's abilities as a crucial weapons in warfare, have gradually influenced the direction of battle situation development. Many mech researchers believed in the superstition that the best course for mankind's civilization lay in advancing the development of mechanical science and technology.

There will come an er,a where technology has developed to the point where one man and one mech, can freely traverse the universe.

It must be said, the professor of this brief history of mecha was really good at stirring up emotions. This group of hot blooded young men and women listened in earnest. At this point, those who didn't like mecha were almost completely cut from the course. If you can get into the Mech Department, you were a man amongst men. At least, that's what the Mech Department students believed.

Wang Zheng was also among them. While listening to the professor teach class, he also looked at Chen Xiu's explanation of the various mecha. There was no doubt that this was professional work. From their origins, to the characteristics of the mecha, and to the analysis diagrams. The details were very precise. That analytical form could not be understood without a strong math and physics background.

In the Officers Department, a similarly rousing lesson was underway.

"Some of you are elite standing at the pinnacle of the world. You can lead the fate of mankind. The Officers Department, the officer's cradle. But I will say that I hope that I will see the future Commander-In-Chief of Earth among you. The Sol Federation's commander. Even the Milky Way Alliance's commander!"

Chali Zhou, the dean of the Officers Department. His teachings were widely known to cause a clamor. Frequently, he drove groups of students wild.

"Those soldiers who do not want to become generals, are not good soldiers. This does not apply to you. If you are a student of

the Officers Department, and cannot become a general, you are not a student of mine. Remember, you must not squander your talents or your lives. Right now, this department is a springboard for you. You must use your own abilities to conquer the universe!”

The students practically forgot the passage of time. The military training had paved the way for the current period of complete and explosive growth.

☆ ☆ ☆

Gu Te’s innovating determination was obvious.

For people like this, school was regarded as the same. To not break the silence is to die in silence[1].

Therefore, in the eyes of others, this shameless poaching, Gu Te did not care!

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng listened very earnestly. While listening, he took notes, only his notes were slightly different than others. Suddenly, he discovered that these talking points of Chen Xiu were very interesting.

The source material of CT’s mecha came from imitating reality. These characteristics of mecha were almost identical. Outside of

the Aslan Royal Family School, there was no other military college in the Milky Way Federation that possessed enough mecha to give to each student to use.

This Aslan Empire was a fuckin' awesome place. Aslan citizens all held this sentence in their mouth: 'Everything here is the best.'

After class, the whole classroom immediately started to buzz with activity. As youthful and eager first years, being next to the beautiful girls made them naturally rowdy.

"Wang Zheng, you really came. Are you not scared of flunking?" asked Ye Zisu.

"Scared. Flunking definitely cannot happen, but you understand that I love mecha the most."

Wang Zheng shut off his Skylink's notetaking window. "Maybe I will need to borrow your notes. There are some classes in physics that I don't dare miss."

If he escaped Xiao Fei's class, to not be completely dead would be weird.

"That depends on whether you are sincere or not?" Ye Zisu said with a crafty smile.

"No problem, demand what you please, I'll even devote my whole life to you," said Wang Zheng teasingly.

“I’ll lend you notes, no need for you to devote your whole life,” a cold voice sounded.

Meng Tian’s lofty and pretty voice rang out, immediately attracting all gazes.

Notes:

1] My brain isn’t working well enough right now to make this sound better. Basically, if something isn’t going well, or is just coasting along in mediocrity, then to not do something about it, and staying silent, would be an inglorious death.

Chapter 12 – The Bastard Who Arrived Late

Currently, Meng Tian and Ye Zisu were the two most outstanding freshman girls in their cohort. More accurately speaking, the entire school knew who they were. The cohorts above them were mediocre in comparison.

Many closely scrutinized Ye Zisu's family background by others, as she was the heir to OMG. On the other hand, Meng Tian was a different case. This beautiful woman was an excellent mech pilot. Ye Zisu chose to enter the Mech Department not to become a pilot, but rather to better understand the field before taking on her role as the future chairman of OMG.

Ye Zisu was amiable and approachable. Meng Tian was the exact opposite; always ice cold to everyone. Numerous suitors had already had their hopes dashed against that wall.

Ye Zisu gave Meng Tian a look and then smiled wryly. "No need to bother."

It could be seen that the friendship between the two of them was rather special. The world of women was something men would never understand. Thus, Student Wang continued to wait with his large, innocent eyes.

"As you wish. Wang Zheng, remember our arrangement! As a representative of the MMA club, I would like to invite you to join us!" said Meng Tian. Student Wang felt even more perplexed. He could not remember making such arrangements with Meng Tian!

“Tsk. How can anyone just wantonly enter the MMA club?”

“I am the Vice President,” replied Meng Tian dryly. On the very 1st day, she had overthrown the previous Vice President and took his place.

“Actually, it’s not that I don’t want to join, but rather, I’m too busy! I have no time.” Wang Zheng had no time to spare, and thus rejected her.

“If you want to become an exceptional mech pilot, your body has to be sufficiently conditioned. The MMA club’s training machines are the best. If you are a member, you can use them,” said Meng Tian. It looked as though she had seen right through Wang Zheng’s facade and thus, attacked his weakness directly.

Wang Zheng’s eyes lit up. “Really? Then count me in!”

“Excellent. Once you’re done with your work, report to the club room in the afternoon. I will be waiting for you.” After saying that, Meng Tian turned and gracefully left. Looking at that beautiful body, numerous men could only gape in shock. How could she be from the MMA club?

Thinking of Meng Tian in her white training outfit, making a spectacular roundhouse kick, that beautiful leg could be seen arcing through the air gracefully.

“That makes a lot of sense. As a Mech Department member, how can we neglect physical training!”

“Let’s go soon!”

“Definitely, we must definitely go!”

“Given brother Ping’s physic, even without me, it would definitely be the MMA club’s loss.”

This group of guys were currently clamoring loudly. Ye Zisu had a bitter smile on her face. Ever since she entered college, although her background was exceptional, Meng Tian’s ice goddess demeanor had led her to be comparatively more eye catching.

Yet when it came to making friends, she held the advantage.

“You’ve got to be careful, Tiantian has her eye on you.”

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders. So what if she had her eyes on him. He was originally looking for a new place to train. This great opportunity had just fallen from the sky, and he would save quite a sum as well!

At this point, his Skylink started to ring with a charming sound.

“Student Wang, you would not happen to be skipping my first lecture, would you?”

Wang Zheng began to quiver. Fuck. He had forgotten. This was Xiao Fei's opening lecture! He was going to die!

Fuck! There was still one minute before class began.

Wang Zheng wildly rushed over as quickly as he could, wishing he had longer legs.

Ye Zisu didn't know whether to laugh or cry when looking at Wang Zheng's sorry sight. Passion had a price after all.

Although Wang Zheng ran as though his life depended on it, he was still late.

In the Physics Department, Xiao Fei's opening lecture was considered an extremely important event for the entire school.

She was not only famous in the school but on the entire planet of Earth. Xiao Fei hated to do opening lectures, as geniuses usually had strange temperaments. But she suddenly had a change of heart. The entire classroom was crammed full of people. Even those who were not from the Physics Department had arrived, all for the sake of seeing this famous individual.

Looking at the entire history of humankind, those who wished to be at the apex of science were usually physicists. Once they demonstrated their ability, physicists would also became the most respected by society. From the time of Newton, Einstein,

Hawking[1], to the current generation of Lauren Lee and Alan Tucker, they were all highly esteemed and regarded throughout the Alliance.

Of course, Alan Tucker was currently embroiled in controversy as people opposed his theories. A group of people believed that the Rubik's Cube Theory was a sham. Others believed what he had theorized was right. The coalition's interested ended once they came to the conclusion that the experiments were flawed. The creation of this 'sham' resulted in the humiliation of science.

Without a doubt, Xiao Fei was recognized as the Sol Federation's pride. She had contributed new insights into the theory of spatial manipulation through her independent research.

Furthermore, Xiao Fei was also a beauty.

In the modern era, intelligence and looks coexisting, was not as rare as the time of the Milky Way Era. In fact, there were more and more of such individuals.

Actually, when Alan Tucker was young, he was extremely narcissistic. He had often dated numerous celebrities but none of the relationships had borne any fruit. In the end he devoted himself to research.

There is no need to mention what happened afterwards.

The entire lecture theatre, which could fit 300 individuals, was

filled to the brim. In fact, some of the seats had two people sitting in them, but it was still surprisingly quiet.

Everyone understood Dr. Xiao Fei's temper. It was already time for the lecture to start but Xiao Fei just stood there silently.

If it was another professor, the crowd would have already exploded into chatter. However, when it was Xiao Fei lecturing; the students would gladly endure any hardships in order to hear her lessons.

Being able to be in the presence of the most beautiful professor was already extremely satisfying.

Right at this moment, a single man rushed in. Everyone was shocked. Fuck. Who was this piece of trash, he actually dared to be late!

The truth was that Xiao Fei's temper was not pleasant. If just one student was late, she would potentially cancel the lecture and let everyone self study instead. That would, indeed, be a pity.

In the class, there were even some people from other schools. All of this was for the sake of listening to the Milky Way's youngest professor of spatial manipulation teach.

Every individual in the room glared at dear student Wang. It reminded him of the first time Bonehead had stared at him. Fuck. This time he was screwed.

“Pardon me.”

Xiao Fei put down the class materials and wryly looked at Wang Zheng. Then she surveyed the audience. “The one who dared to come late is called Wang Zheng. I believe he’s the only one with this name.”

Memories tend to be forgotten rather easily, especially those that are related to others. Wang Zheng whom had been the top of military training had quite a low profile. Only those around him knew him. Everyone stared at the cocky bastard. He was really brave. Hearing Xiao Fei’s unhappy tone, if the class was cancelled because of him…

At the first row of seats, the three experts from Dormitory 007 were feeling extremely resentful. This bastard was bringing shame upon them. If Wang Zheng sat with them, the three would also be affected!

Wang Zheng could feel the fiery gazes that were on him. It felt as though he was about to be set ablaze. Yet, Xiao Fei’s next words caused him to be absolutely speechless.

“He is my helper and also your class representative. If you have any problems, feel free to find him.”

In the end, the wok exploded[2]. Only third year students and above could be assistants! Likewise, Xiao Fei had never before had

an assistant. Everyone knew that the reason was that any potential assistants were usually too stupid, as stupid as pigs for that matter, and would only bring down the rate of efficiency.

From under which stone did this bastard crawl out from? Since he was Xiao Fei's assistant, it was no wonder that despite arriving so late Xiao Fei wasn't angry.

On the contrary, Wang Zheng did not feel that the hatred had diminished. In fact, it felt like it had increased!

Including the three Kings of Dormitory 007, everyone could only put up with the way things were.

"I cannot accept this. Our dormitory leader is hogging everything for himself!"

"This is a society that shares!"

"We need to have another round of dormitory discussions and do some research on this problem."

Three against one. This unanimous decision was made rather quickly. Our dear Student Wang had no opportunity to explain himself.

The audience now understood for whom the frontmost seat was reserved for. It was obvious that Xiao Fei prized this student.

Originally, he had felt that Xiao Fei's lesson would be extremely boring and uninteresting. Yet in retrospect, Xiao Fei was able to explain extremely complicated issues with simple analogies, and the instruction became extremely meaningful.

Everyone listened to her lessons with great gusto and constantly nodded their heads. Following the great voyage of the universe, physics had become increasingly important. More and more individuals wished to understand and explore space. Without a foundation in physics, attempting to accomplish this goal would be extremely dumb. It was comparable to the past where one didn't have any knowledge of navigating the seas, but still wished to set sail.

Yet, such explanations were meaningless to Wang Zheng. The Old Merchant had explained all of this a long time ago. To be frank, although it was not as interesting as the way Xiao Fei explained, it was much more profound. Wang Zheng could still remember the Old Merchant's expression. It was as though he were the king of the realm of physics and everything was in his control.

Of course, all noobs were the same.

The applause was unending. Every student was attentively recording down notes, but Wang Zheng was daydreaming instead.

He was reminiscing about one of the mech's abilities. It was simply too beautiful. Whichever genius had designed it was a king

of the jungle.

Xiao Fei had used beautiful words to paint an alluring image of the the world of physics.

It was not that Xiao Fei couldn't give lectures, or a fact that she couldn't explain complicated issues in a simple matter. Rather, to geniuses, there was no need to go to this extra effort.

The three from Dormitory 007 were sitting behind Wang Zheng. It was clear that Wang Zheng was daydreaming. What was that bastard doing? Zhang Shan was extremely tall and could see everything that was happening.

...Wang Zheng was looking at a mech's blueprints!

Zhang Shan couldn't help but give Wang Zheng a kick. This guy really did not know how to spell the word death.

Xiao Fei glanced at the entire classroom. "Everything in the world of physics, especially that which cannot be seen, must be seen by you. You must feel it. Thus, in the pursuit of physics, one must be able to dream!"

If a more traditional teacher had heard her words, they would be extremely angry. Yet, the students happily accepted these words.

"All of humanity's existing achievements are just references, not something to imitate or continue. Rather, be willing to fight with a

spirit of challenge to discover and construct something that belongs to yourself. From today onwards, all of you must construct your own world.”

Xiao Fei’s words had won her an intense round of applause.

Knowing one by reputation cannot be compared to meeting one in person. By meeting one in person, one would realize how different one can be compared to their reputation.

Gu Te was right outside. He had not heard such raucous applause for an extremely long time.

A good start was half the battle won.

Xiao Fei’s lesson continued. A teacher not only needed to have knowledge but also charisma. Whether through her looks or her style, one first had to grab the attention of the students.

Xiao Fei possessed all three qualities: style, looks, and knowledge. It was difficult not to be subdued by her confidence and charisma during her class. Yet this also brought about another problem. Many students worshipped her. Xiao Fei only looked upon such things with disdain.

On the other hand, this helped to facilitate her research. As long as one lived, this would be bound to happen.

“Does anyone have any alternate views to this lesson? Would

anyone like to share?” asked Xiao Fei.

Notes:

1] Isaac Newton, Albert Einstein and Stephen Hawking. I hope you all know who these real scientists are. If not, yes that are real people.

2] I am sure I have covered what is a wok is before. If not, it is a large cooking pan, so this is a figurative wok exploding here.

Chapter 13 – Loose Lips Sink Ships

This was an opportunity to showcase one's ability in front of Xiao Fei. Suddenly, even the area outside of the classroom was filled with numerous people wanting to listen in on the lecture. Some were even from the upperclassmen.

Yet the problem was that at this point, if one were to showcase their ability, it would be akin to one displaying their lackluster skills in front of an expert. Playing the fool in front of geniuses, such was unacceptable!

Chen Xiu stood up. "Doctor, I believe that space and time have mass. This is the major principle underlying physics. We only require a new method of testing to affirm this."

One could see with a glance that he was extremely young. Yet Chen Xiu did not sit there silently. Everyone in the Physics Department knew that there was an extremely young genius that possessed the spark similar to the one Xiao Fei had when she was younger.

Xiao Fei smiled slightly. At this point, Zhang Shan stood up, "I believe that we don't require a new method to affirm this. Rather our concepts are flawed. Mass itself is something that we have come up with based on what we knew of the world a long time ago.. If we free ourselves of these shackles, we will be able to discover something new!"

Xiao Fei nodded her head slightly. Once the two had opened their

mouths, everyone else was belching fire! They had to know that these were people from Dormitory 007.

Yao Ailun had already changed back to his black rimmed spectacles. Student Yao having different colored spectacles for different situations felt slightly bigoted.

“Time is the movement of space. In order to understand space, I believe that we have to start by understanding time and it is in this transformation of knowledge that the keys to greater understanding are held.”

Although everyone had a foundation in Physics, most of it was conceptual. At this point, one could see how everyone’s research direction differed.

These three individuals were world-shaking in their own right during intermediate school. As Xiao Fei was at Ares College, once they struck, one could see how superior they were.

Xiao Fei looked around. The rest of the audience felt impassioned deep down, but they had no confidence and were not knowledgeable enough to speak out! This was also one of Xiao Fei’s gripes. Inspiration required a spark, yet the students in her classes were always missing this vital element. Furthermore, this consumed her own inspiration!

Proximity to a cinnabar would stain one red, while being close to pitch would stain one black[2]!

“Wang Zheng, how do you feel about this topic?”

Xiao Fei looked at Wang Zheng. Our dear Student Wang was still lost in his own little world.

Zhang Shan hurriedly gave Wang Zheng a kick. Student Wang immediately bolted upwards and shouted, “YES!”

The entire audience burst into laughter. Xiao Fei, however, did not laugh but rather looked as if she were eagerly awaiting his answer.

After all was said and done, all of them were still brothers in arms. Yao Ailun hurriedly told Wang Zheng the topic. Actually, they also wanted to see what sort of three heads and six arms he possessed.[3]

“I have a slightly incomplete train of thought. I feel that right now, the basic approach we are using is inherently flawed. Although it can be used to gain a general understanding, which will allow us to make future breakthroughs in physics, including spatial manipulation, we first have to have a proper, unilateral view. Regardless of whether it is mass or any other concept, such a way of viewing things is too narrow-minded.”

After Wang Zheng finished speaking, the entire room erupted into discussion. Fuck. This guy was so arrogant that he wasn’t afraid of bursting through the heavens! In one go he had just

disputed the methods used in the last 10 years!

"Tell us why you believe this is so. In my class we want to put an end to stupidity but never be afraid of making mistakes," said Xiao Fei.

"Let's start with Newton's laws. When the theory of relativity appeared, it could be seen that the previously accepted laws at that time were no longer applicable. This case still applies for today. We must first include all 13 dimensions into our discussion. Mass, space, and time are just building upon the three dimensional theory and, at most, the fourth dimension is the foundation for this thinking. Lauren Lee's warp theory, is basically another form of the 13 dimension's existence, except that she has only used included scenarios up to the sixth dimension. Yet, her theory is the most advanced one yet. I feel that we should just make a leap. Since the warp theory has already been proven to be correct, why don't we be a bit braver, and assume that the 13 dimensions theory is correct? Then, we can reverse theorize a bit. In such a situation, time, space and mass's current problems are all research directions. There is no conflict whatsoever."

After Wang Zheng finished speaking, the entire classroom was deathly silent. Everyone was shocked.

His words were filled with a pressure that could surpass Lauren Lee. He had truly broken through the heavens!

The problem was that those who understood a little felt that it made a lot of sense and also that it was nonsense. Yet there were many who did not understand anything and did not know about

warp theory. They only repeated what was oft heard and being able to understand was another story entirely.

"You have read Lauren Lee's warp theory?" asked Xiao Fei.

"I read it several times. It was truly a great achievement of its time."

These were not Wang Zheng's own words. Instead, this was something that had been brainwashed into him by the Old Merchant. As times progressed, the warp theory had been phased out and seen as redundant. Humanity's eyes should be focused on the future! It was just a pity that there were too many fools around. This was what the Old Merchant had said.

Xiao Fei grinned a wide smile. This bearing, this tone. It was exactly the same as hers, all those years before! Yet, he was more overbearing and even more arrogant. At the very least, back when she was young, she had worshipped Lauren Lee.

Everyone else was dumbfounded. Was this bastard faking it? He could actually understand it? Furthermore, he read it several times???

"I share Wang Zheng's views. The essence of today's physics is wrong and has shackled our thoughts. I would like to tell everyone today that my curriculum will not be restrained. An entirely new journey awaits us starting today!"

The applause was thunderous. Wang Zheng could feel a burning sensation on his back. He really wanted to slap himself! Why did he have such loose lips! He had said too much. Wasn't he just digging a deeper grave for himself? He'd even buried himself with a larger mound!

Damned Old Merchant, he had fostered the habit of debate. Once he started, he just could not stop.

The bell that signified the end of class rang. Students sighed in longing as no one wanted the class to end. It was unfortunate that Dr. Xiao Fei did not like to waste time mingling around. Questions could only be directly sent to her public Skylink. She would only answer queries worth answering.

"Wang Zheng, follow me!"

Wang Zheng was currently fooling around with the other three from the dormitory and debating, while the iron was hot, whom the prettiest girls were. Interrupted now, Xiao Fei's order came down.

Watching the two departing shadows, the Three Kings of 007 grumbled in mild annoyance.

"At this rate, it will be impossible to live peacefully, the dormitory leader will be extremely high profile."

"Ah, as a fellow brother in arm, we need to share our firepower!"

“We have to make sure he doesn’t die an untimely death!” Chen Xiu made a decision, “I’m the youngest and thus, I can share a larger portion of the burden[4]!”

Zhang Shan and Yao Ailun immediately strangled this youngest one.

☆ ☆ ☆

After arriving at her office, Xiao Fei took off her jacket and threw it into a corner before collapsing in a chair, freely exposing her curves. Looking at Wang Zheng’s flabbergasted face, she gave a slight smile and replied, “As a teacher I have to act as a role model for others and have to pay attention to how I dress. Though, this jacket is just too uncomfortable.”

Wang Zheng was speechless. He was a student too!

“Doctor, do you have any instructions for me?”

“Ah. You fit in quite well during today’s lessons. I don’t care about your situation with the Mech Department. You just can’t miss any of my lessons, and you must complete all of the work I assign you,” warned Xiao Fei.

Wang Zheng could only nod his head. His little life was held in the palm of this beautiful teacher’s hand. He didn’t dare resist.

“I will strive to perform my best, even if I die!”

“You don’t need to exaggerate. Your train of thought is correct and is rarely seen. Actually, do you know what the most important thing to a physicist is?”

Xiao Fei asked with the intention of testing Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng rubbed his nose. As one who didn’t want to be a physicist, this question was extremely difficult.

“Math. Early physicists built castles in the skies without any solid foundation. It merely required math to prove their theories. One person’s ability is limited and thus, when you are free, you should go to the Math Department and take a look. Perhaps you will be able to meet someone who shares your views.”

Student Wang felt as though his head was going to explode. He hated things that had to do with formulas. They were extremely time consuming. Right now however, whatever Xiao Fei said was the law.

“Okay, go and bring these materials to the Math Department’s Dr. Marcus. Remember to leave a good impression!”

Xiao Fei patted Wang Zheng. She was definitely placing her high hopes on Wang Zheng. There was still plenty of time. She would definitely bring Wang Zheng back on the right road and let him

know that mech battles and whatnot were merely transient things. Only the boundless sciences were truly eternal.

Wang Zheng took the materials and rushed out of the office. Although he was thankful to Xiao Fei for recognizing him, he was definitely not the type to do research. His knowledge in physics was all due to him accompanying the Old Merchant and engaging in conversations. If he had to walk the walk, his inabilities would come to light.

☆ ☆ ☆

In the Math Department's fourth year classroom, Dr. Marcus was scribbling furiously on the blackboard. "This question is the final hurdle by the end of the semester. Whoever can answer this will get an A+ from me!"

Such was Dr. Marcus's personality. Every semester, when school began, he would give a 'bounty'. The first student to complete it would receive the best results.

It should also be said that in the field of science, Earth did not possess the highest standards. However, she[5] had managed to maintain her position as one of the best and did not deteriorate at the same rate as the other aspects.

All the students were extremely excited. If they were successful, not only would they receive excellent results but also become famous!

Each field had their own struggles and pride.

Wang Zheng had searched for half a day but could not find Marcus' office. Marcus looked as though he were 60 odd years old. His hair was extremely messy like a pile of grass and he dressed quite slovenly.

"Professor Marcus, these are the materials that Professor Xiao Fei had asked me to bring to you."

Marcus was too lazy to even lift his head to acknowledge. His table was full of materials that surpassed all the others around him. "Place it on the table, you can go."

"Ah, also, in classroom T-6, on the teaching table is a data table. Pass it to Xiao Fei and tell her she owes me a favor."

"Yes Professor."

Wang Zheng only felt utmost respect to those who were able to calculate complex mathematical balances. If he were asked to do the same however, he would politely decline.

After locating class T-6, he noticed most of the students had already left. Wang Zheng searched the table and then found the mathematical sheet. When he turned around, he saw the question on the blackboard.

After scanning through it, he couldn't bear to leave. The Old Merchant used to give him questions to do every week. If he did it correctly he would get a reward; if not he would be punished. Ever since the Old Merchant had run away with all his savings his life had been quite pitiful.

This question did have some significance.

This problem should be part of an arithmetic calculation. It looked as though it could be solved with Romeo Equation's general solution. The Old Merchant had gone over it once before.

Wang Zheng started to scribble on the blackboard. There were still about seven or eight students whom had not left. All they saw was a Physics Department student on their turf messing with their work! That guy didn't know how high the heavens were!

From the past until now, with the same level of achievements, it was the physicists who received great acclaim and fame. What most people didn't realize was that many of the physicists who had changed history had relied on their mathematical ability to begin with. Inside here was the culmination of many a mathematician's sweat and blood. Without these hard working mathematicians, physics would have nothing more than speculations.

Notes:

1] So, this time we get a chance to use an english phrase, in place where there isn't one for Chinese. The original title basically says something along the lines of 'loose mouth are troublesome' etc.

2] Idiomatic expression that means that different environments

will lead to different influences

3] This has some Buddhist ties, as those who read Desolate Era may be able to relate to, but other than an artist work of a Buddha with 6 arms and 3 heads in SF, I am unclear on the exact ties. Should just mean, what kinda badass are you kinda thing.

4] He is trying to say he will sacrifice himself to spend more time with Xiao Fei so Wang Zheng doesn't have too. Such a sacrifice to hang out with his beautiful idol.

5] Referring to Earth as she here incase some get confused. It's a sign of endearment like when a motor enthusiasts names their bike/truck/car, you name it, after a lady

Chapter 14 – MMA Club

This Physics Department guy is very arrogant; does he think this is his stomping ground?

Wang Zheng didn't care. Although this activity deviated from what he used to do, it was still fine. This math problem was only a small detour. He preferred to finish things once he started them.

After spending an hour, when it could be considered complete, Wang Zheng exhaled. He looked at his watch and panicked. Shit! It was 2pm already! This activity was quite time wasting. He quickly rushed towards Xiao Fei's location.

As Wang Zheng ran off, the Math Department students that were left behind were absolutely speechless. Their eyes were wide in shock. Some of them were even mumbling incoherently. A small group were even dancing in joy.

When he exited, Wang Zheng left behind a deathly silent classroom.

After finishing his task, Xiao Fei was already very busy and hence did not cause any more trouble for Wang Zheng. She had only reminded him to attend her classes punctually.

Wang Zheng went for a simple lunch before jogging over to the MMA Club. In a normal school, such clubs would definitely be empty. However in a military school it was one of the three largest clubs.

As a result, it had a generous space allocated to it, with even a designated sparring area. This was truly extravagant.

“Hello, who might you be looking for?” A pretty girl asked.

“Hello older sister, I’m here to enter the club. Student Meng Tian had recommended me.”

Those who were polite were naturally treated nicely, and the pretty girl was happy at the way Wang Zheng had addressed her, “You are really good with words. The Vice President is here. Just follow this corridor to the end and make a right turn. They are currently training.” Wang Zheng nodded his head. Before long, he could hear endless sounds of grunting, and he could feel a slight sense of eagerness.

Inside the training field, there were a dozen or so students sparring with one another. Meng Tian was also there. Dressed in a white uniform, she forced her sparring partner back 4 to 5 meters with a single kick. Although the sparring partner wore rubber guards, both arms still went numb.

There were both males and females in the MMA Club. Surprisingly, a third of the people in attendance were females. It looked as though today’s girls were very adept at self-defense.

What Wang Zheng was concerned about were the training facilities provided. A training facility that possessed a complete set of training apparatus was pretty good. Furthermore, there was a

sign next to it a room warning people against entering: gravity room. Fuck, this was so extravagant.

Normal training could no longer satisfy Wang Zheng's bodily needs. Thus, a gravity room was absolutely wonderful news.

Meng Tian saw Wang Zheng and immediately walked over to greet him, "I told you, didn't I?"

"Excellent! I agree to join the MMA Club."

"Meng Tian, who is this bastard? He can't be from the Mech Department, right?" A valiant looking guy asked as he strode over.

Actually, ever since Meng Tian had chosen to approach Wang Zheng, this guy's eyes had never stopped staring at Wang Zheng. If he could stab people merely by glaring at someone, our dear Student Wang would have been stabbed countless times already!

"Wang Zheng, from the Physics Department. This is senior student Guan Tao from the Mech Department. He is also a Vice President of the MMA Club."

Guan Tao gave a smile and extended a hand. "Ah! So you're the Wang Zheng that Little Tian has been talking about! I am Guan Tao, the Vice President and also the Vice Captain of the Dragon Spirit Corps."

Wang Zheng extended a hand in return to shake his. "Our school

still employs mercenary soldiers?”

“Yes, in CT. We are considered to be the best team in the Asian Region. The Team Captain is Ma Xiao, and also the MMA Club president.”

Although Guan Tao was all smiles, he suddenly increased the strength of his grasp to the point where his veins could be seen bulging out. Yet, Wang Zheng’s expression did not change. “It is an honor to meet you.”

Meng Tian laughed. Wang Zheng had never even heard of him before, what honor was there in him meeting him?

Guan Tao saw that the opposing party was not physically large, yet his grip strength wasn’t small either. He pulled back his hand and said, “Little Tian, club rules are club rules. As Wang Zheng is not from the Mech Department, to enter the club he has to pass the test.”

Meng Tian nodded her head. “I am of the same opinion. Wang Zheng, let us exchange pointers.”

“You don’t need to worry, I got this. If not, I’ll have no other job to do. Wang Zheng, come over here; I’ll be gentle.”

He had wanted to humiliate Wang Zheng, but it had almost turned into a reward! Everyone in the vicinity was watching them. If he did not properly discipline this bastard, how could he lead

from now on!?

“Come, use whatever weapon you like. Wooden swords, nunchakus, anything.”

Guan Tao casually pointed at rack of weapons. With a competition about to occur, the surrounding students stopped their training and gathered around the pair.

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders. “It would be better if we kept things simple.”

“Did this guy offend Guan Tao?”

“Are you dumb? Have you forgotten about what happened to the guy who threw flirtatious gazes at Meng Tian? That guy is still in the hospital.”

“I think this guy is stirring up trouble in the midst of his fervor. Meng Tian won’t like him. The captain is a much better fit for her.”

“What do you know? Perhaps Meng Tian likes this sort of guy.”

“What is this chump from the Physics Department doing here, creating a scene?”

“Who knows. The first lesson for freshmen is usually quite low-

key.”

Wang Zheng took off his shoes and stood on the platform. Guan Tao was already in a prepared pose.

“Come.” Guan Tao beckoned with his hand. As a senior and a leader of the club, he had to have some form of poise.

Since everyone was waiting for a show, Wang Zheng couldn’t help but show off a few skills. He slowly walked over and as he lifted his arm, lashed out in a kick.

Plop.

Guan Tao was knocked onto the floor, sprawling like a frog on its back.

Everyone was shocked. Angered, Guan Tao flipped himself upright. This bastard was too sneaky, he feinted with his arm and kicked out instead.

How could he know that Wang Zheng was merely playing around.

Guan Tao launched a flying kick at Wang Zheng’s head. Wang Zheng took a step forward and grabbed Guan Tao’s leg, neatly transitioning into a throw.

Bang.

Some of the onlookers had closed their eyes. This was a complete thrashing.

Guan Tao was thrown with so much force his head spun. All he could see were small stars.

A few students hurriedly rushed over to support him, but Guan Tao angrily refused them. “You bastard, are you looking to die? I will beat you till you scream for your daddy and mommy.”

Wang Zheng shook his head helplessly. From the start, he had already given him face. He didn’t know why this guy was so keen on competing against him, but even he had a bottom line.

Guan Tao executed a roundhouse kick, aiming at Wang Zheng’s head. If it were a newbie, that person would definitely need to spend quite a period of time in the hospital.

Bang...

Wang Zheng’s left hand grabbed Guan Tao’s ankle. With a bit of force, Guan Tao was hanging in Wang Zheng’s grasp. Pulling, Wang Zheng lifted him up and threw him once more. Guan Tao was thrown directly into a wall.

Boom...

Due to the impact, Guan Tao was plastered onto the wall. His body slowly slid down the wall while white foam frothed from his mouth.

Wang Zheng helplessly shrugged his shoulders. “The Vice President was too vicious, I could only dodge.”

Since he couldn’t get people to like him, he would have to get them to fear him.

Student Wang was not one who feared taking action. This MMA Club wasn’t anyone’s territory either.

A wry smile appeared on Meng Tian’s face. It should be said that when she smiled, she was absolutely beautiful. The feeling it gave off was like when the winter ice thawed and the springtime flowers started to bloom.

“I knew you were an expert. Come. If you beat me, you can enter the MMA Club.”

“Can we not fight? I don’t like to fight with women.”

“Treat me like you would a guy. Trust me. If you don’t fight me here, your troubles will definitely increase.”

Meng Tian was very direct, and Wang Zheng smile in response,

“Well, then I won’t be courteous either. Please.”

Meng Tian tightened her girdle and arranged her hair. As she dropped into a fighting stance, a vicious and frightening energy emanated from her, striking directly at Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng looked slightly distracted. It looked as though he had underestimated his dear classmate Meng Tian.

Whoosh…

Meng Tian immediately launched a flying kick at Wang Zheng. It was completely different from the one Guan Tao had executed. Meng Tian’s footwork was not gaudy or flashy, but precise and fast. Taking advantage of the female’s light body, this kick seemed like a bolt of lightning.

She was definitely not an apprentice.

She was definitely an expert!

Wang Zheng backed up. Meng Tian proceeded to show off her full array of foot techniques as she drew closer and closer. The people watching were shouting in excitement. Meng Tian being able to become a Vice President as a freshman was not due to her looks. The moment she arrived, she had soundly defeated everyone and easily attained her current position.

Meng Tian’s ability far surpassed that of Guan Tao’s. It was like

comparing an amateur to a professional!

Meng Tian's assault gradually became more savage. Her kicks lashed out towards Wang Zheng's nose several times. Wang Zheng could feel the wind sweeping across, but being able to watch Meng Tian's body execute such moves was indeed a sight to behold. It was graceful and beautiful.

However, Meng Tian did not possess the same relaxed feelings as Wang Zheng. She could see that Wang Zheng had not retaliated at all. This shouldn't be the case!

All of the members of the MMA Club were shouting and cheering in excitement. Meng Tian's assault was so vicious that her opponent could only retreat with his tail between his legs!

Meng Tian's continuous attacks had finally reached a peak and the last kick lashed towards Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng took a step back, but Meng Tian had already anticipated it. She intercepted his path with a lightning fast kick. This move, from a female, was both fast and vicious with no weaknesses.

At this point, she saw the unstably retreating Wang Zheng suddenly give way and pull her leg, causing her body to be forced forward. He simultaneously leaned to the side and moved himself into Meng Tian's stomach region, left hand grasping her right knee and right hand grabbing her arms.

With a wry smile he said, "Student Meng Tian is too amazing. I am only here to enter the club. Will this prove that I have the ability to join?"

Meng Tian realized that she was unable to escape from his grapple. She clenched her teeth. It was very clear that Wang Zheng was giving her face. If his left hand could grab her arms, then if he had a knife she would have been defeated.

She bit her lip and nodded her head. Wang Zheng then released her leg... the feeling was truly top class!

“Wang Zheng will enter the MMA Club. Does anyone have any comments?” Meng Tian announced.

The audience members looked at each other in dismay. This bastard could crush Guan Tao and even suppress Meng Tian. Whoever fought him would just be looking to die!

“Welcome to the club, Wang Zheng.”

Student Wang was beaming as he prepared to shake her hand. “Thank you. I hope you will be able to take care of me, Vice President.”

Meng Tian leaned close to Wang Zheng and whispered, “Bet it felt nice. However, this isn’t over!”

Our dear Student Wang’s face turned red. Fuck. It was just for a brief moment. Heaven have mercy on him!

After Meng Tian finished speaking, she didn’t bother Wang Zheng and went to take a bath. Once Meng Tian left, no one paid

any more attention to Wang Zheng. He received a training uniform and was as excited as could be.

With such a large area, the training apparatus were just too good. There were basically no club activities, and after 8pm there was no one around. Wang Zheng basically owned the place. Once he obtained the keys from the senior sister, he could use the facilities as much as he liked.

With regards to his current physical condition, Wang Zheng was still not content. What he needed was explosive strength. With regards to his environment and his genes, this aspect of his was severely lacking.

Explosive strength across his entire body and its individual parts all needed improvement.

Ever since he had trained in the uniformed landslide[1], his entire body's explosive strength had risen slightly. However, Wang Zheng felt that having only this sort of skill wasn't enough. Explosive strength from each limb was also necessary.

Wang Zheng wasn't worried about the accumulation of Battle Energy. When he next met Bonehead, he had to give him some sort of surprise. He would not let him look down on the dignified warriors of Earth.

When he was younger, Wang Zheng's father had been very competent at parenting. Although he liked to dupe Wang Zheng, he would also tell Wang Zheng some mystical stories. It was said

that those experts who trained in breathing cultivation techniques could fly and run on walls. In the blink of an eye, they could annihilate their enemies with their techniques.

Notes:

1] This is some sort of slang reference to the military training they did. I have no idea what the author is referencing though.

Chapter 15 – Mysterious Genius

These things were not reasonable, but still suggested the training direction. To improve one's physical ability, one had to start from the basics.

For example: finger strength.

He didn't disregard push ups. With a single flip, Wang Zheng did a handstand. Single arm push ups were too easy, so how about changing to single finger push ups?

Plop.

Wang Zheng fell on the floor. He slowly got up, and a dumb smile could be seen on his face.

Following which, he continued to experiment.

This attitude was entirely due to Bonehead's training. He had been infected by its fervent training. He started doing pushups again with five fingers, then gradually reduced the number of fingers.

Doing it this way allowed his finger strength to increase. Even if he couldn't hold on, he would not use the Return To One technique. Using it wouldn't allow him to reap the full benefits of training.

Tricking oneself was meaningless.

In the training room, Wang Zheng had fallen repeatedly. He was absolutely battered and exhausted, but there was still a large smile on his face.

A new day came. The memories of the tough military training gradually dissipated. Everyone was settling into the routine of everyday life.

Dormitory 007's came to a democratic decision which everyone felt was extremely fair.

Zhang Shan's target was Meng Tian. In Zhang Shan's own words, "The harder it is, the more I want to achieve it."

Yao Ailun's target was An Mei. The cold, uncaring beauty was the sexiest.

Chen Xiu focused on Du Qingqing. Student Chen had always felt that age was the most important factor. Shotas were unparalleled. The rest were too old.

As for Ye Zisu, everyone gave her to Wang Zheng. Even though Wang Zheng didn't say anything, everyone else felt that there was definitely something between them.

With regard to this, Wang Zheng did not oppose it either. In any case, they could say whatever they wanted. His current life was

much more fulfilling.

Actually, it wasn't that Wang Zheng had no opposition to their words. It was just that such people were out of his reach. In this life he didn't know if he would have the opportunity to meet them face to face.

Fuck. As a soldier, how could he be depressed?

Wang Zheng summoned his courage and walked towards the classroom. A new day had come, and he had allocated ample time for each course of the Physics and Mech Departments. Especially since he was a Physics Department student, he couldn't bring himself to miss any lessons.

On the second day, everyone had settled into their respective departments. The teaching staff began to teach their respective classes. Generally speaking, first years were usually quite diligent, and few would skip classes.

The atmosphere in the Math Department was slightly chilly.

The class had started 30 minutes ago but Dr. Marcus stood motionless in front of the blackboard. The students were all whispering among themselves. Could it be that the answer was correct?

Marcus suddenly turned around, his eyes like that of a cobra as it swept across the classroom. He knocked on the blackboard heavily.

“Who wrote this?”

His expression looked as though it could devour someone. The students looked at each other in dismay. Even if they had wanted to answer that math question, they would not have written it on the blackboard! They would have passed their solution to the professor privately.

Marcus suddenly realized his expression was rather ‘sinister’ and let out a smile. “Who wrote this? I have been here on Earth for almost 5 years. I thought that this place was only full of pigs. It looks like that attitude was too shallow of me. This is the work of a genius. It is my first time seeing such an answer. It is extremely beautiful. No. It is extremely refined!”

Marcus had an expression of infatuation on his face. Most people could only duplicate answers, and there was no worth in that. Yet suddenly, a person had opened a new path on his own. It was too wonderful. It had even improved his understanding of equations by an entire level!

The students were still looking at each other in dismay. Everyone knew that Marcus was only here because of Xiao Fei. Both of them were partners. Moreover, Marcus had a bad temper and his standards were high. The students whom he had destroyed were not just one or two.

At this point, a student raised his hand. “I didn’t recognize him, but it was done by a student from another department. He wrote

it.”

Marcus gave a smile. “This is impossible. This is an equation of the advanced 4th degree. If a Math Department student could do it, he would already be considered a genius. If some other department’s student could do this, we can all just resign.”

At this point in time, everyone was sure that Marcus was not being sarcastic. In regards to stupid calculations, Marcus would unflinchingly evaluate and criticize them sharply. So much so, the other party would no longer be recognized by their own mothers!

“I think he is from the Physics Department.”

“Yes. He was wearing the uniform of the Physics Department. He wasn’t old and should either be in the first or second year.”

Marcus was speechless. He was from another department? Year 1 or 2??

Marcus was no longer in the mood to continue with his lesson. “All of you write this down. This is an entirely new method. This is worth at least a prize in the Sol Federation.”

The students were in uproar. Fuck. Such an exaggeration?

This school possessed such a genius!?

And it was not even his own student!

Even if Grandmother could resist Grandfather, she couldn't resist this![1]

Marcus immediately rushed to Principal Gu Te's office and anxiously explained himself.

Gu Te was flabbergasted. "Dr. Marcus, your requests have always been taken seriously by the school. Could you repeat whom the student is and from which department?"

Marcus stared blankly. "I don't know. I only know that he is from the Physics Department and is either in Year 1 or 2."

Gu Te was speechless and could only give a bitter smile. "That would be quite difficult. There are many students. However, you needn't worry. I will search for him wholeheartedly. Having talent is always a good thing."

Marcus finally relaxed. "Okay. Please hurry with this. I will pass his mathematical proof to the Sol Federation's Mathematical Society and let them judge it. I think that winning a prize should not be an issue."

"What. So impressive?" Gu Te was shocked.

"What else? Do you think I'm this cheap?" Marcus gave Gu Te a

glare.

Gu Te felt helpless. It was difficult to be Headmaster this year. Furthermore, he was trying to develop a group of gods.

The first week of classes was usually filled with excitement and enthusiasm. Once the weekend came, everyone wanted to relax. Once class ended, Yan Xiaosu rushed over to find Wang Zheng.

“Boss, my Commerce Department is filled with beauties. You should come over.”

“Are you sure?”

“You should best understand the situation in the Physics Department. It’s a stomping ground for dinosaurs. They are all from the Jurassic period. The ones in the Math Department aren’t much better, they are probably from the Cretaceous period. My Commerce Department is completely different! The guy to girl ratio is 1 to 4. Ah, I could fly.”

Yan Xiaosu’s facial expressions changed in the blink of an eye. He seemed quite helpless. “However, it’s a pity. The most beautiful girls are all in the Officers Department.”

Wang Zheng nodded his head. “Ye Zisu’s friends are also exceptionally pretty.”

Yan Xiaosu’s eyes filled with tears. “Boss, don’t forget about me.

How could you leave me out of such a gathering! We grew up in the same pair of pants!”

“Go and die. Who wants to wear the same pants as you!”

“I don’t care! I just want beautiful girls. Please introduce me to some. If not, I will tell Ye Zisu you’ve been cheating on her.” Yan Xiaosu spoke righteously.

“You’re good. Next time there’s such an event, you can take my place. I have no interest in it.”

“We truly are brothers. Let’s go and relax, my treat.”

The so called relaxation was to go to the Net Cafe and fight a few rounds. Once the Boss saw Yan Xiaosu, his face looked as though a flower had blossomed. Xiaosu couldn’t let down the Boss, and he swiped his credit card several times as well. This was the splendor of a rich family.

Once he entered the game, Student Yan actually abandoned Wang Zheng. He hadn’t played for a long time and wanted to search for an expert.

When Wang Zheng entered CT, he sent a message through the system. He didn’t know whether Solon’s words were still valid. After such a long period of time, perhaps everyone had forgotten about him.

What surprised Wang Zheng was that after he had sent out the message, the system promptly replied.

At this point in time, CT's Asian Region waiting area began to bustle once again. Solon had personally handled things. The opponent had already been prepared some time ago.

This was not a random battle, but a pre-arranged fight.

An official announcement was broadcast.

1 versus 1 battle: Skeleton VS Wild King

There were no decorations. The originally silent broadcasting area had erupted forth like a raging sea.

Who was Wild King?

He was the European Region's number one Scout for three consecutive months! He specialized in using using the Moon Army's high level mech Light War Cavalry Type D.

Known for his strength and sharp senses, he was the European Region's most passionate and cocky bastard. Yet, he was also a Diamond ranked expert. He wanted to challenge Skeleton?

How would he fight?

Would he use the Light War Cavalry Mech?

Of course not. Wild King would not take advantage of the enemy. At the Diamond level, he could expertly operate any of the mecha under normal circumstances. As he was a scout, he was even more versatile.

But the popular Wild King was willing to come and fight?

Once the battle announcement circulated, not only did it attract the attention of all those in the beginner arena, but also the attention of those in the expert arena.

Solon was extremely calm. This was what he was looking for. He wanted to charge high fees for it.

Wargod No. 1 VS Wargod No. 1. Who was stronger?

Solon felt the odds for either player would be about even. If not for the previous match, even Solon wouldn't dare to organize a fight like this. That bout could not have been won with just a simple reliance on one's physical skill. But who would have expected Skeleton's marksmanship to be excellent as well. Thus, he dared to take a riskier gamble.

What about the risks?

From the start, this plan wasn't completely foolproof.

Wild King was quite popular in the expert's arena in recent months. If he could maintain his place for a bit longer, he would have the qualifications to challenge the Earth's strongest Monarch rankings.

The payment to fight was just one aspect. If the opponent was too crappy, Wild King would not be interested either. However, after watching Skeleton's videos, he felt a desire to battle.

For him, the rest was unimportant. Using only basic mecha, he wanted to fight Skeleton.

Scouting — it was a job that involved dancing on the edge of a knife.

The more dangerous the task, the more exhilarating it was.

Wargod No. 1 was a mech he used for a long time to refine his precision. However, he did not use it in the beginner's arena but rather, in the Bronze arena. During this time, his achievements were quite glorious. Once he was discovered however, he stopped doing so.

This guy was just like him.

Perhaps Skeleton was also using this as a way to train himself. Being able to beat such a bastard would definitely bring him great satisfaction.

Sitting in the cockpit, Wild King could feel the thrill of the hunt.

Those who were willing to utilize scout mecha were pilots who were well rounded. With well balanced offensive and defensive capabilities, they were able to simultaneously take on multiple roles. Wild King was also the European Region's most outstanding new player and was absolutely radiant within the Diamond ranks.

This battle was, without a doubt, full of unusual enthusiasm.

Expert scout pilots, when utilizing the Wargod No. 1, had absolutely no issues. In fact, many scouts liked to use the Wargod No. 1 to train.

Battleground selection:

Map – Big Dipper Western Wilderness

It was a wilderness location, belonging to the category of maps specializing in direct duels. The winner would have to win purely with skill.

Wild King Wargod No. 1's armament... Random.

Skeleton Wargod No. 1's armament... Laser Rifle.

Perhaps it was because of the shooting lesson, but recently, Wang

Zheng had felt extremely comfortable with the laser rifle. Wild King, however, had received the alloy blade knife.

...What kind of situation was this?

Notes:

1] LOL, this one got me. Such a hilarious visual appeared in my head.

Chapter 16 – Indescribable Respect

Big Dipper Wilderness Map and he chose the titanium knife? With Skeleton's marksmanship, would it not result in him being beaten like a dog?

The two mecha entered the north-western part of the wilderness. When looking at the endless plains, one could feel the desolate atmosphere.

Wild King spun the titanium knife in his palm with a smile on his face. His luck really was bad. He got to challenge the laser rifle with his titanium knife. He was truly at a disadvantage in this arena.

The chatbox was full of excitement. Skeleton was the representative of the beginner arena. Wild King was truly arrogant; he dared to pick a random weapon and act so pretentiously. He would definitely be struck by lightning!

However, Skeleton then made a move which caused the entire chatbox to fall silent.

Wargod No. 1 threw away his laser rifle. Fuck. Was this still a battle?

Wild King was currently the most popular and skilled scout of the American Region. This action… was just too excessive.

Excitement filled Wild King. It was the first time he had met such an interesting individual. Wild King's Wargod No. 1 also placed his titanium knife onto the ground.

The wind blew. In the blink of an eye, the two Wargod No. 1 mecha charged at each other.

☆ ☆ ☆

"Good morning everyone. The two competitor's situation should be quite familiar to everyone. I am Fawn, the Fawn who likes to drink milk. I am here to take back my reputation. Wild King's true identity is that of Apollo College's Mech Department's first year student, moreover, one who was specially enrolled. He is a genius who has the potential to become a general!"

It could be seen that the Fawn, the one who had eaten the milk carton, had made up his mind to be despicable till the end.

"Contestant Skeleton has decided to give up on his advantage, but can he survive Wild King's onslaught?"

Bang...

As they rapidly approached each other, Wild King's Wargod No. 1 took the initiative, leaping upwards, intending to viciously assault his opponent as he fell. It was a ferocious method that ignored all consequences!

But, whether it was a mistake or whether his jumping strength wasn't sufficient, it looked as though he was going to crash into the ground.

Even missing by a bit would invite punishment from Skeleton's assault since Wild King would fall into the latter's range. Then, the falling Wild King's Wargod No. 1 executed a drop kick right in mid-air.

Just right!

As the attack neared, Skeleton's Wargod No. 1 executed an Arc Slide Step. Although he only moved slightly, he dodged the attack. Yet even then, the two had exchanged yet another strike.

The rapid exchange of blows took an unexpected pause as the two mecha spun away from each other. Wild King's Wargod No. 1 braced himself with his left hand and fluidly maneuvered itself upright. Peng... The engine erupted and a burst of speed was provided to the mech's legs. Wild King's Wargod No. 1 blitzed towards Skeleton.

This was Wild King's fearless style. An aggressive scout at heart, entering battle meant defeating the opponent before they could react.

Bang... Bang... Bang...

The Wild King's Wargod No. 1 simultaneously lashed out with a

fist and kick. Pilots who had a fundamental grasp of wrestling in reality could bring their skills into a mech fight. But being able to perfectly execute such moves as well as they could in reality was difficult. Even in CT, where the difficulty in executing such moves had been toned down, normal people were unable to do so. This was not an issue for Wild King.

"Excellent! Wild King's explosive assaults have forced Skeleton on the defensive! This is his famous Hurricane Assault, an unceasing omni-directional attack that ends only when the enemy is crushed! I can't believe that in such a situation where no one is using weapons, that Wild King's performance is so exceptional. The large military corps should watch carefully, such an excellent scout should be recruited quickly!"

As Fawn spoke, he picked up a carton of milk. He had finally regained the face he had lost from the time he had fallen. Escaping from reality was not part of his personality.

In the previous battle, Skeleton had a good grasp of the terrain on the battlefield. In this terrain however, there was no cover he could utilize. Furthermore, he had let go of his laser rifle. He really was playing with fire this time.

Wild King was fighting happily. It had been a long time since he could indulge in such a manner of combat. Truly, most battle results were quite idiotic; a single mistake could end up enveloping their head in a fiery explosion. But this type of melee contest was always an undisputed favorite among youths. They enjoyed engaging in close combat with other experts.

King didn’t know what sort of guy Skeleton was, but his assault couldn’t break through Skeleton’s stable defense. Hair standing on end in excitement, Wild King almost wanted to howl madly.

His two eyes exuded a glorious radiance. From head to toe, all of his muscles tensed up as he prepared to release a strong punch. Exploding forward in a burst of speed, Wild King’s Wargod No. 1 borrowed the force of his charge to turn his punch into a savage, powerful blow..

Bam...

The point of impact caused the ground to churn and debris to fly. This one strike completely surpassed all blows previously exchanged during the fight. Wild King’s Wargod No. 1 had only paused for a second while Skeleton’s mech’s view was obstructed by the flying debris. Following through with the punch, Wild King’s Wargod No. 1 cartwheeled and violently kicked outwards.

The entire set of movements, that could only described as tyrannical, was executed in merely a breath’s worth of time.

Bang...

Skeleton’s Wargod No. 1 was kicked outwards, his two arms crossed to reduce the impact of the assault.

Wild King fell onto the floor, but didn’t relax.

☆ ☆ ☆

Meanwhile, in a CT cockpit in America[1], a youth with hair that looked like a bundle of grass was excitedly clenching his teeth. His upper body was riddled with numerous scars which made his body a truly ghastly sight. Yet outside, there were at least a hundred people watching the competition. These people... they all looked like delinquents.

Indeed, Wild King was their pride: an orphan on the street had managed to obtain special admission into the Apollo Military College. He was the pride of the entire neighborhood.

Wild King's father was a retired commando. Thus, from youth, he had learned close combat techniques from his father. He was undefeated in his neighborhood. His battle experience was plentiful. In close combat, oppressing an opponent was as easy as oppressing a dog.

Back in the battle, Wild King's Wargod No. 1 rushed forward and furiously knee'd Skeleton. After the two mecha collided, he immediately followed up with a high kick to the head. A creak could be heard from the Wargod No. 1. Such moves were quite extreme and were just barely executed.

When it came to weapons, Wild King possessed an instinctive aptitude for any weaponry or mecha, no matter how unusual they were. It was as though they were part of his body. The military college said he was a genius, but he didn't care. He just liked to battle.

Bang…

Skeleton's Wargod No. 1 could only dodge. At one point, he was a touch too slow and his right arm was destroyed. His mech staggered backwards by almost 10 meters.

The streaming audience and chatbox suddenly quieted down. This Hurricane Assault was just too ferocious. There wasn't even space for one to take a breather.

After losing the right arm, the battle had become increasingly dangerous. This was one of the weaknesses of a Wargod No. 1. On the other hand, the web cafe where Wild King was at erupted into cheers. Being able to devastate an opponent without weapons was a lot more exciting than using guns.

Wild King's face had a hint of a cold smile. There were very few opponents who could allow him to fight like this. Energy shields were completely unable to resist this onslaught.

However, the end had come.

"Haha, it looks like the fight has been decided. If Skeleton is able to make a comeback, I will eat yet another milk carton! Haha![2]"

Fawn laughed heartily. The last time he shoutcasted, it was done in vain. Fuck your granny, that cheapskate Solon didn't even give him a portion of the viewer donations.

☆ ☆ ☆

On Wang Zheng's end, the mech's alarms were all ringing. As he experimented with the controls, his mech's balancing mechanism was slightly damaged, but it could still be operated. In his current situation, however, he would not be able to take another assault like the previous one. Perhaps this time, he really bit off more than he could chew.

Wild King raised a finger towards the sky, this was his cue before he unleashed his killing move. It was an extremely tyrannical pose.

The Wargod No. 1 rumbled as it sprinted towards his opponent. The opponent looked as though he had given up all hope on retaliating. However, Wild King could feel a sense of danger. When he was living on the streets and making a living, he had suffered numerous injuries. There were even a few times where he almost lost his life, and he had developed a sort of sense towards such dangers.

He knew that the opponent was a close combat expert, so he would not give any quarter. Furthermore, with the opponent's current condition, even if they clashed frontally the opponent would definitely be destroyed first!

To be kind was to be heartless!

The distance between the two mecha had shrunk to 5 meters. At this point in time, Skeleton's Wargod No. 1 leaped upwards.

Jumping? What was the point of of that?

Wild King had already successfully accelerated to his maximum speed, on the verge of executing his final move. His skills were versatile and polished, with no weaknesses. Yet even at this point, Skeleton's Wargod No. 1, which had reached the apex of his jump, dove headfirst towards Wild King. Tracking his leap, Wild King raised his head, which caused bright rays of the sun behind Skeleton to dazzle him. In that critical moment, for at most 0.3 seconds, Wild King could only squint at Skeleton!

Skeleton's Wargod No. 1's left leg lashed out as quick as a lightning strike. Even without building momentum, it possessed unfathomable explosive strength.

Bang...

CRASH...

Wild King's Wargod No. 1 stumbled forward... but the mech's head was missing.

The rays of sunlight across the wilderness were particularly harsh and dazzling.

It was just a single strike!

Fawn brandished his hands in shock. He had been awaiting a climax resulting in Skeleton's crushing defeat, but now he was

absolutely spiritless. He had even spat out the milk in his mouth!

Fuck!

Encountering this fucker was like meeting a ghost! Even this was possible!?

The audience members who were holding their breath let out a howl from the bottom of their hearts. The ones watching the livestream were already dancing in joy.

This was an unexpected result!

Fawn stared blankly. At this point, his heart felt as cold as the autumn wind.

He suddenly realized all of the workers were now staring at him. He wished he could die.

This milk carton was not made of milk! He had been constipated for three entire days!

He clenched his teeth and stamped his feet. Then Fawn began to tear the carton into small pieces. The show was not over, but he did not want to dilly dally. In this world, there was no one that was invincible.

As he chewed, tears came out of his eyes. He crammed piece after

piece into his throat. Fuck your granny, could he not eat a smaller carton instead?

The killcam slowly replayed the last killing blow frame by frame. It was hard to explain what sort of feeling this battle gave. However, this strange feeling rushed forth and bubbled up in everyone's thoughts.

Furthermore, this was paired with the analysis given by the Skeleton Corps, done by Skeleton Corps original creator with the ID: Extremely Handsome.

The most important bit was not the ending, but the battle's progression. Under Wild King's vicious onslaught, Skeleton's Wargod No. 1 had never lost his balance. Actually, Wild King's explosive kick should not have hit. On the video, a small rock was circled in red. When he was retreating through the foliage, Skeleton had stumbled over a small rock and thus could not dodge completely. Yet in such a situation, Skeleton's cool sacrifice of his arm was the textbook example of a perfect reaction to a disadvantaged position. Similarly, during the final strike, Wild King faced the unexpected sunlight and seemed to have lost his focus. His final no holds barred rush was actually the reason behind his loss. The momentum from the rush coupled with Skeleton's adept use of his foot as a knife's blade had allowed him to decapitate the head of Wild King's mech.

Yet this was not the most important part. The most important part was that when the single arm of Wargod No. 1 rose up into the air, he was extremely calm. This was not ferociousness, nor gracefulness, but its appearance caused an inexplicable feeling to

awaken in the hearts of the crowd.

This was the composure obtained after dancing on the edge of life and death numerous times.

This indescribable feeling the crowd found within themselves... was called respect!

Notes:

1] The author went back and forth on American/European. From now on, let's just assume he is American.

2] TLC Phi: 'Wow.....this guy really likes to eat milk cartons XD.....'

Chapter 17 – Eternal Life In Blood

Chen Xiu was passionately shouting in high spirits. He didn't look like his usual shy and bashful young self. Only in here could he be absolutely unrestrained and show his true colors.

This was a kind of strength!

This was true tyranny!

The invincible god, Skeleton! A competitor for the Monarch's Struggle has descended!

"Boss, we're on fire! This time we've really done it!"

"This will lead to him rushing into the top 10!"

"Boss, do you think that Skeleton is a retired ace pilot? His actions were so blinding that my titanium alloy dog eyes couldn't see anything. He was too calm, like he was dealing with a child!"

Solon didn't know. He really didn't know. He wasn't even clear what the other party actually wanted.

Fame? With such skill, he definitely wasn't an ordinary person; being famous would be easy.

Money? This guy didn't seem to be interested in money.

Furthermore, such an individual wouldn't need to rely on such methods to earn money either.

It had to be said that the audience had started to form legends around him.

In truth, what our dear Student Wang really wished for was a greater share of the ticket earnings!

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng also discovered that this battle had taught him something important: his combat experience, and thus his combat skills, had a flaw. He'd almost tripped, but thankfully there was only one opponent. What if there was a sniper hiding near him? He would have lost!

He still had much to learn... Why was it so noisy outside? It was like a bomb had gone off...

After waiting for a bit, Wang Zheng went out and noticed that a large group of people were in the central area watching something on the communal screen. ...What in the world was so entertaining?

...This looks ...familiar?

"Boss, quick. Come over and see this. Fuck, this guy just blows your mind. He uses a Wargod No. 1 and is invincible. His kick is

basically a god killing technique! I'm going to enter the Skeleton Corps!"

Yan Xiaosu's saliva splattered all over as he spoke excitedly. He had already long memorized all of the noobs IDs.

After the video analysis ended, an extremely beautiful advertisement came on screen:

Regardless of your profession or rank, enter the Skeleton Corps!

Don't live your life as a gutless weakling!

Be reborn in blood and live forever!

Student Yan looked slightly crazed. He'd really entered the Skeleton Corps! In addition, he was even in a position others strove for. This corps was indeed extremely fitting for him.

The Skeleton Corps could be considered to be a different type of corps compared to the ones usually found in CT. A corps was usually filled with individuals of similar goals and beliefs who happened to meet each other online and decided to band together. To prevent fraud and being overcrowded, each corps had their own specialties. However, the minimum requirement to enter these corps was to have a high level of skill and a high win rate in the game.

.Yet, no corps was filled with as much excitement as the Skeleton Corps. This was because their core identity was to be engaged in battle and blood! Winning was battling. Losing was also battling. Most importantly, it all depended on what one wanted.

Wang Zheng's previous battles had already been saved and arranged neatly. Unfortunately, as his first battle happened too long ago, it had already been deleted from the system and could not be retrieved[1].

However, the battles that were available for viewing were already sufficiently shocking.

The opponents got stronger and stronger, and he kept using a Wargod No. 1 to crush them. Since his opponents would continue to be stronger and stronger, the opportunity to crush elite mecha was only a matter of time.

When it reached that point, would the legend continue?

No one knew, but this was the hope in everyone's hearts.

"Too sweet. Fuck. Too amazing. Bitch, oppress these assholes. Ranks are meaningless!"

Student Xiaosu angrily rushed off. It could be seen that he'd been trashed by his opponents the previous round. He had failed the bronze ranked promotion matches and needed to re-accumulate

points again.

“Boss, I want to learn new skills. Just researching God Skeleton’s video analysis would be sufficient!”

Wang Zheng stared at the obsessed Yan Xiaosu. He didn’t know if he ought to tell him or not. With Yan Xiaosu’s big mouth, if he were to spread the news, then Wang Zheng’s peaceful life would be gone!

Back in the dormitory, he realized that the other three had absolutely petrified faces.

Skeleton had only won one battle, was there really a need to be like this? With the personalities of these three, such an expression was absolutely too extreme!

“What happened to you three?” asked Wang Zheng.

The three looked at each other in dismay. Their expressions finally showed a trace of excitement, yet also disbelief.

Yao Ailun blankly looked at Wang Zheng and, with a soft voice, spoke only a single word, “Guess?”

At this point, Wang Zheng felt like grabbing him and throwing him out of the window. “How would I know? Could it be about the battle where Skeleton won once again?”

“Hehe, Brother Zheng, you’ve managed to guess half of it correctly. God Skeleton has once again completely devastated an opponent, but that’s not the most important part!”

“Was it how many new members the Skeleton Corps received?”

“Wang Zheng, you are Dormitory 007’s Dormitory Head; use your imagination!”

“Stop messing around, I wouldn’t be able to guess even if I tried my best. Up till now, I can’t really believe it,” Zhang Shan said. He didn’t seem like his usual self.

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders. He couldn’t be bothered with these three scumbags who kept him in suspense.

“Wang Zheng, as an ordinary man, have you heard of The Sound of Nature’s Echo.”

“Yes, their songs aren’t bad. They can be listened to.”

“Fuck. What do you mean they can be listened to? Your fucking requirements are too high. These are the songs of our goddess, Lin Huiyin[2] ,” exclaimed Chen Xiu. He was beginning to go cuckoo.

“Ah.” Wang Zheng didn’t understand what these three guys were trying to get at. They seemed to be getting further and further

away from the point. Lin Huiyin was someone that was known by everyone. Extremely popular, she was a celebrity in the Milky Way, an Aslan citizen. However, to Wang Zheng, her songs were just that; they could be listened to and that was it. He didn't pay much attention to them.

"It turns out that there is a generational gap between the two of us. Goddess Huiyin is my idol. If I could just meet her once in this lifetime, my dreams would've been considered fulfilled." As a representative of the new generation, Chen Xiu was slightly obsessed with her. It could be seen that when compared to Skeleton, the allure of a goddess was significantly stronger.

"Okay. Her agent have contacted us and hoped that God Skeleton's combat footage could be used in her new music video. Now, do you think these two wouldn't go crazy?" Zhang Shan smiled.

He loved Lin Huiyin's music as it was very soothing and refreshing to listen to. Perhaps Wang Zheng's standards for music were too high, or he could be just too old fashioned.

"Oh, it couldn't be a scam, could it?"

The three were growing increasingly frantic over Wang Zheng's calm demeanor. It turned out that the strangest guy in the dormitory was actually Wang Zheng.

After meeting Bonehead, nothing could make Wang Zheng scared anymore.

After meeting Little Shi, nothing could make Wang Zheng surprised anymore.

Bonehead could be a military instructor, and if Little Shi could transform into a princess, what in the world could happen that would be more outrageous than that?

."Just do it then," Wang Zheng said unenthusiastically.

"You sound as though you could be Skeleton. Fuck. Although we were the ones who created the Skeleton Corps, we actually have no power. We've already sent a message to Skeleton and don't even know if he will reply! My god, if this works out I would be so blessed. My god and goddess would combined into one! GOD!"

Wang Zheng was slightly speechless. What the heck did he mean by combining into one?

"Actually, if it doesn't work out, it doesn't matter. This is just a sideshow," Wang Zheng shrugged as he replied.

"Brother Zheng, since you don't play CT, you wouldn't understand. You've never experienced being oppressed by others countless times. It was so bad that I wanted to die! God Skeleton gives me spiritual release while goddess Huiyin is someone whom I entrust my hopes in!"

"Wang Zheng, it doesn't matter if you know or not. Us helping

him is a form of support. It is also the culmination of our hopes and dreams!”

Yao Ailun adjusted his spectacles. He was unequalled when it came to crafting theories, but when he played CT, he was a terrible player. Thus, he held a lot of negative feelings in his heart which could not be dispelled. Yet he’d suddenly found a person that could represent his dreams. He was able to live vicariously through that person!

Wang Zheng couldn’t understand such feelings, but he could see that these guys were extremely serious about this. “Since you guys believe in it, I am sure he would agree.”

“Since you have this much conviction, I am sure he would be willing!”

“Remember, if it works out, you must get several signed posters from him!”

“Definitely!”

Wang Zheng shook his head and turned on his Skylink. In his CT mailbox he found Extremely Handsome’s message and replied to it. After all, it didn’t make a difference to him.

After replying to the message, Chen Xiu, who sat just beside him, suddenly rose excitedly and shouted, “Success! Success! The heavens have blessed me!”

The randomly jumping Chen Xiu was like a small child. Yao Ailun, who stood at the side, was more controlled. “Make sure there’s a signed poster and signed photo!”

Although she was not the most beautiful, Lin Huiyin was still known as one of the Milky Way’s most beautiful women and her fans were innumerable.

☆ ☆ ☆

No one knew why such a popular entity would suddenly take note of Skeleton’s battle montages.

Fortune came too unexpectedly, and even Solon was surprised.

He’d spent a lot of effort promoting the battle, but the effects were just too profound. He suddenly found out that Lin Huiyin’s new music video wanted Skeleton’s battle montages in it. That almost gave him a heart attack! This was just too intense.

A wide and vast world was opening its gates to him.

Suddenly, a thought flashed across Solon’s mind: Believe in Skeleton and be reborn!

His comebacks that happened again and again had made him a true believer. Miracles were being created one after another.

Lin Huiyin's team had even confirmed and made an announcement on her official media network.

☆ ☆ ☆

Although the final appraisal had varied comments, there were several factors at play here. Firstly, the Aslan Empire possessed numerous experts, but the person chosen was one from the faraway planet Earth. Moreover, it was a noob! It seemed as though the song would be a motivational one but Lin Huiyin had never chosen such a direction for her songs.

Would it work?

Her cuteness and sweetness was unequalled. But of course, everyone was the same in that they wanted to breakthrough their own limits. But that dream was too plump and reality was boney; the failure rate for such an endeavor was extremely high. They couldn't imagine what the extremely beautiful and sweet princess Lin Huiyin's music video would result in.

Yet, the most faithful fans still gave her their full support, even as her rivals continued to sulk.

Wang Zheng had no idea what goddess Lin was like. However, what he could be sure of was that this goddess was in the middle of an unstable state of affairs.

☆ ☆ ☆

Since she was in her own dormitory, Xiao Fei dressed very casually. She was in loose fitting pajamas, and her whole body exuded the feeling of a sensual beauty. As it was quite loose, if she didn't pay attention then her snow white skin would occasionally be exposed.

At this point in time, Student Wang sat in front of her. Xiao Fei circled around him and seemed to be deciding if Wang Zheng should be baked in sweet and sour sauce or stir-fried with mixed garlic...

"Cough. Professor, could you please cut to the chase. If I know anything, then I will tell you everything and won't hide a thing!"

Wang Zheng was extremely fearful of the empress before him that had absolute control over his future.

"Haha, that would be for the best. I would like you to know that you will not be able to tell a single lie before me. Did you solve Marcus's question?"

"Who is Marcus? What Question? I'm so busy that I don't even have time to help others!"

Wang Zheng gave a bitter smile.

"It wasn't you? That day, I remember that I'd asked you to pass

some materials to Marcus. You spent a lot of time there.” At this point in time, Xiao Fei seemed to have become a detective, and she stared at Wang Zheng with a burning gaze. It was as if she were a bee and had just found a fresh flower.

Notes:

1] This should be referring to his first 5v5 match with Xiaosu. A.K.A. the match that would link would link Wang Zheng as Skeleton

2] Huiyin here ‘回音’, means Echo. The same Echo in the bands name’天籁 – sound of nature 回音 – echo’

Volume 3 – The God Of War Descends

Chapter 1 – Crazy Tempo

Looking at Xiao Fei's expression, Wang Zheng suddenly remembered. It was something that he had completely forgotten as it was insignificant.

"Ah, you couldn't be referring to the question on the blackboard? I wasn't taking it seriously and was just doing it for fun. Crap. That didn't cause any problems, did it?"

Student Wang was speechless. Wasn't this an insignificant issue?

Xiao Fei helplessly shook her head and took a deep breath, "You are trouble. You really caused a headache this time."

"Randomly scribbling shouldn't be a crime, right? Worst come to worst, I should just be able to help the Math Department clean the blackboard."

"The current problem is now, that Marcus wants you to enter the 4th year Math Department class!"

Student Wang's forehead creased and three dark lines could be seen on it. This was a school, not an underground society! How could it be that the professors were getting fiercer and fiercer?

Looking at Wang Zheng's pitiful expression, Xiao Fei couldn't help but burst out in laughter. "Your random scribbles answered a question which others have been racking their heads over for a

long time. It's led a group of genius Math Department students to look up at you in admiration. If you were in Marcus' shoes, how would you have dealt with this?!"

Wang Zheng let out a huge sigh of relief. The principal had told him not to offend anyone, else it would be extremely difficult to change departments.

"Little bastard. Although it isn't obvious, your talents aren't few. Such a treasure was picked up by me! Even if Marcus, that old bastard, wants to try and steal you away from me, it will only be a dream of his. Relax, this older sister will protect you!"

Xiao Fei was extremely forthright as she patted Wang Zheng's shoulder. As the distance was just one arm's length away, Wang Zheng could only see a snowy white, absolutely spotless expanse in front of him.

In the Rubik's Cube, Bonehead had made him undergo training against such desires. However, his heart knew that what he had trained against was all fake. Yet now, what was in front of him was the real deal.

"Sigh. This..."

Looking at Wang Zheng's face which was now completely red, Xiao Fei stared blankly at him for a moment before realizing what had happened. "You're not bad, yet you still don't have a girlfriend. How about I accept you. A relationship between a teacher and a student is still pretty good."

This was her usual way of bullying others. This demonic lady would derive satisfaction from seeing Wang Zheng's awkward embarrassment.

"Looks like I frightened you. Older sister's expectations are very high, but you barely meet the requirements. Work harder! In the future, I might give you a chance."

After saying that, she gave Wang Zheng a charming gaze. Our dear Student Wang was so frightened that he wanted to escape as quickly as possible. If he were to stay, he didn't know what else would happen. He was a young and vigorous adult male. Even Chen Xiu knew that the best type of women was one that was seductive, wise, and of great character. He was no different.

In her room, Xiao Fei was like a child who was extremely proud of herself as she laughed. Bullying little boys was extremely fun. In the future, she would even have to properly protect this little bastard. She already had a competitor in the form of the Mech Department. If he really did join them, the problems would only multiply.

With such an excellent foundation in mathematics, he was a genius born to do physics!

☆ ☆ ☆

Meanwhile, on the faraway Planet of Aslan...

The entire planet was the most structured in the entire Milky Way, each building constructed according to a predetermined layout. As such, it was so aesthetically pleasing that anyone who saw it would be caught by surprise. Elegantly designed environments, lavishly abundant in greenery, covered vast swathes of the planet. Twelve intelligent satellites surrounded Aslan, periodically absorbing sunlight and providing Aslan with solar energy. During times of war, they could also be used as mighty weapons.

On the 36th floor of Aslan's famous Star Pagoda was Lin Huiyin's Sound of Nature's Echo's music recording studio.

"Your Highness, I don't understand why you would want to take such a risk. There is absolutely no reason to do so!"

"Indeed. We have the best team available. If you wanted to try a new style, we would definitely be able to produce something of the highest quality!"

A group of workers were currently surrounding a little girl who seemed to possess the atmosphere of an immortal. The girl's bare legs were currently dancing according to a rhythm inside the room. Right outside the window were Aslan's uniquely ring-shaped butterfly constructs. They were flying machines that never stopped traveling back and forth, keeping everything neat and tidy.

"♫♪ I want to know what kind of person, she had kept in mind

constantly! ♪♫”

The girl lightly bit down on her tender and lovely lips. She was the famous beauty that could move mountains, the one and only Lin Huiyin of Aslan.

“♫♪ NOT AFRAID! ♪♫”

This was Sound of Nature’s Echo’s new single. Once it was released on the airways of the Milky Way Alliance, of the 18 music ranking charts, it became the single ranked first for 10 of them!! It had created a never before seen miracle.

This was something that numerous music critics would never have imagined. Although she did rely on her looks and had absolute confidence in her youth, the most important part was that her singing style was completely unique. It allowed Lin Huiyin to become popular throughout the Milky Way.

However, just relying on her sweet personality also had its limits. After releasing two albums, Lin Huiyin was confronted with a choice in her musical direction. She could choose to change, or to continue with the way she currently was. This was a choice she had to make for herself.

Of course, Lin Huiyin didn’t have to bother with the criticisms. She didn’t have to change at all. However, just based on this guy’s combat style, however, he gave her inspiration to write a new song. A song that had lyrics that made one’s blood boil and instilled encouragement among the people. To an Aslan individual,

this wasn't a significant issue. It was just the fact that the response had exceeded Huiyin's own expectations. She felt that this song was not too mediocre, but never would she have expected that this experiment would have turn into her best result yet.

Number one on 10 of the ranking charts, this song was the most played song. Even fussy people had no complaints with regards to the song.

This was Huiyin's first singing and rapping single!

It had to be said that numerous youths became absolutely crazy over the song. Every station was playing the song. So long as one heard the song, they would become extremely fervent!

The MV[1] was even more stunning. A lone Wargod No. 1 in unimaginable battles, one after another. The lead actor seemed to possess unparalleled skill and a courageous aura, regardless of the enemy.

♫♪ I'm not afraid to take a stand

Everybody come take my hand

We‘ll walk this road together, through the storm

Whatever weather, cold or warm

Just to let you know that, you‘re not alone

If you feel that you‘ve been down the same road ♪♫

At this point in time, the MV showed Lin Huiyin in full military attire pointing towards the sky. During a moment of desperation, it showed the Wargod No. 1 executing a pentakill with godly skill.

Pentakill!

This was the fervent climax!

.....

♫♪ I‘ma be what I set out to be, without a doubt undoubtedly ♪♫

In the MV, Huiyin and the Wargod No. 1 would take up the two sides of the screen. One after another, opponents of the Wargod No. 1 would appear and be coolly destroyed.

♫♪ Regardless of the enemy, we will definitely fight till the end! ♫♪

Rays of light shot in all four directions. The Wargod No. 1 would just fight one mech after another as the music began to intensify in volume.

♫♪ And to the fans, I'll never let you down again, I'm back ♪♫

When the music ended, the Wargod No. 1 and Lin Huiyin stood together, both giving off a radiant light.

☆ ☆ ☆

Back in the dormitory, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were almost going mad as they danced ecstatically. This was perfect. This would be the Skeleton Corp's anthem.

This song's influence was slowly spreading. Wang Zheng's battle videos silently became the most searched videos in the entire Asian Region. Numerous others from the other regions were unaware that this was a real battle that happened and wasn't staged. However, there was practically no one in the Asian Region who didn't know of this fact.

It was just that Sound of Nature's Echo's influence was just too large. It had directly catapulted Skeleton's battles to the top.

Wang Zheng had also seen it. It goes without saying that he was absolutely shocked. When he was in middle school, he had also listened to Huiyin's music. However, after experiencing the Rubik

Cube's training, his personality had experienced numerous changes. He no longer enjoyed listening to such gentle music. Yet he could never have imagined that Lin Huiyin was such a genius. The song had captured the feeling of his battles!

Some of this was from the heart. Only Wang Zheng could truly understand that air of haughtiness and the desire to attain his goals.

The title of the song was the finishing touch: NOT AFRAID[2]. It was akin to telling oneself that regardless of the situation, one had to keep on going. There was nothing that was frightening in this world.

Zhang Shan was also dancing. No one knew that he had a gift for breakdancing! "Unparalleled! This is fucking awesome. This song is perfect!"

"This is my Sound of Nature's Echo's' self-written song!" Chen Xiu said in a pleasant tone.

"When did it become yours?"

"I am a Sound of Nature's Echo's fan club's loyal fan! I have been a member since the day it started. I am a senior member!" Chen Xiu said proudly.

Yao Ailun adjusted his spectacles, light flashing from the lenses. "You call yourself a fanboy? Your brother here has collected all of

her albums and posters, including the Aslan Special Edition. Have you?”

“Older Brother. You truly are of my blood. Can you let me see it!?”

“If you perform well, I will even let you listen,” Yao Ailun said with a smug face. He enjoyed the feeling of being worshiped.

“Wang Zheng, it looks like the two of us are still quite rational.” Zhang Shan said. Although he liked her songs, he would not debase himself to such a state.

“It truly is quite nice to listen to,” Wang Zheng said sincerely. He truly felt that the song resonated with him.

“Wow, we have reached the maximum number of members for the Skeleton Corp. This is unacceptable. We need to upgrade it!” exclaimed Chen Xiu.

“We need to find an administrator. Fuck your granny! The administrators have already used the footage as a promotional video. They need to give us some compensation!” Yao Ailun angrily slapped the table. The two of them started to tinker around.

Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan were speechless. The two of them usually acted like old men, but when they were childish, they were exceptionally childish.

☆ ☆ ☆

“I have told the professor and she said she would consider,” said Wang Zheng. He felt that a single assistant was just too dangerous and that Zhang Shan was truly a genius and truly wanted to develop in this direction in future.

“Thank you! You two can continue talking, I need to take my leave.”

Zhang Shan heavily clapped down on Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng’s body was extremely strong and he was not afraid that it would be hurt.

“This bastard is just in heat, trying to get a hold of young girls.” said Yao Ailun disdainfully. He styled himself as an omniscient, capable of anything.

“I have a brother and he is in the Skeleton Corps. Could you help him increase his privileges? He also likes Skeleton a lot.”

“This is only a small problem. I wouldn’t give up this chance if I were your friend.”

It looks like Yan Xiaosu’s personality fit the other two extremely well.

Notes:

1] MV was what was used in the raws. Not Chinese. Should be slang for Music Video.

2] The Author wrote these words in english. Being in a different language gives it a special emphasis.

Chapter 2 – To Embrace Each Other In The Same Place

As the semester progressed, Wang Zheng's life began to settle into a routine. After just one time, he knew generally what he needed for Xiao Fei's classes and some of the Mech Department curriculum. Since he'd been given access to the MMA Club's practice room, Wang Zheng went in twice a day, clocking in punctually. Really, it was too convenient.

Ordinarily, Wang Zheng would use the gravity room early in the morning. Normal strength training produced far inferior results. But by using the gravity room, Wang Zheng was able to feel sore in his back and waist.

As usual in the early morning, there were no people around. Wang Zheng set the system at five times gravity. After warming-up with weight lifting, Wang Zheng began his finger strengthening training, switching from finger to finger. Under this kind of pressure, there would certainly be results.

Every finger did one hundred reps. Very quickly, Wang Zheng was soaked in sweat from head to toe. This training was exceptionally frightening. Therefore, Wang Zheng's eating power grew, and he would eat more than three times that of a normal person. Fortunately, Wang Zheng had spare money right now. Wang Zheng thought that if he continued to eat instant noodles, he would definitely collapse.

Wang Zheng was hard at work inside the gravity room when the door opened. Ever since Meng Tian had been 'defeated' by Wang

Zheng, she had increased her training. She thought it strange she could not rely on the training she'd started from a young age to match up to Wang Zheng.

Seeing the light in the gravity room, Meng Tian again felt strange. When she saw that the room was set to five times the gravity, however, she trembled. That was no joke!

Wang Zheng had improved a lot as of late. Ordinarily, he would be finished by this time, but thought he'd do another round. Also, Meng Tian didn't normally come this early.

Meng Tian saw a sight she would not forget in her whole life. Inside, raindrop-like sweat trickled down his naked torso. He performed handstand push-ups with a single finger, switching every fifty times.

What kind of strength was this???

Meng Tian had always felt there were still opportunities to win based on their previous battle but she hadn't thought at all that the other person hadn't been going at it seriously.

This kind of strength would rarely be seen in even the army.

Wang Zheng sensed that there was someone watching and stopped. Upon seeing Meng Tian, still dumbstruck outside, he smiled slightly. Grabbing his towel, he walked out.

“Did you want to use it?”

Meng Tian dumbly shook her head. She was in a state of bewilderment that could not easily be imagined, seeing as she was usually a beautiful, yet iceberg-like person. “How are you doing that?”

“Haha. Every day I practice. Though you can’t see much muscle, I’m actually very strong.”

Wang Zheng struck a pose. He really didn’t have any frightening muscle definition, but Meng Tian could sense that he was filled with an explosive strength on the inside.

“Can you help me become stronger?” Meng Tian said suddenly, biting her lip.

Wang Zheng went blank. He felt that Meng Tian seemed serious, but for a girl...

“Actually, my practice style doesn’t suit ordinary people,” said Wang Zheng. Ordinarily, people would die from practicing this kind of workout.

“I’m not afraid. My only desire is to become stronger, so I will do anything.” Meng Tian showed her typical obstinacy.

Wang Zheng couldn’t just reject a girl. “Well, you can try. To be honest, I don’t really understand how to teach another person.”

“Even if it’s just through training with you, I can improve!”

This has always been Meng Tian’s thoughts, fighting to improve. Only, as a girl, she felt that unceasingly harassing other people wouldn’t be good. But after seeing that scene before her, she didn’t care that much about it. From the beginning of the military training, during the test with the explosive strength measurement machine, it probably wasn’t the instrument that had been the problem, but rather that his strength had already reached unimaginable levels.

“Fine. I need to train anyways.” Wang Zheng smiled slightly.

Wang Zheng went to shower. When he came out five minutes later, Meng Tian had already changed into her uniform and was currently performing a variety of swift kicks.

There was a certain order to them. The flexibility and movements were pretty good, and there weren’t many flaws. Obviously, she had undergone strict training, such as the Plum Blossom Pillars training. Wang Zheng was able to discern the differences between their talents by watching.

These moves had a pattern which didn’t vary a lot, while the Plum Blossom Pillars were ever changing.

“How is it?”

After finishing a form, Meng Tian asked. The tip of her nose dripped with sparkling beads of sweat. This made Meng Tian even cuter.

“Not bad.”

“That’s not all. Tell the truth!” Meng Tian expressed dissatisfaction at the perfunctory reply.

“A flowery fist with fancy footwork.”

“Haha. Your style is not bad to be honest, but in terms of strength and speed, you still need to improve. Also, I saw that you seemed to be too attached to keeping to a pattern. In real battles the situation is ever changing. The important thing is to adapt to the circumstances. Grasping speed, accuracy, and a relentless will can help to achieve this.”

Wang Zheng sent out a kick just like the one from Meng Tian’s performance, only his was much lower and quicker. The ferocity had the intensity of a whirlwind.

Wang Zheng, who had moved ten metres in an instant, turned his head back around. Meng Tian was in a stupor.

“How was it?”

“Probably, there will be a day when I will ask you for help,” Meng Tian said suddenly.

“We are classmates, no need to be so polite. I will definitely not decline to help with anything if I can.”

Wang Zheng, in fact, hadn’t previously appreciated Meng Tian’s capable and experienced personality. Moreover, these two had similar goals — that is, to become an excellent pilot.

Of course, Wang Zheng couldn’t use Bonehead’s method of teaching on a girl. Moreover, this was not the space within the Rubik’s Cube, so he couldn’t risk being sent to the mental hospital.

“Balance is the most important thing. The Horse Stance method is advantageous for you.”

Wang Zheng taught Meng Tian to assume the female style Horse Stance. The men’s stance was spread wider. In terms of a woman’s body, theirs was a little more inward-facing. She assumed a triangle form. This was the shape with the most stability.

“What’s the point of this?” she couldn’t help but ask. This position was really not pretty.

“Haha. Try attacking me. If I move, then it will be considered as your win.”

Wang Zheng adopted the Horse Stance. A light flashed in Meng Tian’s eyes. She was very interested in trying.

Pulling back some distance, Meng Tian shouted femininely and launched a low flying kick at Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng smiled slightly; the force of impact was very large.

Thump…

Easily receiving it, Wang Zheng's body didn't sway at all.

"Again."

Having such a living target couldn't be wasted, so Meng Tian was not polite. She attacked Wang Zheng explosively. There was also no one around right now, so Meng Tian didn't have any misgivings.

Meng Tian's initial assault had quite a bit of killing intent, with not just a small intent to do harm. As Meng Tian's position shifted, her style became more violent, but the weight behind her blows dropped drastically.

"Don't hold back. You can attack any part, otherwise you can't show your power."

Meng Tian heard these words and her brow twitched slightly. Her moves rained down like countless icy shards, but Wang Zheng was like a tall mountain with high ridges. The pressure from the attacks increased until Wang Zheng easily stopped the last attack's violent three part kick. Drained, Meng Tian went limp and fell over.

Classmate Wang felt very satisfied. Meng Tian had suddenly fallen down, so he immediately went to help her... she had expended too much force.

"Are you alright?" asked Wang Zheng. He touched her forehead. "I let you try, but there was no need to exert yourself this much. We don't have such deep hatred between us."

Wang Zheng teased her. The other's breathing was doing fine, it was only that she'd collapsed.

Meng Tian's face was red. "You're really awesome! I might bother you non-stop from now on."

"We're classmates. There isn't any trouble. Moreover, to serve such a beautiful girl is my honor."

Meng Tian's face flushed even redder. The door to the practice room opened, and a group of students babbling noisily, entered.

Immediately, the practice room fell silent. The two groups of the people gazed at one another, speechless. A scarlet-faced Meng Tian had fallen into Wang Zheng's embrace...

"Aiya, we've come to the wrong place."

"Right, I didn't see anything."

Meng Tian immediately stood up and Wang Zheng waved his hands. “We were just exchanging pointers. Meng Tian wasn’t careful and tripped on her feet.”

“I’ll trouble you to send me to the infirmary.” Meng Tian had already reverted back to being icy.

Amidst the sound of everyone’s laughter, the two people immediately left. Meng Tian’s pursuers were numerous. Such a pity, nobody could match up to Meng Tian so they might as well toss away any stray thoughts. Wang Zheng’s personality was very amicable. The crowd thought it was much better than Guan Tao’s arrogant personality.

Wang Zheng helped Meng Tian up. Meng Tian suddenly said, “Afterwards, won’t I have to call you master?”

“Ah! You don’t need to exaggerate that much. If we just go along with exchanging pointers, then it’s fine.”

“Is Ye Zisu your girlfriend?” asked Meng Tian suddenly.

“No, we’re just classmates and friends. How could she fancy me?” Wang Zheng laughed.

This was the truth. Ye Zisu was the school flower and Wang Zheng was just a passerby.

☆ ☆ ☆

Solon's recent days passed by pretty well. He even laughed in his dreams. The higher-ups were very satisfied with his performance. It was said that at the board meeting, the mountain road twisted around each new peak. No one was even thinking of the matter of his dismissal.

Sometimes if the path was correct, the heavens would really rain down meat pies. Lin Huiyin's new song's inspiration actually came from Skeleton's battle videos. Moreover, it was still very popular. Even the main networks were planning to recommend this person. The question was, in case the main networks did start to publicize it, and it attracts even more experts, could the Wargod No. 1 withstand it?

No matter how it was, Solon was very clear that he had already stepped on the path of no return. What's more, this wasn't something that he could decide.

Right now, Solon was busy finding opponents. This task was fraught with difficulty. Experts with high positions were not too willing, while there wasn't much sense in recruiting ordinary players.

After all, those who wanted to use the Wargod No. 1 were very rare. This included Wild King, who had actually specialized in using his own high-end mech. Therefore, when using the Wargod No. 1, his operation wasn't a problem, but battle strength had been severely impaired. If he had used his high end mech, then it wouldn't be fair. This would hurt the self-esteem of the experts' a

little as it wasn't elegant. This wasn't even mentioning what would happen if they lost. Right now was a rather awkward phase.

☆ ☆ ☆

Due to Wang Zheng's proposal, Zhang Shan's trio entered the assistants group. 2Xiao Fei also intended to nurture them. Given a little time, those three wouldn't be too bad. Only, in Xiao Fei's eyes, Wang Zheng was the one with boundless prospects. His worldview was really too good. Maybe a top physicist who was raised for ten to eight years would be like this.

Other than Zhang Shan's trio, Wang Zheng's days passed a little better. It must be said that this opportunity was hard to come by. Sometimes, the four people would only play around, but it was also very mind opening. Although they were new students, in many aspects these four people surpassed their ordinary seniors by a lot.

In the Physics Department classes, excluding Xiao Fei's, Classmate Wang was always disappearing. Occasionally, the professor would call roll, and Classmate Yao Ailun would change his voice. It didn't need to be said that he could copy Wang Zheng perfectly.

Wang Zheng would instead immerse himself in the Mech Department, almost as if he'd been intoxicated by it to the point of stupidity. During that one month at OMG, Wang Zheng was able to gain the foundations of comprehending mecha. Right now, such a feeling of putting theory into practice made Wang Zheng extremely interested.

First lesson, machine sciences. Over eighty people were in the equipment warehouse of the school. Here, there weren't just a few mech parts being piled up. It was a pity that over the last few years, Ares College's financial situation wasn't too good. Because of that, the equipment was really old.

Chapter 3 – Little Sister Red Dish?

Upon seeing the piles of dirty mech spare parts, everybody lost interest. They had originally thought they would get to see a shiny mechanized warrior. Even if they couldn't operate it, it would have been nice to take a look. But now, they ended up in these circumstances.

And the professor?

Everybody waited for a good long while, and just when they were getting impatient, an old guy hobbled in.

Wang Zheng's gaze froze……it was actually Luo Mu!

Luo Mu saw all of their expressions very clearly – feelings of impatience and disgust. When he saw Wang Zheng in the crowd, a sliver of a smile crossed Luo Mu's face. Persuaded by Ye Zisu, Luo Mu had decided to take up the post here as a visiting professor. In addition, he had also decided to pass on his skills in this elective course.

"I am your teacher, Luo Mu. For your first class, everyone must get familiar with cleaning and hygiene. Polish these spare parts, and when you are finished, class will be over.

Having said his piece, Luo Mu was like an old god as he freely went to a room on the side of the machine storehouse to watch TV.

Everybody glanced each other in despair. This was the teacher?

If a mechanical warrior was in front of them, they would wish for this kind of freedom. But for this pile of greasy junk, looking at it was disgusting enough, and now they had to polish it?

Ye Zisu and Meng Tian looked into each other's eyes. Although there was a qualitative difference between Ares College and other schools, the difference couldn't be this wide, could it?

Ye Zisu knew what was going on. There was an eighty percent chance that this pile of greasy parts was Luo Mu's doing.

While everybody was hesitating, Wang Zheng had already grabbed tools and started to clean the spare parts with a practiced hand.

Luo Mu poked his head out the window to look. "If you have something you want to ask, you can come ask me."

After saying that, he returned to watching TV. As Lin Huiyin's new song drifted out, Luo Mu nodded his head, "That's not too bad. It ain't trash music, and has some strength in its feeling."

Outside, the students had started cleaning. But even when wearing gloves, it was hard to avoid getting any of the grease onto their bodies. It was okay for the guys, but girls couldn't stand even catching a whiff of the smell.

Ye Zisu changed her tools and had started to work alongside Wang Zheng with an extremely skilled hand.

Wang Zheng was very focused on cleaning, and soon discovered the apparently filthy mech parts were actually……

As a model number was soon exposed, ASL – 23556. “This is an Aslan thruster!”

Wang Zheng had only ever seen one in pictures, this was really a work of art!

Without a sliver of doubt, in terms of mech technology, Aslan mecha were the top of the line in the Milky Way Alliance. Their mecha were widely known to be far superior in complexity when it came to external and internal functional operation. Seeing one up close like this was an engineer’s wet dream.

Ye Zisu also stared blankly. How could these things be part of Luo Mu’s collection?

She knew that Luo Mu liked to collect bits and pieces of mecha from each country, especially those with distinguishing characteristics. This piece could possibly be one in Luo Mu’s collection items!

In the room, Luo Mu crossed his legs. When people were mature and knowledgeable, these things were priceless. But for those ignorant or without interest, they were just scrap metal.

Wang Zheng immediately started cleaning more carefully, but even with his process, he spent about half an hour on each mech part.

A gleaming set of thrusters from a high-end Aslan Mech, the Tempest Condor Mobile Soldier.

A good portion of students were standing idle. They were mobile soldiers and were not going to be maintenance or repair staff. For them, this was only an elective course.

They already knew that they didn't need to do something this boring, but Wang Zheng was enjoying the moment.

Actually, there wasn't a need for students to complete these tasks, but this was very intentional on Luo Mu's part. You only need to take action yourself to discover a little morsel, which will create a deep memory that then promotes comprehension from the heart.

This was also his response to the matter with the invitation. This was the style of course he had chosen.

The sun had almost gone down, and it was nearly time for the students to leave. Only Wang Zheng, Ye Zisu, Meng Tian and ten others were still waiting. At this time, Luo Mu hobbled out.

The storehouse had been cleaned and arranged into three

sections. Luo Mu nodded. “This is your results for today. I will introduce you to the pros and cons of these three kinds of things.”

“Wang Zheng, your Aslan Tempest Condor Thruster is a main product of Aslan. The forward thrust is definitely top class, and its shock resistance is quite good. All the other countries used it as a reference, but in battle, these thrusters have a fatal weakness.”

Some of Luo Mu’s words were things a soldier would know, but others only things a senior engineer would know.

Deep in thought, Wang Zheng asked, “Could it be that the brakes are slightly off?”

Luo Mu’s eyes twinkled. “Right, in order to maintain its propelling force, the brakes are slightly delayed. During a fight, this is an aspect you must think about. Of course, when Aslan soldiers operate this machine, they do not regard this aspect to be a problem.”

Wang Zheng chuckled slightly. That is, if the Aslan mech pilot didn’t encounter a skilled opponent.

The remaining students understood, that the true course had just started. Luo Mu wasn’t telling the students how to repair the mecha; that was not a skill-set required for pilots. He was skimming through a part’s simple mechanical problems, the important points being expounded upon from the perspective of a mechanic. It was a thorough analysis of a mech’s advantages and disadvantages, from the engine, to the energy/power source,

weapons, etc. This is a completely different perspective.

Luo Mu had never experienced a battle, but he had the unique perspective of a theorist.

Over ten filthy students listened in rapt attention, almost having no time to ask any questions. Other courses only talked about the external points of mecha, but this course illustrated essential properties as well as an analysis of the mech.

“This mechanical arm’s flexibility is very good, but its shock resistance is a bit poor. If you were to enter an altercation with it, might as well increase the pressure. The other side is sure to collapse first.”

This type of data-driven analysis was something only a senior mechanic would understand. As for how to use it, one would only know when experiencing battle and facing the situation. Moreover, it also depended on the ability of the pilot.

Speaking of Wang Zheng, he was still hungry for more. Luo Mu still had a trick hidden up his sleeve.

The students who left early almost all did not come back at all for the second class. As such, the people who were left profited greatly.

After the end of class, Wang Zheng remained behind to ask question after question, until Luo Mu could not endure it anymore

and shooed him out, “You youngsters are too long-winded. I will be here for at least a few years, so you don’t need to ask so many questions all at once.“

Wang Zheng huffed out a laugh, “I am the dumb bird who must be first to fly!”

“Ye girl, quickly take him away. This is overtime work, I want to rest!”

Ye Zisu smiled while pulling Wang Zhen away. “Did something happen between you and Meng Tian?”

“Nothing happened?”

“That girl came back to ask me about you. Something to ask about your family tree. Could it be she fancies you? Do you want me to help you guys by pulling some strings?”

Ye Zisu pretended she was just asking casually.

Wang Zheng smiled. “Nah, she is the target of our dorm’s Zhang Shan.”

“Tsk tsk, it looks like your requirements are too high, even Meng Tian does not match up!”

Wang Zheng helplessly shrugged his shoulders. He was

indifferent towards this matter.

Regardless, Classmate Ye Zisu was very satisfied with Wang Zheng's answer.

After parting with Ye Zisu, Wang Zheng did not return to the dorm but instead headed straight for Brother Internet Cafe. Previously, in battle, he would unconsciously pay attention to the condition of his own mech, but now he had a way of understanding the opponent's mech. If he could grasp the condition of the mecha on both sides, then he can be said to have made progress.

Only Wang Zheng, this madman, could have this kind of thought. This idea had an absolute minimum requirement of a crazy difficult degree of both theoretical comprehension and practical understanding. Even thinking about it would make one feel like they'd never get anything right, but for Wang Zheng, it was like discovering a new continent.

It would certainly help him obtain a more accurate grasp of the battle situation. If it eventually assimilates into his battle ability, then his battle control would go up by a minimum of one grade.

It was a pity Wang Zheng lacked partners he could discuss his battles with. Although Skeleton was an expert at battling people, other people's judgments were more accurate.

When Wang Zheng arrived at the Brother Internet Cafe, he discovered that he didn't have any tasks in his mailbox and directly entered the ranked battle.

He didn’t know that some people had added him as a good friend and had set up an online reminder. Student Wang also didn’t know how to make himself invisible. At that moment, countless ID’s emitted a ding sound.

Not playing around, Wang Zheng went straight into the matchmaking mode.

Not only were players alerted, even government specialist employees were notified, and almost immediately went online.

Wang Zheng already had six straight wins. Although his rank was low, with a hundred percent win rate, including a five vs. five match, he would definitely encounter an even more formidable opponent.

Low-level experts were restricted, but as the level rose, the mech limitations would also be simultaneously lifted.

“Skeleton” matched with “Rainbow”

At a certain internet cafe, a man let out a big shout with a smile, “This brother is shining!”

Wargod No.1 vs Tempest Condor (Luoluo A Targeting System hack added)

After having experienced this many times now, the official website speedily responded. Of course, it was our famous commentator, Fawn.

Fawn was commentating on a high level match at the time. Suddenly, he apologized to the audience. “This match has a forgone conclusion. I’m sorry everyone, I have another match I need to run off to. But I think I don’t need to say anything for everyone knows.”

At this time, in not a few classrooms, skylinks were being surreptitiously opened. Leaving class in front of the professor was seeking death, but stealthily watching was ok.

However, when everybody saw the opponent they were struck dumb. This match up……

This Rainbow was definitely a spoiled second generation rich kid. Tempest Condor was the best flagship battle machine with abilities enhanced by the system from Aslan. In return for sacrificing the operation of the machine, it was modified into a bug-type fighter with frightening mobility and remote detonation capabilities. In essence, a kill-then-leave type. It made people speechless. This guy had even installed the Luoluo A Targeting System hack.

This kind of targeting system just increased the operation ability of mediocre players. Simply put, this was a support tool that made ordinary contestants operate at the levels of ace pilots. However, the price for the system wasn’t cheap. If you chose to carry it, you definitely would know that it would be prohibited from use in some high-level competitions.

But at this level, it obviously couldn’t be prohibited.

A Tempest Condor with a Luoluo A Targeting System would be akin to a war god in the newbie arena, unrivalled in sheer violence and slaughtering ability.

Rainbow, at bronze rank, was somewhat well-known. He had created the Rainbow Flowing Tyrant Attack. Actually, all this success came from the power of his wallet. His armor’s specs had already transcended ordinary means and was said to be unparalleled.

Due to high levels prohibiting auxiliary systems, Classmate Rainbow was quite strong in the newbie arenas and was hailed as unequalled.

Some people definitely asked high-rankers to match-up with Rainbow, but to no avail. When the system matches one up with Tempest Condor, it would definitely be unrivalled. But that thing was charged for by the day. Ordinary people could never use it.

Some abused players silently gave Rainbow the nickname: Little Sister Red Dish.

Chapter 4 – Sky Streaking Rainbow

In this regard, Rainbow was quite the show off. It was widely accepted that for people who stay in Jianghu to have a nickname.

Becoming a tyrannical oppressor was his life's goal. In addition, there was a great target in front of him; this single battle would be his stepping stone to fame!

Right now, the only thing that worried him was that the mere sight of his godly add-ons would immediately scare Skeleton away.

The players also watched and waited. Seldom had Skeleton been one to hesitate.

Wang Zheng wasn't hesitating. Rather, he was looking at the introductory description of his opponent's mech. He had only heard the words Condor; he hadn't heard Tempest Condor or the Luoluo Targeting System hack. After reading the introduction, he chose to accept the match.

This kind of auxiliary plug-in made long-range attacks more accurate. Certainly, the plug-in did exist in real life, but in reality the technological complexity was extremely high, so it came at an expensive price. Normally, only ace pilots would have them equipped.

The intensity of the comment section had exploded at the sight of the battle notification. Many a person had learned about Skeleton from Lin Huiyin's MV. While many of her fans weren't certain

whether “Skeleton” was a reused alias, they knew it was the same person from the recording of the last battle.

Wargod No.1, Mech battle score: 20

Tempest Condor(Luoluo A Targeting System) 70+10

The advantage was absolutely devastating.

The four ordinary, conventional mecha had a battle score of around 40, which was within a bearable range as an opponent for Wargod No. 1 to face. But this adversary was already quadruple the Wargod No. 1’s battle score.

No matter who was piloting the mech, this was a desperate disparity.

Even if it was assumed that Skeleton could win, no one had any idea how.

“Unless Little Sister Red Dish swallows his knives and goes to fight.”

“This guy should be called the King of Oppression, flaunting his mech’s superiority so openly. He’s already so oppressive. He can’t make a mistake at all.”

“I’ve faced him before. He’s a real sleaze. Other than his mech, I

doubt he has any skills. The mech is amazing, but that's not what determines the outcome.

At this time, Rainbow was reading the comments and laughed happily. "That's nonsense. Big brother is actually a member of the SWAT, a rich, tall,and handsome【2. Super elite】special police officer. This isn't like the previous era – the coexistence of strength and wealth is the law of the land, mwahaha."

This special police just took a day off today. He didn't expect to have snagged such a big fish in his first round. This one meal would be able to feed his bragging for a few good months.

Battlefield selection: Norton Star.

This was a map beloved by assault types. Ordinary mechs would become difficult to operate in the quintupled gravity, but superior quality mechs would have better performance opportunities

If it wasn't for Norton Star's extensive vegetation, it would be especially suited for explosive attack type mechs. Once the mech had discovered their target, they could immediately follow up with a round of explosive attacks.

Little Sister Red Dish was quite shameless in choosing this map, because he guessed his opponent would not object.

As expected, Skeleton indeed did not object.

The comment section had already overturned the heavens.

“Little Sister Red Dish, do you have any morals!?”

“Little Sister Red Dish, is your little brother still there!?”

“You really have no bottom line, but big brother likes that. Attack, crush them, that is the tempo of the rich, tall, and handsome!”

Xiao Lu looked over the comments and said calmly, “Seems like there are quite a few among us in favor of player Rainbow. Judging from the comments, he also seems well known. Other than his good equipment, player Rainbow has another big move, called Sky Streaking Rainbows. We still don’t know if we’ll have the opportunity to see it in action.”

“Oh, there are some people asking me if I will eat a milk carton again this time. Please pay your own respects to milk cows for me. I am a professional commentator, with principles and the like. There shouldn’t be this much focus on me. I mean, if I win, the other party, Skeleton, would not eat his keyboard. This is not fair.”

Fawn spoke extremely lightly. “Those who want to mingle in the world must train their face, and curb their morals.”

At this moment, inside dorm 007, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu were happily bustling around. Another person had just volunteered for tribute. Even Chen Xiu, the technology geek, didn’t care about the

technology anymore. How would Skeleton crush this guy? He can just close his eyes and repeat “crush” over and over again, Skeleton will somehow find a way to win.

Of course, not all people blindly believed like a little kid as they did. The vast majority of people with common sense were still analyzing the situation, at the same time thinking about possible vulnerabilities. But even if they broke their heads, they still couldn’t think of anything Skeleton could use, and they could only watch the competition.

Norton Star Battlefield.

Wargod No. 1 and Tempest Condor arrived in a flash of light. The quintupled gravity was obvious from the beginning; operators with weaker control could only progress with great difficulty. Without a high-end mech, choosing this sort of arena would simply be masochistic.

Wargod No.1’s movements were evidently affected, while Tempest Condor seemed only slightly affected.

The audience count rocketed upwards, undoubtedly breaking a record. The employees nervously watched the live broadcast.

As professionals, they also wanted to know, how would Skeleton deal with this situation?

“What a hideous mess. This guy must be sick, using a Wargod

No.1 to face a Tempest Condor? So many people are watching too! Fuck! This is cheating this Boss out of his money!”

It must be said, there were more than a few spectators who were just going with the flow.They just saw the large number of spectators, and then entered to discover that instead of an exciting battle, it was an hopelessly disadvantaged battle.

“Young friend, did you just graduate from kindergarten? Take a good look!”

No matter what the outcome of the fight, this definitely wasn’t a fight that would be easily finished

Despite what you see, reality has a way of being much more extraordinary. Indeed, this was one of the interesting aspects of life. The young’uns were all in for a surprise.

The two mecha moved at the same time. With the fort, which was the target for capture, located at the center of the map, the first to attack would ultimately win the match. The importance of seizing the key moment was not lost on the two operators, so they both discarded the notion of blindly hiding. As they bounded across the battlefield, Tempest Condor’s inherent advantages became apparent. On such a small map, clearly the faster mech would seem even faster.

Despite Wargod No. 1’s furious pursuit, Tempest Condor had already arrived at the fort and taken position. Tempest Condor didn’t immediately begin to attack the fort. A direct attack on the

fort was rather difficult, and with the advantage of having arrived first, most people would choose to set up an ambush and wait for the opponent to arrive.

Tempest Condor carefully took cover. As a SWAT member, Rainbow liked to showcase his strength through the superiority of his equipment, but people usually only paid attention to that aspect of him.

Normally, a cover position that was high, above a normal field of vision, was considered good. A normal person would subconsciously scan at eye level or lower. However, to deal with an expert like Skeleton, one can't be afraid of being discovered, it was important to seize the first attack.

Rainbow waited quietly with his mech in stealth mode. Usually, when he was having fun away from his intense training, he would be his typical carefree and tyrannically oppressive self. But this time, it was different.

This time, it was somewhat exciting.

In the distance, Wargod No.1 abruptly halted. This wasn't the first time he had abruptly halted. Skeleton seemed to be able to sense dangerous situations, and would stop whenever he sensed something.

But still, it was no use. The majority of people were well aware that the area nearest the fort was the most dangerous.

The questions had now become who would be the first to enter the other's field of vision, and who would fire the first shot.

Before taking cover, Rainbow had launched a quick attack on the fort to establish an advantage. If the clock ran out and the battle entered a deadlock, this small advantage would help the system determine the winner.

This cleanly eliminated the possibility of the opponent using a time-killing strategy. Skeleton had to enter battle.

Wargod No.1 also entered stealth mode and slowly started moving, this time changing course to directly head for the fort.

This course of action was exactly what Rainbow had determined, and he had accordingly placed himself in the best line of sight. Rainbow's Tempest Condor quietly started its engine. Maintaining the lowest amount of sound, he moved into position. No matter what, Wargod No.1 could not detect it.

The tyrannical abuser wasn't a typical bastard, and he followed a certain rhythm in his battles. Coolly eliminating any opportunities for the opponent was his style.

This was unbearable.

Although he had determined the path correctly, Rainbow discovered something that was particularly depressing. The opponent's movements were done in a flash. Every step forward

placed it near a location where it could quickly take shelter behind something, there was no opportunity for Rainbow to launch an attack.

Nevertheless, Rainbow was exceedingly patient. If he blindly moved now he would expose himself. There would be an opportunity soon enough.

There definitely would be.

Finally after twenty or so metres of carefully picking his way forward, Wargod No.1 reached the the limits of its speed. And he couldn't just do the one-two step move to rush forward, not to mention it didn't give him any speed at all.

Rainbow's breathing gradually slowed, and his hands became steadier.

Obviously, Skeleton was fully aware that an ambush was on the horizon, but it was too late to change course and he apparently intended on a lightning quick breakthrough.

Wargod No.1 made some quick preparations, and suddenly surged forward.

"Wargod No.1 is seemingly planning on using speed to break through. Unfortunately, Tempest Condor has completely prepared for this approach, relying on the fierce laser. At this point, Skeleton is finished!"

Fawn spoke without bias. In fact, he was already itching with impatience.

Everyone watched, wide-eyed, as Wargod No.1 rushed forward. Two steps into its charge, Tempest Condor broke cover; Wargod No.1 was completely in its field of view.

At this moment, Wargod No. 1 twisted, bringing its laser gun to bear on Tempest Condor as it sprang obliquely backwards.

“Skeleton has very cunningly drawn the snake out of the hole. It seems that he expected his opponent to ambush him... beautiful!”

Tempest Condor was not affected in the slightest by the course of events. At the moment he had appeared, he hadn’t attacked, but instead waited for a second to determine the movements of his opponent. Very stable, veeery stably.

This Skeleton looked down on him far too much.

As Wargod No. 1 agilely retreated while raising its laser gun, the Tempest Condor had already made its attack.

Rumble rumble.....

Light flashed all around!

“Beautiful!” Fawn slapped his thigh and shouted, “Player Rainbow had planned correctly, this is……”

This wasn’t just a wild spray of lasers. This was a geometric laser grouping assisted by the Luoluo Targeting System.

“This is…..Salma Double Wave Certain Kill Array, GOD!”

The spectators were dumbstruck. Even with the Luoluo auxiliary system, this was a highly difficult, military level gun techniquel.

Among the laser types, the most difficult to avoid shape was the wave. Specifically designed to counter instinctual human dodging habits, this attack style was designed by Aslan’s Colonel Salma. A single wave was enough to dominate the novice arena, the double wave seen here could called a certain kill!

Fawn’s shrieks reached their climax, telling you to hide, hide in your grandmother’s house and don’t ever come out.

This Rainbow was a loaded bastard. He was obviously an expert, and with such a ruthless mech, there was never a way to win from the start.

The corner of Rainbow’s mouth finally curled into a sliver of a smile. This was his Rainbow across the Sky.

With mastery of this kind of a skill, the only thing to do was to determine the best form.

The youngsters were stunned.

They were all completely speechless!

Chapter 5 – GOD

This Wargod No. 1 was like a monstrous demon. Irregular movements allowed it to weave past the split second rain of attacks by a paper thin margin. But in the end, it was still no use!

The difference was just too large.

Everyone gasped in admiration and some even felt a slight pang of regret. The attack had almost been completely dodged.

Despite the erratic movements, the tail end of the Double Wave still managed to hit the Wargod No. 1. But as the Wargod No. 1 was swaying around, dodging the attacks, Rainbow was already preparing for the next offensive barrage.

At that moment, Wargod No. 1's laser rifle fired.

Wait, the Wargod No. 1 did not explode?

That was impossible!

As the Wargod No.1 did not have an energy shield, the Double Wave was not an attack that it should be able to block. Even if it didn't get destroyed, that final energy pulse had clearly directly hit him.

Even more curiously, the laser fired from the rifle did not hit the

Tempest Condor mech. Instead it hit the tree which the Tempest Condor was standing on. Although the Norton Star's vegetation was extremely large, it couldn't withstand a laser hit.

Rumble

The Tempest Condor dropped. The Tempest Condor's propulsion ability was unparalleled, and it stabilized itself in midair within the blink of an eye.

Yet in that moment, Rainbow broke out in a cold sweat. He had fallen for a trap!

His first reaction should not have been to stabilize! Instead, he should have activated his energy shield!

Bang...

Headshot.

An explosion blanketed the sky.

The room fell into silence...

Xiao Lu, who was at the peak of his excitement, suddenly jolted in shock. No one made any sound. He was the first out to ask, "Why did the Wargod No. 1 not sustain any damage? Is his mech an undying one!"

A slow motion replay of the certain kill was shown.

Rainbow's Double Wave Certain Kill Grouping was indeed very pretty. It was definitely a skillful attack demonstrating the result of immense training.

Conversely, Wargod No. 1's dodging ability was indeed like that of a demon. However it was still unable to fully dodge the Double Wave. Everything had happened in a flash. While the Wargod No. 1 was dodging, its left hand suddenly produced a a titanium alloy knife while its right hand held a laser rifle. While the rifle remained outstretched, the knife rapidly slashed horizontally.

This bastard was able to split his thoughts into two?

The last laser pulse hit the titanium alloy knife while the laser rifle simultaneously fired.

The atmosphere was absolutely suffocating!

The most important part was that at that point in time, he did not choose to target Rainbow but instead the tree underneath him!

Why?

Why?

Only Rainbow clearly understood why. This guy was a monster. In that situation, shooting Rainbow was extremely difficult. If he had missed, Rainbow would have definitely activated his energy shield. However, the tree was an extremely large target. After

losing one's foothold, one's first priority would definitely be to regain balance. Especially since the Tempest Condor was equipped with such a function.

Even as a member of a SWAT team, Rainbow felt cold sweat break out on his back.

Was the person sitting inside the Wargod No. 1 a freak?

He was able to be so calm as to to make such decisions in that type of situation!

Xiao Lu felt like his eyes were shrouded in darkness. What was wrong with this world? How could someone like him exist? He felt like running far, far away. That would be the only way to stay sane.

He didn't even die in such a situation!

In the dormitory, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were crazily hugging each other while jumping around in joy.

Even if they did not know how Skeleton could have won, Skeleton was able to find the path that led to dominance。

Chen Xiu had already gone completely crazy, "This is too scary. Although his dodging skills were beautiful, that shot of his was truly at a grandmaster's level!"

“Indeed. If he had just directly attacked, even with an accuracy that was twice as good, it would have been meaningless,” even Zhang Shan had exclaimed.

In truth they were not the only ones left unaware. As Tempest Condor’s abilities were just too strong, this method of counter attack was the only choice.

The eventual defeat was neither due to an incapable mech nor was it due to Rainbow’s piloting skills. It was due to his judgment.

It was an error that was forced out of him.

It had to do with the human’s instinct!

He had lost in terms of instinct!

It was a case of observational ability surpassing skill!

Even mech analyses weren’t as accurate as this.

This match had completely shocked everyone.

Student Wang was also exceptionally smug. That last battle had given him a shock. Truthfully, Wang Zheng wasn’t confident that he would win every battle. It was just that he could counter all the tricks he had met up to now with a trick of his own. This time

though, he could say that his judgment was extremely accurate.

“Hehe, it would have been great if Bonehead was here. With such a perfect battle, he would definitely have given me an A grade!”

His chest suddenly felt cold. A skeletal robot appeared in front of Wang Zheng out of mid-air. Student Wang immediately squatted on the ground.

“Fuck! You almost scared me to death. Of all people, it had to be you... Why are you here?”

“The Super Wargod Trainee has the ability to summon the trainer for constructive criticism,” the skeletal robot replied nonchalantly.

“What in the world? Why didn’t you say this earlier!?”

“You never asked.”

Facing the calm and collected Bonehead, Wang Zheng gave up any thought of struggling. “So how was it? The performance of my last battle was nice, wasn’t it?”

Bonehead’s eyes emitted a red light, “Pathetic!”

Wang Zheng was infuriated, “How could it be pathetic!? For what reason!?”

“As a Super Wargod, there was no need to go to so much trouble. The moment the enemy appeared you ought to have shot him in the head!”

Bonehead was quite nonchalant. Student Wang felt a cold breeze blow past. Talking to Bonehead truly was impossible.

Hiss…

It felt as though his chest had suddenly become a bit colder. Wang Zheng had a bad feeling about it. “I don’t suppose summoning you has a price, does it?”

“Yes. Receiving guidance will decrease your battle energy.” Bonehead had an expression as though this cost was completely natural.

Pitiful Wang Zheng almost choked to death at that moment. “Get back in immediately!”

Dear Student Wang truly wanted to weep but no tears came out. He didn’t have to ask, and he already knew Bonehead’s answer.

You didn’t ask.

Fuck. Although he did not know the situation of the Rand Empire, the one who created the Rubik’s cube was truly

unreasonable. Would it kill him to explain things in greater detail?

Cheating someone like that would really get him killed!

Bonehead disappeared and Wang Zheng's chest finally felt normal again. He unbuttoned his shirt and took a glance. Fuck. His battle energy indeed hadn't increased. In fact, it had even decreased.

What a bitch. Bonehead was truly his nemesis.

His exuberant mood had been completely ruined. Wang Zheng felt that his hard earned battle energy gained through the last week of training had disappeared.

Wang Zheng walked away with a crestfallen look on his face. The owner of Brother's Netcafe couldn't help but to give him a smile, "Little brother, don't be sad. Failure is the root of success. If you can hold on, you can become a god."

The owner truly understood him. Wang Zheng looked at him; he wanted to cry but no tears fell.

In the end, the owner gifted him a the small consolation prize of a bowl of noodles — a small consolation.

Despite the fight being looked upon in disdain by Bonehead, it had stirred up a surge of activity elsewhere.

The battle no longer merely demonstrated skill. It showed off unmatched judgment even in the thick of things.

It had to be said that all those that watched the battle were extremely HIGH.

Many of them were just getting into the fray. At this point, they happened to stumble upon the newest video advertised on the public net. Lin Huiyin? Skeleton?

Listening to the song “Not Afraid” while watching that intense certain kill video. It aroused a burning passion for battle.

If one were to sing the song with its lyrics:

Don’t try and stop me, persevere on your path, without any doubt!

Followers, I’M BACK!

“I‘m back ! ”

“I’M BACK!”

This was the headline on the public net.

It possessed deep meaning!

Who was back?

Was it trying to say that the Wargod was back?

“Is this Heavenly Wicked Explosion’s tempo?”

“This is what a true man is all about!”

“This is definitely the tempo of a god!”

In Aslan, Lin Huiyin was sitting on a swing in her house. A pair of snow white legs occasionally slowly swung forward and occasionally curled up.

“This guy is quite impressive. Do you feel that his standards are suitable?”

Asked Huiyin curiously.

Female bodyguard Li Jian’s expression was extremely calm as she watched the screen. “Your Highness, a person of such a standard can be found anywhere in Aslan. It’s just that the people of Earth have pathetic standards.”

“Oh,” replied Huiyin. Aslan’s arrogance had seeped into their

marrow. Although she did not know how strong the expert was, this person possessed a confident attitude towards winning.

Regardless, Skeleton had not let her down. Since she had just released the song, if he had lost a battle, that would have been humiliating.

“Add a performance for the Solar System. Have the show organized on Earth.”

Lin Huiyin suddenly spoke.

“Your Majesty, the market there is exceptionally small. This suggestion...”

“Implement it. This is beneficial for Aslan’s image. Furthermore, my cousin has been there before. Paying a visit would only show our sincerity.”

Huiyin gave a slight smile. Although on the outside she was a famous celebrity, only the people nearest her knew of her real identity.

She was the daughter of Aslan Empire’s side supporter, who was also Aina’s aunt, the Iron Fist Prime Minister Qia Shawen. Thus, she was Aina’s cousin. Although she was a princess, she spent her time much more happily than Aina. She was not required to be involved in too many official activities. So long as she did things that improved Aslan’s glory, that was sufficient.

“One more thing. If you take another half month’s break from school, the principal will definitely flip out.” An Jili had a headache. This little princess’s train of thought was like a heavenly steed soaring across the skies[1], leaving people being unable to deal with it.

“Oh. That old geezer can be coaxed but not coerced. Tell him that, this is for the sake of the empire. That concert will also simultaneously display our goodwill. Don’t you feel that I’m very approachable?”

Huiyin posed cutely. This killer look, however, had absolutely no effect on An Jili. She was completely immune.

After An Jili left, Lin Huiyin replayed the video of the battle. All those surrounding her said that the battle was exciting due to the fact that the one combatant was too weak. There was nothing exceptional about it. However, Huiyin did not feel that was the case.

She thought of her pitiful cousin. Because her cousin was a direct descendant of the empire, she had no freedom at all. A life in a cage had no meaning. Then again, if she hadn’t been born, the one suffering would have been Lin Huiyin. As a form of thanks, she would do something good for her cousin. No matter what, the results of her efforts this time had broken existing records. Simultaneously, the music critics had quietened down as well.

Rainbow did not leave. He was intensely watching the video. The

more he watched, the more surprised he became. As a SWAT team leader, he had ample combat experience and had made prior preparations. He had almost predicted the enemy's movements completely. However he did not expect that the opponent would surpass him by such an extent. The enemy's preparation was truly terrifying.

If he was adapting to the situation... that would have been even more terrifying.

What kind of training did he had to undergo to be able to make such decisions under such pressure.

Wargod No. 1.

Suddenly, Rainbow's interest had also been aroused.

In the dormitory, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun had not rested. They had divided the authority of running the Skeleton Corps between the two of them. Each individual was buried under a stack of applications. However a familiar ID had attracted their undivided attention.

... Little Sister Cai Hong?

Rainbow could only give a bitter smile. You were a little sister. Your entire family was a little sister. However if he wanted to join, he needed their approval.

“I am Rainbow, I was wondering if I could join the Skeleton Corp?”

“Of course you can. We welcome all experts!”

Chen Xiu answered excitedly. The Skeleton Corp was full of noobs. Everyone often fought together and thus lost very often. They needed experts to guide them.

Without saying, Rainbow was a true expert. It could be said that experts were now willing to join.

Upon entering, Rainbow then found out that the Skeleton Corps had over ten thousand members with a significant portion online. The moment he entered, a group of people immediately asked him to guide them.

He had originally thought that he would be mocked for losing but instead he did not expect everyone to greet him enthusiastically, hoping to learn and improve from his own battle.

This was first-hand information from a participant.

Notes:

1] Idiomatic expression meaning bold and imaginative.

Chapter 6 – The Rhythm Of Something New

Rainbow nonchalantly voiced his thoughts, “With my experience gained from years in the Special Forces, to reach such a standard would mean he is very likely an expert from the army. What I don’t understand, however, is why he would want to merely play a mech battle game.”

Skeleton Corps burst out in excited chatter. It turns out that Rainbow wasn’t a rich kid, but a member of the Special Forces. This truly shocked the group of children. If one thought about it, however, not just anyone could execute the Double Wave Certain Kill Array.

The reason why Rainbow played the game was to relax was because his normal training was just too stifling.

As a mech fighter, he couldn’t help but use flamboyant moves in order to suppress his enemies. Yet the fight he had with Skeleton showed that even ordinary methods could be used to beat the enemy.

As the first of Skeleton’s rivals to join the Skeleton Corps, he was treated like a celebrity.

Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun had been extremely busy with work, but Little Sister Red Dish was just too interesting an individual. They promoted him to the role of an administrator within the Skeleton Corps.

With such a large group of people encouraging him to participate, including a large group of pretty girls that had a crush on him, Little Sister Red Dish compromised and agreed.

It was akin to being thrown into a deep ocean once he'd entered the Corps.

☆ ☆ ☆

Masasi stayed in a single bed dormitory, precisely what he had requested.

"Hey Masasi, are you having fun on Earth? I'm so bored here. Martians are just too barbaric. I really envy those who have gone to other star systems. Why are we so unlucky to have been sent here!?"

Masasi's Skylink showed a man with short black hair. The two of them seemed very close.

"Earth is beautiful. It is completely different from the Moon."

"Fuck. Other than the fact that it was the birthplace of mankind, what's so beautiful about it? With our qualifications, why were we forced to stay behind in the Solar System? Everyone else was allowed leave for other places! Our Boss is just too despicable."

Masasi gave a wry smile, "I don't really understand what's happening on Mars, but judging by the situation, Earth doesn't

seem to be easy to handle."

"What? That can't be. Earth is inferior to Mars. What about it could be worth your attention? I feel Boss is just wasting his time here."

Young people tended to disagree that the standards of the Solar System weren't high. The standards of the Moon, however, had been suppressed by those of other planets. Although the Moon possessed ample strength, it was too small and possessed limited resources in all aspects. This year, when the sights of the Solar System were magnified for the Milky Way Alliance to see, the Moon didn't have much to show.

In terms of producing talents, however, the Moon was ranked in the top ten.

"Historically, Earth has produced exceptional individuals. Even if they have declined and are no longer as prominent, this place shouldn't be treated with contempt. I recently encountered an interesting individual with abilities that rival my own," said Masasi.

The man looked shocked. "You aren't joking, right? Among the eight of us, you could be considered to be within the top four. This person..."

"Hehe. I'm just waiting for an opportunity to confirm my suspicions."

“Boss only gave us half a year’s worth of time. You have to wisely make use of the time given!”

He smiled before turning off the Skylink.

☆ ☆ ☆

Meanwhile, the Pan-Milky Way Military School Alliance Agreement had an important role the Milky Way Alliance. Essentially, it acted as a reflection of a nation’s talent pool. In times of peace, other than an arms race, the most important thing was competitions between talents.

The Moon was usually the representative for the Sol Federation each year, but they were unable to achieve any significant results. Over time, the Solar System was reduced to a supportive role, thus, they decided to implement a new plan.

Masasi was part of the team to do so. This was also the reason why he was on Earth.

Originally, they hadn’t decided to select Ares College. Among the three military colleges of Earth, it was ranked last. Mi Lu, however, performed divination, which resulted in the picking of Ares College.

Frankly speaking, ever since he’d arrived, the teaching standards were behind the times and had low efficiency. The courses were insignificant to him, and even the facilities were lacking. It was

understandable why those from Earth were unable to compete with the best.

For a military college, the physical training facilities were inadequate. The Gravity Chambers were too small, not to mention the status of the Gene Correction and Supplement facilities for the body.

The software and hardware they used were also inferior. Naturally they would become less competitive over time.

Mars faced a similar situation. With the vicious mindset of Mars and a high competitiveness, its battle strength was stronger. Being the vanguard wasn't bad, but most of those from Mars were all brawn and lacked brains.

Turning on the Skylink, information on a specific individual popped up with a large amount of extra details on the side.

This was Masasi's primary aim in coming to Earth. This individual was no other than Zhang Long from Zeus Military College. His family owned Earth's largest political and economic conglomerate. The Moon wasn't the only one striving for power; Earth was also full of such individuals as well. Comparatively, the urge to fight for power was significantly more pressing for those on Earth.

The amount of available information on Zhang Long was extremely shocking. Yet, Earthlings did like to brag so no one could confirm if what was said was true.

This plan couldn't afford to fail.

Wang Zheng was considered a pleasant surprise. Could it be that Mi Lu's Ability X was pointing out that Ares College would be the place to produce results that would surpass all expectations?

Regardless of whether this was so, it was still necessary to pay a visit to Zhang Long.

☆ ☆ ☆

Currently, inside the MMA Club, Wang Zheng was training as usual. The place that Masasi felt was very backward actually felt like heaven to Wang Zheng.

Although Bonehead was very sly, Wang Zheng still felt glad that he could contact Bonehead. His parents weren't around, and Old Merchant had also left him. The only one he could really talk to was Bonehead. In truth, Bonehead and Old Merchant were quite similar; they both enjoyed ruining other people's hobbies.

"What has made you so happy?" Meng Tian asked.

"Nothing much."

"The principal is looking for you since I recommended you. With your abilities, you will definitely be a core member," replied Meng

Tian.

“What?”

“When school starts each year, the three military colleges will, together, evaluate and test their students on the first month. This year we happen to be in charge of organizing the event, and the three colleges will come together to compete. Zeus and Apollo will each dispatch a team. The freshmen will be the main attraction while the senior students will just be the side show. This year, the president will lead the team,” Meng Tian explained. Wang Zheng had seemed very busy but Meng Tian was unsure what he was busy with. It was like he had many issues to settle.

“Hehe. Having the opportunity to compete with experts will definitely be a good thing.”

“The competition will involve everything we know… additionally we will also get to compete with real mecha!” It could be seen that Meng Tian was looking forward to it. Such an event could be considered a real battle!

“Really? So extravagant?” Wang Zheng was dumbfounded. How many mecha would be destroyed in such a competition?

“That’s what you think. It’ll be real mecha, but they will be outfitted with training systems,” Meng Tian gave a wry smile. The person in front of her was truly ignorant and ill-informed at times.

A training system would assign values to the damage dealt and apply the impact on the mecha accordingly and implement a crippled status. For example, if the damage dealt to the right limb of a mech exceeded a specific value, then the right limb would be disabled.

If the damage surpassed the protective value of the energy shield, the battle would immediately end.

It was comparable to a normal battle, but even then, the price for carrying out such a competition was still very expensive. Only if one was considered rich within the Milky Way Alliance would this be a common occurrence.

All of this potential experience aroused Wang Zheng's interest. If CT's simulation was already so sweet, then riding a real mech would be truly exciting.

"Do you have any experience in mecha?"

"Does CT count?" Wang Zheng asked.

Meng Tian stared at him. "This is definitely unacceptable. Controlling an actual mech is significantly different than that of a game. Looks like you being part of the team might be a problem."

Wang Zheng rolled his eyes. From a person who was content with instant noodles three meals a day, if he was able to use mecha as a form of transportation, wouldn't that be like a fantasy story?

“Boss! Boss! Ah, Student Meng Tian, you’re here too,” Yan Xiaosu shouted as he barged in. After seeing Meng Tian, he paused to stare at her as though no one else were there.

It was extremely late at night and there were only two people left in the gym training. In front of Wang Zheng, Meng Tian didn’t usually pay much attention to what she wore. A simple T-shirt graced her voluptuous curves, especially that slender waist. Anyone stumbling onto this vision would surely get their blood pumping. As the training was intense, she naturally had a significant amount of sweat. Moreover, since she wore exercise shorts, the sight had stunned Yan Xiaosu.

Since she couldn’t bear Yan Xiaosu’s gaze, Meng Tian walked into an adjacent room to train. Yan Xiaosu quickly grabbed Wang Zheng.

“Boss, no wonder you joined the MMA Club! The compensation is unparalleled!”

“What is it?”

Yan Xiaosu smiled sweetly as he fished out a letter. Once Wang Zheng saw the object, he couldn’t help but feel nervous.

“You can’t possibly want me to deliver yet another love letter, right?” Wang Zheng felt as though his head was going to explode. Yan Xiaosu nodded his head vigorously as he grinned. No wonder they were brothers, they were basically telepathic!

“Go and send it yourself. Girls like guys who are brave.”

“It’s for An Mei! I’m not close to her, so it wouldn’t be good for me to give her the letter directly. This is just an invitation letter. Having someone who is more familiar with her will increase the odds of success. When I confess, I assure you that the scene will definitely be a grand one!” said Yan Xiaosu.

“I have only met her once,” Wang Zheng had nothing else to say. The last time this happened, the punishment was quite pitiful.

“Let me help you then,” Meng Tian said as she walked over.

An exercising girl would exude a charm of her own. Yan Xiaosu was again stunned on the spot. Upon thinking she might end up as his sister-in-law, however, he snapped back to his senses.

“Sister-in-law, it’s all up to you!”

Meng Tian was absolutely shocked by his reply, and her cheeks flushed red. Yan Xiaosu then gave a subtle thumbs up. This was what it meant to hide something well! Whenever did he manage to snag this beautiful ice queen?

“Scram!”

Wang Zheng lifted his leg to kick Yan Xiaosu, but he had already

disappeared. Then a head suddenly popped out from the frame of the door.

"Sister-in-law, Boss is a virgin. It's as though he was just assembled; perfect quality assured!"

Student Wang felt as though he had been struck by lightning. This bastard had to have his mouth removed!

Meng Tian couldn't help but smile. She had never met such an outrageous person.

"Your friend seems quite interesting. Even though your personalities are so different, you can still get along so well."

"Actually, I feel like I've been constantly tricked by him into joining his dubious ventures. His mouth just never stops blabbering."

"It's Yan Xiaosu after all, the most influential figure of the Trade and Commerce Department," replied Meng Tian.

Wang Zheng stared blankly. "The most influential figure? Him?"

"Middle school and college are completely different worlds. Even if others didn't like this sort of personality in middle school, in college, he's like a fish in water. He is currently coordinating with the school's numerous large societies to organize an event. Whether he is successful or not is one thing, but practically

everyone knows of him," Meng Tian said very naturally. Conversely, Wang Zheng seemed to be a strange person. He didn't even know of such a thing.

Wang Zheng didn't care about the things happening around him. One couldn't even mention things like 'influence'. Deep down, however, he was extremely happy. Xiaosu, that bastard, had finally made his mark.

It was great!

"Do you feel that it will work out?"

"I don't know the sort of person An Mei likes, but we have talked about him before. He has also gone to find the Drama Club before and rumors said that he had tricked the president completely and thrown them into chaos."

"That's good, at least he has made an impression. Help me out this time; even if she doesn't like him, when he is rejected, try and be tactful about it."

Some things didn't have to be experienced more than once. If it happened often, it would undoubtedly cause issues to arise.

Under Meng Tian's curious prodding, Wang Zheng explained what had previously happened with Yue Jing.

Meng Tian nodded her head. “She has eyes but no pearls[1].”

Notes:

1] Idiomatic expression meaning that she cannot see the value in him.

Chapter 7 – Return

Unknowingly, the distance between the two had shrunk. It had to be said that Wang Zheng used to be tormented by Bonehead. Thus he felt some slight aversion to beautiful girls. Conjuring the image of Bonehead in makeup in his mind was useful at this point in time.

A beautiful girl, however, would still be a beautiful girl regardless.

Meng Tian had an amazing body and there was nothing wrong with her features. She had flawless snow white skin and except for her cold personality, she was truly a beauty anyone would fall in love with at first sight.

Even if Wang Zheng was slow to react, he would eventually succumb to the other party's charm.

But by the time Wang Zheng could feel it, Meng Tian had hurriedly stood up. "I'm going first. I will help your friend pass the letter to An Mei; don't worry about it."

After say that, she rushed towards the female changing rooms. Even Wang Zheng could feel that her heart was clearly quite flustered.

Dear Student Wang rubbed his nose. Was he that scary?

☆ ☆ ☆

To the Ares College students, the upcoming month would definitely be the most exciting one by far.

Firstly, it was for the oncoming event between the three military colleges. This year it would be held at Ares College and it was rare for there to be a full confrontation with blood boiling battles. It was something everyone looked forward to!

In addition, since this year's freshmen included Masasi and Carl, Ares College's team strength had explosively improved. There was a good chance that they were able to get rid of the fate between the old three.

The second and also the most important thing was that Lin Huiyin would be performing a concert in Beijing.

In the entire Solar System, she'd only chosen to perform on Earth and, specifically, in Beijing.

This caused all of her numerous fans to be extremely excited. Of course, the fans included the three in the dormitory and best buddy Yan Xiaosu.

For the princeling Student Yan, he would spare no expense to grab a ticket.

Up till now, however, only news of the concert was made

available. Ticketing had yet to start but the fans would inevitably be waiting anxiously.

The problem here was that Lin Huiyin was just too popular. Although the younger generation was full of rebellious individuals, Huiyin's sweet princess image captivated countless hearts. Everyone aspired to be a badass while hoping others were just quiet individuals. The new song was one that had a very gallant style to it. Previous concerts had a venue bursting with people. This time, the concert would be in Beijing with the headlining song being NOT AFRAID.

It was rumored that the inspiration for this song had come from Earth.

Students loved to engage in bustling activities and this event was no different from a huge "get together" festival.

Yan Xiaosu very happily called Wang Zheng on his Skylink and told him that An Mei had agreed to his invitation.

After merely meeting once, it seemed as though An Mei was quite different from Yue Jing. Even if his confession was unsuccessful, it was unlikely she would put him on the spot.

For the purposes of the three military college's exchange, the school had to pick out outstanding talent for competition. Despite an equal number of spots allocated for freshmen and seniors, the main point of the exchange was to test the freshmen's talent.

Masasi and Carl were both freshmen and, without question, part of the main force. Wang Zheng was picked as the substitute for the team. Although Wang Zheng's results in the military training wasn't bad, a training exercise could not be considered sufficient experience. A real battle was a completely different situation.

The other two had often experienced such competitions. Being able to be selected as a substitute was already very shocking.

Other than him, Zhang Shan was selected as the other substitute.

The two of them were representatives from the Physics Department, and it was also the first time something like this had happened.

Captain: Ma Xiao

Official Members: Jiang Bin, Masasi, Carl, Meng Tian

Substitutes: Wang Zheng, Zhang Shan, Guan Tao

The individuals who were chosen for this event every year would have special attention paid to them by the school. This year's event was even more lively as Masasi and Carl's strength had given the school a hope for victory.

Even though Ma Xiao could be considered an expert, a lone hero could not hold back a pack of wolves. His individual ability was not sufficient enough to allow him to dominate the competition.

With these two experts assisting him, Ma Xiao felt his confidence increase. Especially since he had personally tested the two's battle energy. He felt extremely confident. The remaining time left for training was meant to improve the team's ability to work together as well as for personal training to ensure that the team could compete in peak condition.

Guan Tao was originally in the official line up but was displaced by Meng Tian. It was originally intended for the freshmen to take priority anyways. Furthermore, when Guan Tao competed against Meng Tian, he had lost three times in a row. Thus, Ma Xiao had to make a decision.

As Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan showed excellent performance during military training, they were chosen as the substitutes of the team. Such a line up was already sufficient.

The training lasted from 7 to 9pm every night with Teacher Zhuo Mu from the Mecha Department supervising.

Zhuo Mu had graduated from Ares College and was the trump card of the army. But since he had lost one of his legs in a battle, he had returned to the school to teach. He was a teacher with a unique 'personality' and, in truth, was quite rough. He would fly into a terrible rage whenever someone failed and the school suffered from numerous complaints as a result. He had, however, suppressed the complaints with his own abilities. Yet the fact was that if results could not be produced, it would be hard to say if he could continue to stay in the school.

Guan Tao whispered, “One has to be calm when dealing with Steel Leg Zhuo. Regardless of what he says, just imagine he’s just making fart noises.”

Guan Tao was quite close to the rest with the exception of Ma Xiao and Jiang Bin. Zhang Shan was still in a festive mood and with Wang Zheng accompanying him, he treated the situation as an excursion with a buddy.

After half an hour, Zhuo Mu finally hobbled his way into the classroom. One of his leg’s was fitted with a steel prosthetic and his footsteps were not stable, clinking as he walked along.

Zhuo Mu indifferent glanced at the eight of them before looking at Ma Xiao. “Why are you still here? Looks like Ares College is lacking people.”

Ma Xiao looked embarrassed. He was in his fourth year and should not be participating in this competition. But there was no choice. Ares College was severely lacking in experts and he was quite experienced himself.

With regards to Jiang Bin and Guan Tao, Zhuo Mu completely ignored the two of them. Jiang Bin and Guan Tao didn’t take offence at his treatment of them; they had long become used to his attitude.

Using Steel Leg Zhuo’s own words, “Crop after crop, disappointment year after year.”

“I suppose you two are the ones from outside Earth. I heard your strength isn’t bad, but this is Ares College’s fight. Are you willing to participate on behalf of Ares College?” asked Steel Leg Zhuo.

Carl grinned arrogantly. “Competing casually will be enough. What’s the point of being serious for such a competition?”

Steel Leg Zhuo then turned to Masasi. “Do you feel the same way?”

“I am currently a student of Ares College. Naturally I would put in all my effort to fight for Ares College. You can rest assured about this, teacher,” replied Masasi.

Zhuo Mu nodded his head before pointing at Carl. “You. You can leave now.”

Carl stared blankly. “Hey you old bastard, did you make a mistake? Did you just ask me to leave?”

“If you don’t want to leave, I can throw you out myself,” replied Zhuo Mu unenthusiastically.

“You old bastard, do you think I wouldn’t dare to hit you!”

After saying that, Carl rushed towards Zhuo Mu but the teacher just lifted his leg.

Bang!

Carl screamed in pain. Bitch! That was alloyed metal! If a normal limb was to collide with it...

Zhuo Mu had indeed thrown Carl out of the doorway before closing the door. The room had seven people left. Ma Xiao and the rest looked at each other. They were doomed! Carl was one of their main forces. Without him, they had basically lost half of their fighting strength.

“I don’t oppose anyone becoming a hero, but one has to have a sense of team honor. Regardless of where you might come from, since you are a student of Ares College, you have to fight for your college’s glory. With regards to anything else, you can talk about it after this.”

After Zhuo Mu finished speaking, he stared icily at the group in front of him, “Meng Tian, I don’t care about your background. In this team, there will be no gender separation. Are you sure you want to join in our training?”

“Yes, teacher!” Meng Tian replied without hesitation.

“How about the two brats from the Physics Department?”

“Teacher Zhuo, although I might be from the Physics Department, I have the heart of one from the Mecha Department!” replied Zhang Shan. This bastard was literally stealing his lines.

“I am willing to fight for the college,” replied Wang Zheng.

“Excellent, we can head out. Follow me.”

The group followed him outside only to realise... there was a space shuttle awaiting them. What was he trying to do?

Wasn’t it nightly training from 7 to 9pm?

Wasn’t he going to follow established practices?

Ma Xiao had a bad feeling about it. Although they did previously mention that they would be doing the real thing, could it be that they would start immediately...

☆ ☆ ☆

After that event, Carl immediately left the college and returned to Mars. Although the principal had tried his best to get him to stay, he was unable to change Carl’s mind.

Frankly, ever since Carl had arrived on Earth, he was looking for such an opportunity to leave. He was unable to find an opportunity to properly compete with Masasi as the latter was simply uninterested. Furthermore the atmosphere was unsuitable for him.

It was perfect that he could use this situation to finally leave. Towards Ares College, losing him was a terrible situation. Especially since Carl's mech piloting abilities were quite decent.

Although Wang Zheng and the rest were taken away, their course materials were recorded in the form of videos for them to slowly catch up when time was available.

Chen Xiu, Yao Ailun, and Yan Xiaosu were anxiously taking care of their Skeleton Corps.

The three of them were extremely active. Chen Xiu even frequently answered questions and guided noobs.

When it came to theoretical knowledge, he was exceptionally proficient in it.

"Brother Xiu, I used to learn from the high level battle videos but always lost pitifully! But ever since I started watching Skeleton God's battle videos... why am I losing even more pitifully than before!" asked player I Must Become A God.

Chen Xiu was stunned. "What have you been using?"

"Of course Wargod No. 1. It's such an all rounded mech that it's essential for becoming a god!"

Without waiting for Chen Xiu's reply, the audience burst into raucous laughter. This funny bastard.

Chen Xiu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "When things are going your way, you might be able to win, but one's ability to battle comes from learning from experience. Other than having the skills to do so, one must practice often to achieve success."

"Now we will commence the third mech analysis lesson. The Ice Shuttle Type-III mech specialty lies in..."

Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun's mech analysis had improved significantly. It covered both the strengths and weaknesses of the mech and also included replays of high level battles involving the mech.

They hoped that one day, Wargod No. 1 would be able to compete with high level mecha.

☆ ☆ ☆

As of now, even Wang Zheng did not know where he had been shipped to. It looked like he had been brought to a military barrack.

Steel Leg Zhuo seemed extremely familiar with the place. Valiant soldiers could be seen all around and the group of them looked like lambs in comparison.

"Fuck. Where is this place? It seems so dark and foreboding." Zhang Shan frowned. He felt that the situation was not looking

very positive. He was a genius of the Physics Department. He should have been enjoying life and beautiful women but instead he was here.

"Do you know where we are, seniors?" asked Masasi.

Ma Xiao shrugged his shoulders. "Don't ask me, this is also my first time here. We will have to adapt to the situation. Looks like this old man is playing for keeps this time."

With the memory of the previous military training, everyone snapped to attention. This time, however, things were different; nothing happened. Furthermore, everyone was given their own room.

"Comprehensive training starts tomorrow. So rest well for tonight, you will get no further chance to do so," said Zhuo Mu as he walked away.

How could someone sleep peacefully with such words?

Chapter 8 – I Miss You

Everyone returned to their own rooms. Wang Zheng was no exception and very quickly fell asleep.

In the dark of the night, the Rubik's Cube in Wang Zheng's chest suddenly began to glow. It emitted a faint beam of light in an abnormal wave band.

Weapons System Detected … Entering… Analysing…

Unknown Civilization, Rank B. Determined to have value in analysis

Implementing Perfect Super Wargod Plan!

The base's mainframe computer suddenly spiked for a brief moment, for barely a second, before it went back to normal operational levels. No one seemed to notice this small fluctuation.

During the second day's roll call, everyone except for Wang Zheng reported for training.

Zhuo Mu waved his hand, "No need to bother with him. The rest of you will continue with the special training."

Meng Tian and Zhang Shan looked at each other in surprise. They both understood Wang Zheng's personality. How could he

ever be absent?

In his room, Wang Zheng slept in a deep slumber. Even after the soldiers woke him, he was still extremely groggy. He could not continue with the training, and they removed him from the special training.

Wang Zheng felt extremely helpless. He did not know what was wrong with his body. He did not know what the Rubik's Cube had done. He felt as if the cube had sucked all his energy, and he had no strength left in his entire body.

He had wanted to call out Skeleton for an explanation, but instead he chose to tolerate his situation. Poor Wang Zheng, who had been sent back to school, only wanted to sleep, and he spent each day in a half-awakened state.

Yao Ailun was a nerd, and Chen Xiu was a minor. Neither of them were experienced in taking care of others. During his convalescence, Wang Zheng often felt that someone placed a hot towel on his forehead. When he was finally able to open his eyes, he saw Ye Zisu by his side.

"... Why am I in the female's dormitory?"

"Brother Zheng, we are in our own dormitory, 007. Student Zisu has been taking care of you for the past two days. You have been in a daze this whole time. When we took you in for a checkup, they said you had overexerted yourself. What did they do in the special training? Are they trying to mess up your body? We Physics

Department students are not suited for such things!”

Chen Xiu said these things in a concerned tone. Just by looking at Zhang Shan’s body, one could see that it was fierce and unyielding. Compared to him, however, Wang Zheng’s body did not seem to be suited for special training. Therefore, he was afflicted with this problem.

Wang Zheng smiled bitterly. He had not even had the chance to attempt the special training. Bitch, once he fully recovered, he would definitely summon Bonehead and get him to explain what had happened.

Wang Zheng struggled to sit up, and his entire body throbbed with a dull ache. Ye Zisu immediately helped him up, “Ah you! You don’t need to strive so hard. You won’t become fat just by eating an extra mouthful![1]”

“Thank you,” said Wang Zheng. Other than that, he did not know what else to say.

Ye Zisu gave a slight smile, “Why are you being so polite to me? We are friends, and taking of people is a girl’s natural ability.”

Cough

“When will I be able to get a friend like this?” Yao Ailun asked enviously.

“Older Sister Zisu, you’re extremely pretty. If I was Brother Zheng, I would definitely choose to chase you,” Chen Xiu said with apparent naivety and a look of pure innocence.

Wang Zheng had no energy at all. If he had any strength in his body, he would have definitely punched that bastard. Chen Xiu obviously embarrassed Wang Zheng on purpose.

Ye Zisu shook her head, “He already has someone he likes.”

Wang Zheng stared blankly at her. He did? How did he not even know himself?

Looking at Ye Zisu’s gaze, however, Wang Zheng suddenly realized who she referred to. He helplessly shrugged his shoulders, it would be completely impossible to be together with her.

Xiao Shi was not actually Xiao Shi.

Bang

The door was kicked open. An individual energetically rushed into the room. It was Professor Xiao Fei.

“Wang Zheng you little bastard! You dare to skip my class... Ah, what happened to you?”

Xiao Fei stared blankly at the pale-faced Wang Zheng, “I heard you were removed from the special training. How could Steel Leg Zhuo mess you up to this extent!”

Wang Zheng hurriedly waved his hands, “It has nothing to do with Teacher Zhuo. My body just couldn’t handle it.”

“Haven’t I already told you? You’re not meant for that sort of activity. So long as you focus on a single path, that will be enough. No need to take any detours,” Xiao Fei sighed.

Dear Student Wang did not know whether to laugh or to cry. Xiao Fei then gazed at Ye Zisu and sized her up, “Not bad. Is she your girlfriend? Tsk tsk, your standards aren’t bad.”

Ye Zisu stood up, “Hello professor Xiao Fei. I am his friend Ye Zisu. We went to highschool together.”

This was not the first time that someone had misunderstood their relationship. Wang Zheng felt slightly embarrassed. “Haha,

professor, she is just a friend."

"Oh? A friend? Zisu, this little fellow isn't bad. You should grab hold of him. In this day and age, nine out of ten guys are just weird. Go for him now and hope for the best, even if it doesn't work out later."

The three male students in the dormitory broke out in a cold sweat. Professor Xiao Fei was truly too ruthless.

"All's good. There's someone taking care of you, so I will be taking my leave."

Barely a few moments after arriving, Xiao Fei left, Yan Xiaosu rushed in with a basket of fruit. Wang Zheng suddenly felt very fortunate. There were so many people who cared about him.

Ye Zisu did not worry about other people's ridicule and directly helped Wang Zheng peel the fruits. The other three continued to engage in chatter with Wang Zheng, especially engaging in gossip.

The truth was that the vast majority of the students at the school had a very relaxed and happy lifestyle. None of them were as focused as Wang Zheng.

Everyone knew they would have their own paths to follow in the future, and they realized that they should seek to enjoy their life in college. To attend classes, to flirt with others, and to discuss hopes and dreams were all things to do as part of the ideal college life.

Although Wang Zheng's body had come out of the Rubik's Cube, his spirit was still not back to earth from it All he could do was dream of ways to improve himself. Honestly, it was bad to place himself under such pressure.

Back in the competition training facility, the special training was not going smoothly. Zhang Shan and Ma Xiao both aimed for Meng Tian, and they were particularly active in training. Despite that, Meng Tian still treated them with disdain. A man had to be a winner.

To be frank, with Zhang Shan's physique and reflexes, not going to the Mech Department could be considered a waste of talent. He and Wang Zheng's situation were quite similar. Due to the "stunts" that Wang Zheng had pulled off, however, he was forced into the situation he was in right now. Steel Leg Zhuo did not care about one's year in college, he aimed to use the special training's results to determine the individual placings, including the team leader's position.

As a result, Ma Xiao was also forced to perform at 120 percent of his limits. Furthermore he was also a senior student, and if he were to be beaten by a junior, such an act would be truly humiliating. Truthfully speaking, he was under tremendous pressure. Merely competing with the bull-like Zhang Shang was already a headache. In addition, he had to deal with Masasi. What made things worse was that Masasi was extremely interested in contending for the position of team leader.

With regards to Wang Zheng, after being removed from the

special training, he spent the entire day resting and had recovered almost 70 to 80 percent of his energy. As a result, he was barely able to attend class. Despite that, he tried to summon Bonehead, but unfortunately, he could get no reaction out of the Rubik's Cube, and thus he could only wait.

In the Sagittarius System, Lin Huiyin's tour group had already finished their preparations. Huiyin, however, had received an extremely strange piece of news.

Before a princess underwent the coming of age ceremony, they were allowed one request. So long as the request was not too outrageous, the royal family would definitely attempt to fulfil the request to the best of their abilities. It could be considered a blessing from the king himself. Her cousin had chosen to waste her request on something trivial.

The princess very quickly realized she could meet her certain someone. What kind of three headed six armed individual could possess such charisma?

Many students attended Xiao Fei's morning lesson. Wang Zheng found a nice seat and sat down. If he was unable to make it for the lesson, then so be it. Since he was here, he would definitely sit in the front row to prevent the professor from flipping out.

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu were still concerned about Wang Zheng's body. The two of them sat on his left and right. "Brother Zheng, don't you want to rest for another day? You can ask for a day of leave from Professor Xiao."

“I am not that weak. I am fine,” Wang Zheng replied as he laughed.

“Wang Zheng, I would recommend you to focus on physics. After that you can find a beautiful girl and get into a meaningful relationship with her. Enjoy the college student life! Why would you want to torture yourself? We are cultured individuals, we are not of the same breed as those barbarians. Ye Zisu treats you extremely well, and yet she has no boyfriend. Her family is also well to do! You wouldn’t be able to find a girl like her even if you looked with a lantern! Don’t be ignorant of the blessings around you!”

Yao Ailun admonished. Frankly speaking, if any girl were to treat him as well as Ye Zisu treated Wang Zheng, he would definitely be unable to control himself.

“Yeah! Brother Zheng, I guess you don’t really like Meng Tian right. Although Elder Sister Meng Tian has a fiery hot body, I think Ye Zisu is way more gentle. Girls like her are the best!”

Chen Xiu spoke earnestly.

Wang Zheng could only bitterly smile. He wished he could beat the two of them to death. Perhaps he should have put to rest those fantasies of his. What was done was done. He was merely an ordinary individual. Was it time to face reality?

At this point in time, the noisy classroom turned completely

silent. A girl walked into the classroom, glancing around as she entered.

The students in the class caught their breaths. How could there be such a pretty girl?

Even good looking celebrities could not be compared to her! One look into her eyes would absolutely captivate someone. Her eyes were so amazing that even her beautiful features paled in comparison.

The classroom was surprisingly quiet as everyone stared at the foreign girl. She was definitely not from Wargod College. Such a beautiful girl would definitely have been noticed the moment she stepped into the college grounds!

The girl looked as though she was looking for someone.

At this point in time, everyone in the class hoped that they were the target of her searching gaze. Despite wearing simple clothes, she obviously possessed an unattainable aura of grandeur.

The girl's clenched and unclenched her fist, as though she was slightly nervous and anxious.

Student Yao stared blankly at her, "She is truly a goddess. Heavens, how could such a beautiful girl exist!"

Just as the rest of the class was dazed by her beauty and bearing,

so was Chen Xiu who sat next to Wang Zheng. He sat absolutely speechless. Raising his head from his self-pitying slump, Student Wang's gaze focused on the girl, and his eyes widened in shock. Shaking his head and rubbing his eyes he exclaimed, "Fuck, am I hallucinating?"

Wang Zheng had already buried certain thoughts into the depths of his heart. Previously when she had been around, he did not feel anything special regarding her. Only after she had left did he feel a sense of longing for her. Regardless, the distance between the two of them was just too vast. Wang Zheng was a reasonable person, and knowing the futility of wishing for the impossible, he chose to bury those thoughts.

Could it be that this sense of longing was a sickness?

At long last the girl seemed to find who she had been looking for. Step by step, she approached him.

"Hello fellow classmate, may I have your seat?"

The girl asked when she stood in front of Yao Ailun. Dear Student Ailun could only nod, his head empty of all other thought.

"Why are you here?" Wang Zheng foolishly asked. It seemed as though he was not hallucinating. A familiar impulse surged up from the depths of his heart.

Aina gave a brilliant smile, "I missed you."

Those three simple words seemed like thousands of words[2]. Wang Zheng grabbed Aina's hand, and at this moment, Xiao Fei walked in. After seeing the sight in front of her, she too was shocked and could only cough dryly several times.

"This is Wang Shishi. She is an exchange student. I hope everyone will take care of her."

As if sitting there was the most natural thing in the world, Aina settled next to Wang Zheng. Their two gazes interlocked, and it seemed as though nothing else mattered.

Below the table, their two's hands remained intertwined. Instead of letting go, they held hands even more tightly.

Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were absolutely petrified. What kind of world did they live in!

Professor Xiao Fei's class was usually exceptionally engaging. Due to this new student's presence, the entire class seemed absent minded. Everyone frequently glanced at the girl sitting in the first row. Even her back was seductive to them.

"Why is your hair black?" Wang Zheng asked with a silly expression on his face. It felt as though he was dreaming.

"I can't reveal my true identity," Aina replied as she lightly bit her lip, her heart pounding against her chest. The entire situation

seemed as though he was in a dream. Yet the truth was that she was right in front of him yet again.

Notes:

1] Idiomatic expression meaning that taking a step back would not actually cause any harm.

2] Idiomatic expression meaning that it was as though that a lot of things had been said.

Chapter 9 – To Love Is To Fool Around Together

The Crown Princess' coming of age ceremony wish was to study in Wargod College for three months. Although this wish seemed slightly strange, it did not violate any rules or regulations. Looking at it from a different angle, even if the truth was revealed, it would only benefit the relationship between Aslan and the Sol Federation.

The Crown Princess's alias was Wang Shishi. Only the principal knew her true identity. Gu Te was shocked giddy at the sudden good fortune. This was no different from winning the Milky Way lottery! Although her identity had to be kept a secret, after this was said and done, it would indubitably bring about a massive shock. Instead of choosing the universe's most prestigious academy in Aslan, she chose to go to Wargod College. Even if he was dreaming, he could not believe it!

The two of them held each other's hands tightly until the class ended. Even more fortunately, t Xiao Fei did not tease the two of them. Instead, she watched them walk away with a strange expression on her face.

Once the class ended, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu could no longer sit blankly at the side. They could not tolerate it anymore.

"Wang Zheng, how rude can you be? Who might this beautiful girl... no, beautiful goddess be? Won't you introduce her to your fellow brothers?"

Dear Student Ailun was extremely regretful, he was not dressed in his best attire and thus he felt lacking.

“You can call me Wang Shishi. I am Wang Zheng’s distantly related cousin. We have no blood ties between us,” Aina replied with a smile as she blinked her eyes.

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu turned and looked at each other in dismay, before looking into the sky and sighing deeply.

“Wang Zheng, you are truly defying the heavens! I can’t take it anymore!”

“Brother Zheng, you have truly hidden yourself so deeply such that when you finally revealed your true colors, it is absolutely frightening! It’s time for you to treat us!”

Wang Zheng gave a wry smile, “Okay, no problem. We will do it tonight. My apologies, but we will be leaving now.”

The entire class gazed at them as Wang Zheng pulled Aina out of the classroom.

They were once separated by millions of miles. Wang Zheng did not even dare to dream of her. He knew, the higher his expectations, the greater the disappointment. Against all expectations, she actually came back.

“Am I dreaming?” Wang Zheng asked as he tightly clutched Aina’s hand. He was worried that the moment he let go she would just fade away.

Aina lightly bit her lip. “Have you ever had such a realistic dream?”

The two of them merely stood there and gazed at each other. Wang Zheng knew that he was in love. Regardless of whatever status the girl in front of him possessed, regardless of what would happen, he only knew one thing. He loved Aina!

The advantage of being on the college’s grounds was that it could provide a suitable place and atmosphere for these two sweethearts to be together.

The last time they parted, the two of them were merely friends. Now that Aina had appeared again, they had broken through that barrier. Perhaps it was because the two of them felt that it would not be possible to have such intense feelings ever again.

When Aina previously returned to Aslan, she logically knew that what was past was past. She could only treat it as a beautiful memory. The more she thought about it, the more she was unable to repress her feelings. All of the people around her only sought to sing praise about her beauty and stature, things which she wished to escape from.

Why was it not possible? Why can’t she take the initiative!

Thus she came!

“Why?” To be honest, even Wang Zheng did not understand why. He didn’t think he was ugly, but he felt he was not so handsome that his looks could cause immense upheaval and chaos.

Was it because he was talented?

With Aina’s knowledge and experience, if she wanted it, the number of young geniuses that would attempt to woo her would form a queue so long, it would exceed the boundaries of the Solar System!

“It’s because you’re the most foolish!” Aina replied.

Foolishness? Could this even be counted as a good point?

When girls said complicated things, they tend to be extremely complicated. When they were direct, they were extremely direct. Wang Zheng, ignorant of Aina’s identity and situation, had been willing to lend a hand to help. Five hundred credits or even five hundred million credits was nothing to the Princess of Aslan. She knew that three hundred credits were everything to Wang Zheng. If a person was willing to give up everything for you, what else would you want?

In actuality, Aina had already tested him. Even after seeing her dirt-stained face at that restaurant, Wang Zheng had still been willing to act on her behalf. His sacrifice had truly stirred up her

emotions, causing Aina to be slightly embarrassed at that time.

As she continued to spend time with him, Wang Zheng's immense knowledge had given Aina another shock. Furthermore, even in the face of an assassin's attack, Wang Zheng's protection had completely enraptured her heart. She could have easily written off the entire strange experience as a story to forget. While their reunion seemed an impossibility, she managed to make it happen.

When autumn's Golden Wind embraces Dew of Jade, all love scenes on earth, however many, fade.

Ye Zisu or Meng Tian were both extremely exceptional young ladies, but Wang Zheng did not feel any attraction toward either of them. Aina took the only place in his heart.

They found a private place, and the two of them burst into an intense conversation. Rather than rooming at the college, Aina was staying at the Shangri-La grand hotel.

Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were somewhat confused as the two of them walked back to the dormitory.

"Brother Ailun, is Brother Zheng an expert?"

"What do you mean by an expert?"

"A sage when it comes to emotions! I feel he has been hiding

himself deeply. Why is it there are no beautiful girls chasing me?”

“Bitch, how old are you? Elder brother is still single!” Yao Ailun stared coldly at him.

“Looks like I have to learn from Brother Zheng!”

“That bastard is full of secrets. As a fellow brother in arms, we have to live and die together! Even if he had a girlfriend, why did he only tell us now!”

“Elder Sister Shishi has a very refined temperament. I have never met such a graceful girl!”

Chen Xiu shook his head slowly as he spoke.

“That is an innate quality bestowed from birth! Granny’s leg, we have to grasp the opportunity!”

It had to be said that dear Student Ailun and Student Xiu had suffered yet another blow. They could not let it pass anymore! They had to deal Wang Zheng a vicious blow!

This was a tradition. Whoever had a girlfriend had to treat a meal.

A day with Aina around was like spending a day in heaven. The Rubik’s Cube, Battle Energy, and whatnot had all been thrown to

the back of his mind.

Later that afternoon, Yan Xiaosu was shocked petrified for a whole five minutes.

“Am I dreaming?” Student Xiaosu said as he pinched his own face. He could feel it, so he definitely wasn’t a dream.

Aina gave a slight smile. “It has been a long time, Yan Xiaosu.”

The usually talkative Yan Xiaosu was absolutely dumbfounded at the scene. He briefly recovered and dragged Wang Zheng to the side.

“Boss, what is happening? Have the heavens finally opened their eyes?”

“What heavens opening their eyes, Aina... Shishi is currently studying in the Physics Department. Remember to keep her identity a secret.”

Looking at Wang Zheng’s expression which showed extreme contentment and happiness, Yan Xiaosu also felt happy for him. His elder brother had been strong since youth, his aim clear. Yan Xiaosu had always felt that Wang Zheng’s journey was just too weary. Life should be happy to the fullest. Ye Zisu and Meng Tian were exceptional individuals, and he had not known whom Wang Zheng was truly waiting for. In the end, Xiaosu finally understood why Wang Zheng had acted as he had in the past.

“Boss, you really are a bastard! Everything has been worth it!”

He saw that Yan Xiaosu was truly happy for him. Wang Zheng patted Xiaosu’s shoulders. “You aren’t bad yourself. Is it true that your confession was successful this time?”

“Well, somewhat. An Mei said that she had to think about it for a while. Heh, she’s still a girl. I just need to push her in the right direction, and she’s mine.”

Yan Xiaosu said confidently.

Aina had honored him with her presence. No matter what, Yan Xiaosu had to convey his congratulations.Aina liked Student Xiaosu, and she was glad to spend time with Wang Zheng’s best friend. Since she and Wang Zheng were now also a couple, things were no longer the same, it would be two on two. Yan Xiaosu had also brought his other half.

In the cafeteria, An Mei swept her electrifying and fiery gaze up and down Aina’s figure. However, even if she used a microscope, she would be unable to find any flaws with Aina.

How could this world have such a girl? From her appearance to her bearing, all of it could be summed up in one word – flawless.

An Mei at this point felt indignant on behalf of Ye Zisu. What great qualities did Wang Zheng possess? What arrogance! He even

dared to bully someone like Ye Zisu. During the girls' midnight talks, there existed no taboo subjects. With Wang Zheng's capabilities and looks, him being able to get close to Ye Zisu was already a remarkable accomplishment. Even one's ancestors would be furious at such a sight! Who could imagine yet another beautiful girl who liked him had appeared.

"Tyrant Su, why are you quiet today? Not hearing you brag about yourself seems very unnatural of you."

An Mei also felt that something was strange. She and Yan Xiaosu had already gone on several dates. This person was very interesting and had numerous things to talk about. His family background could be considered decent except for the fact that they sold sanitary napkins. Yan Xiaosu was a confident and unbridled individual, and An Mei really like that part about him. A self confident and humorous boy could indeed attract the interest of girls.

This fellow truly liked to brag. The way he bragged was very amusing.

"Tyrant Su?" Wang Zheng stared blankly at him before bursting out in laughter. He gave Xiaosu a thumbs up. "An Mei, you seem to have discovered his true self. Looks like he won't be able to escape from your grasp."

Yan Xiaosu coughed dryly several times. He couldn't just act like a pretentious prick. He had to gauge the situation first. To brag in front of the Princess of Aslan? Even if dear Student Yan had thicker skin, he still wouldn't do so.

“Shishi, welcome to Wargod College. As Zisu’s good friend and Yan Xiaosu’s girlfriend, I have to say that you need to be careful. You and Wang Zheng aren’t a good fit.”

Yan Xiaosu tugged at An Mei but was given a vicious stare in return.

Even when Wang Zheng and Aina glanced at each other quickly, they felt indescribably happy and burst into smiling. Aina loved this part of Wang Zheng. He did not care about her status, and she could see in his gaze that he truly did not care about her identity and only liked her for who she was.

It was that simple. That pure.

This heartfelt connection was mutually understood, and it was something others could never understand.

As their love for each other was so obvious, An Mei felt even more indignant on behalf of Ye Zisu.

“Brother, it looks like my competitors are numerous. Will your feelings for me be fickle?” Aina asked warmly.

Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu looked at each other. Who would have expected Aina to have such a childish side to her? Wang Zheng’s heart felt like it was going to melt.

Yan Xiaosu immediately tried to smooth things over between Aina and Wang Zheng regarding Ye Zisu, “Ye Zisu is simply a very good friend of ours. We were all classmates in middle school and are all alumni of Daybreak Middle School. The three of us are fairly close because of that connection.”

An Mei angrily flicked Yan Xiaosu’s head with a finger. “Look at what you are saying. You should no longer be called Tyrant Su. You should be known as Softy Su instead!”

This fellow was usually as arrogant as the sky, but when he met a beautiful girl, he lost all of his imposing disposition.

An Mei no longer pursued the topic at hand. She began to ramble and talk about girly things. Although Wang Shishi did not usually speak much, when they started talking about branded goods, she was an expert. Shishi soon started to talk about some brands An Mei had never even heard of! Indeed it seemed that Aslan was more advanced, and the girls who lived there knew a bit more.

After finishing the coffee and having left, An Mei dragged Tyrant Su to the side. “Your elder brother is such a playboy. He actually dares to get involved with three girls simultaneously! Are you the same as him?”

Yan Xiaosu broke out into cold sweat, “How could this be? Boss and I only care for one girl!”

“Tsk. In our dormitory, Ye Zisu and Meng Tian are already grappling behind the scenes! It resulted in Du Qingqing and I being

faced with an endless headache. Furthermore, he promised to be a model for the Art Club, but, up till now, he has not done so!" said An Mei.

Although Yan Xiaosu seemed tormented, deep down he was extremely happy. It was truly a reversal of fortunes. The two of them were like the weeds growing at the side of the road in middle school, and no one gave them a second look. Now that they were in college, they had replaced their bird guns with cannons[1]. Boss's rapid transformation was even more startling. He didn't just grow wings. He had turned into a space shuttle! This feeling of respect was like the unending torrent of the river.

"Boss was busy with special training originally and must have forgotten about it. Don't worry, I will remind him. Since the words have been spoken, they will definitely be honored. If he isn't free, I will go on his behalf," Yan Xiaosu said as he patted his chest.

Notes:

1] Bird gun becomes a cannon means that they have improved tremendously

Chapter 10 – Comeback

“You dare to seduce the beauties of the Fine Arts Club!”

“What could you be talking about? Only you could treat a person like me as a treasure.” Yan Xiaosu chuckled.

An Mei actually liked Yan Xiaosu’s personality this way. This was the boy’s charm. Actually, there was absolutely no way he was as bad as he claimed to be. Whether it was his family circumstances or his personal situation, both were pretty good. Actually, no matter where they went, An Mei felt very proud of him.

“What kind of background does this Wang Shishi have? Tell me when you get back. This girl is too pretty and well-mannered to be suitable for Wang Zheng!”

“She might be pretty, but she is still slightly inferior to you,” Yan Xiaosu said, the words grating against his conscience.

“Tut! Sweet talker, you know how to speak words. Trying to change the subject won’t work, so explain clearly and don’t you dare tell me you don’t know!”

An Mei pinched Yan Xiaosu’s side.

“She is Wang Zheng’s distant relative who visited Earth before to have fun. Perhaps she only changed schools because she felt Earth’s environment was very novel.” Yan Xiaosu’s classmates still

stressed loyalty among brothers.

An Mei lowered her head. “Aslan girls might have very good personalities; however, when you look at her clothes, she’s obviously wearing common clothing. Her circumstances must also be that way. How is she better than our Zisu? Really! You boys really are bad judges of women!

An idiot strikes again, Yan Xiaosu thought, laughing bitterly. Boss, your brother has played the scapegoat for you many times.

On the road back to class, Aina simply did not mention the so-called potential rivals. That is not to say Aina felt she was vastly superior, but that she understood Wang Zheng.

Even though they hadn’t known each other for very long, from the moment they had met at that wonderful encounter, that time spent together was already enough for her to understand him.

The afternoon physics lecture finished quickly. With Aina present, Wang Zheng felt that the passage of time had already lost all measurement.

After school, both of them definitely wanted to spend their time together, and Aina wanted to watch Wang Zheng “battle”!

As Aslan’s princess, Aina had definitely met experts, as the Aslan Empire did not lack elites. After returning, the terrorist organization was suppressed, and she heard the killers they had

sent were well-known assassins. Yet they couldn't even receive one of Wang Zheng's moves. This caused Aina to be filled with curiosity towards Wang Zheng himself.

Regarding Skeleton's success, the brainless idiot Yan Xiaosu mindlessly failed to recognize what was right in front of him, but Aina knew and remembered. It was just that during her stay in the Empire, she was always under the surveillance of others and had almost no freedom to verify it.

For Aina, Wang Zheng was the most charming when he was in battle.

Regarding his ID as Skeleton, Wang Zheng had never intended to hide his identity from Aina.

Wang Zheng logged into CT. He thought, If Aina wants to watch, naturally I am going to put on a good show.

When Skeleton's ID went online, countless alerts immediately sounded out ding ding dong dong.

If Rainbow had any free time, he spent it waiting online. The brothers on his team frequently ridiculed him; if he kept ignoring his SWAT duties, sooner or later he would be discharged.

Rainbow was calm and collected concerning this. Who said SWAT had to force themselves to bitterly train all day? Every mech pilot had their own hobbies.

Seeing Skeleton online, Rainbow immediately voiced a yell of excitement, echoing the same from many other people. At the Internet Cafe, the number of SWAT team members immediately increased. After hearing that the master oppressor had been oppressed, they wanted to witness this man's remarkable abilities for themselves.

For the Skeleton Corps members, the login of Skeleton to CT was a joyous occasion like a holiday and brightened their moods.

Rainbow notified Chen Xiu. Chen Xiu immediately told Yao Ailun and Yan Xiaosu. As Skeleton Corps members, they personally showed up.

The only thing left to look forward to was the matter of whom the opponent would be.

Wang Zheng feared the free-matched opponent would be too weak. In the middle of selecting his challenger, he suddenly discovered a familiar name.

Wild King.

This guy's skill was fairly good, and after seeing the details, Wang Zheng smiled. This elder brother was very straightforward and wanted to battle again, but not with a Wargod No. 1. He wanted to use the mech he was experienced with. If he lost again, he would join Skeleton Corps and become a follower.

Wang Zheng didn't particularly care whom he battled against., His primary goal was to make certain that the person he fought would let Aina watch a relatively good competition.

Skeleton versus Wild King!

Everyone stared blankly. Didn't this idiot already lose once before? How was he not convinced of his inferiority and instead came to challenge Skeleton again? What was the meaning of this audacity?

Very quickly, however, everyone was stunned.

They had seen immense bravado before, but never this extensive.

Wargod No. 1 battling Light Cavalry Type D!

Old friend Solon was also stunned. The idiot Skeleton needed to stop playing with Solon's heart, or he would die.

Last time, with Wargod No. 1 versus Wargod No. 1, he had almost lost. Although he made a comeback, it still looked dangerous. Wild King was definitely Asia Region's top ranking expert, but right now he was using the Light Cavalry Type D that he was most adept in.

This was a rhythm courting disaster.

All of the staff members in the hall were at a loss. Technology had limits. Was he willing to accept all of them?

Rainbow and all his fellow brothers were also dumbstruck.

“Boss, this guy is fucking insane! If Wargod No. 1 can kill Light War Cavalry, I’ll change my last name to his!”

“Supposedly after losing a match to Skeleton, this Wild King lately has been a rising player, and his battles in the Diamond League have been fairly awesome.”

“This is really not smart. That last match’s win was a thriller, but this time Skeleton is just playing with fire.”

Rainbow did not say a word. He had already fought with Skeleton and had a strange feeling regarding Skeleton’s abilities. He knew Skeleton hadn’t used his full strength. Countering every move was also a way to enjoy the process of a fight. Rainbow felt that he was a little similar to Skeleton, but their tempos were somewhat different.

Wild King’s own skill was obvious, and this type of fight was very dangerous. However, the more he was exposed to this type of danger, the more he had something small to look forward to.

Wild King himself couldn’t believe his opponent really accepted this type of unfair fight.

Regardless of who won or lost, both applauded their opponent's courage.

In real life, Wild King was soon to enter a special training area in order to prepare for the event where the three great military academies would meet to exchange experiences. Originally he hadn't been that serious about preparing for this event, but the President knew of Wargod College's preparations behind the scenes, and he wanted to prevent a setback. After all, this year, Wargod College was fighting on home ground and wanted to present a strong front.

Therefore, Wild King hoped to use a match victory against Skeleton to welcome the beginning of the nauseating training he was soon to start.

The Light War Cavalry Type D mech was one of the Aslan Empire's common scout machines. Among their present general mecha, this mech was one of the best balanced for overall performance. Simply stated, this mech could display the pilot's ultimate ability. Matched with an MP5 laser rifle's accuracy in a moving and vibrating environment, the precision level was excellent. The laser sword, however, needed to be swapped for a better weapon.

Because Wild King was extremely confident in his skills and mech advantage, he decided to let Skeleton choose the battle setting. His own mech's superiority was too big to take the extra advantage of also choosing the arena.

Almost as if they were one person, countless players waited online. What setting would Skeleton choose this time?

Upon seeing the choice made, their eyes suddenly bulged as if to pop out of their heads and fall to the ground.

A simple arena!

The most cruel and most direct arena with no shelter and no retreat. A pure display of a mech's performance and skill.

For an already superior mech, this arena was the first choice. The open arena prevented unexpected accidents and was the best selection available.

Skeleton was wanting to defy the heavens!

"Brilliant, the earth cannot stop Skeleton being a god!"

"I dare to choose everything. In front of this older brother, you're just a child!"

"Fuck, if you can win, elder brother won't believe in love!"

"Your father, what does this and love have in common!"

"Damn it! Older brother doesn't believe you and love are

related!”

All kinds of godly comebacks were spoken, and all kinds of PK’s defied heaven. The votes on the outcome of the battle continued to increase.

Even under these conditions and in spite of everything, 40 percent of the people believed Skeleton could win. Some of the new spectators were stunned. Do these people have mental problems?

Within the Skeleton Corps group, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu were enthusiastically singing their battle song – Lin Huiyin’s new release NOT AFRAID. No matter who Skeleton’s opponent was, they would be stamped flat!

“Hello everyone, I am the omnipresent Fawn. Since before dawn yesterday through noon today, I’ve been recording the Diamond League’s kings competition for supremacy. I originally thought that I’d have a good afternoon nap, and I never suspected a certain someone would appear again in front of me,“ Fawn’s voice was still full of ridicule as he said. “Seriously, some people are extremely arrogant – Wargod No. 1 facing Wild King’s Light Cavalry. Everyone should already have heard of Wild King, but you still may not know of his specific accomplishments. Wild King has eleven consecutive wins in one versus one battles in the America region’s Diamond league and nine wins and one loss in five versus five group battles, continuing his defense of ranking as the Diamond league’s number one Light Cavalry.”

Fawn swallowed his saliva. “Very good, a simple arena map gives

us something to look forward to. Player Skeleton surpasses God, Amen."

He made the sign of the cross over his chest. League commentators could not avoid slight pauses in their speech to throw in some polemics. The likes and dislikes of the commentator were clear, and no one could do anything about it. Anyone who ate two milk cartons and had diarrhea for a week as a result would also have this tendency.

Fawn and Skeleton were full of energy. He still really didn't believe this guy was unequalled.

Aina was at Wang Zheng side. She liked Wang Zheng's ordinary self-confidence; yet even if Aina didn't really believe this match was winnable, hearing the commentator's introduction regarding this Wild King player sounded very awesome.

On a spaceship, Huiyin was curled up on a sofa happily eating popcorn. Her eyes were wide open. "Interesting, interesting, let me see how awesome you really are. Tsk tsk. The power of love really does make people blind!"

Very clearly, enough time had passed. Elder cousin should have arrived by now. For a boy? After one exciting event in her life, she became impulsive. Impulsiveness often was a devil.

"An Jili, do you want to eat popcorn?"

“Thanks, Highness.”

“An Jili, don’t be so serious. Do you feel Skeleton can be victorious in this match?” Huiyin smiled. “The name is very rebellious.”

“This guy is a blockhead. Wargod No. 1’s capacity is insufficient, and the deployment distance is too close. The differences between the two mecha are too huge. Unless his opponent is stupid, there is no way for him to win,”

An Jili meticulously said.

“For all you viewers who’ve already waited a long time, the battle will soon start. Please remember this moment, it might be my last time commentating a novice competition. Thank God, I will finally be set free,”

Fawn said uncaringly. He really didn’t care about the common people’s feelings. Of course there were a lot of supporters; after all, every competition had a large number of new spectators pouring in.

In the CT office, staff members were all stunned because 80,000 people actually paid to watch this competition. Of them, there were over 10,000 who chose the VVIP holographic level to watch.

What type of rhythm was this?

Solon continually drew the sign of the cross on his body, God bless and protect. By all means, don’t let his be my last supper.

Chapter 11 – Like Sweeping Up Dead Leaves (Burst)

The combat area was like an ancient Roman arena. This environment was the best setting at stirring a warrior's heart.

Without a doubt, this place showcased the pinnacle of technique.

Wild King's Light War Cavalry Type D arrived. Aslan Empire's designs had always combined beauty and power. It had a sleek look...even the mech's face was elegant. Supposedly, golden proportions were strictly enforced.

Of course, simple aesthetics really didn't matter because fighting strength was the most important.

Skeleton's Wargod No. 1 arrived on the other side.

Wang Zheng lightly stretched. Standing by his side, Aina didn't say anything; the feelings in her heart could not be expressed with words. She had acted like it was easy to be by his side, but Wang Zheng knew that it was actually very difficult.

One thing Wang Zheng could do was use the battle to express his own feelings.

"SORRY."

The battle still hadn’t started when everyone suddenly saw a usually non-responsive Skeleton write something.

To offer apologies beforehand, what did it mean?

Wild King also stared blankly. Could it be the other player was withdrawing?

At that moment, a sense of crisis entered his heart as a terrifying aura emerged from the body of Wargod No. 1; it was the same feeling he had only felt before during a dangerous street fight.

It was a feeling amateurs couldn’t sense, butWild King was no amateur.

Battle start!

“It finally started. We are going...eh, the Light War Cavalry is using long range suppression?”

Wild King liked the Light War Cavalry’s more violent style that favored close combat; however, he quickly raised the MP5 laser rifle.

On the other side, Wargod No. 1 increased its speed as it dashed towards the Light War Cavalry.

This...

Boom...

The Light War Cavalry's attack started. The MP5 laser rifle's power paired with Wild King's skill could definitely suppress his opponent.

This was a little excessive!

The spectators were astonished. They had already determined which mech was superior, and that the setting was more suitable for displaying skills. But using a rifle to finish it?

Wild King didn't hesitate in the slightest as he acted on the sense of crisis he felt.

As the laser roared, Wargod No. 1 increased the speed of his charge and executed the Arc Slide Step again, swaying with a heavy momentum.

Wild King was completely focused, and his hands lacked even the slightest tremor. Although he was firing freely with the MP5, there was a limit to what it could do.

After two Arc Slide Steps, any movement was courting death. A person's ability to operate had a limit; even if a person was a robot, they would still require a break. Similarly, a mech needed a buffer.

At that moment, Wild King's laser arrived.

Was it too late for the Wargod No. 1 to dodge?

Boom...

A laser beam shot out and exploded with a tremendous noise in midair.

Wild King's jaw dropped to the floor in alarm. Was it a coincidence???

The Wargod No. 1's laser beam and the Light War Cavalry's laser beam actually had the same trajectory, allowing Skeleton to narrowly escape destruction. Even more astonishing was that Wargod No. 1 threw away his laser rifle during this maneuver.

However, Wild King didn't have time to be shocked as he sensed a terrifying attack coming.

The MP5 quickly recharged, and the laser rifle rumbled once more.

Because of the distance, it was already too late to use Arc Slide Step.

GOD!

Everyone’s mouth formed an O shape as Wargod No. 1 abruptly swayed and the laser beams pierced through its after image. The mech had performed a nearly impossible dodge. It was as though it had teleported.

This was simply impossible!

If it was another opponent, they likely would have lost all confidence, but Wild King was different. Until it was over, who could say what the outcome would be?

The MP5 again blasted an attack at the incoming Wargod No. 1; however, a light flashed.

The Wargod No. 1’s alloy warblade directly pierced the laser rifle.

Ripple…

Burst!

The alloy warblade was sent flying. The retreating Wild King didn’t lose his balance and immediately flicked on his energy shield and unsheathed his lightsaber.

Then history’s greatest tragedy happened.

Later Wild King said if time could go in reverse, he would definitely have stood still, not moving.

In mid-air, Wargod No. 1 had already, as fast as lightning, recovered his alloy warblade and just as quickly initiated an attack at the Light War Cavalry mech. How was this disadvantaged? This move was completely treating the Light War Cavalry fight as a piece of cake.

In the smoke from the lasers, two fighters intertwined as the lightsaber and the alloy war blade violently collided together.

However, it was a one-sided battle.

As the two swords crossed each other, the lightsaber was suddenly blocked as Wargod No. 1 rushed forward.

Leaning Landslide!

Rumble rumble.

Despite the protection of the energy shield, the Light War Cavalry was immediately sent flying with Wild King dizzy in the cockpit. The mech was fine, but even if it wasn't real, the heavy attack still caused a certain shock.

After the Light War Cavalry was knocked flying, without any extraneous movement, the alloy warblade sharply attacked again.

Thump thump thump thump...

Ancient Europe had a sport called fencing that the nobility immensely enjoyed.

A one-handed, rapid-thrust style that used high-frequency attacks.

Similar to a strong wind, a chain of attacks formed together into a sword beam that slaughtered towards the Light War Cavalry.

Ripple…

In the blink of an eye, the energy shield burst open, and the Light War Cavalry flew into the air once more.

Yet, the Wargod No. 1 stood in place not moving, merely watching quietly.

Bang…

Before landing, the Light War Cavalry's chest exploded.

Everybody watching the program was extremely quiet. They were petrified as they watched the images.

This might have been a fight without any resistance, but nobody would have expected this type of outcome.

This was a Hurricane Strike!

This Skeleton God!

In the Skeleton Corps, a burst of hysterical shouts had already sounded in the air.

In the dormitory, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun madly jumped around hugging each other.

This fucker, his tempo was thoroughly heaven-defying!

Because Wild King's maneuver was smashed apart, he had no chance to retaliate. This was madness!

"This is bullying a child!"

"I didn't even see it all clearly, and it had finished. Is it an illusion?"

Slow motion playbacks were already coming out.

They were already attentively watching the evasion of the laser rifle using the Arc Slide Step; some experts also used it often, but it was his counter laser strike at the crucial moment that left him breathing room. How much precision did this demand?

This was only the beginning of a supreme god.

Moreover, it wasn't the appearance of an unreal Wargod No. 1 sockpuppet, but Wargod No. 1's extremely frightening pace. It's upper and lower body moved independently to the extent that the opponent's attacks were way off from misjudgement!!!

This was footwork like that of a phantom, the Bewildering Shift.

Such a move is top-notch in misleading the opponent. Supposedly, it was the military's ace pilots favorite move.

This was still just the beginning. If they couldn't believe what had happened just then, then their hearts would burst at the sight of what happened after.

At the moment when the two mecha were less than 10 meters apart. Skeleton decisively gave up his laser rifle and drew his alloy warblade. Then at a critical moment, he attacked straight at Wild King's laser rifle. Anyone would collapse facing an opponent manipulating a match this beautifully, but Wild King's will power was absolutely firm, and he was able to aim again. However, the laser rifle was still struck, and it exploded.

Wild King didn't commit the same mistake as Little Sister Red Dish, and he immediately turned on his energy shield; however, everyone felt he really should not have done this.

The simple shoulder strike split the rock-like defense and shocked the world. Watching it in slow motion, Wargod No. 1's entire left arm had sunk down. This fucker used all his strength.

The same attack was even powerful enough to severely affect an energy shield, yet it still wasn't the limit when performing this kind of fierce offense. Under this kind of attack, even if it was CT, a pilot may have been rendered unable to breathe. Afterwards, an even more terrifying thing happened.

Chained Lightning Thrust!

It was a sequence of consecutive, rapid attacks focusing on a single point of the energy shield to break through as quickly as possible.

That was the official explanation and even a child could understand it, but who could execute it with the same speed! The same accuracy! The same consistent attack!

The effect of Wang Zheng's finger and wrist strength was displayed. Because he was in such close quarters with his opponent, the end of the successive thrusts didn't allow enough room to wave his arm. He relied completely on combining a flicking thrust and reversing the rebound force from the reflection barrier back to his opponent to form an extreme attack.

The energy shield ruptured as easily as crushing dried leaves and smashing rotten wood. The power gathered from the barrier's reflective energy was enough to annihilate the mech. If it was a

real mech, then the mech pilot inside would have been eradicated already.

At the end, everyone felt helpless as they watched the Light War Cavalry fall like a leaf.

As Wargod No 1. stood in the middle of the arena, it was as if Ares himself had descended!

The experience was especially vivid to the VVIP spectators who felt as if they were personally there, and they could not stop their uncontrolled, mad howls.

This battle could ignite the blood!

Wild King buried his head in his hands as his tears fell uncontrollably. He refused to submit to anyone. It wasn't that he had never experienced defeat, but after every past defeat, he would have paid it back with double the interest.

But in this battle, he really felt helpless.

At that moment, he finally understood what the SORRY before the match meant.

When the official analysis of the match came out, Solon had already stopped believing in God and converted to the Skeleton God.

The new video was mixed with Lin Huiyin's NOT AFRAID. When the music and the fight were combined together, it was a sensational experience.

Paying spectators had miraculously surpassed 100,000 counts; moreover, ten minutes after the battle ended, they actually hadn't left, and the number of people logging in was still increasing.

Those who missed the battle could only cry themselves to sleep.

Red Dish and his 10,000 teammates looked at each other in dismay and were speechless for a long time.

"This guy isn't part of the armed police force but an Army..."

"The average person's body would be crippled after finishing this type of movement. It's absolutely impossible!"

"You really have to consider that perhaps the number of people who can pull it off can be counted on the fingers of one's hand, and they certainly wouldn't be bored enough to do these things."

"Boss, where did a prodigy like this guy pop out from? My hands itched watching this fight."

"Come, if you want to know the answer to that riddle, join the Skeleton Corps!"

Rainbow thought, beaming with smiles, It is getting more and more interesting. His premonition actually really came true. Before the battle, he already had a premonition this battle's tempo might be different than in the past.

The result turned out to really be that way. The battle this time was definitely the layman watching and experts seeing the road. The technique was secondary; the problem was how tough one's body strength must be before being able to perform it.

This result required devilish training.

Inside the Milky Way's Brilliant Star spacecraft, Lin Huiyin was still crunching on popcorn.

"The opponent was very weak, and it was over so quickly. This is boring." Obviously, Huiyin's schoolmates were very gifted musically, but in terms of battle knowledge, at best, they were probably able to tell who won.

The cute, stretching, snow-white leg and small toe mischievously flexed again and again. "An Jili, look at how flexible my small toe is. You definitely can't...yi!"

Also known as the Golden Ratio. It was used by many artists and is thought to be an indicator of beauty.

Chapter 12 – Boss, Don't!

"Even in Aslan the number of people who can perform this type of move can be counted on one hand."

"Eh, eh, can you execute it?" Lin Huiyin asked as she bounced on the sofa.

"I can. This type of person is still worth fighting." The corner of An Jili's mouth rose; yet, hidden within her haughtiness was also a trace of respect.

An Jili, who stood at the side, didn't make a single move while watching the battle, but she knit her brows.

"An Jili, girl's shouldn't knit their brows so often. It's a bad habit and will make you age faster. Sigh, I originally thought I would see a brilliant battle yet he won so easily."

"Your Highness, this one has a question!" An Jili said in a deep voice.

"Oh, question? What question?" Lin Huiyin asked with interest.

Lin Huiyin was happy. An Jili was an expert her mom had found. Being approved by her mother, who had stringent requirements, was definitely not an easy thing because her mom was Aslan's Iron Fist Prime Minister and was well known in the harsh Milky Way Galaxy as Kashaven Lin Aslan.

Fortunately, her mother was sticking to the tradition of the royal family and placing all her hope on her older cousin; therefore, she herself was able to have a happy life.

Regarding this trip, Huiyin thought it had become more interesting and couldn't say for sure if anything big would occur.

In fact, countless people wanted Skeleton to say some words, but, as usual, as soon as the battle ended Skeleton disappeared as if he were in a hurry.

☆ ☆ ☆

As far as Wang Zheng was concerned, this was the first time he cared about having a showy performance; it wouldn't matter if he was hit 10,000 times by Bonehead, he still couldn't let Aina down.

Taking off the connector, Aina stared fixedly at him, but he couldn't see any other reaction. Did it finish too fast?

Right. Aina's from Aslan so she should know about Wild King.

Fuck. I should have given him an opportunity to act.

As Wang Zheng was mulling over the battle, Aina suddenly moved closer and lightly kissed his cheek.

“Brother, this was the most brilliant fight I have ever seen.” Aina’s charming face reddened and her hand trembled a little.

Wang Zheng was dumbfounded. Despite his age, it was his first time being kissed by a girl. Also, it was even from the girl in his heart.

In the end, Wang Zheng hugged Aina on impulse; this was what he had been longing for the most. He wanted to fully embrace her in his arms as if he were holding the entire world.

A man had to take the initiative. Tyrant Su didn’t even know how many ways ‘to take the initiative’ he had explained to Wang Zheng, yet at this moment Wang Zheng’s mind was blank. Wang Zheng’s and Aina’s hearts were pounding; however, for these two who liked each other, instinct alone was enough.

Wang Zheng took the first kiss of Aslan’s most beautiful princess.

After resisting slightly, Aina’s eyes that could enchant all living things closed and what remained of the two melded together.

It wasn’t certain that her other half would be a prince, but he would definitely be brave.

Time had stopped inside the small room. Wang Zheng’s demands were as insatiable as an excessive child.

When the two walked out of the room with red faces and hands

held tightly together, the world seemed to have become like a scene within a movie.

The fat boss was an experienced person. After helplessly watching the two leave, he was unable to bear any more of it; he shook his head and sighed. “Youth is truly good. Thinking back, I was an elegant young man as well.”

“Boss, didn’t you say that you were even fatter as a youth?” An insensitive shop assistant inquisitively asked.

The boss was expressionless as his reverie of his youth collapsed. “Deduct one day’s wages!”

A miserable scream resounded in the internet cafe, “Boss, don’t! You are the most handsome man under heaven…”

☆ ☆ ☆

Despite what had just happened between them, Wang Zheng’s and Aina’s relationship remained a layer of window paper—a single poke and it would break. They were both very happy with merely strolling around hand in hand. It was such a foolish thing that Wang Zheng thought he would never do so in his life. Now though, it seemed he was a tsundere.

As they held hands, their simple pressed together palms soon turned into interlaced fingers. While riding the maglev train back, they sat looking into each other’s eyes. After sending Aina to her

place, Wang Zheng returned to school and laid on his bed, still feeling like he was in a dream.

Similarly, Aina also laid on her large bed in the Shangri-La's presidential suite. Outside she was guarded by a heavy security detail. As Aina softly touched her lips, a red flush suffused her cheeks. From childhood she had received training in Aslan's culture where bravery and strength were seemingly the required traits for a partner, yet the boy Aina liked had a warm heart.

When she first laid eyes on Wang Zheng it was through a window and he was a boy foolishly hesitating at the doorway of the restaurant. At that time, Aina didn't know how she became attracted to him. He was hesitating as if troubled, yet deep within his eyes he also seemed to have a firm goal and even held an aura of being matchless under heaven. How could these contrasting qualities show up in a boy with a similar age to her?

Aina's skylink rang, breaking up her reverie. The projected image was a girl who could match her beauty.

"Dear cousin, you should have already arrived. You must come and cheer me on at my Beijing Concert!" The girl in the image winked. "Grab that guy on your way and bring him so I can check him out."

Aina had told this secret only to Lin Huiyin. This little girl's gossip-filled heart was definitely burning hotly.

Happiness must be shared and the only person who gossip so

much was Aina's own younger cousin.

As the image disappeared Aina felt a little helpless. This girl is always looking to stir up trouble.

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng had just closed his eyes and was about to recall the sweet—suddenly his eyes opened and he discovered two big, round faces.

"Fuck, what do you two want!"

Wang Zheng sat up. Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun both had obscene smiles. "Elder brother Zheng, you have such a good thing. You have to share with your brothers!"

"Wang Zheng, as the dorm president you must set the example for how to act. Share your experiences." Yao Ailun also smiled.

"I don't have anything to say, but what are you guys so excited about?"

Wang Zheng was no fool that would honestly serve out a prison sentence. If he told the truth then he would be ridiculed to death by them.

"Naturally, it was that our great Wargod staged another crushing

battle. He was awesome as fuck. I even worried that Wild King's being oppressed has become an obstacle in his heart!" Chen Xiu said.

By Chen Xiu's side, Yao Ailun pushed up his glasses. The corner of his mouth was curved into a smile that revealed his so-called wisdom and strength. "Wang Zheng, there is no point changing the topic. As the dormroom head you cannot just focus on your own happiness... boss, introduce us!"

This turn of events was a little fast and made Wang Zheng unable to know whether to laugh or to cry.

"Right now I have also just started and still don't know who to look to for guidance. Don't you guys have a target?"

"Speaking about this, after being lectured by Tyrant Su about how taking the initiative was best,, I finally realized that intelligence always loses out nowadays."

Only after hearing Yao Ailun sigh did Wang Zheng remember that An Mei was also Yao Ailun's objective.

"Elder brother Zhang, you're the most amazing. In my whole life I've never seen such a beautiful woman like sister Shishi. Those so-called celebrities are all pathetic."

Chen Xiu revealed the envy within his heart.

Wang Zheng naturally had reason to be proud. This feeling was too incomparable. But if this was spread around, he feared he would be chased and killed by all the males in the Milky Way Galaxy.

“Big brother. Dear brother. If she has a younger sister, older sister, anything… introduce us to them.”

Ailun could always grab onto the main point.

Wang Zheng rubbed his nose. “I’ll help ask for you. How is your Skeleton Corps set up?”

“That is called a surging tempest. Let me take a look first. There are a pile of enrollment applications… oh, isn’t this Wild King?!” Chen Xiu said in surprise.

As far as the prideful Wild King was concerned, this defeat destroyed his confidence of possessing elite talent. Experiencing danger on the streets was a precious treasure that let him become an influential figure immediately after entering Apollo College. In the CT world he was even more invincible, but in this encounter he had been utterly defeated.

All in all he was still very young.

But Wang Zheng’s SORRY before the match nevertheless became the straw for Wild King to clutch on. He wanted to know why it had been said, and it was exactly because of this reason that he

didn’t reach the point of completely losing faith in himself.

Joining Skeleton Corps was just the best way to get the answers he sought.

Living on the streets taught a person that however far one falls down, it was just a place where one crawls back up from. Only in this way can one overcome one’s self.

Chen Xiu accepted Wild King’s application without the slightest hesitation. Wild King wasn’t the first and also wouldn’t be the last; moreover, what Skeleton Corps urgently needed at the moment were experts; too many newbies needed looking after. Sister Red Dish was one and adding in Wild King, the number of experts would only continue to increase.

This world nevertheless gave beginners little room to survive. There was no way to say for certain if somewhere in here there was someone who would create a miracle.

They couldn’t give up because of low odds; furthermore, people who break out this way frequently are then able to move towards the pinnacle.

Wang Zheng looked at the two’s administration methods. Military style, clear-cut division of labor, and still lots of fun. It was even more like a living community.

Wang Zheng was also slightly pleased with himself. After all, he

had lots of people who liked him.

Only, he had to train faster. At the minimum he had to gather enough battle energy to summon Bonehead in order to have it give him a reasonable explanation for the surprising change in battle energy… of course, given Bonehead's situation it was very likely he wouldn't get a result.

Thinking of Aina, these so-called problems all became fleeting. Everything will turn out for the best; he didn't need to worry about it.

Wang Zheng laughed foolishly as he laid on his bed. Suddenly, he especially wanted to meet with her, even though it had only been a moment since they had been separated.

Thinking it through, Wang Zheng decided to give Aina a message. "What are you doing?"

Quite lacking in substance, but lovers acted this way. He had barely sent it before he received a message. It was from Aina.

… it had said the same thing.

The princess was also a person; the IQ of brothers and sisters in love were about the same.

Afterward, the two started a continuous bombardment of messages lacking any real substance. A senseless subject could

make them both happy for a long time.

Yao Ailun on the side was unable to bear it. “Alas, an idiot has fallen into the pit of love once again.”

“Eh? Ailun, is it possible that being in love isn’t this way?”

“Stupid, being in love requires one to keep their rationality. Whoever falls first is the first to get hurt. We want to handle emotion with rationally.” Yao Ailun’s words were as profound as a professor’s.

Chen Xiu didn’t really understand as he replied, “My mom said that if you are sincere then you will have love.”

“Didn’t your mom ever tell you all women are tigresses?” Yao Ailun looked at Chen Xiu with contempt.

Chen Xiu shook his head.

“Let me tell you as your older brother; women are all very scary. If you’re not careful then even your skin and bones will be eaten. Look at Wang Zheng. If even a tenth of his IQ still remains right now, then it wouldn’t be bad. A simple topic like the weather and he’s already talked for half an hour. He can almost be considered a weather forecaster.”

Window paper is just that, a thin paper that is used instead of glass for windows as well as doors.

Chapter 13 – Big Brother Really Doesn't Want To Stand Out!

Whenever An Mei returned to the dormitory, she tended to gravitate towards Ye Zisu. Meng Tian was just too cold and unapproachable. Although she wasn't a bad person at heart, they couldn't get along so easily.

This Wang Zheng was truly fickle when it came to love affairs. He'd quietly gotten a girlfriend of his own already.

When An Mei told Ye Zisu about what happened, she seemed extremely calm on the surface, but deep down within her heart, she couldn't believe it. She could be considered as one of those who knew him a bit better than most. Practically no one paid any attention to him during his entire time in middle school. Furthermore, during the holidays he had gone to OMG and interned as a mechanic. When did he have the time to look for a girlfriend?

Also, it was extremely obvious that Wang Zheng was the sort that took a long time to warm up to people. To have suddenly gotten a girlfriend, she just truly couldn't believe it.

An Mei could see that Ye Zisu seemed unconvinced of the situation. "Susu, I also talked to her. No matter how I see it, she is a formidable opponent. I feel as though she's absolutely invulnerable! You need to be careful."

"I believe that with Susu's qualities, you are more than capable of

beating her. It's not like she's a three-headed, six-armed monster," said Du Qingqing.

The two of them were extremely curious about Wang Zheng. To be honest, she and An Mei felt it was slightly strange. Although Wang Zheng wasn't ugly, he didn't seem very exceptional either. They didn't understand what part of him had attracted two polar opposite individuals to him.

Even if his military performance wasn't bad... what did that account for?

Furthermore, right now, he had silently and wordlessly gotten himself an amazing girlfriend?

"That's right, our society leader asked us to speed things up. What happened with him? Does he want to go back on his word?" asked Du Qingqing suddenly as she blinked at Ye Zisu.

Ye Zisu understood her meaning. This wouldn't be a bad excuse.

"Susu, I support you wholeheartedly. Even if there is a struggle here, it is only an internal one. What we can't do is let outsiders seize our resources!"

An Mei clenched her fists and continued, "Tyrant Su is our source of insider's information. I will get as much info out of him as possible."

Ye Zisu bit her lip as she replied, “It’s all up to you guys now.”

An Mei and Du Qingqing looked each other in the eye. Deep down they were slightly shocked. On the outside, Ye Zisu was a gentle and kind person, but inside she was extremely haughty. To be able to make her admit defeat and look for external help, especially since Wang Zheng didn’t seem to harbor any feelings for her, made it seem as though they were in a dream.

☆ ☆ ☆

Aina was an exchange student. She didn’t come here just to date; she was also here to learn. Some of the lessons she took also overlapped with Wang Zheng’s. For example, Xiao Fei’s lesson. Even if it were considered on an intergalactic scale, she could be considered to be at the top of her field.

The two of them had already exchanged timetables the day before. Today, the two of them would get to go to class together.

Wang Zheng had arrived extremely early to reserve a seat, listening to music as he awaited Aina’s arrival.

“You like to listen to Huiyin’s music?” Aina smiled as she sat next to Wang Zheng.

“This song isn’t bad; you can really feel the energy from it. I prefer to listen to songs that get your blood boiling,” replied Wang Zheng as he removed his earpiece.

Aina gave a wry smile. “She used your battle footage in the MV, aren’t you proud of that?”

Wang Zheng suddenly pulled Aina’s hand, staring at his princess with pupils blazing. “Do you know what I’m most proud of?”

Aina’s face turned red. This bastard was becoming more and more audacious.

The bell signifying the start of class rang. A new teacher walked in and immediately moved toward the podium.

“Good morning everyone, I am your substitute teacher, Marcus.”

Marcus’ eyes swept across the entire classroom as everyone began talking animatedly. This teacher was well known as the foremost expert of the Math Department. He never taught freshmen. What was happening this year? Professor Xiao Fei started giving lectures and Professor Marcus was teaching freshmen?

Yet, such news was only beneficial for the freshmen.

“Everyone here should know that mathematics is the foundation of science. The millions of things in the universe can all be expressed as a beautiful mathematical equation. Even love.”

Marcus had very quickly earned a round of applause.

The more amazing a teacher was, the more likely they had abnormal standards. They were erudite and would use simple methods to convey complicated information. Furthermore, they could stimulate one's own thinking process.

Marcus had no choice but to do this. He was still unable to identify that student and Xiao Fei truly didn't know who it was. Yet Marcus felt that she seemed to be hiding something. Regardless of that fact, since the student was of this school and was a freshman, there would definitely be a way to find him.

Thus, he had chosen to conduct such classes and see if he could discover that genius student. Up til now he had yet to obtain any results. At this rate, Marcus could only continue to do this for another month before giving up. After all, his own research was still extremely time-consuming.

Aina was usually quite the responsible student who paid attention in class. Unfortunately, what Marcus taught was something Aina already understood. Aslan's elite education started from the age of 3 and thus she could not be compared with normal individuals. She could still feel, however, that Marcus was of a high standard.

As one of Earth's three traditional colleges, the standard wasn't as bad as she had expected. However, imparting knowledge was one thing; being able to create was something else entirely. If the ability to innovate was strangled, it would still be extremely difficult to progress.

Marcus quickly finished the lesson in half of the allocated time before pausing. “One has to be nimble in their thinking and willing to try. To be willing to dream and daring enough to act. I have a solution based off one of Marloca’s conjectures. I believe most of you have heard of it, the First Step is as such. Who here can understand this?”

As he spoke, Marcus began to write out a complicated equation on the blackboard.

Wang Zheng on the other hand was only looking at Aina. Aina couldn’t help but glare at him, “We are in class, what is so great about looking at me?”

“Shishi, are you trying to say that the old man on the podium is better looking?”

As he said this, he continued to tug at Aina’s hand. Aina attempted to struggle slightly before eventually giving up and letting Wang Zheng grasp her hand tightly.

The entire class was absolutely silent. Even though all of them were geniuses in their home countries, this equation truly stumped them.

Aina stared at the equation momentarily. Although she had previously understood this, she would never flaunt her knowledge.

At this point, a short haired man stood up, “Professor, is this equation trying to say that with Rodriguez’s theory as a basis, using computational analysis… …”

The short haired man greatly enjoyed being in the limelight of the audience, yet he had even greater hopes that the girl sitting in the front row would look at him.

Marcus nodded continuously as the guy continued to speak; he wasn’t bad. “What’s your name?”

“Landry Busen,” said the guy slightly haughtily. The rest of the class began to whisper among themselves, one after another beginning to pay attention to him.

Landry Busen was a mathematics genius. He had entered the Sol System’s Top 10 new stars. He had risen to fame by completely explaining Moore’s theory, thus becoming an influential figure, in middle school.

After entering Wargod College, however, he was disappointed when he found out that Marcus wasn’t teaching freshmen.

As such, he decided to use his own abilities to let Marcus notice him. A diamond’s luster could not be obstructed by dirt.

While he was explaining, Wang Zheng and the beautiful girl continued to whisper in one another’s ear, completely disregarding him.

This bastard in particular. Although he was from the Physics Department, he wanted to enter the Mecha Department's special training. He ended up being transported back half-dead after getting kicked out, yet had no sense of shame and could still act so happily and content.

"Excellent explanation, Student Busen." Marcus gestured for Landry to sit down. This brat could indeed be the one. He had also heard of Landry Busen's name. This was an extremely learned and gifted student.

Busen did not sit down but instead looked at the front row. "Professor Marcus, I heard that among us there is a genius from the Physics Department. Even Professor Xiao Fei holds him in high esteem. He often engages in lively conversation with the professor in class. Since mathematics and physics are quite closely related, I would like to hear his opinion on this equation."

"Oh?" Marcus looked at the front row. "Who might this student be?"

"Student Wang Zheng, what are your opinions on Marloca's First Step conjecture?"

Busen had singled out Wang Zheng to challenge him.

The surrounding students immediately acted as if they had been injected with chicken blood. On the other hand, our dear Student Wang hadn't even noticed that he had become the center of

attention. In the Physics Department, countless praises of him by Xiao Fei had already aroused the ire of many. Aina's appearance caused the fire to turn into an inferno.

In this day and age of dating, wooing someone would be very direct, regardless of gender. Even if there was a goalkeeper, it would only motivate one to score even more, especially if this 'goal' was of worth.

It wasn't that Wang Zheng just didn't listen in class, rather, he had already completely understood the entire theory long ago. During dear Student Wang's idle childhood and middle school life, he had spent all his time playing the theory of numbers with the Old Merchant. Hence, when it came to things like drinking and playing, he was a complete amateur.

Aina nudged him and said in a low voice, "Let us take turns to handle this, there is no need to be scared of him!"

The entire class's curious gazes fell on Wang Zheng. They wanted to see if this bastard's luck would continue to hold.

Wang Zheng stood up, glanced at the equation on the board, mulled for a minute before beginning to speak. "Marloca's First Step conjecture utilizing Rodriguez's theory is extremely wonderful."

Instantly, the entire class burst out into laughter. Was this not rubbish? This was one of the world's most famous theories, why would one need to praise it?

Just as Aina was planning to say something, the words remained stuck in her throat. The sort of smile Wang Zheng had on his face was something that seemed vaguely familiar. She had often seen her father and her aunt wear the same sort of smile.

“Yet, Marloca’s conjecture mainly relies on the fact that spatial jumps are able to break the space barrier. Rodriguez’s theory explanation, however, is purely theoretical. In practice, it is being phased out as his explanation for passing through the barrier would result in a deviation of approximately 0.1%. This deviation is already considered significant. With the necessity of spatial theory being more precise over time, this theory would also have to be phased out. Currently, the most practical solution would be to use Mill’s equation as the first step. In this case, the chance of deviation would fall to a 0.01% instead.”

The entire class fell into silence. Busen’s face was plastered with disdain. Was this guy joking? What is this Mill’s equation he was talking about; he had never even heard of it.

“Student Wang, is Mill’s something you can eat? I have never eaten it before, has anyone here eaten it before?”

At this point, raucous laughter could be heard in the room.

Marcus, however didn’t laugh. In fact, his heart already knew. “Hehe. Student Wang Zheng, Mill’s equation has not been verified and there are still some shortcomings in that equation.”

“Professor, you said that we have to dare to try. Mill’s Equation replacing Rodriguez’s theory is just a matter of time. At the very least, the first step has already been completed. A good start is half the road to success.”

“Hehe. Really? Why don’t you explain this first step.” Marcus smiled.

Aina stared at Wang Zheng. This was also the first time she had heard of this. A princess wasn’t all knowing. The mainstream view was that of Rodriguez’s theory, and furthermore it had been in use for almost 10 years.

Everyone stared at Wang Zheng. Spouting nonsense was useless; he had to prove it.

While they were all waiting for Wang Zheng to become dumbfounded, he instead walked up to the podium.

Chapter 14 – This Mathematical Theory Is Indeed Pretty Good!

Student Wang was not particularly interested in seeking the limelight but so long as he was provoked, especially in front of Aina, he would definitely not let it go.

Wang Zheng paused for a moment in front of the blackboard before beginning to scribble equation after equation furiously.

Originally, Marcus was not very interested. However, his expression changed very quickly. The disdain on Busen's face gradually changed into a look of petrification. He could only understand a small portion of it!

As one of the outstanding figures of mathematics in the Sol System, he had the best resources for the Sol Federation attach much importance to such individuals. Yet ...

Marcus continued to nod his head. Aina, who was sitting below the stage, was similarly transfixed at the sight. She could understand the vast majority of it but there was some content that was beyond her realm of understanding.

After a period of time, the entire blackboard was filled with symbols. The audience remained deathly silent, awaiting Marcus' judgment.

Marcus walked over and pointed at a string of inferences at the

centre. “How did you think of this?”

GOD!

His tone was one of inquiry…

Wang Zheng thought nothing of it as he had often debated with the Old Merchant about such topics. The way he saw it, the Old Merchant was like a library, therefore discussing with a mere professor wasn’t an issue.

Following another string of explanations made by Wang Zheng, Marcus couldn’t help but nod and smile, “Were you the one who solved the equation on the blackboard the other day?”

Wang Zheng stared blankly before coming around and nodding, “That was done casually.”

“Haha, I finally understand why Xiao Fei feigned complete ignorance about you.” Marcus said as he nodded his head.

“What Student Wang Zheng said here was completely right. However this method of analysis is at the very forefront of the Milky Way Galaxy and is only for the purpose of our discussion. Everyone here does not need to consider this at all.”

Following which, Marcus erased everything on the board. To the average student, forcefully teaching them these theories would only bring about harm.

It had to be said that everyone was stupefied. Wang Zheng returned to his seat as Aina stealthily gave him a thumbs up. That charming adorable look led Wang Zheng to want to give her an embrace and a kiss.

Girls were made to be conquered!

Aina truly believed that those supposed geniuses could not compare with Wang Zheng. Who would dare say that Earth's standards were low; it could only be said that the Aslan Empire was too ignorant.

Aina did not dare to represent the highest tier geniuses of Aslan, however, she definitely should not be belittled. Even so, she now understood how far away Wang Zheng stood compared to her.

He had ability yet he was so hardworking. Who else could do that?

Busen wordlessly sat down; he truly could not understand it completely. Consequently, he could not even retort. The words from the professor had also affected him, he had been relegated to the position of just an ordinary student.

How could a monster like him be completely unknown in middle school?

Aina, on the other hand, knew that this guy liked to only score 60

points on his tests. It could be said that Wang Zheng had quite the personality.

This lesson has indeed been quite fruitful, especially for Professor Marcus. Most importantly, he had identified the genius. There was no escaping for him!

He had once heard Xiao Fei mention that she had found a student with great potential. However this student had wanted to join the Mecha Department. That was absolutely unacceptable! It would signify a great loss for the scientific world!

How could those weapon brandishing barbarians compare with the scientists that pushed the very frontiers of human society?

In this regard, he was definitely with Xiao Fei on this one.

The moment the class ended, Busen came to Wang Zheng. “What reference book did you use? Where did you discover this argumentative proof?”

Wang Zheng smiled. “In actuality, I have no clue as to what I had wrote. You should be able to find it in the Milky Way’s databases.”

Finishing his sentence, he grabbed Aina and left the classroom. The moment they left the classroom, Aina couldn’t help but laugh. “You’re so despicable, mocking that poor guy.”

“Who asked him to look at you so lecherously!” Wang Zheng

replied, feigning seriousness.

Aina grinned. “What? Are you jealous?”

“You should reward me for being jealous for your sake. Furthermore I performed so well that you should reward me twice!”

Wang Zheng very quickly revealed his wolfish nature. He had managed to taste the sweetness of success yesterday. It was as though he had tasted an immortal fruit; nothing else could compare to it.

“What? I didn’t hear that.”

She was like the Little Red Riding Hood who escaped from the wolf.

Since he could not convince her with his logic, Student Wang was determined to use force. “Don’t run, if I catch you, I will punish you thrice!”

His maths was indeed brilliant!

Although he was training in an abyss of suffering, Student Wang felt as though he was in heaven. This was because fortunate times

often came without warning. Wang Zheng had received an email from Solon. He wanted to ask if Wang Zheng was willing to participate in an interview. For every question answered, he would receive ten thousand Milky Way coins.

Solon was extremely polite. This plan of his was still in the budding stages and thus his funding was not exceptionally abundant. However it could not be too low if he wanted to attract Wang Zheng.

Student Wang was at a loss. How could something like this happen? It was as though someone was literally giving him money and on top of that, flattering him endlessly. In his mind, an image of Skeleton appeared. Whether Bonehead needed the money or not, he did not know. However what he did know was that he lacked money and the more the better.

On the other hand, Wang Zheng knew that it wouldn't be good to do this excessively. Ideally, he could just answer a single question occasionally and not answer at all if he didn't feel like it.

Wang Zheng was not particularly interested in becoming a celebrity of CT. He was perfectly content with CT being able to sustain his lifestyle. Occasionally being able to enjoy the thrill of battle and being able to gain Battle Energy was sufficient. Hopefully it would not change his current lifestyle.

All in all, Solon was well on his way.

After receiving Wang Zheng's reply, Solon's heart finally settled

down. The current him was sitting in the Sol System's Moon CT headquarters.

Actually, such a sight wasn't strange. Ever since a couple hundred years back upon the advent of the internet, internet conglomerates were already on par with traditional commodity trading conglomerates. They possessed terrifyingly large amounts of resources and channels to obtain what they needed.

With Solon's unconventional success, it had stirred up quite some noise among the upper echelons of CT's management.

For today's meeting, the key question was to decide if they ought to increase the level of Skeleton's competitors.

Solon had prepared to increase the amount of publicity afforded to Skeleton. However, the higher ups were not agreeable.

"Hehe, Solon, it should be said that this risky plan of yours is inappropriate! We have no need to take such a risk!"

"I am of the same opinion. I have seen his battles. They are all extremely thrilling. Even if he were to continue winning, there are still too many unforeseen parameters! Who is he? What if he wants to stop? What would we do then?"

The board members continued to throw out opinion after opinion. On one hand, they were truly concerned about the riskiness of the situation. On the other hand, they were unwilling

to see Solon have a reversal of fortune.

If Solon was to be successful, what could they do if Solon were to climb over them?

As the Sol System's implementation board chairman, McLaren was absolutely silent. He continued to let the other board members continue to bicker. Solon also possessed some supporters but they were not as significant. Furthermore, Solon's own position among the board members was not high.

After arguing for half a day, McLaren raised his hand to signal for silence. "Solon, with your excellent previous experience, I will represent the board in awarding you a bonus for the year. I have seen your new plan, your dedication and rewards come hand in hand. However the key reason is still that Lin Huiyin used the battle footage to create her MV. If not for that, this would not have been possible."

After listening to his words, everyone knew what he was hinting at. McLaren clearly wanted to continue with the plan, Solon's luck was just too good.

Although he was not superstitious, it was always best to do things after considering one's fortune. Solon that old bastard was so lucky that opportunity was literally knocking at his door. He could very possibly succeed this time.

"Mr. McLaren, sir, I will swiftly advance with the plan. Hopefully I will be able to cooperate with Ms. Lin. On the other

hand, I have managed to gain Skeleton's agreement in carrying out an interview with him. During this period where Ms. Lin Huiyin will be carrying out our concert tour, we will have a massive opportunity which we need to capitalize on. If we don't, we will definitely regret it!"

Solon was extremely confident. At times he would struggle to live even when faced with death. He was always cautious regardless and that was the case when he was speaking here.

McLaren nodded his head, "The benefits are great but this is still a company. What we are concerned with are profits. Such mass advertisement would break all precedence and take up the vast majority of our advertising resources. I'm sure you understand that. Thus the reward..."

"McLaren Sir! I am both the proposer and implementer of this plan. I would like to thank everyone for giving me the chance, if anything unfortunate happens, I will take all the blame!"

Solon spoke very calmly. At this stage he was already forced into desperate straits, he could only advance and not back down.

Frankly speaking, this wasn't very difficult for him. When he thought of the situation he was in several months back, he was already at his wits end. At the very least he still had the luxury of choice right now and even influence the outcome.

"Very good. So long as you understand. This plan has been approved. All the departments should try and cater to his

demands. I do not want to see problems arising from disunity. Any problems that crop up will be borne by the group collectively!”

Spoke McLaren solemnly. As CT’s top management member, his word was law.

It was very clear from what he had said and done that McLaren was very supportive of this plan.

Solon had numerous problems but McLaren also had problems of his own.

In the Sol System, Earth’s performance was not outstanding. In the Milky Way coalition, the Sol System’s performance was average. If he wanted to excel, he needed a bright spot!

At McLaren’s position, he was not worried about stability but rather his reputation!

As the meeting came to a close, applause rang out. However one could see the false smiles that lay on their faces. They were all waiting to see a joke come to a conclusion. Being able to climb to such a position after being around for so many years was due to them depending on someone. Solon was clearly placing all his hopes on a single individual was too unreliable. Furthermore who could be so lucky as to continue winning?

Solon was clearly staking everything on this one throw.

Solon strutted out of the room vigorously. He finally experienced his second wind and at such an age to boot! He was finally able to do what he enjoyed after working in CT for so many years. He had climbed from a lowly programmer until he became Earth Sector's vice chairman and the one in charge of the Asian Region. He had already forgotten the joy of strife and was no different from a puppet. However today he felt truly invigorated.

Sometimes one has to trust their intuition. Although he had never met Skeleton, as a CT Addict, he had watched Skeleton's battle recordings endlessly, reliving every detail.

Technique, physical ability, experience and even his psychological state. One could unearth all of this from paying attention to the details.

He was truly a peerless and fearsome warrior.

Even though there were times where his performance seemed slightly strange, Solon's intuition told him that Skeleton was definitely not very old. However watching the battle seemed to show that he was a 40 plus year old experienced warrior who was at the peak. There was no other way to explain how he could have carried out the actions shown in the videos.

Even then, was there any meaning to it even if he did find out?

If one wanted to accomplish something, they can not spend their time dreaming.

Our dear Student Wang on the other hand was not thinking of such complex matters. All the more he would not realize that his performance would cause the inner echelons of CT to be bathed in strife.

Chapter 15 – Devoting Oneself To Art

Right now, the Skeleton Corps was in the midst of a fever, standing in first place with many players. The addition of two experts, Rainbow and Wild King, also brought in much firepower.

Rainbow and Wild King could lead people through group battles. Rainbow relied on steamrolling over enemies with his equipment while Wild King used brutal force to eradicate them. As they say, a good scout could turn the tides of battle. This made not a small amount of people delight in the extreme happiness of making a comeback.

In ancient times, they said that three stupid cobblers could outsmart Einstein. A good captain could bring about a miracle, even when the abilities of their teammates were limited.

In other words, the minds of many common person can beat a genius.

Rainbow and Wild King, however, didn't let this royal treatment get to their heads. When they were relaxing, they would come on to play and see if they could meet Skeleton or not.

Actually, everybody was wondering, if they were to fight in a group battle with Skeleton, what kind of spectacle would they see?

The godly pentakill from before was something that people recalled profoundly!

It was most advantageous for Yao Ailun, Chen Xiu, and Tyrant Su. These three people stood in a position where they could more easily interact with Rainbow. During group battles, they basically only needed to provide assistance. Then they would watch Rainbow exercise his power as he completely demolished the opponents.

☀

Morning classes ended. Wang Zheng received a skylink from Ye Zisu, asking him and Shishi out for a meal.

He could not refuse this, of course. They would meet sooner or later. Moreover, he could use this as a test. Other than Xiao Su, the one most likely to recognize Aina was Zisu.

Ye Zisu prepared herself mentally. She knew that the girl Wang Zheng would fall for would definitely be exceptional, but she still regarded herself as pretty good. Even so, the moment Wang Shishi appeared, Ye Zisu was dumbstruck.

Wang Zheng bringing Yan Xiaosu's love letter to her was the first time she and Wang Zheng had talked. At that time, her mocking had actually stemmed from a girl's inner aloofness and arrogance. Or, at the core of it all, she wanted to attract the other's attention.

Back during the birthday party, the appearance of the Aslan princess surprised quite a few people, but there hadn't been any who actually cared.

Those were two parallel lines, so much so that they seemed to be two parallel universes. Seeing Aina Aslan actually sitting before her now, albeit with dyed hair, Zisu still recognized her.

Wang Zheng smiled. “Zisu, Shishi came here to study for a while. Her identity is confidential at the moment.”

Ye Zisu smiled slightly and extended her hand. “Welcome, Student Shishi. I think that we will become good friends!”

The two girls grasped hands lightly. Aina also wore a smile; she felt that the opposite party seemed confident in something.

Ye Zisu held an advantage Aina did not have.

“Shishi, in the capital, if you have a problem then look for Zisu and it’ll be all good. Tyrant Su is unreliable.”

“Hehe. You called him Tyrant Su.” Ye Zisu couldn’t help but smile. She really didn’t know what Xiao Mei was thinking when she actually gave him that nickname. Not to mention, it was catchy and very charming.

Lunch was a simple meal in the school cafeteria, but the two girls had good appetites. Actually, this kind of food was obviously not up to the standard for them but....

Student Wang didn’t pay attention to these particulars. He was hungry, hungry 7 days a week. He wanted to eat a lot of food. He

actually ate several times the quantity of a normal person.

“You really can eat, must have been hard on your parents.” Ye Zisu laughed as she spoke.

“To be able to eat is the happiest thing in the world,” Aina replied.

“That reminds me, Du Qingqing has a complaint. You promised to be the fine arts club model, but you haven’t reported for duty.”

“Ah, I forgot. There have been too many things going on recently. I will go after the end of the afternoon classes.”

Wang Zheng had actually forgotten about this matter, probably because of the fear he felt when he thought about the fine arts club’s ‘ultra-manly’ president.

“Yeah, you have a beauty by your side. Even if it were me, my IQ would drop drastically.”

Ye Zisu spoke teasingly. She liked Wang Zheng. It had been four years since the day she had first noticed him in middle school. Originally, she had believed they wouldn’t interact, but fate was always interesting. After a series of events occurred, they both tested into the Ares College.

She didn’t think she wouldn’t have opponents. Meng Tian was one. Yet, she didn’t imagine that an opponent like Aina would

appear.

She knew that she had an advantage which Aina had no way of competing with.

Ye Zisu and Aina became friends as expected. The two had many topics in common. Wang Zheng also hoped that Aina would make more friends during her time here.

But when he thought about the fine arts club, Wang Zheng felt like his head would explode. He really couldn't be a model.

When the end of the afternoon classes arrived, Wang Zheng summoned up his courage. He was a man, after all, and if he said he'd do it, then he'd do it.

After all, it wasn't like they were going to kill him.

When he arrived at the fine arts club, Du Qingqing was already waiting for him at the entrance.

"Oho, our busy man has finally graced us with his presence. It was truly hard to request you," mocked Du Qingqing.

"Cough cough, Student Qingqing, for the sake of giving Zisu face, let me go. The moment you feel that I am not suitable, it will be

completely fine. Or just let me go immediately."

Du Qingqing put up her long hair. She seemed to be especially attentive to caring for her hair. Every strand was smooth. The soft, long hair of a girl touched the heartstrings of every man and was also very suited to the qualities of a painter.

"We still haven't started, yet you're already trying to back out. This is your style after all."

Wang Zheng rubbed his nose. When did he get this style thing.

Inside the painting room, there were more than ten people waiting. The majority were female, with two males mixed in.

President Zhang Runan was also there, her face expressionless as she looked at Wang Zheng. "Take it off!"

Wang Zheng jumped in fright. Take off his clothes in front of this many people?

Everyone laughed. It seemed Wang Zheng wasn't the first to get played like this. Du Qingqing endured as much as possible. "Well, there is a men's changing room to the side. Taking off your top clothes is fine. The main focus of today will be capturing the upper body."

Wang Zheng then let out a breath. So frightening. Why was there a custom of bullying the new person everywhere?

The club members readied their brushes and their palettes. Wang Zheng quickly emerged, having removed his upper body clothes without any problem.

But anyone who was stared at by Zhang Runan, such a masculine woman among men, would feel a bit unnatural.

The club members clicked their tongues in astonishment. Wang Zheng's physique wasn't of the very robust type. When he wore clothes it was even hard to see anything, but with his clothes off, every line of muscle was elegant. It was the Asian man's archetypal aesthetic.

Entering a creative state, the studio turned quiet. Wang Zheng, according to request, held a pose. An artist was always in need of a good model to reference. Drawing people was the most difficult because their familiarity with the subject naturally demanded higher standards.

A good model could be a source of inspiration. Only faint rustling sounds could be heard coming from the painters now.

Being a model and holding a single pose without moving was actually quite tiring. After an hour, Student Wang's first-time modelling session was proclaimed to be finished.

He was very curious, how did the drawings turn out?

“Do you want to see?”

Wang Zheng nodded his head. He began to sweat bullets when he saw the finished painting. How was this similar to himself? Was he similar to a monster?

“This is me?”

“We are not cameras. The model is the source material, and we draw what we imagine. Still, the president’s is the best.”

Du Qingqing sighed in admiration.

…Student Wang was not curious about that at all.

The ultra-manly president seldomly nodded her head in praise. “Not bad. Those who came here today, hand over your finished paintings to me.”

Until the ultra-manly president left, Wang Zheng had no space to breathe.

“You seem to be afraid of our president?” Du Qingqing asked with a smile.

“Uh, your president has a threatening atmosphere.”

“Haha. Is that so. But it’s rare to hear the president praise people. You are really fierce, to have not made a single movement for an entire hour. Simply innate model material.”

For a model, whether it were a professional or an amateur, they all moved a little. There were too few like Wang Zheng.

Student Wang was now currently being asked to be a model for this and that. He didn’t want to do it at all!

“My task is complete, I will leave first.”

“Go ahead. Thanks a lot! Let Susu treat you to a meal.”

Du Qingqing smiled as she spoke. Looking at Wang Zheng scurrying along the road, she was unable to stop smiling. He was truly an interesting person, to have made Zisu and Meng Tian fight over him. In the end, the person in question already had a girlfriend.

What a pity!

But art was still good. In the world of art, you could be the big boss.

At the entrance, Wang Zheng unexpectedly discovered that Aina was waiting for him. His heart couldn’t help but feel warm.

“What are you doing here?”

“I was scared that you would be eaten up by a pack of tigresses, so I came to rescue you.”

“So you haven’t seen the president?”

“A man just passed by here. Isn’t the president a woman?”

Aina asked in bafflement. Seeing Wang Zheng’s eccentric expression, she suddenly had an epiphany.

“Do you understand? I was stared at by her for an hour. It was torture!”

“You have devoted yourself to art. Fine, I will reward you a bit.”

Just as she said, she bestowed a light kiss on Wang Zheng’s cheek, one as light as a dragonfly touching water.

How could this be enough. Wang Zheng immediately hugged Aina and gave her a long and deep kiss. It lasted until Aina couldn’t breathe.

If they weren’t in a public place filled with people, a place where it would be hard to be excessive, Wang Zheng didn’t plan on letting her go.

“You are becoming more and more naughty!”

Aina said in a whisper.

Wang Zheng assumed a hurt face. “Don’t blame me, blame yourself for being too beautiful.”

“I didn’t think you really knew how to use sweet words. How could I not have seen this before?”

Aina stared at Wang Zheng.

“I am a genius, a complete natural!”

“Idiotic genius!”

“Okay, you dare mock me, you’re looking for a fight!”

“Ah, you want to bully me!”

Aina laughed and ran, Wang Zheng chasing after her. If time could have stopped at this moment, it would have been perfect.

Seeing the little princess so adorable in front of him, Wang Zheng’s heart was filled with happiness and pride. He wouldn’t worry about the future. Even if the world ended it would be fine!

☀

Time passed day by day. The special training members finally returned. Masasi had became captain in the end, and Zhang Shan had unexpectedly become the vice-captain.

Zhuo Mu had formally proposed Zhang Shan for having dual degrees to the school. Of course, he himself intended for Zhang Shan to switch courses.

In the special training, Zhang Shan exploded in strength. It should be known that he did not train in a particular style or system. He just normally liked to keep his body's physique in shape. This innate quality was one in ten thousand.

Due to his familial relationships, Zhang Shan actually liked physics. When he was in military training, however, his competitiveness could be seen. Through the special training, a genetic trait of his was excited.

He liked the feeling of battle.

Official members: Masasi, Zhang Shan, Ma Xiao, Meng Tian, Jiang Bin, substitute Guan Tao.

The entire school was full of anticipation for the upcoming exchange. If they were to be beaten to a sorry state by people on their home field, then they would lose a lot of face.

When he returned to the dorm, Zhang Shan received an enthusiastic greeting.

“Incredible! Big Bro Shan, you seem to have become more sturdy!” said Chen Xiu with envy. His own physique was too frail.

“Che, your brain has definitely been squeezed,” teased Student Ailun.

Chapter 16 – Seizing Control Of The Rank Advancement Match

“Wang Zheng, what happened? Such a pity!” said Zhang Shan.

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders helplessly. “There was no choice. My body caught up with me. It just happens for a couple days every month.”

Everyone stared blankly at him before bursting into laughter.

“If you could laugh at this, then something is definitely up.”

“Hehe, Brother Shan, Brother Zheng already got a girlfriend. He has been going everywhere with her, everyone is looking at him with envy,” said Chen Xiu.

“Fuck, no wonder he’s our dormitory leader. He’s always one step ahead of us. Who is it? Could it be Ye Zisu?” asked Zhang Shan. Meng Tian had been training with them after all, so it couldn’t have been her.

“It wasn’t Ye Zisu. She is even prettier than her. Her beauty is indescribable. I’ve never met such a beautiful girl with such a graceful bearing before.” Chen Xiu said as he gestured excitedly.

“Is it true? How could it be so exaggerated? Regardless, congratulations!”

It could be seen that Zhang Shan's mood improved tremendously since coming back from the special training. In truth, everyone had numerous talents, but only one would truly fit a person.

With time, one would have to slowly change. Zhang Shan was aware of it too. As it was a childhood dream, he was hesitant in making a decision initially. Yet, he now clearly knew that he wanted to develop himself in the Military Department.

Zhang Shan possessed an extremely logical mind and spatial awareness. With regard to directing commands for battles and decision making, this was extremely useful.

Most importantly, the battlefield gave Zhang Shan a feeling he could never experience in the field of physics research.

That was why Zhang Shan felt that Wang Zheng's situation was truly a pity. The special training had been an exceptional opportunity that Wang Zheng failed to capitalize on. But in the end, Wang Zheng possessed even greater talent in the field of physics, and perhaps it was actually a silver lining in the cloud.

☆ ☆ ☆

Aina brought color to Wang Zheng's everyday life. There simply wasn't enough time in the day. Despite all this, Wang Zheng continued to train. That unreliable Bonehead bastard; no matter what he did, he was unable to call him out. Wang Zheng could only continue with the training he had come up with.

The Return to One technique had reached a bottleneck, and no progress had been made for some time, but he couldn't relax because of that. The cultivation of techniques is after all like sailing against the current – one must press on or will be driven back.

When Meng Tian got back and received news of Wang Zheng getting a girlfriend, she seemed very calm. It was as though she didn't care. Even during the MMA training sessions, she continued to train normally, and when she spoke, it would only be about training.

The Art Society's modelling activity only happened once a week. The vast majority of Wang Zheng's time was spent with Aina. The two of them never seemed to run out of topics for their conversations. Wang Zheng would even silently sit next to Aina and listen to her talk about the world of the Aslan Empire and its culture.

It was truly an elite world. Life developed in the best way possible, but Aina felt that in the process of all this, the people there had forgotten the beauty of life. Yet, Aslan was the place everyone in the Milky Way Galaxy sought to live in.

Wang Zheng often spoke about the interesting things that happened to him. His early life only comprised of his dad, who was a huckster. Following that, he met the Old Merchant. Now that he thought about it, the Old Merchant possessed his own tricks.

Aina truly admired the Old Merchant. A seemingly simple book store owner actually possessed such vast knowledge—she realized crouching tigers and hidden dragons truly do exist among the common populace. One should never look down on them.

Of course, stories of Wang Zheng and Tyrant Su's awkward times were Aina's favorite. Their intimacy had developed to the point of exchanging passionate kisses, and would often mutter gibberish that was only understood by them.

Wang Zheng, in the end, still didn't understand why Aina would fall in love with him.

More or less, everyone who knew them didn't understand it either.

Aina gradually assimilated into the Ares College school life. She was very clear that she had to forget her identity as a princess in order to better enjoy the life of a student. This wasn't something a normal girl could do, but Aina wasn't a normal girl.

Like Ye Zisu, Yan Xiaosu, who often got extremely nervous around Aina, also discovered that Aina was trying to blend in and live a normal life while enjoying her time with Wang Zheng.

This caused Yan Xiaosu to feel the utmost reverence for Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng was a true man. No! A god of men!

Even if Tyrant Su had always looked up to Wang Zheng, his

recent reverence made Wang Zheng extremely happy.

These two single brothers had finally gotten attached to someone. This year, the two of them wouldn't need to drink by the lakeside as single men any longer.

☆ ☆ ☆

At Brothers Net Café.

Wang Zheng had to show off his skills every weekend. In addition, Aina loved the way Wang Zheng looked when he battled. In her own words, Wang Zheng looked exceedingly cool and amazing at that point in time.

Our dear Student Wang also had his own selfish motives. Honestly, he was more concerned about the rewards he would gain from winning. Even more importantly, the VIP room was secluded. In school, there were too many students around, and if someone noticed him, then the situation wouldn't be good.

Alas, even our dear Student Wang felt he was spoiled. After thinking about it, however, this was the result of his abilities!

Yan Xiaosu brought An Mei along as Student Yan wanted to demonstrate his skills in front of her. With Rainbow's help, Tyrant Su had finally managed to advance to the Bronze Rank. That glittering label improved Tyrant Su's reputation. He was now rushing toward the next rank, Silver. He hoped to eventually

achieve the Gold Rank and would do anything to obtain it so that his own standards could be met.

Yan Xiaosu and Wang Zheng had the same thoughts in mind. Lovers needed a private space and thus, up until now, Yan Xiaosu has only held An Mei's small hands before. He was truly too suppressed.

The relationship between males and females were very mysterious. If they could not progress past the point where their feelings were at an all-time high, then the only possible result was to remain in a friendship. To look at it from another angle, it would definitely be very pathetic.

Yan Xiaosu was confident that Wang Zheng had the same aim in mind. Otherwise, why would a noob-stomping elder run here? Boss was truly being a boss. Regardless of whatever he did, he would always plan things ahead.

After saying all this, however, once they entered the battle, Wang Zheng would be extremely attentive. He wasn't like others. If he didn't perform well, then he would have to pay a price.

Bonehead's training didn't allow for failure. He could not remember how many times he'd been electrocuted anymore. It was like he'd become an electrical conductor.

"You don't know who your opponent will be this time?" Aina asked curiously.

It was impossible for a member of Aslan to not be interested in military matters. In Aslan, every member of society had to go through two rounds of military training unless they had extraordinary circumstances. Otherwise, it was unavoidable even for members of the royal family. As a result, Aslan possessed the ability to rally an extremely skilled population of the entire country to arms.

Even a game like CT was played to the highest standard in Aslan.

1 versus 1 or 5 versus 5?

Wang Zheng looked at Aina, and she blinked. “Let’s make things difficult for you; how about 5 versus 5?”

Wang Zheng smiled as he selected the 5 versus 5 option. “If I win, do I get a prize?”

Aina winked charmingly at Wang Zheng. “Let’s see how things go.”

Dear Student Wang looked as though he’d been injected with chicken blood. He would have to perform well this time.

Entering Matchmaking.

☆ ☆ ☆

In the discussion forum, numerous individuals were currently waiting. 5 versus 5. Everyone knew that Skeleton was no longer an unknown newbie. Now that he was famous, the moment he appeared, he would be the focus of the enemies. How would he fight?

There were just too many variables. With Skeleton's current win rate, he would likely be placed in an extremely high skilled match. The Wargod No. 1's disadvantage in group fights would then become evident.

"Welcome, everyone, to today's 5 versus 5 group match. I am Fawn."

"And hello everyone, I am Tiny Suds. I will be commentating with Fawn for today's match, and have always looked up to Skeleton. I also can't believe that the first match I'm commentating for him will be a group fight!"

Tiny Suds was a famous beauty among commentators. This time, she was specially invited to be partnered with Fawn. The two of them were the most well-known CT commentators.

"It is my honor to be able to work together with Tiny Suds. Let us see what kind of surprises Skeleton will show us today. Will his Wargod No. 1 be able to create miracles in the group battle once again?" Fawn was extremely calm today. After suffering defeats time and time again, even a pig would change their personality. He would first observe the situation before making a comment.

“Fawn, I heard that you hold certain prejudices against Skeleton. Is that true?” This beauty smiled as she asked her question. With her oval face, laughter showed through her adorable dimples. It was no surprise why she was so popular.

Professional commentators not only received compensation for their work, but they also owned their own online shops. They earned quite a sum, even more than certain players.

Fawn was also an old fox, and he gave a wry smile. “What do you think? Don’t joke around. I’m an extremely cautious person. This tightrope situation can easily be overturned. Especially since it’s a group battle. The only thing I can do is to say my prayers for the ones who will become Skeleton’s teammates.”

“Really? Then let us wait and see. Right now, what everyone is seeing is the Newbie Arena’s Legendary Skeleton’s group battle matchmaker.”

The discussion forum immediately exploded with chatter. What kind of battle would this be?

The Officials had already been riled up and were currently awaiting the results of the matchmaking.

Romantic Young Master, Silver Rank 3

I Am Not A Noob, Bronze Rank 4

Don’t Run Loli, Silver Rank 5

Average Tom, Bronze Rank 1

Wang Zheng’s win rate was too high. After seeing Average Tom’s portrait light up, it could be seen that this was his Rank Advancement Match, from Bronze Rank 1 to Silver Rank 5.

On the enemy team, there were 2 Silver Ranks and 3 Bronze Ranks.

Average Tom was extremely nervous. He had to win 2 matches out of 3 to advance his rank. He had already lost one and won one. This match would be the culmination of all his hard work during the weekend. When he saw 2 Silver Ranks in his team, he felt extremely happy.

Unfortunately, there also happened to be a noob on his team. It felt like someone did a cold water challenge on his heart.

Ah… this ID seemed slightly familiar?

Wasn’t this the player that was extremely popular right now?

“The enemies have appeared. Red and Blue teams both have an individual hoping to advance to Silver Rank. This will be a battle where the players stake it all. We have seen Skeleton’s personal skill, but will it stand up to the test of a group battle?”

Tiny Suds smiled as she browsed through the opposing players' information.

"Group battles are completely different from solo fights. Most importantly, one has to coordinate and comply with others."

Fawn looked extremely calm, but deep down he felt extremely happy. This time, there was a chance. With the current situation, the opposing team would definitely focus their efforts on Skeleton. If he lost, then it could all be blamed on Skeleton. If they won, but Skeleton got destroyed, then he could once again blame Skeleton. This time he had more than a 50% chance of success.

Yet, what was depressing was the fact that Skeleton's matchmade teammates were all also extremely strong.

☆ ☆ ☆

The highest ranked player would become the team captain. Thus, the captain here was Romantic Young Master.

"Everyone, this is little brother's advancement match. Please help me out. Please put in your best effort!" Average Tom said anxiously.

The advancement match had become one which had to be seized by force. Relying on yourself wasn't enough. It required the strength of the team. Thus, he had to be more polite and sincere.

Romantic Young Master gave a slight smile. “Relax, our team has two Silver Ranks while the enemy team also possesses their own two. We do, however, have a hidden BOSS.”

“My god, it’s Skeleton. That’s wonderful!” shouted I Am Not A Noob. He’d clearly watched Skeleton’s competitions.

The two Silver Ranks were extremely calm. Higher ranks not noticing the lower ranks was also quite normal. Regardless, they had definitely heard of him.

“I have an idea; I will take the top lane and block two of the enemies. Skeleton will take mid lane and fight one of them. I think that shouldn’t be a problem. Loli and the other two of you will lie in ambush and quickly dispatch the enemy. After that, come and assist me—they will definitely be taken by surprise.”

Chapter 17 – Oscar, Go Die By A Thousand Cuts!

Romantic Young Master proposed a plan. A team leader has the right to assign roles, directing the overall strategy. Although Skeleton was very famous, he mostly fought alone and the rankings of group matches were dependent on the number of matches fought. This was called experience.

“This is a good strategy, we will be at an advantage down the road, while being able to provide fast support. Let’s win this!” Average Tom said while waving his fists around.

“It seems that both parties has decided on their strategy. Everyone, the match is about to begin!” Fawn said. Although the viewership numbers were increasing rapidly, they did not exceed the numbers of the previous match. Everyone had their doubts about the standard of a 5v5 match, as a group match wasn’t as exciting or exhilarating as a 1v1 match.

The so called pentakill would only appear when faced with total rookies. At the current level, such a situation would not occur even when faced with a loss.

And, once focused on, a brittleskin simply wouldn’t be worth anything.

Even if one could dodge a snipe, how many more could they deal with afterwards?

There was an official announcement posted on the net about the match, and the amount of exposure given to this match was greater the one against Wild King by far, yet how was it that the results were not as great as one had hoped for?

When Solon looked at the figures, saying that he wasn't stressed would be a lie, however he had already committed all his eggs in that one basket. He was not afraid of Skeleton losing, but he did not expect that the audience would not even buy the viewing seats.

The employees were scuttling around in a frenzy, as they were faced with a similar pressure. In such a matter one would either prosper or lose everything. Even their end of year bonuses were at stake!

Even with the officials trying their best, there were not many people in the crowd who would show much interest in the use of a brittleskin in a group battle.

This was especially so in a situation like the current match, where Wargod No.1's use would be limited. Moreover, a match between opponents of different skill levels didn't hold much meaning.

The members of the Skeleton fan club were the exception. Wild King had skipped class, though it wasn't a big deal, as it wasn't even his first time.

Group Match...

Being a Scouter, he was all too clear on the importance of an excellent mech in a group fight. Although it would be possible to focus on a single opponent, there were many unobservable factors in a group fight, and traps could be sprung one after another.

Rainbow wasn't present as he was in a middle of a mission. He should focus when on the job, after all.

Yan Xiao Su had great fun while fighting. Who could have imagined that Ai Mei was actually an expert ranked Bronze 3, even higher than him. Between Skeleton and his girl, he had chosen his girl, as the consequences of evading Ai Mei would be dire.

Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun had no issue with this, as they were already shouting and cheering.

Antarctica Battlefield

In a world covered by snow and ice, ten mecha descended from the sky, and, a minute later, an automated robot flew towards the starting zone.

Romantic Young Master smiled faintly and said, “Move according to the mech, we must win!”

“We must win!”

Average Tom hollered loudly and fiercely, encouraging himself.

Romantic Young Master rode his sparkling Paladin Type mech to the top lane. His mech was also a scouter, and, based on his prowess, keeping two people at bay would still be quite safe.

Wang Zhong took the mid lane. As he was using Wargod No.1 on the icy road for the first time, he needed some time to familiarize.

The other three people stuck to the top lane and advanced, fanning out onto three roads.

“It looks like our player Skeleton is full of confidence, he didn’t even hesitate to put his groupmates in a tight spot,” Fawn said while starting to shed fake tears. This was his fundamental way of subtle acting.

“Their strategy seems pretty good, and they have a silver ranker carrying them. With the combat prowess of Skeleton, he shouldn’t have any problems in the mid lane, and if the 3 people in the bottom lane successfully execute their attack, they would have a 70% chance of victory for this match,” Little Mo said incisively.

The number of people viewing was increasing, albeit at a rather slow rate. However it was at this moment that something unusual occurred in the battlefield!

The 5 mecha on the Blue team did not actually split up, but were uniformly making their way to the bottom lane!

What was going on?

A focused attack, breaking through the enemy’s defense, even if the 3 people on bottom lane were killed, the fortress they were supposed to defend would also be destroyed, and if they lost like that, what would be the point of this match?

“It seems that the Blue team is quite creative. What matters now is whether their rate of movement will be fast enough!” Fawn said.

Destroying bottom lane, then returning to middle. Of course, they would not have enough time to also get to the top lane. Wasn’t this nonsense!

Although, in his heart he felt that these five idiots should have rather chosen the middle path and destroyed Skeleton.

The audience were all stunned, as this was a tactic that was totally out of the meta and could be considered low level.

“Fuck, I spent money just to see this kindergarten standard match!”

“Are these guys even using their brains or are they just trolling!”

“Even if they wanted to group up, they should have went to the mid lane!”

“The two guys doing their promotion matches sure are unlucky.”

The players within the match could not hear any of this, as Don’t Run Loli led the other two guys who were advancing with all their might while saying, “Increase speed, make sure to kill the two enemies as fast as possible, so that we can reinforce the top lane!”

“Relax, I’ll give my all!” Average Tom and I Am Not A Noob were very excited, especially I Am Not A Noob as he was a fan of Skeleton.

A bit later, the opponent’s mecha appeared, two mecha which looked like they were rushing. Furthermore, they were the two bronze rankers, surely they were looking for death.

“Do not give them a chance to escape, forward!” Don’t Run Loli

rode his gleaming Hunter and charged forward.

Seeing the silver ranker rush up, the two bronze rankers immediately followed without a word .

However, it was at this moment that snow and ice blasted in all directions, as three mecha rushed out from the side. Boom boom boom...

Lasers thundering, the two mecha in the middle simultaneously launched their attacks.

The silver ranked Don't Run Loli only shot a single round before he was killed by a multitude of shots. The two remaining bronze rankers retreated to a side to fend the shots off.

Although he was slightly depressed, Average Tom did not act overly angry and said, "Everyone is at the bottom lane, those at the top and middle hurry up!"

This was a vital piece of information, especially for the top lane, as with the strength of a Silver Rank 3, it would be sufficient to turn the tide of this match.

Average Tom tried his best to stall and wrestle every single second, as one more second could be the difference for victory.

"Damn, my connection..."

A voice rang out from the side of Average Tom, Romantic Young Master had disconnected...

In that instant, I Am Not A Noob who was nearby got distracted and was hit — mech destroyed.

There was only one person left, and in this field covered in snow and ice the movement speed would be decrease. The mecha opponents' mecha were all Scouter type mecha, so their speed was quite good.

The five mecha started to circle around, and the Radiant Type A mech in the middle acted as if this was a hunt and paused for a short while, before exploding Average Tom's head with a single shot.

TRIPLE KILL!

The player riding the Radiant Type A, which was the classic perfect mech made in the Aslan Empire, was Natural King, a Bronze 1 ranker on his silver promotion match, and he had just gotten a Triple Kill

Silence filled the audience, before turning into noises of discussion—the trap actually worked?

Average Tom was momentarily stunned by his mech's destruction, before snapping out of it and thinking, What the hell

do you mean by lag, this bastard actually led us into a trap, the most shameless was to have 7 matched with 3!

“Fuck, isn’t this just a promotion match, that isn’t anything worth losing face for!”

The points that were painfully accumulated over the week were destroyed in a moment, this is so frustrating, FUCK. So what if you have money!

Natural King could not resist and laughed loudly. “It seems that I am the bringer of destiny. By destroying Skeleton, everyone will receive a 20,000 dollar bonus!”

This was also a form of entertainment, as there were many kinds of ways to have fun. Take for example the case of Yan Xiaosu who asked people for help to seize control of his match, however it was not as ridiculous as this.

Little Mo and Fawn looked each other in the eyes and said, “Looks like we are met with a style that is exhibited by very few teams, and that player Romantic Young Master could very well be the actor of the year!”

For the sake of ensuring victory, people would get substitutions, and the most successful way was choosing the same time while letting the people you requested group up with a random person of similar rank. That way, there would be a chance for them to be your opponent.

It could be said that Romantic Young Master and Don’t Run Loli played their roles quite well, with one rushing in and dying while the other disconnected. Even if he sued, it would not be of any use.

This method would only occur occasionally as the cost would be too high, so no one would have thought that this would be the thing to bring down Skeleton.

The 5 people all chose Scouter mecha due to speed concerns, as Skeleton chose the mid lane so there would be enough time to reinforce.

After seeing all of this, the viewership started to drop rapidly, and Solon and the employees stared with eyes opened wide. Damn, how much ungodly luck do you need to stumble upon such a of thing!

There wasn’t much to see from this point, with 5 mecha, 1 Radiant Type A and Taklamakan type B. The situation was akin to a cat catching a mouse, except that there were currently 5 cats.

The audience did not pay money just to be abused, however this match was too disgusting, there wasn’t a single shred of technique and everything was just an act!

Natural King, however, was incomparably cocky and said, “Your grandfather has money, the thing I play for is this feeling of invincibility. A trivial brittleskin, let your grandfather end you!”

Not being able to get a pentakill made him unhappy. If Romantic Young Master were to come over, he would definitely be getting a title. but he would never do it. Unexpectedly catching a big fish was, however, good enough to feel happy about.

The people in the Skeleton Fan Club were all stunned. What the hell was all this about, this bunch of people were really too shameless, what meaning was there in a victory like this?

“I don’t know what we should think of this, since, although it is unfair, there can never be too much deception in war. Faced with the facts, will player Skeleton surrender, or leave?” Fawn hopelessly said. However, the sharper people could spot him laughing through his eyebrows.

“It really is a pity, I was anticipating a brilliant match, and this is how it ended up...player Skeleton and Wargod No.1 made a turn!”

On the battlefield, 5 mecha were currently chasing after Wargod No.1, which did not increase speed and attack the fortress, instead waiting for them.

In fact, considering Skeleton’s speed, he might have been able to do it.

“Skeleton god, it’s alright, forfeit this match and report them, this is too shameless!” I Am Not A Noob shouted angrily. One could tell from his voice that he was still young, and he was slightly out of breath due to his anger.

Average Tom breathed a long sigh and said, “That’s true, this bunch of fellows are too shameless, don’t let them be happy. If they were to destroy you, we would be angered to death.”

Wang Zheng did not reply. He prefered using actions over words in expressing his feelings.

It was just as Bonehead said, the best way to treat your enemy was with destruction.

Wang Zheng’s eyes were filled with a murderous aura which spread out in all four directions.

System Warning: A snow storm is imminent, a snow storm is imminent.

Wargod No.1 continued to move in a straight line towards the incoming 5 mecha.

“It should be said, this Skeleton is letting his ego get in the way of his decision-making, which is not smart. If I were in his place, I would definitely just surrender, and then report them!” Fawn leisurely said.

Tiny Suds lightly glanced at Fawn with the corner of his eye at Fawn and said, “There are some people who will never understand the meaning of courage.”

Chapter 18 – Winning While Lying Down?! (Explode!)

Fawn wasn't angry at Tiny Sud's idealism. He gave a wry smile and said, "Courage is sometimes just an ordinary man acting bravely."

The forum was in complete confusion as everyone was in shock, even in private communications. What was over was over. The result should have been broadcasted live. Although it was infuriating, nothing could be done as no one expected such a situation.

There were many people who often skirted the line between what was right and what wasn't. If anything, a person could only blame their bad luck for the current situation.

One's teammate was heavily dependent upon luck.

The blizzard's occurrence caused the mech's speed to decrease while severely obscuring vision. Such a blizzard, however, wouldn't last long, and better quality mecha would not be as affected by the environmental conditions.

Many people could no longer watch the show. Although there were still people tuning into the livestream, it couldn't compare to the number of viewers leaving. There were only half the number of viewers as before.

It was clear that many were unwilling to see the result.

Solon was flabbergasted. This was the first time his grand plan was being rolled out.

And on the Moon, McLaren was also watching intently, a cup grasped tightly in his hand.

Luck was necessary for success sometimes.

☆ ☆ ☆

“Make sure he can’t escape. Give me the finishing blow! If I get the kill on him, I will increase the reward by 30,000 coins!”

Natural King was very excited—as though he was fucking climaxing! Being able to kill Skeleton in front of so many people felt absolutely amazing.

This was why he enjoyed playing CT. He enjoyed crushing his enemies with the help of his wealth, dominating them until they screamed for their parents.

Suddenly, the radar started beeping; Wargod No. 1 entered their attack range.

The blizzard was slowly receding. Although it had a slight impact on the situation, the effect was mostly negated.

The mecha on both teams accelerated toward each other. Blue team maintained their formation. The wealthy Natural King was protected in the centre while the other four players surrounded him closely. In such a situation, the power of an individual mech was even more obvious. So what if it was Skeleton? So what if it was a Wargod No. 1? Miracles were meant to be ruined.

Wargod No. 1's speed increased more and more. It flew over the rugged, icy terrain with great speed and was completely different from its originally slow speed.

Exceptional speed might not necessarily be a good thing. One had to know that braking was even harder in such terrain.

Laser fire blanketed the snowy plains, coating it with a resplendent array of lights. Wang Zheng held his laser rifle in his left hand while his right hand clutched an alloy knife as he calmly advanced.

He was in their firing range now.

Boom!

It was a competition of one's accuracy!

"Fuck, the damned snow is affecting my vision!"

“No need to aim, just spray and pray. With so many of us here, we’re bound to destroy him!”

“Fuck, if you actually destroy him, then we lose 30,000 coins!”

After Natural King spoke up, the other four players reduced their firing rate. Wang Zheng’s speed didn’t decrease, however, and his laser rifle constantly fired.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

“Fuck! That bastard hit us!”

“I’ve been hit!”

“What are you worried about? You have energy shields. These explosions are meaningless!”

The lasers hit them again and again, and the other four no longer cared about the extra prize. If they lost, they would absolutely lose all of their reputation.

A firefight ensued as explosions echoed around the battlefield.

By this point, Wargod No. 1 suddenly leaned over. It had actually started skirting around the battlefield at a 45° angle to the ground, using inertia to maintain its posture!

Simultaneously, the laser rifle in its left hand was calmly firing at not just a single target, but at all five mecha simultaneously!

Meanwhile, the five of them were still lined up in a row firing wildly. Wargod No. 1 was like a snowy ghost, weaving in and out while the laser beams were only able to cause explosions of snowy flowers as they missed him time and time again. Ironically, this obstructed their vision even more.

“Fuck. He disappeared… No! He’s next to us!”

An alarm rang out which meant that the enemy’s mech was extremely close to them.

All of them had already drawn their laser swords. Then a pile of snow exploded, and a Wargod No. 1 was seen falling from the sky. At this point, the five scout mecha were already fully prepared to fight.

“Destroy him!” shouted Natural King hysterically. Right now, it didn’t matter who killed him.

Snow slowly drifted down.

The five seemingly sluggish scout mecha suddenly burst into action. They weren’t noobs. Even the worse one among them was a bronze player. Although Natural King looked dumb, his mech reacted the fastest. His laser sword was the first to lunge toward Wargod No. 1.

Wargod No. 1 braked and kicked in, the mech plummeting. Pushing the mech to its limits, Wargod No. 1 used the great plummeting speed to increase the inertia of its rotation as it spun downward.

Wargod No. 1 fell straight into the center of the enemies. Lasers fired, and an alloy knife danced amongst a string of blossoming fire flowers.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

DOUBLE KILL!

TRIPLE KILL!!

QUATRE KILL!!!

Bang!

The Radiant Type A Mech's energy shield was destroyed, and the mech was knocked down by the Wargod No. 1, whose feet were pressed firmly on the mech.

A laser rifle was pointed right at its head.

Natural King was completely flustered. All he'd seen was a snow flower, followed by a ring of light which brought with it a string of

fiery explosions before it had all ended.

“No... No, don’t kill me! Let me win! I’ll give you 100,000!” Natural King shouted. This was his last chance.

“Either live a despicable life, or be immortalized in battle!”

Boom...

The laser rifle flashed four times. Mech destroyed!

PENTA KILL!!!!!

The system announcer screamed wildly!

GOD!!!!!!!

Red Team WIN!

☆ ☆ ☆

A cry rang out. Tiny Suds jumped up excitedly. She had completely forgotten her previous analysis and was instead roaring endlessly in excitement.

Everything went crazy!

“Boss! Boss! It’s about to explode! It’s going to explode! It’s DEFINITELY EXPLODING!”

On the data boards, the constantly dwindling number of viewers had suddenly exploded upward like a rocket launching into space. In a short timespan, it had reached the skies.

Solon’s hand clutched the side of the table tightly. “Immediately analyze the video!”

“Boss! It’s a call from headquarters!”

“Receive it.” Solon calmed himself slightly before speaking.

It was McLaren.

“Congratulations, Solon!”

“Thank you, Chairman!”

Although it was a simple congratulations, the meaning behind it was extraordinary.

It was as McLaren had said, success required a certain element of luck.

“Boss. The two newly added servers installed to accommodate traffic are full. The number of VIP’s has exceeded 500,000!”

Even the workers were rambling incoherently at this point.

“Boss. The ones who have become VVIP’s have exceeded 200,000. We’ve set a new record!”

“Boss. The number of hits have exceeded 2,000,000!”

The situation for Solon was extremely wonderful.

“ ‘Either live a despicable life, or be immortalized in battle!’ ” Solon mused over those words.

☆ ☆ ☆

No one else left. Those who had left, upon hearing the news, immediately regretted their decision.

At Brothers Net Café, Yan Xiaosu was hugging An Mei and giving her a deep kiss while cheering excitedly. This time, An Mei didn’t reject his advances!

There truly existed such tyrannical people in this world.

Congratulations, Player Average Tom, you have been promoted

to Silver Rank 5.

Average Tom stared blankly as he sat at home. Was this even possible???

He was promoted. He'd failed for an entire month, but succeeded under such circumstances?

Fawn's eyes were about to pop out of their sockets. This bastard could win even under such circumstances. How could anyone live!?

This was Skeleton Army's festival. "I'm Not Afraid!"

Countless people from numerous backgrounds were all shouting and cheering together. This was the strength of battle!

This was a hero!

No one left as they were waiting for the video analysis to come out.

Either live a despicable life, or be immortalized in battle!

The huge headline came out and numerous people rushed over. The ones who were already streaming were extremely lucky.

The slow-motion video started playing.

Only like this could one see what was happening during the blizzard. Blue team's unscrupulous blind firing didn't manage to hit even a hair of Wargod No. 1. They had been overconfident. On the other hand, Wargod No. 1's control was like that of a snow ghost. What was supposed to be a restriction on mecha ended up becoming Wargod No. 1's strength.

"He was using the main engine's thrust to assist his slide. Fuck. How is this possible!" Fawn suddenly shouted. Although his personality left much to be desired, his knowledge, however, was superb.

The blizzard affected the accuracy of the five mecha but didn't affect Wargod No. 1. Every shot made by Wargod No. 1 hit its target.

Right now, the video was edited to show a 360° view of the situation. Regardless of whether Wargod No. 1 was sliding and firing from left to right or right to left, every single hit landed at the exact same position. This showed that the individual had supreme confidence in their firing skills.

This showed that the last fight with Wild King wasn't a fluke!

Wargod No. 1 was calm and cold-blooded as it slaughtered its enemies on the snowy plain.

This was in contrast to its maniacal maneuvers.

Yet, getting that close was dangerous.

As Wargod No. 1 leaned forward as it advanced, it used its inertia to keep itself close to the ground. Thus, on the snowy plains, Wargod No. 1 maintained full control and could accelerate quickly. In addition, it was from a direction no one expected.

The more dangerous the approach, the safer it would be!

Although everyone understood this concept, acting upon it was a completely different idea.

In the blink of an eye, he had rushed in front of them. Natural King and the rest had already made their preparations and were prepared to chop him into pieces. Yet, the brilliant use of an emergency brake maneuver had thrown them off.

Upon braking, the engine went into reverse and allowed the mech to forcefully land, all of which was part of his calculations.

What happened next was a terrifying battle.

This was something that could only have been done by repeatedly polishing oneself in a deadly snow environment.

Carlman’s Tornado of Death!

That year, Carlman from Mars had faced off against fifteen enemies on the planet's ice field with this very move.

But that had been done in a mech that was specially adapted for the environment while this was a Wargod No. 1!

Even if one used the Tornado of Death, no one would be killed!

Once the video analysis came out, everyone felt a sense of fervent bewilderment.

The sparks from the alloy knife hadn't been due to him attacking. It happened in self defense. In a brief moment, he had deflected all of the attacks while the killing blow was actually delivered by the laser rifle. Delivering shots to the head at close range, within two exchanges, he had killed four of them!

The closer one was to the enemy, the more intense the fight would be. In addition, the previous fight had exhausted them, and it would have been enough to simply destroy them.

But what was most important was this bastard's control! His body and mind were synchronized to the point where an ordinary person couldn't possible do what he did.

Tornado of Death with dual control!

The video paused at this moment. The laser rifle and alloy knife were pointed in different directions and held at different angles. The mech itself was also pointed in a third direction.

This was the multi-tasking ability used to dual control!

When the match had ended, people were already going crazy. After watching the analysis, everyone went absolutely ballistic!

This was truly an example of godly piloting!

PENTAKILL!!!!!

It would forever be engraved in their hearts!

However, another word was to be announced...

GOD!

This was the legendary announcement.

Being able to kill five enemy mecha alone, and dealing at least 80% of the damage to each one... Obtaining these five kills within five minutes, meaning a chain of kills, would trigger the announcement of the highest prestige in the CT battlefield.

GOD!!!

Skeleton God had finally descended!

Chapter 19 – The Popular Mecha

It had been planned for an interview to be conducted with Skeleton, but it was too late as he'd already left.

Actually, Student Wang Zheng had waited for the interview for quite a while. But afterward, he'd found that everyone had ignored him and was too embarrassed to stick around. He'd also felt that there weren't any questions worth asking. As for the 10,000 credits per question agreement, how could there be such a good thing?

☆ ☆ ☆

"Brother Xiu, Brother Xiu, please add me! My name is 'I Am Not A Noob!'. I just fought a battle with Skeleton God, so I beg you, please let me join!"

I Am Not A Noob had already sent in a dozen requests to join the group, but Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were starting to get frantic. That bastard, Local Tyrant Su, had also run off at such a critical moment.

The first thing Rainbow said when he logged on was, "It's so noisy. What'd I miss?"

"Lord Rainbow, hurry up and take a look. Deathly Ice Tornada and Dual Control! Skeleton God has defied the heavens once again! PENTAKILL!"

Rainbow was dumbfounded, but he hurriedly entered the VVIP section while cursing. The clarity and live action there was the best. Even with the match having ended, the number of viewers did not decrease at all..

This was something they could watch over and over again if given the chance.

“Fuck! After practicing for a month, I can still only spin in place with my Deathly Ice Tornado!”

“I’d previously thought it to be just a fancy skill and without any practical combat use. Never would I have thought it could be such a useful technique in battle. This heaven defying God!”

“This technique is extremely risky. I’ve seen a person use it before, but he ended up fainting after spinning once

“Dual Control! It’s said that one must practice being able to use chopsticks with both hands.”

☆ ☆ ☆

Stepping out, Wang Zheng spread his arms and said, “My beautiful little princess, come here and hug me.”

Aina couldn’t restrain a look of fanaticism towards Wang Zheng. This wasn’t an attack that was possible to execute without painful training. She asked him, “How did you do that?” as she obediently

walked over.

Wang Zheng gently hugged Aina and placed her on his lap. He'd felt as though he was finally able to show off a bit. "I did tell you I was a genius. Now I want to collect my debt, along with the added interest."

Aina rolled her eyes and showed off an appearance of one acknowledging their fate. Girls really needed to be conquered, and she liked Wang Zheng's overbearingness and courage.

Only after a bout of passionate kissing did Wang Zheng finally release Aina. This made the adorable little princess pout, and she proceeded to lightly hammer at Wang Zheng while complaining, "You sure have a lot of guts. If other people see me being angry, they don't even dare breathe loudly. Yet, you dare to bully me every single day! I didn't cross so many kilometers just to let you bully me!"

"You may be the princess of Aslan, but while here, you're just my Shishi!" exclaimed Wang Zheng before smashing his lips up against Aina's once more without giving her a chance to resist.

If you don't give up, then I'll kiss you until you surrender!

After a short while, Aina could only go with the flow. But, this bad boy's tongue was so disobedient as it tried to dig deeper and deeper...

It was at this moment that the door was hammered open from the outside as Yan Xiaosu rushed in. The two hurriedly stopped their actions, but they only separated their lips as Wang Zheng wasn't willing to shove Aina away. He couldn't have done so anyway.

"Yan Xiaosu, you're courting your own death!"

This fellow sure turn up at such a timing, when he had almost managed get what he wanted.

An Mei who stood behind Yan Xiaosu could clearly understand what had happened. After all, she'd also just been bullied by him this same way.

"Shishi, come here. These brothers aren't good people, always trying to reap benefits from us."

"Luckily, you came at the right time!" exclaimed Aina as her face turned red.

"Cough cough. Boss, please don't blame me since this is a big matter. Skeleton God has once again gone nuts and achieved a heaven defying pentakill! And not just any ordinary pentakill, but a god-exceeding pentakill!"

Yan Xiaosu felt as though he'd reached out and grabbed the skies. This was caused by him kissing An Mei, allowing their relationship to reach the next level.

Wang Zheng felt the impulse to skin this fellow alive, but felt lucky he hadn't told him he was Skeleton or else, there would be chaos worldwide. Even such a small matter had triggered a frightening reaction from him.

"You, treat me to food!"

It wasn't clear if An Mei did it intentionally, but she was always pulling Aina along with her. This was a third-wheel expert move.

"No problem, no problem! Boss, I'm telling you that you definitely need to watch this. If you want to improve, then you have to place your trust in Skeleton God!" Yan Xiaosu couldn't resist saying this as he followed behind them.

"You're the fella who can't grasp the important things!" Wang Zheng shook his head hopelessly.

Only after he saw the two girls walking in front of them did Yan Xiaosu realize, How could I cut people off like that!?

Boss sure is wise. Although the video could be watched slowly at home, he would have to say goodbye to his happy time if he offended An Mei.

"Let's go, tonight we eat good food!"

“You all choose a place—it’s my treat.” Wang Zheng thought that after fighting so many times, he should already have some money on him.

“Wow, had I known earlier, I wouldn’t have eaten today!” Yan Xiaosu said smiling.

“Since that’s the case, we’ll have to eat more!” An Mei teased as if she would feel uncomfortable if she didn’t constantly tease him. “Shishi, you wouldn’t mind, right?”

“Sure, it’s up to you guys.”

The four of them laughed loudly and temporarily halted the questions. Wang Zheng could feel the battle energy within his chest rising, and he didn’t know whether it was the deaths or that fall that attributed to it. All of it had been done instinctively, on the foundation of the Plum Blossom Stakes. He’d slipped upon landing and had to take advantage of the attacks to stay balanced, leveraging the force to protect his vitals and assist in his attacks.

As for the Dual Control... having completed the sickening and perverted training at Bonehead’s place, it couldn’t be considered anything special.

Aina’s heart was still thumping loudly. She’d discovered that it had become harder and harder to control it—each and every one of Wang Zheng’s actions would send her into a trance. What in the world was happening?

☆ ☆ ☆

War God Covenant's regular announcement on the statistics of mecha.

The three newest and hottest mecha within the Sol System.

Shadow Sky Calamity Type III: Aslan's super mobile warrior series, designed as an all-weather scout, its fearsome attack capabilities and extremely difficult controls being its unique traits. Usually considered a top-ranking difficulty mech within CT, no one was able to display its abilities to the fullest. It was a mech that was able to defy the heavens, labeling it with the nickname of 'The Terminator Mech'.

Atlantis' Dragon Roar: From the Atlantis Republic's super mecha warrior series, this mech is a king of naval combat. Within regions filled with water, it is considered a bug-type mech and is a favourite of players who like naval combat.

Wargod No. 1: Practice mech.

The competition for the top three mecha which took place every quarter was very fierce. The Milky Way Alliance was constantly updating its statistics, and although it was hard to completely replicate the abilities of the top-tier mecha, a similarity of about 90% was within reach. These mecha would receive the highest of praises from top-ranking players when they appeared.

At present, the military of various federations, republics, and empires were primarily researching these kinds of mechas. This was one of the unspoken rules of the Milky Way Alliance. In an era that banned all kinds of complete annihilation weaponry, battleships and mecha became the core of combat. This was especially true for high agility mecha, causing their importance to increase over time.

Many scientists predicted that in the future, with the improvement and downsizing of technology, mecha would become the primary combat force and the highest tier of human and machine unity.

Yet, with such fierce competition a forever free-of-charge mech, the Wargod No. 1, managed to rise to the top three rankings. This was nothing short of being labeled a miracle.

A lot of people presumed it to be an error made by the officials, or some sort of new super mech in production which was named Wargod No. 1 as well.

After the end of Skeleton's recent battle, Wargod No. 1 coincidentally managed to leave behind Maacah Republic's super soldier mech, Explosive Ghost King, and claim third place.

The members comprising the Skeleton Army were no longer restricted to the continent of Asia, or even to the Earth. There were also a few players from Mars and the Moon that had begun joining.

After the most recent fight, Skeleton had reached nine consecutive victories. While this win rate wasn't really considered shocking as there were still experts with over twenty straight wins, no one could use Wargod No. 1 to such an extent and achieve a streak like that. It even included three group battles!

Furthermore, the players had realized that in the two most recent battles, Skeleton must have received some kind of stimulation as he had begun to act quite overbearing.

Natural King was quite unlucky. In the end, he was banned for three months. It had been all done under the public's eyes, so he could not even try feigning ignorance.

Yet, no one cared about him. Instead, they felt that they should thank this fellow. If he hadn't wasted so much effort, then there wouldn't have been such an achievement during a regular fight.

The most pitiful thing was that the round of interview which the officials had originally proclaimed would follow didn't happen after all. The final explanation given by the officials was simply too shocking. Their employees had forgotten to remind the other part and they'd therefore forgotten about it.

Tiny Suds also officially apologized through her skylink. Although the commentators had highlighted the various shocking events throughout the matches, they'd still been blown away by the match and ended up forgetting about the interview.

When faced with such a cute and beautiful lady, everyone became

amiable. Furthermore, it wasn't like Skeleton didn't said a single word this time. The moment he opened his mouth, it had turned into an idiom. This phrase became quite popular and many players would act pretentious when using it after the battle was over. They'd shamelessly say, 'Either live a despicable life, or be immortalized in battle!'

Afterward, they'd end their opponents while saying stuff like 'amen' or 'hallelujah'.

Although there were quite a few cheaters out there, it still didn't stop the fervor players had towards Wargod No. 1. It couldn't be said that this was due to a change in their mentality, but that being able to use Wargod No. 1 and still achieve victory in a seemingly unfavourable environment was a sensation of victory like no other.

This unrest was a trend that grew larger and larger. It wasn't something anyone in the continent of Asia could resist.

Of course, behind this noisy episode were experts who couldn't just take such a thing lying down. But while these high-end experts were being challenged and questioned, they couldn't just head down to the lower ranks and compete. That was simply a disgrace to these experts.

The high end sections and low end sections held different difficulties. When faced with newbies, there was a high possibility of an explosive combat taking place. This wasn't possible, however, within the high end section as their opponents weren't pigs.

When they weren't in an impulsive mood, there would only be an extremely fleeting chance of a pentakill occurring. The appearance of a god kill—killing the opponents while taking less than 80% damage—was already the limit. Furthermore, combat wouldn't be so exaggerated. Everyone knew that was the case, and anything lower than that was just people having fun playing around.

Other than Wild King and his fervor for acknowledging new people, the others didn't even spare a glance as they didn't feel any satisfaction from that kind of victory. Fighting such matches would just degrade their status.

Even though it had become such a big trend, the professionals and most of the experts had yet to comment on it.

Naturally, there were also a few who claimed that they could smash Skeleton God with a single hand and such, leading to an explosive reaction with the corps.

Volume 4 – God of Darkness

Chapter 1 – So Science Students Can Actually Be Like This!

Regardless of how it came about, Solon was extremely happy to have managed to set a new record. He was unsure what would have happened to him had he failed, but his stress was greatly reduced with the completion of the first step of his plan.

Solon was currently focused on Lin Huiyin's music concert on Earth. The Heavenly Voice Huiyin Corporation certainly was not lacking in their finances, and although Lin Huyin was very popular and highly sought after, they mainly endorsed events that were geared towards the welfare of the public.

Even if they were not lacking money, Solon had to be diligent in ensuring a harmonious cooperation with them. After all, it would end up helping out both his plan involving Skeleton, and the CT Asian region itself.

One had to know that the price to attain the rights to broadcast her music concerts had skyrocketed, since it was the first time that Lin Huiyin was performing on Earth.

Without any doubt, the policemen of the capital were extremely busy and unusually flustered as the need to ensure a low accident occurrence rate became greater with the increasing population size . The exposure rate of the Sol Federation had recently increased with the arrival of Princess Aina, and now, the pending arrival of Lin Huiyin indicated that Aslan had good intentions for the Sol Federation.

Currently, the Sol Federation was in dire need of assistance from the Aslan Empire, particularly when it came to technology. Their prestige could also use some help, which meant they had to do their best in their present situation.

It was said that the VIP seats for the music concert had been either bought or reserved a long time ago, as the tickets to these seats were quickly swept up by several large figures of the political and economic scenes.

Of course, the music concert also catered to the youngsters, in particularly student groups . This aspect has been handled quite adequately by Lin Huiyin's fan club, although they themselves had difficulty obtaining a single ticket.

Student Wang had no concept of music concerts , as he felt that even spending a dollar to listen on the Skylink was already more than enough. However, it was hard to resist the feverous atmosphere that exceeded that of the friendly contest held between the three great military schools.

Yan Xiaosu, who was willing to use any means necessary for the sake of making his beloved happy, had managed to get a hold of two tickets. Regardless of the money spent, the great effort he had put in and the actions he had undergone made An Mei extremely happy with him.

Fortunately, Student Aina was similar to Wang Zheng in which she loved listening to music, but not to the extent of frantically

chasing after the singers everywhere they went.

The school had stepped up their preparations by a notch, and now Zhang Shan could only be seen a couple of times during an entire day. Ever since he returned, he had only seen Meng Tian only once during training, and according to her, their strategies had to be kept completely secret this time.

Wang Zheng continued on with his usual training routine and attended class normally, while spending the rest of his free time accompanying Aina. He had finally managed to strike a small fortune, so the two of them spent their time touring the capital together.

After the previous treat , Wang Zheng checked his balance to find that he had actually earned over hundreds of thousands of credits. To him, this could be considered a vast fortune, as he at least would not have to worry about school fees or living expenses.

Although Aina was a princess, she wasn't filled with arrogance. She had no interest in expensive material goods, and instead was very much in love with streetside snacks. The first present Wang Zheng gave her was a small glass pendant depicting a bear, and its beauty lies in the fact that it was handcrafted by a person. At 10 credits a piece, Wang Zheng had found it convenient enough to buy, and cute too. After buying it, he felt that it was too cheap as a gift, but Aina loved it so much that she wore it around her neck.

Student Wang could not help feeling happy for a long while, and he would from time to time unconsciously think that this was what the common saying 'all sufferings had their rewards' actually

meant.

Without a doubt, university life was the best, and that also applied to the military academies.

Within the dining hall, two large tables were joined together. A group of people were sitting around these tables with solemn expressions before suddenly erupting into peals of laughters.

“You must be mistaken, how’s that also possible!” said Yan Xiaosu with a gloomy look.

The makeup covered most of his face, making it almost seem like a facemask.

An Mei rubbed Yan Xiaosu and smiled. “Good boy, let’s go one more round.”

She took out some lipstick and drew a cross on a spot on Yan Xiaosu’s face that was devoid of any makeup.

Wang Zheng,Yan Xiaosu, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu faced against the girls—Aina, Ye Zisu, An Mei and Du Qingqing.

Card games could go on forever, and the game they were playing was blackjack.

When the boys lost a round, the girls would use lipstick to draw

in their faces, while if the girls lost, the boys would paste stickers on them.

Undoubtedly, the most formidable players were Wang Zheng and Yao Ailun while Chen Xiu and Yan Xiaosu had become the sacrifices. Among the girls, Aina and Du Qingqing had been pitifully pasted with a large amount of stickers.

Wang Zheng felt it a bit unbearable, but Aina was having a lot of fun while playing the game.

“Wang Zheng, did you and Yao Ailun practice for this? Why is it that both of you haven’t even lost once!” said Du Qingqing depressedly. These two people were drawing a lot of hatred to themselves.

Yao Ailun pushed his golden glasses up, his small eyes sparkling with intelligence as he said, “Actually, this is just a simple mathematics problem that requires only a little bit of calculation.”

“What about you, Wang Zheng? I, for one, haven’t done any form of calculation!” said An Mei as she stared at him. She then continued, “Our family’s Local Tyrant Su is already reaching the end of his road.”

Wang Zheng shrugged helplessly and replied, “I guess my luck is better than his.”

Actually, Wang Zheng had also been calculating and following

his basic instinct. This sort of mental arithmetic was easy for him to do, and on top of that, he was playing against a group of newbies. The only time the matches turned vicious and sinister was when he played against the Old Merchant. The two of them would try their hardest to make the other party lose their concentration within a short period of time. Wang Zheng would usually lose in a spectacular fashion, but it meant that his brain was capable of a higher level of mental arithmetic calculations for his age.

“If that’s your luck, then you should be called the gambling god!”

Ye Zisu laughed and said, “Shishi, is this the first time you’re playing this game?”

Aina smiled while nodding her head. She didn’t mind the type of game they were playing , as what she liked was the atmosphere. Seeing Aina express an appearance like that of a curious baby, Wang Zheng secretly grabbed her small hand underneath the table.

There was a saying: Men are carefree, but girls are extremely keen.

“I’m not playing anymore. Games with you science students are too insipid. The competition starts in three days. I wonder how Zhang Shan and Meng Tian are doing now. The two of them are the pride of us freshmen, so I hope they’ll bring glory to all of us!” said An Mei, before taking out a wet tissue to clean Yan Xiaosu’s face.

“This time we have Masasi, so there shouldn’t be any problems, right?” asked Yan Xiao Su.

“Don’t put too much faith in the strength of someone from the Moon. Neither the Apollo nor the Zeus College are to be trifled with , so even losing by a little is good enough!” Yao Ailun said, smiling.

“Brother Ailun, you’re exaggerating. Our strength should be adequate this time around, right?”asked Chen Xiu doubtfully.

“Hehe, it’s not just the colleges that are preparing for war. The strong will always try to become even stronger, so they actively seek out and recruit local talents. The standard of Earth might be considered lower than that of other planets, but just how many of the elites in Aslan used to be citizens of Earth?” Yao Ailun said as he calmly analyzed the question. He seemed to be mimicking the actions of agent 007.

“Does that mean that there’s a tragedy incoming?” said Chen Xiu miserably. The girls were also getting a bit worried.

“That seems to be the case. After all, according to my findings, the leaders of the two colleges are extremely fearsome experts.”

“How do you know this?”said Du Qingqing doubtfully.

“Hehe, you guys should have heard about Wild Knight, right?

That fellow is a freshman who was recruited specially by the Apollo military college. He is also a current member of the Skeleton army, and he loves to play CT. However, he could only be a substitute over at Apollo with his skills."

Everyone present looked at each other in blank dismay. Continuing with the air of agent 007, Yao Ailun explained, "This exchange will be very important. That is because the people who demonstrate their excellence will be given a chance to represent Earth in the Sol Federation military academy competition. As such, individuals that typically do no showcase their talents will also paritcipate ."

Ye Zisu nodded her head and added on, "That's certainly true, considering that the mecha being used in the competition are provided by OMG. The ones able to enter such a competition will most likely become the pillars of the armed forces upon graduation. Generally, most of them would directly enter the Sol Federation Army."

Everyone displayed an expression of shock . In the Milky Way Alliance, the Sol Federation held one seat, but it was actually comprised of the great federations belonging to the Earth, Moon and Mars. Each of these federations had their own garrisons, albeit of a low rank. The Sol Federation Army had the highest ranking, and their military strength was something any ordinary army could never compare with.

It was the dream of every student in a military college to gain a position in the Sol Federation Army, as only such a place could widen their horizons .

“That can’t be. We can’t be cheering for no reason. Everyone wants to see a refreshing victory for once,” said An Mei depressedly. She had not meant to scare anyone.

“Strength remains the ultimate factor. Getting a reversal of the situation will not be easy. On top of that, that Masasi fellow still isn’t completely trustworthy. There’s a possibility he’ll leave just like that.” Yao Ailun said as he cleaned his glasses.

“I never thought you were a pessimist,” An Mei said as he looked at Yao Ailun with one eye.

He gave a faint smile and replied, “I like being realistic.”

“Fuck, we’ll deal with it when we get to it. After all, we’re not students of the military department. Let’s just get hyped up for Lin Huiyin’s music concert,” said Yan Xiaosu seeking to change the topic of discussion.

Wang Zheng felt that it was a pity. This stage was going to be much harder than the one in CT but no matter how bad CT could be, it couldn’t simulate the experience of a life or death combat scenario. While sighing, he thought that it was going fine until that fellow Bonehead decided to create a problem at such a critical time.

With his strength, he wouldn’t have been chased back even if he could not become a part of the main force.

No matter what, what was destined to come, would come. The delegations from the Zeus and Apollo military colleges had arrived and received the highest level of treatment from Gu Te. The school had also turned lively due to their arrival.

Before the combat battles could start, the problem of gathering all students came first. As the president of the Ares College student association, Wu Jin warmly entertained everyone.

Discussions and activities with a focus on combat topics came first, with the combat exchange taking place second to last among the events.

The captain of the Apollo college was a third year in the commander department called Canberra. He was the champion of the last meet and president of the student association, which granted him an unsurpassed amount of prestige in Apollo College .

The captain of Zeus College was Lear Cronus, a year one freshman under the commander department. He was the president of the student association which was unheard of for a freshman. Just making his debut, he was famous, but for a different reason from Canberra , and it seemed like the Zeus College had plans to vigorously develop this freshman.

The captain chosen by the Ares College was Masasi, a first year freshman also under the commander department.

It was clear that the Zeus and Ares colleges were using this kind

of method to compete with Apollo College, since they had to do more to show their inheritance.

Although he was part of the opposition, Canberra's welcoming was the grandest. He was considered a superstar within the university circles after all. It was already decided that he would be entering the ace squadron of the Sol Federation Interstellar Fleet upon graduation. Based on his current rank, it was entirely possible that he would be given a 2nd lieutenant rank, thus surpassing positions that many talents have struggled to reach before.

Chapter 2 – The Bookworm's Smoke

Generally speaking, Canberra was extremely famous. He was an all-rounder, the leader of the students of the Apollo College, and a versatile commander, all of which led to him becoming one of the strongest students from Earth currently.

On one hand it was a meet, while on the other, it allowed the participants of the competitions this time round to familiarize themselves with one another. After all, the improvement in the students took priority over rivalry.

Actually, all of that was utter nonsense. Rivalry still took priority, since everyone wanted to win!

For the few days after their arrival, the participating students were allowed to attend any class of their choice within the Ares College. The lecturers were extremely focused, as they had to exhibit their own styles while also prevent mocking the other colleges.

This wasn't a matter particular to the Ares College; being the host meant that the guests would all bring out their magnifying glasses. Furthermore, the students who had arrived were all elites, and here to find faults. If it was found that the lecturers were made fun of by the students, it would become a huge joke.

It was an absolute favorite of the reporters, since the interactions between the three colleges would definitely make headlines.

In any case, this complication had arisen the last time the Ares College had been the host site. A lecturer had been stumped by a student's question, leading to him being fired. Although this kind of issue wasn't that important, when it happens in a special situation, it has a chance of being blown up. After all, the college's esteem was at stake in this matter.

Naturally, there were also people who didn't have a care, such as Xiao Fei.

She truly didn't give a damn, as it could be quite easily said that she was invincible in the Solar System. It was most likely that there had yet to be anyone born who would dare stir up trouble for her in this place.

Her class was extremely sought after, as it was considered the best the Ares College could offer.

Xiao Fei's class was always very lively. Since Aina and Wang Zheng were the main focus during physics classes, the two of them proceeded to search for an inconspicuous corner.

To avoid getting stimulated, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu chose to remain at their usual spots.

Xiao Fei lacked the means to control Wang Zheng, and she felt hopeless in handling an inattentive student like him. However she knew the Wang Zheng was studying selective modules, and studying a learnt topic was a kind of torture for geniuses, therefore she chose to close one eye on this matter.

A group of seemingly foreign students were seated below, whom Xiao Fei identified as students from the other colleges. Even so, she didn't mind them and continued with her class without making any adjustments to the curriculum.

From their uniforms, two of the students seemed to be from the Apollo College, and another three from the Zeus College.

Initially, Wang Zhen didn't mind them, but then he was suddenly left gawking upon identifying the sole female among the three students of Zeus College.

Yue Jing!

She had transferred to the Zeus Military College, however it seemed that she was not in the physics department.

At her sides were two males. From their auras, they seemed to not be of Earthly origin, but instead had most likely come from the Moon.

"Which beautiful lady left you so enthralled," said Aina in a small voice.

Wang Zheng gave a bitter smile and replied, "My and Xiaosu's enemy."

Student Wang felt truly helpless. He had only been tasked with delivering a letter, yet he could not understand what the matter was with Yue Jin who seemed to hate him even more than Xiaosu.

About Yue Jin... the impression she had left on Aina was trivial and was not enough to remember until Wang Zheng had reminded her. To her, such a person was as insignificant as a single grain of sand. However, in Yue Jing's world, she was the incomparably supreme princess.

Yue Jing, felt completely different now that she had returned here. She had been sent away, while the two bastards, Yan Xiaosu and Wang Zhen had managed to enter Ares College. Having also heard that recently they had been walking very close with Ye Zisu, how could she just swallow such a thing.

Destiny was something that could be achieved only through one's hard work. She and her family had managed to recover from a disaster by relying on a greater family, so she wanted to recover everything she had lost previously.

Before arriving, she had investigated Wang Zheng's and Yan Xiaosu's current situations. Wang Zhen was in the physics department, and was apparently receiving high praises from the lecturers. The waste with a genetic score of 28 had actually managed to enter the physics department; was this a fool's dream?

Yue Jing couldn't believe that Wang Zheng was actually capable of entering a place with such a high speciality requirement like the physics department. She felt that there had been an inside story at hand, which was at least 80% related to Xie Yuxin. On top of being

Wang Zheng's sworn brother, Xie Yuxin was the grandson of the headmaster, Gu Te.

As for that Xiao Fei? Perhaps she was not as arrogant and aloof as she showed on the outside. Having become a lecturer at such a young age, there had definitely been some sorts of benefits given.

It was impossible that the thrash at the lowest rank for the four years of school would return from the dead like a salted fish.

She hated Yan Xiaosu, Wang Zheng, Ye Zisu, Ares College, everyone!

Only by trampling each and every one of them under her foot would she be able to clean herself of the humiliation she had went through.

The first step was to cause trouble for the Ares College. How could such a trashy college even dare compete with the Zeus College!

As time passed, the sound of applause within the lecture hall seemed like it would never end. When faced with a teacher both intelligent and beautiful, most students tend to react with fervor.

"Kao Yisi, Gong Jin, it's time for your performance. Don't disappoint Lear."

One could tell with a single look that Kao Yisi and Gong Jin were

not freshmen. However, their both treated Yue Jing with utmost respect.

When the time for questions arrived, Kao Yisi raised his hand, prompting Xiao Fei to nod her head.

Kao Yisi stood up and casually looked at the audience before saying, “It is often said that Professor Xiao is an authority on the subject of spatial physics, and that you have worked continuously for the past few years on the issue of using warp drives for transport. This topic is currently one of the hardest to solve in the field of science. The question, however, is this: after five years, have you, Professor Xiao, managed to find a solution for the issue of unstable velocity states when using warp drives?”

After saying that, he stared at Xiao Fei. Travelling through the use of a hyperdrive to link different star systems together had become the mainstay in interstellar navigation. However, mankind had always wanted to advance to another step, so the utilization of warp drives for transportation had become the main direction of research. And that was because it would vastly increase the transportation range.

The problem was that the space within the warp drive was an alternate dimension which meant that it couldn’t be stabilized unless the coordinates were defined.

There was also an opposition within the financial sector, as they felt that the direction they were heading in was wrong. This basically meant they were trying to cause an uproar since they felt that their money was being spent on an unsubstantiable product.

When a student wanted to attack a teacher, trying to compete in concrete details was of no use. Therefore, Kao Yisi considered using the prestige of the physics community to launch his attack.

“Professor Xiao, both Professor Matthew and Professor Andrew are authorities on the subject of spacial physics. They had already conducted many rounds of debate and discussion and had concluded that this method was just nonsensical talk. Although scientists must have creativity and a sense for innovation, they must not forget their basics. Proposing some fantastic, but impractical topics would definitely attract attention, but it does not conform to the core essence of the scientific community!” said Gong Jin, bringing out authorities having a similar prestige in the physics world as Xiao Fei.

However, it was definitely true that young geniuses were prone to getting more flak than normal.

This debate had already lasted for very long, as academic struggles usually tended to. When faced with a small opposition, Xiao Fei would completely disregard them, since she felt that they just had nothing better to do. They might as well have tried solving the problem if they were so free. Instead, they were digging up here and there, as if that was the only way they could signify their existences.

When faced with the provocation of these people, Xiao Fei would always be extremely impolite. However, as a teacher, it would have been unfitting to argue with a student.

After noticing Wang Zheng in the corner, Xiao Fei could not help letting out a snigger. These last few days had treated that fellow very well. It was a mystery how he had been able to successfully court such a beautiful girl.

“Wang Zheng, the views of Student Kao Yisi and Student Gong Jin are very good. As my assistant, what are your views on this subject?”

Xiao Fei directly turned the tables and threw it at Wang Zheng.

Faint disdain could be seen on the mouths of both Kao Yisi and Gong Jin. Xiao Fei had actually not answered and used a scapegoat. Who did this brat think he was? He couldn’t possibly solve the most difficult issue that the physics world was facing.

Yue Jing stared at Wang Zheng, and her beautiful face and started to turn solemn. She couldn’t understand why the one she hated the most was not Yan Xiaosu, but Wang Zheng. That behaviour that was as clear as the wind and that aloofness deeply pierced her heart. She couldn’t think of how that person was able to find such a girlfriend, yet the girl sitting beside his definitely was an otherworldly beauty.

Aina discovered that she had become too unrecognizable. Dyeing her hair silver hadn’t been enough since her star pupils were too unique, so she was wearing glasses to cover it up.. Thus, it had become even more difficult to recognize her, and in the first place, no one would ever think that a princess of Aslan would be sitting there like a normal person.

Wang Zheng stood up as the rest of the students were talking in whispers. The two students from the Apollo College were also staring at Wang Zheng, as they had never heard of him before. This person didn't even enter the meeting between the various school associations, so he couldn't have been an elite of the school.

The main focus for the meet between the three great colleges was on military might. Although everything else was slightly more casual, it had still managed to bring out the elites of the various colleges.

Wang Zhen didn't care about Yue Jing, since it was already in the past to him. Yan Xiaosu also had a beloved, so everything was fine and well.

However, if these people wanted to stir up trouble on the Ares College's turf, they deserved to be slapped to death.

As for this aspect he had already discussed with the Old Merchant before, it was a topic they commonly talked about.. A large part of it was the self mumblings of the Old Merchant, who would often reveal his regret. He would exclaim that given enough time this problem would be solved by him, which made it seem that the question he was research was even more profound.

"First of all, spatial transmission via a warp drive is a definite possibility!"

Wang Zheng had revealed his final conclusion the moment he

spoke, which made it sound quite overbearing.

The students of the physics department were accustomed to this unusually quiet and solemn guy who occasionally displayed some astonishing actions. However, the foreign students couldn't help but curse and snigger.

Such a big tone.

Wang Zheng definitely meant what he had said, as he was extremely direct.

"This student, you surely are capable enough to make it seem as if the question plaguing the entire Milky Way Federation is just a piece of cake to solve. I would really love for you, as the assistant of Professor Xiao, to enlighten me. Use whatever special method the Ares College has, whatever you deem feasible!"

Kao Yisi felt like it was a joke. A measly freshman had actually dared to boast so shamelessly.

Wang Zheng gave a faint smile before speaking, "The way of solving the issue of spatial coordinates is actually very simple. The universe is in constant motion—just because we cannot see it clearly does not mean it isn't there. The current method of transportation we use can be classified as elementary, for it only uses up to the 3rd dimension. In order to utilize a warp drive, one would have to be involved in up to the 7th dimension. If the issue we must solve is that of spatial coordinates, then what we must do is use a method unique to the 7th dimension for setting spatial

coordinates.

Immediately after, whispers could be heard everywhere in the lecture hall. Nobody had heard this explanation before, but they all felt that there was a possibility of succeeding.

Kao Yisi showed a doubtful expression as he said, “It’s not like your view has not been considered before, however it is still only a concept. After all, setting spatial coordinates within the 7th dimension is downright impractical!”

Chapter 3 – Awesome!

“Haha, if we limit our standards to just the things that can be done, science will stop advancing. Since it’s a feasible direction, we must make progress in it. As such, Professor Xiao Fei’s topic of discussion is definitely correct.”

Wang Zheng smiled. At the side, Xiao Fei also nodded her head satisfactorily.

Kao Yisi became speechless. Research has no ending. After all, if it did, there would no reason to continue researching? That is why scientists continued to pursue truth, and he could do nothing to refute it.

Yue Jing’s face turned green. This bastard was still so eloquent, scaring her by saying a bunch of things she did not understand.

Gong Jin, who felt insulted, replied, “If you can’t even handle him, then I’m greatly worried for our future!”

Kao Yisi and Gong Jin glanced at each other. They felt terribly uneasy but there was no other way. They had previously promised Lear that they would settle the situation satisfactorily, so they had entered the Sol Federation’s Science Research Institute.

Gong Jin cleared his throat and said, “Student Wang, you are speaking in circles. I would like to know if, in all these years, the world-renowned genius Professor Xiao Fei has made any progress at all. Could you please show us some evidence to convince

ourselves!!”

Everyone’s gaze fell on Xiao Fei. Gong Jin’s question was indeed something on everyone’s mind. After researching for so many years, there should have been a result of some sort.

However, conducting research was not the same as debating. Most research was conducted methodologically, eliminating hypotheses one by one. While Xiao Fei had experimented using numerous methods, none of them bore any fruit, so the research hadn’t progressed much. On top of that, she could not divulge secret information just for the sake of refuting a question.

At that point, Wang Zheng laughed. “We have already deduced the method!”

“Really? Then that must be good news for the Milky Way Alliance. I hope you won’t tell me that it’s confidential information!” Gong Jin smiled as he replied.

Absolutely rubbish. If someone had discovered a solution for the research, it would have caused an uproar.

Xiao Fei stared at Wang Zheng. The two of them had not talked about this before. Was this bastard trying to become a scapegoat?

“Wang Zheng, about this matter…”

“Teacher, although it can be considered a secret, I feel that

divulging a bit of it will not harm anyone. Of course, I shall only divulge information on its feasibility!”

Wang Zheng paused. The gazes of everyone in the room, including Aina, rested on Wang Zheng. This topic was the forefront of science, did he really have an answer?

Wang Zheng was often full of surprises so Aina was already mentally prepared for it.

“Being unable to locate the 7th dimension is the current issue plaguing us. I believe that we can overcome it by splitting this problem into two parts. One, by treating the current 3rd dimension as a compound plane, allowing us to control two layers at once. Secondly, if the transmission is done in a state where speed is curved, thereby causing displacement, the positioning will allow the relative movement in spacetime to shift the relative coordinates of the object. Simply put, space can be moved.”

The entire class became silent. Even though most of the students in the class were from Year 3 or 4, all of them fell into deep thoughts, because, even for them, some of the concepts explained required time to understand.

On the other hand, Xiao Fei’s eyes were shining brightly. Her beautiful, wisdom-filled eyes shone brilliantly.

Moving spacetime?!

It actually seemed possible!

The problem that had been pestering her for several years was solved with that one explanation!

Kao Yisi and Gong Jin looked at each other, even when they didn't understand, they pretended they did. They had heard of other explanations before, but they felt that the one put forth by Wang Zheng would shake the entire Milky Way Alliance even without publicizing it.

This could only mean that Professor Xiao Fei had kept a low profile as she couldn't be bothered to argue with others.

Kao Yisi and Gong Jin bowed deeply, "We thank you for your teachings."

The bell signifying the end of class rang. Aina had been paying close attention to Wang Zheng and Xiao Fei's expressions. It was obvious from Xiao Fei's surprised and contemplative expression that it had not been her conjecture.

"Wang Zheng, follow me."

Wang Zheng, who was about to take advantage of Aina, before leaving with her, had a frown on his face as he stopped.

"I'm going to borrow your boyfriend for a bit." As they weren't too far apart in age, Xiao Fei spoke quite casually.

“No problem, Professor. Just remember to return him!” Aina replied with a sweet smile.

This girl is extremely intelligent. As a fellow female, Xiao Fei was stunned.

Looking at Wang Zheng’s shadow, Yue Jing became so angry that she could not control herself as she stomped away. Wang Zheng had once again defied the odds by sowing chaos with his words.

“Kao Yisi and Gong Jin, you dared to be so arrogant with just your meagre abilities. It is a lie that the Physics Department produce the most illustrious students. That Wang Zheng is a useless piece of crap, how could you believe his random words!”

Kao Yisi and Gong Jin only replied after a brief pause. They were still trying to understand Wang Zheng’s words. “Yue Jing, you’re wrong about him. This Wang Zheng is a rarely found genius. The theory he revealed, would still stir up the entire scientific community even if it was incorrect. We cannot compete with him.”

Kao Yisi and Gong Jin no longer bothered with Yue Jing. The two of them went on their own way. Their eyes which had previously been clouded was now being cleared as though a window had appeared in front of them. Even if they were cynical individuals, they felt that what Wang Zheng spoke of was possible. It was like the time when Newton’s theory of gravity was superseded by the theory of relativity. It was sufficient to spur everyone on.

In science, truth was relative.

In the office, Wang Zheng had been dragged in by Xiao Fei and the door slammed shut while dear Student Wang was pressed against the table by Xiao Fei.

This posture…

However, Xiao Fei did not care at all about what the others thought. She observed Wang Zheng intently, as though she was trying to fully comprehend what Wang Zheng was.

“Haha, Professor, if you have anything to say, we can just speak freely.” Although he had done intimate things with Aina, that didn’t include the things one would do with their body. Xiao Fei’s body was almost directly pressing onto Wang Zheng’s. As Xiao Fei was a mature individual, her bodily proportions were fully developed and Wang Zheng, a highly energetic young man could not take it.

However, Xiao Fei ignored his underlying words. “Brat, where did you hear those words which you just spouted!”

Although Wang Zheng was a genius, Xiao Fei did not believe that he could think them up.

Those were the words the Old Merchant had said. Just as Wang Zheng prepared to confess, he remembered what the Old Merchant

had once said — the words spoken between them could not be mentioned to others.

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulders helplessly. “Teacher, I was just speaking rubbish and spouting whatever my mind came up with. Even I didn’t understand what I was saying. As I said before, I believe in wild theories and that was all just verbal banter. You mean to say that it was actually reasonable?”

Wang Zheng opened his eyes widely as he spoke. It was said that doing so would make a liar seem more honest.

Xiao Fei could not find any loopholes in what he said. At times, science required brilliant strokes of luck, and this brat just had great luck.

Suddenly, he felt that someone was staring at his lower body. Wang Zheng felt his stomach lurch. Looking down, he could not hold back his reaction.

Xiao Fei then gingerly let go of Wang Zheng before giving him a nonchalant look, “You actually haven’t noticed that you are rather worthy. It’s a pity that you already have a girlfriend, or I might have just kept you.”

Dear Student Wang felt defeated. Is this how a teacher should be? She was just an evil demon. “Haha, Professor, if there’s nothing else, I’m going to leave first.”

“From your reactions I can tell that you are a virgin. You have an exceptional thought process, I will apprise Professor Marcus about you.”

Wang Zheng immediately escaped. Fuck. Demon Xiao is just standing there spouting merciless words. Wang Zhen would have dealt with her long ago, if, she wasn’t his teacher.

Xiao Fei did not bother about this little episode any further. The moment Wang Zheng left, she entered an extremely enthusiastic mood as she continued to make new inferences about the theory. It could be seen that although she was very boastful, her EQ and IQ were not on the same level.

The moment he left, Wang Zhgen gave Aina a call. She was waiting in the library for him.

Just by looking at Aina Wang Zheng felt revitalized. She gave him a wry smile. “Why are you here already?”

“I only knew a little and the rest was just something I came up with. If you did serious research you would realize that too,” Wang Zheng said helplessly as he waved his hands.

Aina stared silently at Wang Zheng, before saying, “Do you know that what you said just now was sufficient for you to go down in history as a genius?”

Wang Zheng was very clear that the Old Merchant was an

amazing geezer. After all, that conjecture had been the Old Merchant's, not his.

"I'm not that amazing."

Aina grabbed Wang Zheng's hand. "Ah, I'm slightly worried now."

"What are you worried about?" Wang Zheng curiously asked.

"Since you're so amazing, more and more love rivals are bound to appear," Aina said as she slyly ran out of the library.

Wang Zheng couldn't help but sweat. "Okay then, my princess. Since you dared to ridicule me, I need to collect some interest!"

On the grassy plain, Wang Zheng and Aina energetically chased each other. In the end, the beautiful princess was caught by the big bad wolf and was knocked onto the ground.

During the Tri-College Meet, famous professors were bound to show up. However, Xiao Fei didn't care and skipped it.

Gu Te also had no choice in the matter. He gave Xiao Fei a Skylink call but was rejected. On the third call, he was rejected rudely. Ah, even as a principal he felt wronged.

Still, he knew that Xiao Fei had achieved a breakthrough in her

research, since her entire team, as well as Marcus's team, were working hastily.

"Gu Te, this time we are also here because we wanted to meet Professor Xiao Fei. She really belittles you. How could you treat us so coldly?"

In the principal's office, three old men were currently chatting and drinking tea.

The one who spoke was the principal of the Apollo Military College, Jamal. His hair was golden in color, and he seemed to be in glowing spirits. These last couple of years, the Apollo Military College had been the best of the three.

"Jamal, you can forget about it. Unless you're willing to step all over this old bag of bones, it won't be possible to get Xiao Fei to join you."

Of the three, the one that looked the youngest was the principal of Zeus College, Adonis.

"Haha, if Xiao Fei joins us, our Apollo college will definitely be among the 50 best colleges in the Milky Way Alliance."

This was Jamal's dream.

"Haha. Jamal, you haven't won yet. Don't be too excited," said Adonis. "However, thinking as such is beneficial for us. We need to

find ways to improve the college's ability."

Gu Te had a different means of defense. Jamal and Adonis sought to expand on their abilities, and he was unwilling to descend into obscurity.

Gu Te gave a wry smile. "I know what you mean. It is meaningless to hope to enter the top 50 schools in the Milky Way Alliance. At the very least, we have to protect Earth's pride."

Adonis had previously suggested that the three colleges merge. Jamal, on the other hand, felt that a new college should be formed completely independent of the three colleges, where they would focus their resources in order to create the best college on Earth.

Gu Te was in opposition of it. A college is meant for students and not status. Although one needed glory for cohesion, strength, and belief, if it was only for glory's sake, then it was meaningless.

They could do it, if they were to focus the current strength of the three military colleges only on the exceptional students. However, how would that affect the status quo on Earth?

This was no different from drinking poison to quench one's thirst.

The three old men continued to discuss numerous methods and argued for some time. It was clear that among them, Jamal and Adonis were aiming for the position of champion. On the other

hand, Gu Te was rather ambivalent.

Chapter 4 – Shocking The Entire Milky Way!

Their most valuable chip was Xiao Fei, though even she wasn't worth that much.

Jamal and Adonis had both thought of ways to "attract" Xiao Fei through promises of the best remuneration and benefits. Unfortunately, Xiao Fei remained completely unmoved which caused them to feel quite helpless.

"Gu Te, your way of thinking is too old school. With the current competition being so intense, the poor have to change, and only through change can they continue to exist. Being conservative and stubborn won't do you any good. Are you waiting for a genius to appear? Even if, at best, another one of a similar caliber to Xiao Fei's appears, what good would that do?"

Jamal drank a mouthful of tea before advising, "In fact aren't you starting to change? You might be recruiting students from the Moon and Mars, but that will take too long."

Gu Te showed a faint smile before he deftly rinsed the teacup, before refilling it with the best quality, most flavorful authentic tea which could only be drunk on Earth—Tie Guan Yin.

"I will continue with this strategy in the future. Those people definitely wouldn't stick around for long, however, their existence would certainly cause our students to reflect upon themselves. I trust that Earth, as the birthplace of humankind, will definitely not remain in decline forever."

Both Jamal and Adonis felt very helpless in front of Gu Te who was like a stone in a latrine pit—both smelly and hard. The various military academies had been trying to invite outstanding talents, to unearth new ones and attract new resources in any way possible. The method which Gu Te used was not only too slow, it was also unrealistic.

This was the typical sentiment found on Earth.

However, in reality, Earth was no longer the center of the universe.

There still existed a large number of fanatics like these, who existed solely to guard and preserve their culture.

Regardless of its outcome, a discussion had to take place. There was still a chance that a change might occur.

“No matter how busy she is, I will definitely make Xiao Fei appear at tomorrow’s ceremony,” Gu Te finally said. He too did not know what Xiao Fei was busy doing. She had mentioned it was a secret which couldn’t be told to anyone before disappearing without a trace for three days.

At that moment, the Skylinks of all three headmasters simultaneously rang. Being old friends, they didn’t mind as they all opened them up.

The three headmasters were all very important figures within the military world, and were also congressmen of the Sol Federation. A blue grade secret report only meant one thing, extremely good news.

Jamal and Adonis looked at each other and thought, what a coincidence, they had just talked about it.

The expressions on both their faces turned complex. Honestly speaking, the Ares College was already in decline, but they just had to have a genius like Xiao Fei. As a military academy, it couldn't be thoroughly saved by her, though she was still akin to a life-saving pill.

However, just like what Gu Te said previously,there were times when a single person was enough to create a miracle.

Xiao Fei's latest thesis shook the entire scientific world.

The Relationship Between Curved Velocities and Spatial Manipulation.

There was a large amount of proof expounding the argument below the title. Albeit still just a hypothetical thesis, it was the first major find of the world of science in a few years.

Xiao Fei and the entire team did not sleep for the past few days. Everyone was incomparably excited. Having done so much research for countless weeks, they had only lacked a source of

inspiration to guide them on their path. Wang Zhen's speech had shed light on Xiao Fei's thought process, allowing their previous preparations to connect.

At times, the scientists would turn crazy and act paranoid. These people had spent countless days and nights discussing and researching, however, at the moment, they were beaming and feeling buoyant. This was simply madness.

WIthin the world of science, they were gods!!

This sense of glory was not inferior to that of a soldier's.

This was probably the hot-bloodedness of scientists.

The moment this thesis is launched, a huge stir was created. If it is approved or it is proven through experiments, mankind will have taken a huge step forward in the realm of travel at high speeds.

This was an accomplishment in the realm of innovation.

Mankind's technological advances could always be described through quantum leaps. Starting from Einstein and up until now, it had always been up to one person to suddenly change the course of history.

After so many years, people started expecting a new person of that sort would appear. They had thought Alan Tucker to be the

one, but that was proven to have been a mistake. Now, it seemed like the true genius was Xiao Fei.

The name of this young female physicist shook the entire Milky Way Federation.

That had allowed the name of the Ares College to tag along and enter the views of the people as well.

Jamal and Adonis could only laugh bitterly and offer their congratulations. They thought about how this fellow had such good luck. Although they had wasted so much effort and made so many preparations, it still couldn't compare to his luck.

Gu Te could not control his wide grin and said, "Apologies to the both of you. I have to go and prepare a feast for them. Feel free to do as you please."

Jamal and Adonis shot a glance at each other and said, "Haha, old Gu, they are the pride of our Earth. I feel that we should also personally meet and congratulate them."

"Back when she was a student, Xiao Fei would even come over to my place. After all these years, I knew that she would definitely create a miracle."

Currently, neither Jamal nor Adonis cared any longer about being shameless. At times like these, one had to be thick-skinned.

Of course, Gu Te knew that these two old fellows had not settled for any good intentions, however, he could not belittle them.

Gu Te had been always waiting for Xiao Fei to achieve success. In truth, any other headmaster wouldn't have endured such a problematic and wilful subordinate. So what if she had talent? This year alone, there had been talents aplenty. On top of that, she hadn't achieved any results for many years. Even so, Gu Te had still supported her throughout the years.

His reasoning was this: if he used a person, he wouldn't suspect them. Instead of telling them what to do, he would give the other party ample room to develop and display their abilities.

The entire research lab was celebrating—their work had been recognized by the authorities of the greatest scientific academy in the Sol Federation. When they heard about it, everyone was at a loss for words.

"Professor Marcus, thank you for all these years!" Xiao Fei said heartfeltly.Professor Marcus gave a faint smile and replied, "I should be the one thanking you!"

The two of them are also old buddies. Marcus did not take lightly of Xiao Fei due to her young age, and highly approved of her way of thinking. Furthermore, a physicist would need the help of a brilliant mathematician to increase their odds of success.

This collaborative success would once again confirm this rule. Of course, the larger portion of glory would belong to the physicist.

The mathematicians, however, would not mind. Those who had chosen it as their occupation would have already realised it, since it was the key to finding value in their lives.

“I think that we ought to thank that brat.He sure is our lucky star!” Marcus said as he sighed. He was extremely shocked to find out that the idea had originated from Wang Zheng. His talent in mathematics was truly impressive.

“Haha, that brat is going to become famous soon.”

At the bottom of the hypothesis, three names were listed in order: Xiao Fei, Marcus, and Wang Zheng.

For a student, this could simply be considered a miracle.Only by making significant contributions would one be added to the list. Even the other members of the research team were not entitled to it.

Without the brilliant breakthrough provided by Wang Zheng, they didn’t know how many twists and turns they would have had to pass before reaching their goal.

Even though most of the work and research did not even come from that fellow, sometimes intuition was more important. It would make one stand out.

The headmasters of the three great colleges quickly arrived. The degree of warmness shown by Jamal and Adonis was slightly

cloying.

“Oh professor Marcus, I finally understand why you chose this place back then. Although it’s regretful for me, I am truly happy for you,” Jamal said.

“Jamal, you’re exaggerating, and you’re too polite. I’ve only been a helper on this thesis.”

“You’re too modest. May I know who this Professor Wang Zheng is?” Jamal said, all of a sudden.

That was when Adonis’s eyes had also started to shine as he added on, “Oh yes, please introduce him to us. We are too ignorant and ill-informed to not have heard of such a talent before.”

Xiao Fei and Marcus shot each other a look before convulsing with laughter.

Jamal and Adonis looked at each other in blank dismay as they both tried to think of what was funny about the question.

A member of the research team standing nearby could not resist and replied, “Headmasters, Wang Zheng is a student, not a professor. He is a freshman of our physics department.”

Gu Te became dazed and was somewhat in disbelief. When he had heard this name, he had thought it was another person.

Jamal and Adonis shot another gaze at each other, a yearning obvious from their looks.

Freshman, super genius?

Fuck, if we can't invite him, not even the heavens will stand for it!

The faces of the two of them showed a casual smile as they said, "Oh, the two of you surely provide great guidance to the younger generation. However, will it not be hard to convince everyone that the glory he will gain is in accordance to his contributions?"

Jamal stated towards the research members, trying to find a hint of discontent. However, he couldn't detect even a single trace of it.

Xiao Fei shook her head and said, "Actually we should have placed his name at the front. Without his ideas serving as a breakthrough, this thesis would not yet exist."

Gu Te suddenly coughed dryly a few times before saying, "Xiao Fei, you're praising him too highly. Looks like you guys are tired, we should not disturb you all any longer."

He then furiously blinked his eyes. Although Xiao Fei was very excellent overall, her hindsight was still lacking. That old fox, Jamal, was obviously twisting his words.

Now Jamal and Adonis had found out what they needed to know. They secretly smiled in their hearts. If they couldn't have Xiao Fei, they would go and entice other people.

It was much easier to attract students, since it was an uncontested fact that Zeus and Apollo colleges were both better than Ares.

The two headmasters both had temperamental natures. Upon getting back, they immediately called their physics department students over to ask if they had any impression of a student named Wang Zheng.

Kao Yisi and Gong Jin explained their meeting from the beginning till the end. As he paced around, Adonis thought about this genius recognized by Xiao Fei, specially recruited, and who enjoyed special privileges.

This was the genius amongst geniuses.

He thought that this wouldn't do. He had to be brought away. If they wanted to enter the top fifty rankings within the Milky Way Federation, they not only had to have a formidable military department, they also needed to make scientific contributions. This brat had the potential.

It must be mentioned that just by having his name on this thesis paper, it would be enough to create a famous reputation for himself within the physics community.

If they wanted to entice such a brilliant student, they had to first demonstrate the capabilities of their academy in front of him.

It was without doubt that an extremely good opportunity had been presented before them.

“Oh, that’s right, I’ve heard that he was schoolmates with student Yue Jing back in middle school,” Gong Jin suddenly mentioned.

“Why didn’t you say that earlier, go and call Yue Jing over!” Adonis ecstatically replied.

……

When Yue Jing walked out of the headmaster’s office, she had almost chewed her lip off. However, she absolutely could not cause a commotion.

How was it possible that this waste, the lowest feeder of Daybreak middle school, was actually a genius of physics?

Yue Jing would not believe it even if she were to be beaten to death. However, it was truly presented before her eyes, and there was no reason for the headmaster to lie.

He even wanted her to try her best and get cozy with Wang Zheng in order to get him to transfer into Zeus college. Any condition could be discussed.

His anxious request was akin to asking her to use her body to entice Wang Zheng.

Chapter 5 – Honeymoon

Yue Jing was fuming when she left. She thought that if she had to lead such a human waste around, her hands would grow coarse and rough.

Not all of the student presidents were good at articulating. For instance, Adonis was a powerful student president. He wished for every student to make contributions for the academy and treat the glory of the academy as their own.

Despite her displeasure, Yue Jing still had to show that she was doing something as well.

At this moment. student Wang was not aware that such a big matter had sprouted out. Since he considered Xiao Fei as his benefactor, he would help her whenever he could. Furthermore, he didn't wish to lose face in front of Aina.

Although he did not like disputes, whenever Student Wang was with Aina, he would get the intense feeling of wanting to protect her. It had been the same back when he treated her as his sister, and it remained the same now that she was his girlfriend.

Maybe he had liked her from the very start. After all, he had never seen her as a princess, not even once.

Aina had noticed that Wang Zheng didn't care about her status. He treated her like a girl, and in turn, that allowed her to clearly feel his strength.

As for whether he was famous or not, Aina did not care. They were a strange and unusual couple.

When they got together, they always ended up chatting away without end—about distant places, about culture or science. Of course, they also had their romantic moments. Through these discussions, Wang Zheng could feel his conversational skills becoming better and better.

It was only natural for their relationship to get deeper. Wang Zheng's enticement towards Aina was immense. Every single time, after they parted, he would have to practice his Return to One skill many times just to calm his spirit. In addition, recently... he kept having wet dreams.

The pitiful part was that whenever things were reaching their climax, a frightening bone head would pop up. With its hands exploding with lightning, it would terrify Wang Zheng out of his sleep.

Without any barriers to prevent gossip, this matter started a huge commotion within the academy.

Professor Xiao Fei had made a huge breakthrough in the area of spacial physics. This was the glory of the Ares college, the glory of the Earth.

Back in dormitory 007, everyone was also celebrating since the omnipotent Yao Ailun actually managed to get the first hand

information.

“Wang Zheng, you really are something! We will have to look up to you in the future! Your name is actually in the accreditation section at the bottom of the thesis paper, GOD!”

Yao Ailun exclaimed in an exaggerated fashion, however anyone could see his admiration and envy.

“Brother Zheng, you’ve achieved such a result as a university student! In the entire Milky Way Federation, the number of people with results like these can be counted on one hand!”

Zhang Shan was also happy for Wang Zheng. He added, “It looks like our dormitory is going to have a famous person in it. Wang Zheng, I feel that you should just focus on doing research while I prepare to switch careers.”

The three of them were left gawking as they said, “Brother Zhan, you’re joking, right? Where are you going?”

Zhang Shan grinned and replied, “During this period of time, I discovered that the mecha department suited me more.”

Zhang Shan had been heavily influenced from a young age by his family by being exposed to research. Although deep inside he might have been more suitable to do something else, until now, he had not even thought of trying other things.

Different people may have talents for different things. However, the most important thing was for one to do what they wanted to do while still alive.

Wang Zheng shook his head. “Teacher Xiao Fei gave me too much face. I only contributed by giving some odd suggestions, while the entire thesis was her hard work. I feel guilty for stealing some of it away.”

“Wang Zheng, you brat. You may be very good at the things you do, but you’re too modest. Without your breakthrough ideas, it wouldn’t have mattered how long they had researched for!”

Zhang Shan flailed his hands and said, “You truly ought to consider for a while.”

“I’m not calm and collected enough, so I’m not suited for research. One day, there might be a way to turn this around, so I’ll slowly keep trying.”

The knowledge Wang Zheng had related to the world of physics was all imbued into him by the Old Merchant. Although he couldn’t be considered bad in terms of his ability to understand concepts, he did not innovate. It might have been that had no will to explore that aspect.

What he sought after was a vigorous life.

“Ah, only now that I’m with you guys do I finally understand

what a psychological blow is," Chen Xu helplessly said. Previously, he was seen as a talent in the eyes of the masses and the middle schools. Only after arriving here could he truly understand that there were many talents.

"Ailun, Chen Xu, the two of you are the ones that are truly fighting steadily. The both of you will definitely shake the heavens with your names."

After Wang Zheng expressed this statement, Yao Ailun and Chen Xu shot a look at each other and thought of how that was a very exaggerated way of expressing praise.

This might have been one of the exaggerations commonly seen in university dorms, but it was true that this dormitory had spawned a group of outstanding people.

After the special training, Zhang Shan's body and his muscles had turned even more resilient, he was now darker, calmer and steadier.

His physique could be considered rare, his muscles able to explode with great force while not being stiff and rigid. He truly was born a natural mechanized soldier.

By comparison, Wang Zheng's physique could be considered rather weak. Had he not been eliminated from the special training, he might have had a chance. Yet as it stood, it would prove very difficult for him if he wanted to change departments. Especially considering his performance in the field of physics, everyone

would prevent him if he tried doing so.

Student Wang had unknowingly created a troublesome situation for himself.

“Neither I, nor Chen Xu will take this psychological blow from you two. While the invincible Skeleton God is present, anything is possible!” exclaimed Chen Xu.

Both of them were in very high spirits. From this dormitory, the two of them were very diligent in their class attendance, as well as their self study. Their time management skills were very good, although all their leisure time seemed to be spent on CT. After seeing Skeleton pull off such a victory, the problems and barriers they faced no longer seemed that scary.

“Stop being so addicted, you two, it’s just a game. Just look at what it did to you.” Zhang Shan had no interest in this sort of entertainment.

“Zhan Shan, you seem to be interested in mech combat, yet you’ve obviously never seen Skeleton God’s combat videos before. I’m telling you, you ought to research them properly, since they would prove very beneficial for your combat ability.”

“Haha, there’s a huge difference between real combat and CT. Although I’ve heard that many people love playing it, such a game doesn’t suit me.”

Zhang Shan was still as stubborn as before, and on this point alone he was similar to the Wang Zheng from before.

This was because he was guy with a good background that did not understand the pains of the masses. Zhang Shan had already experienced being a true mechanized soldier while student Wang had only repaired mechs.

“Do you have any confidence for this meet? I’ve heard that the opponents are very strong. Since we are the hosts this time, you guys can show your power and prestige!” asked Yao Ailun, shrugging. He and Chen Xu didn’t see eye to eye on this matter.

Zhang Shan gave a faint smile and replied, “Relax, I won’t be worse than your little Skeleton. We’ll be fighting using true swords and real spears, and we’ll definitely knock our opponents flat on the ground!”!”

“Cough cough. If you guys still need people, please remember to recommend me. I’m still able to act as a substitute,” Wang Zheng added.

“Relax. You’re my brother so there’s no way I’d forget. Did you truly give up on Meng Tian, though? Lately, that brat’s been training like her life depended on it; such a good girl,” Zhang Shan suddenly asked with a twist.

Wang Zheng bitterly laughed and replied, “She and I are just good friends. We aren’t at that level.”

“Sigh, had I not seen Wang Shishi before, I would have truly advised you to consider Meng Tian. Such excellent girls are not often found,” said Zhang Shan, without being miserly with his words of appraisal and approval.

“Brother Shan, if you like her, you should chase her yourself,” said Chen Xu.

“Haha, I’ll be waiting for my chance. I’ve definitely got to bring out a good performance this time. Excepting that fellow Masasi with his immeasurably deep strength, the others don’t worry me.”

Ma Xiao could be considered a famous person within Ares college, being the head of the MMA club and of the CT club. However, the way Zhang Shan spoke, it was implied that ‘when the tiger is not on the mountain, the monkey becomes king.’

Now that Ma Xiao’s era had ended, they were just casually doing as they pleased.

Not long after their chat, Zhang Shan was once again summoned. This last moment of drill practice made Wang Zheng unable to resist showing envy within his eyes.

Student Wang Zheng could no longer sit still. He wanted to go out for a short moment of enjoyment.

“Brother Zheng, where are you going so late in the night?” asked Chen Xu curiously.

Yao Ailun shot a look at Chen Xu and replied, “You idiot, he’s in his honeymoon period. He’s not gonna keep two bachelors like us company.”

“Dating sure is good.”

“Say that again after you’ve gone through puberty.”

A short while later, Wang Zheng was already seated inside the city’s public transportation. Watching the bustling nightscape, a strange feeling crossed his heart as he thought, It sure is good to live; one can experience so many interesting things.

After experiencing the life within the Rubik’s Cube, not only did he learn a lot of skills and techniques but he also learned something else—

To treasure and to cherish.

The boss was as cordial as usual; he knew that Wang Zheng and the rest had already graduated. Although this place wasn’t very far from the Ares college, it wasn’t that near either. It could only be said that these kids yearned for the past.

Even with the addition of Wang Zheng, business would not miraculously turn profitable, although losing him would make a big impact. However, to be able to meet a customer like Wang Zheng during their lifetime would still make one happy.

Furthermore, the boss saw Wang Zheng as a lucky star since, he didn't know why, but whenever he was around, business would boom.

Wang Zheng entered the machine and wriggled his fingers. Indeed, as Zhang Shan had previously said, CT was fun to play. Yet, it lacked an oppressive pressure, and the burden it placed on the body was too light. That was natural, however, since if it were to place a burden on his body, the others wouldn't even be able to play it..

An ID started to glow on the screens of innumerable players.

As reminders started ringing, it was clear that innumerable Skylinks had been activated. CT currently had the highest capacity and number of patrons, yet not everyone was online at that point.

For a game company, it was very important that their games were very active, and recently, the activity in the Asian region was quite high.

Solon had created a specialized team with shifts around the clock, so that no matter when Skeleton appeared, there would always be an employee on duty that could handle it. Furthermore, like this, he could receive this information via Skylink as soon as it happened.

Wang Zheng already was on a nine-win streak. Such efficiency in combat was quite terrifying, and if he were to find a match now, his opponent would probably be even more perverted whether in

terms of their skills, or their mech.

Female dormitories, especially the university ones, were, without a doubt, holy land for many of the male students.

Aina was currently dragging Du Qingqing and Ye Zisu to watch the match.

“You and Zisu can go on, I don’t have much interest in this,” said Du Qingqing.

“Qingqing, this is a group activity, so you must participate. Maybe it’ll even inspire you.”

“Is that so? Wang Zheng’s physique would still inspire me more, though,” teased Du Qingqing.

“It’s a pity he already has an owner. As of now, he’s no longer a tiny plant but a famous one.”

Aina said, “Not you too, Zisu. Just because there’s a goalkeeper present, it doesn’t mean you can’t score a goal. We’re supporting you!”

Ye Zisu was still very calm and indifferent, although was hard to tell whether she was acting or not. She replied, “I have confidence and you’ll see in time.”

“Zisu, you’re definitely holding some kind of hidden ace. Please, tell us honestly what it is!” Du Qingqing exclaimed as she hugged Zisu. Many of the male students didn’t actually know what happened in the female dormitory. Truthfully, the male students were more casual, so the likelihood of them doing this sort of thing while walking down the hallway was even higher.

Ah, what a shock.

Chapter 6 – King Of The Dark Battlefied

The three of them were actually not this exposed at the moment, however, one could catch a glimpse of their undergarments under the loose-fitting nightgowns.

“Qingqing, it’s better if you make the most of your time now, don’t waste the majority of your youth away.”

“Ah, you guys, you actually directed the question back to me. I want to dedicate myself to art.”

Hearing that, both Ye Zisu and An Mei sneered at Du Qingqing.

“Ok, ok, let me see what is so special about this person.”

Fawn and Tiny Suds had already arrived. They had not expected that their popularity would increase exponentially. This was especially true for Fawn. Although he had received numerous ‘greetings’ before, but after all, this was still considered as being popular.

“Greetings everyone, welcome to the live broadcast. Tonight, Skeleton will appear.”

Little Suds had only applied light makeup. Rumor has it that Little Suds was still a student. It was just that, because she liked it, she was commentating on CT as a part-time job.

“Everyone probably wanted more after the five versus five group match last time. At present, Skeleton’s performance and experience had attracted the attention of a few high ranking players and even professional players, but they are still being very reserved. As player Skeleton’s winning streak continues to rise, however, even the ordinary matches will have these kinds of experts. This sure makes us feel anticipation.”

It was obvious that Little Suds was showing her adoration for Skeleton. Girls liked heroes and the mysterious.

Great uncle Fawn smiled faintly and said, “Little Suds, you’re still young and lack societal experience.There are times when you have to lower your expectations; it is possible that the player is a cranky old fellow.”

Before the match had even begun, the discussion forum was already warring with Fawn’s foul mouth.

“You are the old fellow; your entire family is old fellows!”

“Bring Fawn in front of a firing squad! He actually dared to seduce our family’s Little Suds!”

“Long live Skeleton God! Oppress Fawn to death!”

.....

The two commentators looked at the comments. Fawn was calm

and collected. He enjoyed this part very much due to his firm belief on a principle: No one was invincible in this world!

Anyone or anything would always have a weakness! Furthermore, the stronger the person, the greater the likelihood of being targeted!

Defeat was only a matter of time.

Wang Zheng knew that there were many things to prepare for, so he proceeded to flip through the introductions of various mecha while quietly waiting for the arrival of his opponent. He thought, compared to the brochures that Chen Xiu has, this is incredibly rich with information. It would be great if I had a chance to fight with all these mech experts one day

Perhaps due to the influence of Bonehead, Wang Zheng was now more focused on increasing his strength; he trained his body so that he could adapt to any kind of environment, and to become a super soldier capable of operating any combat vehicle. This was the goal of every super soldier.

The current human society, however, still placed an emphasis division of labor, creating many specializations.

Although there were some great pilots that were able to operate any type of mech, only when they used their specialized mech would they be able to unleash their full potential.

Different types of mecha had different styles of operation. The key point, though, was that all of them required a different combat rhythm.

For example, a scouter class required one to be keen and insightful.

A tank class needed self-sacrifice and bravery.

One had to wretched to be in the sniper class;for the sake of sniping a target, one had to be tenacious, able to sell out everything for the sake of victory, including one's teammates, and even one's self.

Everyone's character was different, and the strength one could exhibit when coming across a suitable mech pilot would also be different. If one met their opposite, they would tend to become a burden.

Therefore, it was said that mecha also had personality. All veterans would say this.

It truly was hard for Wang Zheng to find a match in his matchmaking situation. Both his rank and the number of matches he had played were very low, but his percentage of wins was exceptionally high. All 100% winning rates would be destroyed eventually.

The opponent arrived.

Darkness Huntmaster: Diamond Rank, expert assassin type mech pilot.

Mech: Hunter of Darkness, Maccah Republic's high-end mech.

Darkness Huntmaster; a well known Diamond Rank player from the European region. Assassin mech winning percentage of 60%.

Stats on Hunter of Darkness: victory rate above 70%.

The Maccah Republic had produced a few mecha that were used for special environments. Hunter of Darkness was a classic example, and was also a high-end mech that could be mass produced. It was built specifically for rugged environment and night combat.

Nicknamed King of the Night.

During mankind's period of interstellar exploration, there were quite a few discovered planets that were completely shrouded in darkness. The earliest example of this would be the dark side of the Moon. Due to the long periods of darkness, the combat results of ordinary mecha were not good.

Selected battleground: Lakato Cavern Planet

Within planetar combat circles, there were a few unspoken

rules.. One of those was to never, ever, fight a Hunter of Darkness on Lakato.

This planet resided within the Andromeda Galaxy. Its surface temperature was perpetually over three hundred degree celsius, regardless of day or night. Although it was completely unsuitable for human habitation, mineral resources was abundant there. Naturally, mankind would not let go of such an opportunity, and there was bound to be combat during the process of colonization. Within this planet were huge underground caverns, and of course, Lakato's own civilization.

In the end, mankind had finally conquered Lakato. At the same time, the Milky Way Federation had gained a new member.

The slightly childish term 'alien' had already been eliminated during mankind's interstellar expeditions. After all, it was just another civilization.

Even now, Lakato was still a famous sightseeing place, while the battlegrounds there were the nightmares of countless mech pilots.

Everyone quietly waited for Skeleton's selection. The battleground, Lakato caverns, was considered an extreme terrain. If one wanted to engage in combat in this kind of place, the minimum requirement would be to select a mech that was suitable for night combat. The second most important criteria would be flexibility, especially when twisting and turning. If one did not pay attention, one could smash oneself to death. This was why Beast type mecha were normally the first choice.

Wargod No.1...

Wang Zheng chose this without hesitation. He had never hesitated over his choice, and this time, it was no exception.

Only after confirming Skeleton's mech did Fawn give a faint smile and announced, " Ladies and gentlemen, the battle between player Skeleton and player Darkness Huntmaster is about to begin. We're streaming on broadcast number 873553. As for whether Wargod No.1 can replicate his success in Lakato, we will have to wait and see."

After his announcement, uncle Fawn started to tease the pretty girl beside him. "Little Suds, you're a supporter of Skeleton. Do you think that he can achieve victory this time?"

Being a veteran fan of planetary battles, he obviously knew what kind of place Lakato was. The cavernous terrain was like a maze with undulating surfaces and various kinds of dangerous stalactites. There were quite a few limitations with humanoid-type mecha, with the field of view being number one.

Every set of mecha had night vision capabilities. Wargod No.1, however, was the most basic model and thus would be very restricted in such an environment. On the other hand, Hunter of Darkness had the best night vision capabilities. Coupled with its formidable flexibility, it was famed as the King of the Night.

Little Suds laughed lightly and replied, "There is always a

possibility. His matches before this had all seemed to be impossible too."

"Really? Let's wait and see then. If Skeleton loses, will you grant me the honor of treating you to dinner to celebrate?" Fawn said with a smile. His beard had clearly been meticulously groomed until it was uniform. When he laughed, it would curl slightly upwards, making him seem very attractive.

The discussion chat exploded.

"Old Fawn, your mum is calling you to go home to eat!"

"Celebrate your face! It's just a Diamond Rank; you should bet your life!"

"Skeleton God is heaven-defyingly invincible!"

.....

When faced with such a discussion content, Fawn's only response was to smile. He thought, these ignorant fans, don't they know that there always comes the day when the dream ends.

At this moment, Little Suds' expression suddenly turned blank, before turning around and announcing, "Ladies and gentlemen, I apologise for the interruption. We have received urgent news that the player name, Darkness Huntmaster, is being used by a different person. This new person is the master of Hunter of Darkness; a

Diamond Rank of the European region, the number one in combat success while using the Hunter of Darkness for five consecutive months, Johnson Douma. ID: Master of Darkness.

What was this situation?

Although substitution of players would happen from time to time, wasn't it too exaggerated for a substitution to occur during a live broadcast?

It was obvious that even Darkness Huntmaster did not think that he would be replaced. However, his teacher just so happened to be by his side and was inspired to fight again.

This was the second time since Wild King that another expert Diamond Rank player entered combat.

This Johnson was a king of radicality, and special dark environments.

Within the European region, usually if one was matched up against him in that type of battleground, they would immediately surrender to avoid being suppressed. Even Diamond Ranked players would do so.

This person possessed a sinister, wretched and deranged heart.

"We need to ask for player Skeleton's opinion," announced Little Suds.

To Wang Zheng, passerby A and passerby B had no difference at all.

After approval was given, the live broadcast continued. After this small play though, the working area of CT became even busier.

The viewership continued to rise rapidly as fights between the strong would always create sparks. This match was different from the ones in the past. Some special environments could greatly restrain mecha. Even some of the outstanding mecha would perform very poorly in a cavernous terrain, let alone Wargod No.1.

Wargod No.1 VS Hunter of Darkness, match would begin in five minutes.

No expense was spared for advertising on the official website. At the same time, the official websites of Moon and Mars had also received the same report. Although it was not placed as a headline, these two regions rarely broadcasted matches that happened on Earth unless it was something eye-catching or unique.

This piece of news had still managed to attract a portion of viewers from Mars and the Moon. After all, examining the standard of Earth was considered an interesting thing to do.

However, when the live broadcast was actually a match between low-ranked opponents, it made many people even more curious.

This match had ample reasons as to why it should be watched; not because Skeleton had nine consecutive victories, but because he had been the main character of Lin Huiyin's MV.

That was the reason why everyone was attracted.

Once they saw the battleground and the mecha being used though, people who had the slightest clue on mecha and battlegrounds started to mock.

Is this bastard showing off?

An exhibition match?

Some felt depressed, while others felt regret. Since they had already paid the money, not watching would be a waste. At least they could appreciate the music that was played before the match, and the younger sister called Little Suds was quite adorable.

But there were some attentive people noticed the viewership numbers.

...524587...

This was the number of viewers that were watching the live broadcast?

Was this a mistake?

Did these Earthlings have a problem? How could so many people watch such a broken match?

The viewership at start of this match was the peak of the previous match. Although there was no notice, the zealousness of the audience was still beyond control.

One must know that most matches between high ranked players would require a public announcement a week in advance..

Johnson had already made his preparations. The appearance of this Skeleton had already attracted the attention of many high ranked players. This fellow had caused them to lose quite a lot of face as the discussion comparing Skeleton and high ranked standard players grew. However, due to the difference in their status, everyone did not take the initiative to propose a challenge. Furthermore, Skeleton’s rank was extremely low, thus they would not be able to meet during matchmaking.

This was a golden opportunity. At this stage, hiding his identity had no meaning. He wanted to announce to everyone that he, Johnson Douman, was the Owner of the Darkness battlegrounds!

Chapter 7 – A Blind Battle

Before the match started, several highlights of Johnson Douman's previous matches were chosen to be broad

One of the highlights even showed a high-level Pentakill clip titled 'Actions of God'. Indeed, his understanding regarding battles within complex and dark environments was very deep.

At a certain level, the type of mecha used would become more or less fixed. But one's understanding of piloting as well as of the environment were not things that could be copied.

After watching these brilliant battle highlights, even the most arrogant of players would have to recognize Johnson as a strong fighter.

To fight him in the world of Lakato would be a complete nightmare.

The audience split into two opposing sides. One believed that Skeleton would keep his legendary status, while the other was waiting to see his demise. Had the original Darkness Huntmaster been the one to fight him, Skeleton's chance of victory would be as high as 70% which was calculated based on his previous displays of skill and after considering that the terrain and other factors were not ideal. But with Johnson battling, that percentage would drop to at most 50%, and that was when considering a miracle would happen.

“Everyone, the battle has begun!” Little Suds said with much anticipation.

The map opened to reveal the mysterious and unpredictable underground world of Lakato. From a top-down point of view, the terrain looked very complicated. It was also littered with stalactites making it lethal to mecha.

The geology of this world differed from that of Earth. It held a high density of stalactites, an aggregation of hundreds upon thousands of them which made high speed attacks impossible. Before a person could got very far, they would get stabbed to death by these stalactites.

Jumping, agility, and understanding of the terrain were key when fighting on Lakato.

Of course, Wang Zheng had never been in this sort of place before, but he had already observed the general state of the geography. When it came to this sort of thing, Wang Zheng’s body would develop a natural and instinctive judgement from a single glance.

Super soldiers were the ones who used their brains, not their bodies, to adapt to the environment.

Instinctive memory and reaction were the most powerful.

Of course, to reach such a level, one would have to undergo

training that could be considered quite perverted.

If what Bonehead said was true, and the Randt Empire really had a super soldier division that was able to freely travel the universe, then these soldiers who could fight in any environment without being disadvantaged would unleash the greatest combat power. That was the pinnacle of mankind.

Wargod No.1 enters!

Hunter of Darkness enters!

Battle start!

As the battle began, the audience immediately quietened down.

There were two sides formed from those who liked Lakato and those who didn't. This was due to how deathly silent the place was, so silent it made people anxious. Humans naturally disliked dark environments as the impairment of sight would make them uncomfortable.

Still, there would always be a small group of people who enjoyed the 'hunter in the dark' atmosphere it gave.

Johnson Douma was one of those people.

He loved this sort of quiet, when all the noise and annoyances

disappeared, leaving room purely for waiting and fighting.

It was a kind of enjoyment to him.

The two mecha advanced through the underground world in the darkness, trying to detect a trace of the other party. They both used the smallest amount of force they could for travelling around, as making any noise in such a quiet environment was equivalent to revealing your location to the enemy.

If this clash between the Wargod No. 1 and the Hunter of Darkness was one's first time seeing Skeleton, they wouldn't be able to accept it, and instead wonder whether this fucker was just seeking death.

The audience was growing larger and larger, with some of the members not even being CT players, but those who purely enjoyed watching mecha battles instead. After all, it wasn't everyday they got to see a fight.

The shape of the Hunter of Darkness was between that of a lion and a wolf, and it was actually a depiction of the special creatures on Lakato called 'Cantharidin'. Throughout mankind's conquer of Lakato, these creatures would use bionics to achieve great battle results.

The Hunter of Darkness jumped about nimbly in the darkness; it appeared to be very suited to this sort of environment. Together with its silent equipment, its shock mitigation systems were unrivalled. After all, in the darkness, although the eyes were still

important, the ears were even more so.

None of the dangerous obstacles had any effect on Johnson. The way he advanced inside the mech made it seem as if he moved with great freedom and comfort.

Even if one were to nitpick, they would still have to give out words of praise upon seeing his movements.

On the other side, the Wargod No. 1 looked somewhat uncomfortable. It was clear that Skeleton was not used to this kind of environment. Humanoid mecha were definitely at a handicap in this sort of environment, with them being unable to speed up without easily getting blown up, and also making noises from time to time. These things tended to sour the pilot's mood when one had to be calmest in battle.

But the distance for which they had to search before the fight gave Wang Zheng sufficient time to adapt. When faced with difficulty, rather than losing his calm, Wang Zheng would become even more energetic.

A strange environment like this was interesting indeed. Using a humanoid mech in this kind of place would not be very enjoyable—unless one was courting death—as they couldn't use any fancy skills. When spinning, for example, they would get pierced unless they paid close attention.

That was one of the limitations of this mech.

Soon, the Wargod No. 1 stopped shaking precariously and the two mecha began to slowly approach each other in the dark grotto.

The two mecha immediately appeared on each other's radar, the two dots getting closer by the second.

That was when the Hunter of Darkness suddenly increased its speed with a series of accelerations. Although it reached a curved road, it did not attempt an ambush since sneak attacks would not be of any use.

The Hunter of Darkness had no reason to fear the Wargod No.1 at all. In this kind of domineering situation, as long as he could catch his opponent, he could end it in one strike.

His laser started to whir.

In their first firefight, Wang Zheng did not advance rashly. He chose to use precise laser shots to suppress the opponent and see if he can wear him down.

Johnson displayed shocking maneuverability. The Hunter of Darkness jumped agilely across the complex terrain and caused Skeleton's insane shots to all hit air.

Lasers were actually not a great choice in this sort of rough terrain. Faced with the advancement of the Hunter of Darkness, the pilot of Wargod No.1 did not panic; after all, he had absolute faith in his close combat ability.

Any laser attacks that weren't dodged were instead blocked by all sorts of obstacles. The Hunter of Darkness suddenly vanished, reappearing in mid-air the next moment while grasping a stalactite. With a sudden turn, he jumped, not towards Wargod No1, but in the direction of a nearby wall. As it dodged the laser attacks, the diving mech let out of a roar as from its enormous paws let ou three titanium-golden claws that struck toward Wargod No.1.

Its movements from start to finish made it seem like a ghost in the dark.

Boom....

Wargod No.1 simultaneously unsheathed its titanium blade and retreated half a step back. It immediately struck down with the blade, pushing down the claws, while also throwing a punch.

A response like this was terrifying. In the darkness, eyesight would be compromised resulting in slower reaction times, yet these two monsters seemed completely unaffected.

Seeing this punch, the Hunter of Darkness' hind legs exerted strength, pulling him backwards suddenly which caused Wargod No.1 to stagger. Having avoided the attack, it once again struck with its claws out.

Although it stumbled, the Wargod No.1 did not lose its balance. As the claws slashed through the air, ripping sounds could

practically be heard coming from the tips of the blades.

Wargod No.1 avoided the attack by a small margin and sent out a kick. With a jump, the Hunter of Darkness disappeared momentarily increasing the distance between them. Two more jumps after that, it disappeared into the darkness.

Such a spark-filled exchange caused the audience to turn silent. It was as if they were instead looking at the lights emitted by infrared light detectors accompanying a stream of loud sounds.

The heart strings of the members of the Skeleton Corps tightened in an instant. This was the first time someone had been able to dodge Skeleton's shots. Not only that, the opponent did not seem to be at a disadvantage in close combat.

The Hunter of Darkness disappeared into the darkness as it pulled back to a distance away from Skeleton. At that moment, Johnson made a decision that shocked everyone.

He switched off the infrared red sight stabilizer system that the Hunter of Darkness was known best for!

Besides possessing the appropriate structure for this kind of battle, its night vision system was also state of the art and very suited for a fight in the darkness. It reduced a number of errors caused by the pilot's lack of sight.

Johnson switched off its night vision system and instead turned

on the ultrasonic detection system. This was merely an assisting system.

Without the red dot, Hunter of Darkness completely melded into the darkness. What was more terrifying was the fact that without the night vision system, Johnson's movements grew even more agile.

It was as though he was one with the darkness.

Everyone was just stupefied at this sight.

It was said that the peak users of the Hunter of Darkness primarily used the ultrasonic system. The mech would blend into the darkness and use its heart to feel its surroundings, almost akin to a bat.

Even in the army, people of this level could only be counted on one hand. Why was there one in such a place?

Was he faking it?

Was he just acting?

The audience was not blind. Johnson's actions had clearly risen by a level, as if he became a ghost in the darkness. He quickly approached Wargod No.1 who was completely off-guard.

The frequency of the ultrasonic waves was too low, making it completely impossible to detect the position of any mech. However, the ultrasonic assistance system used echoes to differentiate and pinpoint the target's location.

The problem was... the Wargod No.1 did not have that fucking system!

To depend purely on his ears?

Everyone was stunned, that was a sure-fire way to die.

The Hunter of Darkness was already less than 10 meters away from the Wargod No.1, who seemed unable to determine the location of its enemy, no matter how much it scanned with its infrared sensors.

Never before had there been a player who could use ultrasonic waves to pinpoint locations. Instead of playing games, this fucker should have instead trained his body and entered the army to become its trump card.

It was a direct counter to the design of the Wargod No.1.

In the dark, the Hunter of Darkness became a real hunter, its attacks like a ghost's.

Only when a sound finally came out did that Wargod No.1 realized that the enemy was behind him. Yet it was too late to turn

its body as the Hunter of Darkness had already struck from behind.

There were some who had already closed their eyes. Boom...

God!

Wargod No.1 aimed at the claws with a backhand attack, blocking it by a hair's breadth, but staggering back from the force. The Hunter of Darkness once again jumped into the air, using the stalactite to jump down with its to claws intersecting in the shape of a cross.

That was an invincible slashing tempo!

Did this guy have any face? Only the military elites could pull of such a super attack after training to the highest level. To come to this kind of place, was he even human anymore?

The Wargod No.1 had already lost its centre of gravity. That was then it suddenly pulled strongly towards the stalactite beside him, causing him to spin in the air. At the same time, he kicked towards the descending Hunter of Darkness.

Only sounds rang out as the two exchanged blows in mid-air.

Chapter 8 – God Of Darkness

The two mecha retreated into the darkness at the same time. As Wang Zheng retreated, he switched off the infrared detection sensor on the Wargod No.1.

Everyone was thoroughly dumbfounded by this.

Wargod No. 1 had switched off his detection sensor, but it did not possess the ultrasonic detection system!.

Was he seeking death?

However, this was unavoidable, since the glowing infrared light would simply turn him into a living target in the darkness.

Hunter of Darkness also possessed a defensive shield. How could Wargod No.1 continue to fight? It seemed like there was no longer a chance for victory.

Although Skeleton's melee skills were exemplary, the opponent had already demonstrated abilities that could oppress and restrict him in this environment.

Whether it was one's first time or umpteenth time watching, one could only wait patiently. It was common sense for a commentator to stay quiet in a battle like this. The two commentators were very quiet during this match.

It was SHOWTIME for only these two competitors!

Although this match was not as explosive as the other matches, the atmosphere was more soul-stirring than any of the previous ones.

This was the first time that an opponent had totally controlled and pushed Wargod No.1 to a corner.

This was Johnson Douma.

The mysterious Hunter of Darkness was famous in the European region. In the higher ranks, so long as the map terrain was similar to Lakato, his victory was assured.

Very often, a legend would result in another legend.

Hunter of Darkness released his strong killer intent since he already locked onto his prey. To Johnson Douma, his opponent was as visible as a firefly in the darkness.

☆ ☆ ☆

At this moment, in an internet cafe somewhere in Europe.

A middle aged man was currently in battle, and the whole internet cafe knew that the boss had a lazy eye.

This was the legend known as the King of the Darkness.

No one knew that he was the Darkness Huntmaster besides the youth next to him.

This normal looking boss of an internet cafe used to be an ace pilot in the Covert Special Forces of the Sol Federation Army. However, during one mission, he suffered heavy injuries to his brain. After this injury, he was diagnosed with amblyopia. This compromised his vision, so he had to retire...

Faced with this kind of situation, some people would choose to stay in the army and settle for a random position. Some that had tasted glory would, instead, choose to go home peacefully.

However, while living a peaceful life, one would sometimes reminisce about the thrilling battles in the past. A true soldier's blood could only be calm in the moment of death.

Johnson had not had this feeling for a long time. Even though he did not know who his opponent was, he could tell that Skeleton would be considered a top soldier if he joined the army. This was only based on his reaction-time and actions, without considering his physical body.

It was not that he did not want to attack. His opponent simply did not display any flaw. Those "flaws" that were shown were actually traps. He would have to make sacrifices if he were to fall for it.

Similarly, Wang Zheng could also feel that his opponent was a top soldier with great battle experience and with a great deal of awareness for the battleground.

All the exchanges before were just to test each other out.

In the dark, Hunter of Darkness launched several attacks that made Ping Ping sounds unceasingly. However, he was unable to detect the location of Wargod No.1. Hunter of Darkness possessed great control over its body, using its claws to attach itself firmly onto the walls of the cavern.

Without knowing the position of the enemy, the laser naturally became useless. At this moment the hunter fully displayed its skills. The agile movements on the walls and the ground was sufficient to scare a child to pee in their pants.

Wargod No.1 did not make any movements at all since moving randomly would lead to certain death. Instead was currently trying to pinpoint the enemy's location.

Without the ultrasonic system to assist him, he could only hear echos everywhere. If, in the dead of darkness, one only kept hearing echos, it would cause fear, anxiety and helplessness to increase unceasingly.

Ultimately, it would cause one to collapse.

On looking at this scene, the audience was at a loss. If it was

anyone else under this kind of situation, they would have been so afraid that they would have surrendered already.

In fact, most players actually did choose to surrender.

To fight with Johnson in this kind of environment would mean that you had some psychological issues.

At this moment, the stationary Wargod No.1 suddenly launched an attack and hacked towards the space to his right.

However...

Fuck!

This was exactly where the Hunter of Darkness was about to charge in!

Such anticipation!

They could all tell this was the rhythm of a god!

It was not accidental at all!

Bang....

The two mecha made a violent exchange. It seemed like the

darkness had no effect on either one of them.

Such were the actions of experts that could integrate with the darkness.

In this kind of situation, their hearts became even clearer.

Wang Zheng was overjoyed. He finally met such an opponent!

Johnson’s eyes blinked, but the corner of his mouth twitched into a smile showing great happiness. He had always dreamt of fighting like this once again.

To a soldier like him, that had reached the peak, to leave the battleground was more painful than death itself.

No matter who the opponent was, he would fight without restraint!

He turned off the ultrasonic assistance system since it was only for newbies. His reactions would be delayed by one-third oflo a second if he made judgements based off of this..

A player’s operation of the mech and his choice of systems would be shown on the screen.

Such monsters! These two did not require any assistance system to fight in darkness!

The titanium-gold blade and claws gave off sparks with each exchange. The rugged terrain and obstacles in the darkness did not threaten them at all. Instead, the pace of their battle became even faster and more intense.

It was so intense that the audience began to feel suffocated

What kind of god level battle was this?

The audience from Mars and Moon were stupefied. Was this the current standard of Earth?

The level of Hunter of Darkness was already very abnormal, but this Wargod No.1 was even more abnormal. How was it possible to operate Wargod No.1 to such an extent, with all of these inhuman actions?

Actually, Humanoid mecha were able to display animalistic movements. Humans evolved from animals in the past. Though the four limbs were not very flexible, it wasn't impossible to move like animals.

Bang...

In an exchange that was over 10 strikes, both mecha separated and disappeared into the darkness. Such high level movements were both flexible like a hare and still as a maiden. .

At this moment, the armor of the mech went completely silent. In Johnson's ten plus years of service, the person in front of him was the highest level that he had ever met.

Having not moved like this in a while, Johnson wondered if he could still do that attack move.

As the engine of the Hunter of Darkness built pressure, Johnson felt as though all the cells in his body were jumping around and that he had returned to the past.

Hunter of Darkness suddenly advanced. Pata, PaPaPaTaTa....What kind of movement was this?

The four limbs of the Hunter of Darkness were completely incongruous. It was very difficult to predict the position, the attack angle and the direction of attack.

Using frequency conversion, it advanced with small, controlled, movements, creeping within the pitch-black darkness.

Wargod No.1 did not make any movement and seemed to be awaiting death. It was impossible to predict the movement path of his opponent like a moment ago.

However at this moment Wargod No.1 also made a move and the two of them seemed to be doing contrasting movements in this complicated terrain.

Wargod No.1 also displayed frequency conversion movements!

How did he do that with his two legs?

A bizarre feeling rose when looking at Wargod No.1's movements.

This is only possible through frequency conversion.

The distance between the two gradually drew closer. Hunter of Darkness made a movement and caught his opponent in an instant.

Only by losing one's sight could one calm one's heart and "see" even clearer.

The frequency conversion had no effect!

Fawn's inner voice was already screaming, "Kill this fucker and his god-like movements!"

Attack!

Hunter of Darkness madly attacked with its claws!

By jumping left and right, the two claws became insanely fast and in an instant, it seemed as though there were countless claws

swinging .

Wargod No.1's titanium-gold alloy could only block and defend, but Hunter of Darkness was in a frenzy. Its four limbs had the undisputed advantage while moving in this terrain.

The hind legs of the Hunter of Darkness gripped the ground and stabilized its body, which allowed it to attack with its front claws. Wargod No.1, however, was already creaking under the frenzied attacks.

If it was any other mech, it would have already been destroyed even with its armor on.

How long could Wargod No.1 endure?

Bang bang bang bang....

One of the arms of Wargod No.1 was pulled and it exploded!

Under such never-ending attacks, the stress on the mech was beyond the limit that it could endure.

This was the King of the Darkness.

Even God had to bow down to him here!

Some people started to let out a roar, cheering for the victor. On the other hand, the members of the Skeleton Corps started to despair.

What could Skeleton do now?

Bang...

The titanium-gold knife had been struck away!

Seeing how Wargod No.1's defense had already crumbled to such an extent, why was Skeleton still not dodging? Such a head-on battle was too disadvantageous due to the weakness of the mech.

At this moment, one must know that the Hunter of Darkness did not have its shield turned on.

It seemed like Skeleton was about to lose.

The prey was already on the point of collapsing. Johnson was waiting for this moment and completely disintegrated the opponent's armor!

At this moment, the Hunter of Darkness displayed its cross-lock killer move!

As the two claws struck down, Johnson's body burst with a strength that had disappeared for a long time. This was a warrior's

strength.

With a violent pull, his claws emitted a glow as it struck with great speed in the darkness.

This was a blow that could completely rip the ground.

At this moment.

With a flash of a red light, Wargod No.1 disappeared!

What followed immediately was a sound of an explosion and sparks that filled the sky.

Skeleton WIN!

What?

What happened?

Fawn jumped at this moment and completely forgot to comment on the situation, “What is this? Has Hunter of Darkness blacked out? How is it possible for Skeleton to win?”

The video play-backed the kill in slow-motion.

The environment brightened as the Hunter of Darkness rushed

over. Everyone saw that the reason why Wargod No.1 did not move from its spot was because there was a very sharp stalactite behind him.

As Hunter of Darkness was attacking, the red light that he saw was from Skeleton's infrared sensor system. In the darkness, such a light would momentarily blind you. This was especially so for someone that had integrated with the darkness.

There was not enough time for Johnson to recover from the state of blindness. In that instant, he knew he would actually lose this battle.

Such was the intuition of a soldier.

What greeted the Hunter of Darkness was an enormous and sharp tip of a stalactite.

It pierced through Johnson's mech because he did not manage to defend in time.

When everyone observed Wargod No.1's movement, they felt a chill down go their spine.

Wargod No.1 merely stepped sideways and observed Johnson being pierced by the stalactite.

Chapter 9 – A Soldier's Dedication

Within the Internet cafe of this small town, the boss was their god. He was the most famous expert there. He was held in even higher esteem because of his skills despite his disabled eyes.

He was a figure akin to god, a true war god.

Never would they have dreamt that Johnson would actually lose in this kind of battleground.

The Wargod No.1 stood quietly in the darkness. It was simply a terrifying devil in this battleground.

"Teac…Teacher…This isn't possible…"

Earl was completely dumbfounded. He thought, how could there be a person in this world that could possibly use Wargod No.1 to defeat his teacher? Furthermore in the world of darkness?

Johnson slowly removed the tactile feedback unit and slightly opened his eyes. Looking at the blurry world in front of him, he took out a cigarette and lighted it.

A faint smile slowly appeared at the corner of his mouth. He thought, there are times when happiness comes from losing.

Looking at the Hunter of Darkness that was spewing sparks in all

directions, Wargod No.1 gave a military salute using its remaining arm.

Wang Zhong was confident that the opponent he met was a soldier. Only soldiers that had experienced hundreds of battles would possess such a fighting spirit.

That was something worthy of respect. Being able to compare notes with such a person was an honor for Wang Zhong.

If Johnson was the King of Darkness, Skeleton would be the God of Darkness!

Wargod No.1 was not a god. Even if someone possesses godlike control there would be a limit within such an environment. Possessing godlike control was not the sole reason for his victory.

Within the battlefield, one's mental state and surroundings could determine one's victory or defeat.

All of his actions were just a preparation for the final strike.

This was the reason for the suffocating silence.

What kind of mental state does one need to possess to remain calm and collected in such circumstances.

A chorus of roars started to resound.

The various animalistic shouts came from the Skeleton Army corps. Till the last moment, they had not dared to believe that he could actually make a comeback.

This was a match that shocked them to their core. The opponent was too fucking ferocious. Furthermore, his superiority in this environment was too violent. However, a god sure was a god! Skeleton God still won!

Resounding across the entire viewing gallery, countless voices were singing and chanting the combat song of the Skeleton Army Corps.

Another part of the audience who were slightly more rational couldn't help but sigh since they did not understand how this happened.

If the mech's movement was restricted, it would mean that Skeleton's ability to perceive the general situation and the fine details was seriously heaven-defying.

Fawn's mouth had dried up. His state of mind had been thoroughly affected by these turn of events, that changed like a rollercoaster. Recently, he had always felt that he could not experience an orgasm. What kind of tragedy was this.

"Old uncle Deer, when one lives, one has to believe in miracles!"

Little Suds revealed a brilliant smile as she poked lightly at the wounded heart of her comrade Old Fawn.

Within the live broadcast, Old Fawn felt his head getting dizzy before collapsing to the ground.

This immediately caused the entire broadcasting room to panic and turn flustered.

The number of VIPs had broken eight hundred thousand, with the VVIPs reached five hundred thousand.

This was a heaven-defying number.

After a short while the officials published the video for the post-match analysis:

“Salute to the immortal battle soul of –Johnson!”

That was right, it was Johnson.

This person was once a member of the Special Warfare Corps and had achieved many illustrious military exploits. Although he had left the army, there were many people who had not forgotten the meritorious service he had done.

His current body was unable to fit in within the army. However, he needed another method to carry on living, to keep his mind

moving.

Now people finally understood why Johnson could achieve a hundred percent victory rate in Lakato. He was the true King of Darkness.

However…who was Skeleton?

He could actually defeat a true soldier using a Wargod No.1. Was there anyone else who could perform such a heaven-defying act in this world???

Like the previous match, Skeleton made the play of a god.

This was a salute between soldiers!

There was no roar nor was there any yelling. There was only a calm showdown between two soldiers. This was a match between experience, a match between the accuracy of one's judgement.

Their acute sense of observation was enough to scare a large portion of people. There were too many people who would immediately crumble, after losing their bearings, in this kind of environment.

Furthermore, they were able to perceive their environment in such detail without even relying on any equipment. This made their opponents fall into endless despair.

Because of this match, people realized that one can only achieve victory by relying on their own strength. One's identity or status didn't matter. All that mattered was the person themselves.

"Let us follow Skeleton God and exceed the gods!"

This was the title of the analysis video posted by Super Xiu, the chief of staff of the Skeleton Army Corps.

The girls within many universities were currently gossiping about topics such as which guys were handsome, who had nice muscles, who had a one night stand and so on. Just when they were in the middle of their gossiping, wailing noises akin to those made by wolves suddenly started resounding out from the male dormitories across them.

They were literally wailing as there was no other way for them to express the fervor in their hearts.

This was what it means to be an expert! Anyone who relies on equipment was weak!

Ye Zisu and the other two looked at each other in dismay. Although the girls did not have the same expressions as the guys, the three of them were dazed for quite a while.

"Is this still considered human? How could he still have the energy to care about other things at such a moment?" asked Du

Qingqing with a dark expression. Although she was not very knowledgeable, even the audience did not have the mind of paying attention to other things during this explosive battle.

“Being able to control the overall situation is an essential quality that a commander must possess,” Ye Zisu sighed.

Saying this was easy, however achieving this was too hard. Within the history of mankind, only those great existences could achieve such a feat.

True strength lies in being able to control the most fatal moment within the overall situation, as such moments would most likely be the easiest to overlook.

“This is a general’s talent.” said An Mei sighing deep in her heart. Clicking her tongue, she added, “Even I am interested in him.”

“Ha ha, you have to be careful. If you don’t, Tyrant Su will teach you a lesson!”

“As if he has the guts!” replied An Mei with a smile. After being in a relationship, An Mei had recently become more radiant and beautiful.

It was not wrong to say that a girl in love was the most beautiful.

“Even I feel curious about the real identity of Skeleton. Johnson is absolutely an expert within the army. Although he was affected

by his body, within CT, the influence should be at 10 to 20% max," said Ye Zisu with a sigh. The other two had also nodded their heads in agreement.

One had to know that Skeleton had used Wargod No.1. This was a mech that would be almost useless in Lakato.

Without experiencing harsh training in darkness, one would be unable to adapt to the darkness.

For Wang Zheng this kind of darkness was akin to child's play. Compared to the deathly stillness and despair space of bonehead that would turn people frantic and flustered, this kind of darkness was comparatively happy.

Assimilation?

At a point when one feels that even death was a luxurious thing, assimilation would not be considered a big thing anymore.

For Wang Zheng, being able to meet such an opponent was a blessing for him. This made him feel that all the hard work he had put in was worth it. This was not just a battle of mecha, this was also a battle of will power.

He could feel the hard work and resilience of his opponent. This had also made him feel that his hard work and resilience was all worth it.

He was not lonely!

This salute signified his respect for his opponent.

There were no losers in here.

After personally experiencing such a battle, it had already left Little Sud's girlish heart so touched that her eyes were brimming with tears. The background music was still "NOT AFRAID" by Lin Huiyin. Indeed, within this world, as long as one had courage, there was nothing to be afraid of.

Within the small town, there were many people online who became aware of Johnson's background for the first time. Everyone had assumed that he was a half blind brat that loved to play games. Although he had lost, the applause for him had resounded across the sky. Johnson, was a hero!

Little Suds forcefully restrained her emotions. After forgetting to do something last time, she could not forget to conduct an interview once again.

"Player Skeleton, representing everyone, I would like to ask a question that everyone has been dying to know... do you have a girlfriend?" Little Suds asked with a red face. "Ahem, that's not it. That was my personal question. Everyone's question was, why did you choose Wargod No.1?"

The number of VIPs had already risen and was approaching eight

hundred thousand, and it was continuing to rise.

Lin Huiyin was currently lying on her bed continuously writing something. At this time, unexpectedly, there were tears on her face.

She felt that she had become more and more sentimental. This was true combat. Within it, there was willpower and dedication. This was a melody of perseverance. She had never imagined that this could give her inspiration!

The brief three seconds of interlude seemed like three days. Everyone was quietly waiting for the answer.

However within the focus of the hundreds and thousands of viewers, two words appeared on the screen, “free forever.”

This… was this the reply of the super god of the legends!

Solon had nearly fallen off from his chair. He had conjured many potential reasons, the most reasonable being that Wargod No.1 was the best at displaying one’s combat prowess… in the end…

It was only natural that everyone would not treat this as real. Although there were a few girls who had become frantic, which were discovered by Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun. Was it due to the two words that caused the number of female players to skyrocket?

What was this situation?

Within the eyes of girls, a grim and callous hero was only suitable to observe in the distance. However, it was a hero that possessed a humourous heart that was considered to be the perfect lover.

The innocent student Wang was currently reflecting on the match. This match was quite satisfying since the oppression by his opponent forced him to keep his focus on his surroundings. Everyone assumed that the environment was unfavorable for the Wargod No.1. This way of thinking was an extremely strong weapon. From this perspective, it could be considered as an advantage.

As for his reply,... that was a genuine truth.

Being free was a firm reason.

Within the Shangri-la hotel, Aina was currently reporting on the condition of her life. The commitment of being a princess was opposite of being free. With regards to her “strange” wish, the royal family was actually very against it. Only due to their rules and principles did they finally accept. However, they wished for Aina to maintain her original standing as a princess.

Although her identity was a secret, being a princess, her status should be maintained.

Naturally, due to Aina being the role model of all the princesses within the royal families of Milky Way Federation, nobody was worried. They treated it as a desire to experience the

circumstances of the common people. Since Earth was the place of origin of mankind, it provided a more genuine exposure to human culture.

After dilly-dallying for one hour, Aina finally could end her mission for this weekend. As she thought about the future, she felt that she was going to get a headache. She knew she was playing with fire, like a moth that flies into a flame. However, she was incapable of controlling herself.

At this moment she really envied Huiyin. Both being princesses, Huiyin could do the things she wanted and was able to pursue her singing dream as much as she liked.

However, who made her the first in the line of successors for the King?

Chapter 10 – The Strength Of The Zeus And Apollo Colleges

Masasi, along with the others, made their final preparations.

Iron Leg looked at everyone and said, “I have seen all of you doing your best so far. In tomorrow’s battle, I hope that all of you will be able to display your prowess and perform with no regrets!”

“Yes!”

“Zhang Shan, do you have anything else to say?”

“Reporting to Instructor. I hope you can consider Wang Zheng to be our substitute. We lack substitutes at the moment.”

Zhuo Mu stared briefly. That student had decent performance before. However, he fell sick during the first day of special training and did not participate in the end. Strangely, the principal had also recommended him again today.

“Can you be responsible for your judgment?” Zhuo Mu asked Zhang Shan.

Zhang Shan stared blankly. Even though Wang Zheng performed well at the military school so far, his calibre wasn’t lower than Zhang Shan’s at all.

Meng Tian suddenly stepped forward. “Reporting to Instructor. I believe Wang Zheng will be able to do it!”

“Is that so?” Zhuo Mu asked hesitantly.

Masasi suddenly stepped forth and said with a smile, “Instructor, we indeed lack a substitute. I believe Wang Zheng should be given a chance.”

“Masasi, you are the leader and this is your decision to make. I will respect your decision and he will be the substitute then.”

Zhuo Mu waved his hand, indicating that everyone should go and rest.

“Leader, I thank you on behalf of Wang Zheng,” said Zhang Shan. He didn’t expect Masasi and Meng Tian to approve of Wang Zheng. However, he still thought Wang Zheng was more suited for the physics department.

“Keke. I heard Student Wang Zheng just made a big contribution in the area of spatial physics. I hope he is also able to give our team a boost,” Masasi said with a graceful demeanor. This was a characteristic of the people from the Moon.

To Masasi, he hoped this opportunity would allow him to obtain first hand information. This Wang Zheng was also one of those under his surveillance. He unexpectedly had a weak body, however.

As a soldier, it was imperative that one's body must be strong. But it didn't matter how strong you were if you dropped the ball during a crucial moment.

Yet, since the team lacked a substitute, having him around would make observing him easier. .

☆ ☆ ☆

The Three Great Military Academies' meeting formally started and the three principals took turns to speak. Although they were guests, Jamal and Adonis weren't modest at all and took the opportunity to shamelessly introduce their respective school's philosophy and future goals.

The introduction of the school representatives followed. From Ares College, the team captain was Masasi; from Zeus College, it was Lear Cronus, and from Apollo College it was Campana.

Masasi had an aura like the spring breeze while Campana had a more aggressive atmosphere. After all, he had accumulated many years of prestige.

Lear Cronus was relatively unknown in the past and didn't seem to have anything impressive about him. He had a rather cool expression on his face and was a freshman captain like Masasi.

His only relation to Wang Zheng and Yao Xiaosu was that he was

Yue Jing's present boyfriend.

Yan Xiaosu was actually a very soft-hearted person and didn't let his past bother him. Now that he had a new life and a girlfriend, he naturally wished Yue Jing would also move on and have a better life.

The first day began in a lively manner, but for the students of Ares College the nightmare had just begun.

The first day's competition was the individual's category.

An obstacle course and firing competition were part of the three big events.

The competition was held in the glorious square of Ares college.

All of the members of the squad had to participate in the first event. In the obstacle course, their individual scores were tallied together.

The course was made of a one-kilometer run that included traversing over ropes, walls, single-plank bridges, hanging nets, and other various kinds of obstacles. This tested a soldier's comprehensive physical condition.

Ares College was up first and countless Ares College students cheered on relentlessly, their cheers resounding in the air. There was indeed some hope that they would win the first event.

In the substitute stand, Wang Zheng also applauded his heart out.

Chen Xiu and the other beauties were seated in the front row. Tyrant Su had already bought over several drinks and cheering props. It seemed this was his specialty.

As Masasi and his team entered the stage, they were immediately welcomed by cheers from the audience. The referee introduced the members one by one and when it came to Meng Tian, the cheers became much louder. A maiden indeed had much allure.

From the Zeus' team, Lear glanced briefly at Meng Tian. However, Meng Tian evaded his gaze when she felt it.

The competition started!

Ma Xiao, as a senior squad member and the previous leader, was the first to compete. He was familiar with these obstacles. Even though the obstacles were more difficult this year, it wasn't something he had to be afraid of.

The current school record was 3 minutes and 10 seconds. As Ma Xiao overcame each obstacle, the cheers grew more intense, spurring him to move faster.

Although he finished in 3 minutes 19 seconds, which was 9 seconds more than the current record, the crowd still cheered. It

was because the difficulty of the obstacles this year was higher, so this was already considered a very good result.

Jiang Bin was the next to come on stage. He was slightly worse at 3 minutes 50 seconds, but since he was under 4 minutes, he still received a decent amount of applause.

The Zeus and Apollo teams, however, were already showing disdain on their faces. Some of them even laughed mockingly.

Next up was Meng Tian. Even though female competitors tend to be few, no one dared to belittle her. To compete as a female, she must surely be stronger than a man.

Sure enough, Meng Tian displayed sturdy, nimble moves with a high efficiency and no wasted actions. Her figure came into play here. Those two long, slender legs were indeed powerful.

Meng Tian completed the race and broke the school record at 3 minutes and 2 seconds. The applause was resounding. She is surely the flower of the school.

Upon finishing the race, Meng Tian returned to her seat in a cold manner.

As Zhang Shan came on stage and swung his arms, the excitement of the crowd went even higher, especially because he was from the Physics Department.

Finally, Zhang Shan completed it in 3 minutes and 9 seconds, also breaking the old school record. This made the other males in the Physics Department go crazy with excitement.

Such power!

Chen Xiu jumped up and screamed uncontrollably. It looked like he was trying to scare off the competitors.

The last to compete was Masasi. Everyone was interested to know how well this genius would perform and if he would live up to his reputation.

The whole stage was quiet as they awaited Masasi's performance.

Soon enough, Masasi completed it in 2 minutes and 50 seconds. The students exploded with excitement.

This was strength!

This was the standard!

This was the power of Ares College!

Once the result was announced, everyone was full of confidence that Ares College would win all of the events!

Jiang Bin, as the worst, also maintained the standard and didn't drop the ball.

Next up was Campana from Apollo College.

Campana took the microphone and said, "Everyone from the Ares College, if our performance later offends you, I apologize for that. I just ask that you accept the reality."

What kind of situation was this?

The competition hadn't even started, yet Campana spoke as though they had already won?

The students of Apollo looked as though they were all made from the same mold. Their golden proportions, muscles, and lines made them look like experts.

The first result was 3 minutes 5 seconds.

Second was 3 minutes 4 seconds.

Third was 3 minutes.

Fourth was 2 minutes 50 seconds.

Campana was 2 minutes 30 seconds.

It was 2 minute 30 seconds... That was as good as the top within Earth's Military Academy!

The whole crowd went quiet. It was as Campana had said at the beginning of the match. If they received a blow, he was very sorry but this was the reality.

The reality was that they were too weak!

Only Masasi could be considered decent, but was that enough??

It seemed like this year was going to be Apollo's year again.

Next up was Zeus College. The might of Zeus College wasn't low, but it was still lower than Apollo.

Lear Cronus also took the microphone and said, "On the great river, the back wave pushes the front wave, a new generation replaces the old."

This was directed at Campana.

All these years, many had challenged him and lost, so Campana merely smiled lightly.

The first to appear on stage from Zeus College was actually a fatty named Luo Fei.

The fuck, could he enter a mech with that kind of figure?

Could it be that Zeus College is trying to give Ares College some confidence?

Very quickly, everyone went deadly quiet.

This was actually a fatty that could ‘fly’. Moving like a high-speed meatball, he completed it in 2 minutes 45 seconds.

Even though he didn’t beat Campana’s record, it must be remembered that he was the vanguard. This gave the audience an immense amount of pressure.

Zeus College had a very different situation with people of various height and weight who looked like they were goofing around. But in the end, their results were all under 3 minutes.

Lear, the last to appear, was as fast as lightning. He moved through the obstacles without dropping his speed at all. This wasn’t because he knew the obstacles well. Rather it was because he was able to fully control his rhythm and speed. It looked like an artistic performance.

At the end, he suddenly reduced his speed and walked the last 3 steps casually. The final time was… two minutes.

This… was a demonstration!

Lear stood at the finish line and gazed quietly at everyone. Even though he seemed to be looking up, everyone felt as though he were looking down upon them.

After setting the new record and breaking the record of the Earth Federation Military Academy, Lear appeared indifferent. Furthermore, he had the chance to finish it under 2 minutes but gave that up.

Did he calculate those two minutes?

This was another blow to their confidence. The previously confident Ares College was now filled with a deadly silence.

Lear once again looked at Meng Tian and Meng Tian shifted her gaze. This result didn’t seem to shock her too much.

Campana was stunned. He didn’t expect to meet such an opponent. Yet, this was still just the beginning. It seems like this will be interesting.

Just being able to run and jump did not mean much.

This exchange between the colleges seemed to be overcome by a wave. Suddenly, there was a hint of a battle, a battle between the old and new champions.

Would Campana still remain undefeated, or would this Lear Cronus be the new champion?

☆ ☆ ☆

The second segment: Shooting.

One couldn’t just shoot randomly during this event. There were people at the side who kept making loud noises and even waved their hands unceasingly. To be fair, all opponents would make this kind of trouble.

In this situation, Ares College performed poorly. Only Masasi and Meng Tian were still considered decent. The rest, however…

Zhang Shan wished he could just punch his opponent. That fatty actually asked a female student to go to bed with him. This fucker was seriously shameless.

Chapter 11 – Sacrifice In Crisis

Meng Tian was unaffected by the situation. Lear sat at the side like a gentleman, quietly observing her, but her performance just wasn't as good.

When it was Zeus College's turn, Lear was the only one who achieved full points.

Those who interfered with him felt as though they had been slapped across the face. Yet, Lear didn't react at all.

During the last gathering, Apollo College's students were quite insidious. They had threatened Lear with knives. Although they weren't allowed to harm other competitors, the knife had been placed extremely close to his face. Alas it was of no use...

At this time, only a trace of ridicule flashed across Lear's eyes.

Campana had missed just three shots and was ranked second.

He could finally feel stiff competition awaiting him.

☆ ☆ ☆

After the first day of competition, Ares College was completely shoved to a supporting role. Their performance was absolutely miserable. Jiang Bin had fired 50 shots in the shooting competition

but missed 30 of them. He had set a new record for the worst possible performance.

By the end, even if one didn't feel ashamed, everyone felt disregarded. It had completely turned into a fight between Lear and Campana. Even Masasi's performance only allowed him to take fourth place.

Before the competition, Masasi had been the centre of attention. Who could have known the result would be so different?

The talent of the average individual on Earth was terrible. However, the cream of the crop hadn't yet reached a point where they would be trampled by those of the Moon. From the beginning, Lear and Campana had never placed Masasi in their sights.

So what if he was an elite from the Moon?

These guests from afar didn't give the organizer, Ares College, any face. After two rounds of competition, Ares College was at the bottom for every event and the disparity between the next place was immense.

One person became famous after one battle and that was Lear Cronus. He managed to easily attain first place for both events while breaking existing records. At the same time he crushed Campana under his foot, it was quite stunning. His performance in the competition caused him to be firmly engraved in the minds of the journalists and military recruitment officers.

Gu Te's face was like leaves swept away by the autumn wind. He could no longer even smile. Although Xiao Fei's theory had caused a large uproar, it had only made the media scrutinize his school even more. Although this was supposed to be a good thing, it ended up causing him more trouble than good.

In the face of competition, feelings were unimportant.

What a military college needed was strength.

Everyone was originally cheering for the home team, but towards the end, everyone felt quite listless and a third left as they could no longer bear to watch what was happening. They were being tyrannically oppressed.

☆ ☆ ☆

Ares College was extremely quiet in the evening. Zhang Shan just stared blankly into space. It was too depressing. They had originally planned to show off their abilities during the competition but had instead been crushed. If it was not for Masasi's performance salvaging a scrap of respect for their team, they would have completely lost all face.

It could be said that Gu Te's revival plan had a wrench thrown into it.

"Brother Shan, it's just the first day. There will still be opportunities for a comeback!" Chen Xiu consoled.

Zhang Shan's performance was still acceptable and was in the middle of the pack. Meng Tian also performed comparably. However, the problem was with Ma Xiao and Jiang Bin, they dragged the team down.

Jiang Bin was unfortunately not skilled enough. Although he was considered outstanding normally, during the heat of the moment he was unable to keep up. On the other hand, Ma Xiao was about to graduate. Thus, he was not as disciplined in maintaining his training. A single special training just wasn't sufficient. Furthermore, Ma Xiao lacked that tyrannical aura; to him, he had already lost three years in a row so losing once more didn't mean much.

Zhang Shan slammed his fist heavily against the table. "Damn it all! That bastard Lear is too arrogant. He doesn't even consider us as an opponent!"

"It's not that he doesn't consider you an opponent, just that he doesn't consider anyone to be worthy of his attention. That bastard broke the records for both events in the competition. This is just something we are unable to match up with," Yao Ailun said as he shrugged his shoulders.

"Brother Ailun, don't be discouraged. It is at times like these that we have to support Brother Shan even more!" said Chen Xiu.

Yao Ailun stood up and patted Zhang Shan's shoulder. "I have to speak the truth to a brother. There's nothing exciting about this.

The opponents are already so strong during the testing phase, so can you imagine how ferocious they will be when they are in a mech? That bastard is just too strong. This just feels like adults bullying children."

Zhang Shan was extremely depressed. Before the competition, the instructor had said that their current abilities would give them a fighting chance. Yet, that was only in comparison to the previous year's standards. Although they had improved, so had the other academies.

Wang Zheng didn't know what to say. For example, during the shooting competition, it was a competition where one had to shoot under pressure and distractions. Although Zhang Shan was usually quite an accurate shooter, in this situation his performance took a large hit. Compared to the other opponents who performed splendidly, especially Lear, this only showed how skillful they were.

The Skylink rang. It was Zhuo Mu. Zhang Shan was too embarrassed to face his own instructor.

"Wang Zheng, Instructor Zhuo wants you to come as well."

As a team substitute, Wang Zheng sat on the bench watching the entire day. That taste of defeat was a bitter pill to swallow.

☆ ☆ ☆

In the training room, all the members had arrived. It was completely silent as everyone hung their heads in shame.

Masasi was the only one with an expressionless face. However, he was still the captain and his team had lost spectacularly. He didn't want to be too eye-catching during the competition but he did not expect the team to perform so badly. Regardless, he was still a member of Ares College and if he lost too badly, he would lose all his radiance.

Although Meng Tian was still as icy as usual, her gaze held a trace of frustration.

Ma Xiao and Jiang Bin seemed quite nonchalant. They were used to it. It was said that repeated abuse would cause one to become numb and this wasn't their first time.

After a period of time, the shame would gradually dissipate. This was their home turf after all and they were still the kings here.

Wang Zheng did not even get the chance to perform today. After a short period of time, Zhuo Mu arrived.

Surprisingly, even though he was furious, Zhuo Mo looked at the group and sighed

"Tomorrow will be the last day I will be teaching at Ares College. Being unable to match up to others is not a humiliation. However, giving up after the first defeat is a sign of weakness. Regardless of

the results tomorrow, I hope everyone would be able to demonstrate the full extent of their abilities. Don't have any regrets!"

Zhuo Mu said this all calmly. With such results, he could no longer stay on. Dismissing himself was necessary.

Zhang Shan clenched his fist tightly. He could feel that Zhuo Mu was an excellent instructor during their training period. His iron-blooded soldierly demeanor boosted his morale but he himself had not worked hard enough.

His gaze swept across the team. Even Ma Xiao felt slightly guilty. On the contrary Jiang Bin was completely nonchalant.

"Instructor, during yesterday's testing I injured my leg. I didn't realize it at first but now it hurts. Can I be excused from tomorrow's competition?" Jiang Bin suddenly said. Everyone's gaze washed over him. Bitch, what kind of bullshit injury was he talking about. He was clearly trying to escape.

If it was the previous Zhuo Mu, he would definitely be furious by now. Yet, this time he seemed unwilling to say anything. "One's path is chosen by oneself. You can go. Wang Zheng, do you want to give it a shot?"

The moment he was excused, Jiang Bin rushed out. This entire first day it was as though he was sitting on a pincushion. He had completely lost all face. The second day would only get worse and he was unwilling to suffer to the end.

Wang Zheng saluted smartly. “Yes!”

His voice was extremely excited. Zhuo Mu stared blankly for a moment before shaking his head, “Kid, you will be using a real mech tomorrow. Are you sure you can do it?”

“Reporting to Instructor! I learned how to pilot a mech when I was in the OMG. I think the controls should not be significantly different and I am unafraid of humiliation!” Wang Zheng said directly.

Zhuo Mu gave a bitter smile. Being able to pilot a mech and competing in one were two completely different things. The problem was that the competition mecha had been locked up and could not be used. Else even a few hours of practice in it would be good.

Right now, Wang Zheng was the only choice he had, as the team couldn’t be short of any member. Having stage fright was more shameful than losing. If news of this came out, Ares College would lose all respect. If they lost the discipline of a soldier, such a military college should just close down entirely.

They might as well turn the college into a Humanities College.

In fact, some individuals had already suggested doing just that. They would remove the military departments as it could no longer maintain its status as one of the top 3 military colleges.

There were numerous colleges waiting for a spot to vacate and they were willing to take Ares' place.

Zhuo Mu was in no mood to continue admonishing them. There was no use to it. Although Masasi could perform better, he was an outsider and could not fully integrate into the place. It was nonsensical to suggest he would give his heart and soul in competing for Ares College as he had already performed excellently.

The students had left leaving only Zhuo Mu there. He stared at the empty training field, his eyes a little red. He had too many memories of this place. He wanted to do a lot of things but in the end, he accomplished nothing.

It was time for someone else to take his place.

But before that, he would stand proud for his last class.

☆ ☆ ☆

Gu Te was also extremely depressed. The moment the competition ended, he received numerous Skylink calls. Some wanted interviews, some wanted to ask questions, and some wanted to express their dissatisfaction.

Losing face was not a problem, but it couldn't be to such an extent.

At times, the greater the expectations, the greater the sense of disappointment. He had great hopes for his little tricks but it brought about even greater disappointment. One trick had chosen to transfer schools, and while the other one had performed admirably, it was insufficient to restore the school from the brink of defeat. What was even more surprising was that the school's standards had actually dropped.

If not for Xiao Fei's scientific results, he would not have known how the situation would have developed. So many years of weakness had finally coalesced and exploded.

The parliament had also organized an emergency meeting. A single principal could not change the situation. Regardless of how brilliant he was, one had to know their limits. Although Gu Te was widely respected in the military and political circles, at this point in time he should voluntarily resign instead of holding on till the end.

Although Xiao Fei's results were great, it would not restore a military college's splendor.

To Gu Te, this was also an extremely tough night. Many times it was harder to hold on than to give up.

☆ ☆ ☆

On the second day, although the mecha competition was extremely enticing for the students, not even half the stadium was

filled. Yesterday's defeat had sunk in deeply and no one wanted to be abused further today.

Xiao Fei originally wanted to go to the Moon for a meeting at the Sol Federation's Federal Academy of Science since her discovery was undoubtedly the most astonishing one of the year.

However, after yesterday's grievous defeat, she and Marcus put their plans on hold. Regardless of the situation, they were still a part of Ares College.

The moment Xiao Fei appeared, the entire field burst out into applause. Perhaps only Professor Xiao Fei could redeem a shred of the student's dignity.

Zeus and Apollo Colleges' students also stood to applaud her. Xiao Fei's discovery had already been verified by the Sol Federation. Although it was currently being submitted to the Milky Way System for further verification, regardless of the situation this was still something every student looked up to.

Chapter 12 – Encouraging With Threats

Hong, hong, hong! One mech after another walked into the stadium, eliciting many excited cheers from the audience.

The mech design used for this meet was the Ascending Cloud Training Mecha WE. It was the standard for all military academies.

Today's scheduled events were the integrated mech obstacle course, mecha shooting test, and the ever so popular, solo mech combat.

The Apollo Military College was first to take the stage this time. Perhaps it was to preserve what little dignity the host college had left and give face to Principal Gu Te.

The first event, the mech obstacle course, tested the responsiveness and flexibility of a pilot. After passing the obstacle course, one had to target and attack preassigned targets within three seconds.

Having suffered a loss yesterday, Campana felt rather embarrassed. Desiring to display his strengths in a segment that he was distinguished in, he was the first to go up.

As someone familiar with the Ascending Cloud Training WE, Campana was confident he would excel in the obstacle course.

As Campana entered the stage, all the students of Apollo Military

College stood up and cheered. At the sound of the gun, his WE shot out. The mech's movement caused the earth to tremble. Campana used rolls, jumps, dashes and short-length maneuvers, effectively showcasing his superb mech operating skills. This was nothing like the video games, as every movement would exert stress on the pilot's body. If one was unable to handle the pressure, the movements would become distorted.

There were soldiers positioned at both sides of the course. They would shoot lasers at the mech which would effectively incapacitate the mech on hit. Campana's WE directly dashed ahead and executed a mid-air somersault to avoid the laser fire, eliciting a round of cheers from the audience. Faced with such an impressive performance, even the students of Ares College couldn't be stingy with their applause.

Campana's mech landed with a skid, and planted a knee into the ground. Laser guns appeared in both of his hands and rumbling sounds were issued...

His aim stayed locked on his targets.

The targets were hit and loudly crashed to the ground

If one had to describe it in a word, the performance would have been called perfect.

Campana exited the cockpit and waved his hands. A sheen of perspiration could be seen on his forehead, but it could be heard from his voice that he was at his optimum level.The audience

continued to cheer him on.

Attack completed in 2 Minutes 10 Seconds!

The rest of the participants from Apollo Military College finished with results ranging around three minutes, which showed there was still a gap between them and Campana. Still, everyone managed to complete the segment.

Apollo Military College's overall result was 14 minutes 23 seconds.

Only the two colleges with the best results would have the qualifications to compete in the final round of solo mech battles.

The one with the worst result would be relegated to watch on the sidelines.

As if the two were in direct competition, Lear Cronus was also the first to take the stage on the side of Zeus Military College.

Everyone In the audience paid close attention to the superb talent who had previously astounded everyone. The only thing they did not know was how good he was as a mech pilot.

"I'm really looking forward to watching this brat trip up, since freshmen are often less proficient at piloting mecha, compared to their seniors,"

Ma Xiao mused. Time and practice were required to operate a mech. There was a limit to what freshmen could achieve, given the limited time they had to practice with a mech.

“This is his strongest area though,” Meng Tian suddenly said, attracting the looks of the surrounding audience.

“Cronus PJ Corporation, Earth’s largest military arms merchant.”

Everyone stared foolishly at the cold and callous teenager. They abruptly realized that they were not of the same world. No wonder the surname ‘Cronus’ felt a little familiar.

Lear jumped into the cockpit. An old mecha like this WE, had been mastered by him long ago.

At the sound of the gunshot, Lear’s mech shot forward. The audience immediately silenced itself.

This...

They saw the mech advance like a bolt of lightning, at an almost straight trajectory, dodging the lasers with frequency conversion movements. It was as if to Lear, this course was nothing but child’s play.

The action was almost missed by everyone when Lear drew his laser gun and fired a series of three shots superimposed into one.

Bang...

It was 1 Minute 45 Seconds!

The cockpit door opened.Lear directly jumped out and lightly landed on the ground. He was completely unfazed, not even a single drop of sweat could be seen on his body.

Ma Xiao and the rest swallowed their saliva back down, and thought, this fucker is too good! There's no way an ordinary person can do that!

At this point, no one even felt discouraged. This performance showed them that people of their level simply could not contend against him.

Campana's expression didn't change, though the fluctuations of his heart could only be known by himself. Such a person must have a familiarity with mecha beyond other people's comprehension, to stay calm even after executing such a difficult series of movements.

Masasi wasn't surprised, after all, Lear was the objective of his trip to Earth. Every single person who could enter that list was a legendary existence.

Lear Cronus's performance was like a master performing an apprentice's task.

Lear's shocking performance had boosted the morale of Zeus Military College. However, sometimes getting too excited wasn't a good thing. For the fatty who could fly, though his initial results were good, he failed in the later end. He might have spent too much time showing off which led to him being penalized an additional two minutes, causing him to fail in completing the segment within the allotted time and resulting in Zeus Military College finishing with a time of 15 minutes.

Having initially lagged behind with a huge gap, Apollo Military College took the opportunity to fiercely wave their fists. Although they had lost in the battle between their aces, they still won in terms of overall timing.

All that was left now was the final battle. Campana versus Lear, a battle for the new to replace the old.

Although Campana had his eyes set on Lear, Lear actually did not have any interest in his coming match.

Walking past Ares College's contestants, Lear lightly looked at Masasi and said, "Tell Victor, Earth is my territory. Let him manage his side first."

Masasi smiled faintly, "My senior hopes that you will one day travel to the Moon to play with him."

“Defeating him is only a matter of time,” Lear’s speech hinted it as a bygone conclusion.

Masasi didn’t bother to argue, since the issue wasn’t going to be resolved with words anyways.

Having said his piece, Lear looked at Meng Tian and told her, “If you’ve played enough, you should return. Don’t cause trouble.”

“Excuse me, I don’t seem to be related to you.” Meng Tian coldly responded.

“This sort of place will only lower your standard.” Lear indifferently left behind that last remark. This left the students of Ares College half-dead with anger and annoyance, unable to rebut as Lear’s skill was at a completely different level.

Returning to his seat, Lear glared coldly at Luo Fei. This stupid fatty almost screwed up the entire team’s effort. Luo Fei was so scared that his neck shrank.

“Lear, you need to be colder to girls.. Even if you treat her well, it’s not like she’ll appreciate it.”

Yue Jing gently said, giving Lear a towel.

Lear didn’t take accept the towel, instead he looked at Yue Jing, “I hope your method works.”

“Relax, no one is better at understanding how girls think than another girl!”

Yue Jing had a lovely smile without a hint of arrogance. This time, she was incomparably ‘kind and gentle’.

Ares College entered the stage for the last round.

The students present in the stadium still cheered for their home team. People may lose, but morale must never waver. Regardless of the result, they still had to perform with all their heart, being the last team to perform in the event.

The first to go was Ma Xiao, finishing at 3 minutes 10 seconds which was a middle to below average result.

Masasi trailed behind at 2 minutes 30 seconds. To be fair, Masasi still hadn’t acclimated to earth’s gravity. This was not an excuse though. Lear had always been an expert, and Campana was yet another outstanding person in the Earth Federation. Hence, it wouldn’t be fair to completely dismiss Earth Federation’s skill level.

The third person in the lineup was Meng Tian. Ye Zisu and the other female students grouped together to form a line of beautiful scenery to cheer for her.

Meng Tian really did not disappoint everyone. With a result of 2

minutes 50 seconds, it was enough to make the other teammates blush with shame. Meng Tian was clearly very skillful at operating Mecha, moreover female elites were better able to raise the flexibility of their Mecha, which was an aspect in which males just couldn't compare to.

The originally doomed Ares Military College thus had a tiny spark of hope due to the mistake that Luo Fei from Zeus Military College made. It was hopeless to chase after Apollo Military College. However, catching up to Zeus College was still possible.

The eyes of the audience gathered on Zhang Shan, this stressed him to no end. Sometimes, the burden of hope weighed more than that of despair.

The dormmates of 007 had already begun to pray with bated breath. Yao Ailun drew the sign of the cross, "Heavenly Buddha, Allah, God, bless this competition. As long as it's not the last place, it's already a victory!"

Zhang Shan's mech began to move forward. However, before he could advance even 10 metres, he failed to dodge an attack. His mech staggered from the hit, slowing his advance. Zhang Shan frantically rushed forward in a bid to make up for lost time and was subsequently hit by a fatal shot. Although he finally completed the assault phase, his result was still 6 minutes. The audience could only sigh in woe.

Zhang San was beating himself up in vexation as he stepped out of the cockpit.

“Ha ha. It’s normal for young people to learn from experiencing life.”

Adonis faintly chuckled. Truthfully speaking, the three people before Zhang Shan had given him a fright. As long as Zeus Military College entered the finals, Lear’s strength would guarantee an easy victory. Losing now because of a mistake would be too terrible a loss.

Currently, Ares Military College’s result was 13 minutes 30 seconds. Unless the last person could complete the course in 1 minute 30 seconds...

But this would be an impossible feat.

Having returned to his seat, Zhang Shan lowered his head in depression. Failing at the crucial moment, no one could possibly bear the devastation, let alone the typically arrogant Zhang Shan.

“Ha ha, will the last one still be competing?” Jamal smiled, after all, at this point, it didn’t really matter if the last person competed or not.

“It seems to be the substitute. If he doesn’t wish to compete, we will be fine either way.” Adonis said smilingly, as it would be a relief.

Even restrained people carried a small flame of anger within

them, and though Gu Te was demoralized, he still flared up, “You had best pay attention, the last person is precisely that Wang Zheng that you two were interested in.”

“Huh, You mean that Physics Department kid?”

“Ha ha, he’s into mech piloting too?”

The two principal’s interests were sparked.

Meanwhile, Zhuo Mu patted Wang Zheng on the back, telling him, “You can still choose not to participate.”

To lose face before so many people definitely wouldn’t be good for one’s future. Besides, Wang Zheng hadn’t participated in the special training.

“Teacher, let me try.”

Zhuo Mu nodded, “Go then, as long as you do your best it’s enough!”

In the reserved seats, the spectators gossiped amongst each other, they thought that it truly was a pity, what was destined to come, had come, and Gu Te would have to resign this year.

It was at this moment that a crisp voice suddenly arose from the stands, “Wang Zheng, go for it!”

Aina...

Stunned, students looked to the stands, and some reporters even snapped a picture with a caption in mind, “Courage in the Face of Despair”. After all, it was still a beauty, ah.

But...Why even put in the effort?

Who wouldn’t feel awkward with a substitute who had just arrived?

But in the reserved seats, yet another person stood up, “Wang Zheng, a kid like you better fight to succeed, otherwise, you can give up on going to the mech department classes in the future.”

Xiao Fei...

Student Wang rubbed his nose... what kind of encouragement is that?

Jumping into the mech didn’t feel all that different from the practice machines, but Wang Zheng still felt excited. He carefully linked the equipment, and attempted to lift his arms and move his legs.

He took in a deep breath.

Wow, this is so cool. This is what mech is really like. This is what life’s all about!

Chapter 13 – God's Rhythm

Operating a mech caused a very comfortable feeling of pressure on the muscles, a feeling difficult to experience in CT. To a soldier, experiencing this pressure was actually an enjoyment of sorts.

A little perverted, but such was the pleasure of a soldier.

At that moment, the audience let out a collective sigh as they started discussing amongst themselves. What the fuck was this? Did the Ares College not have any other students to have ended up choosing this guy?

Wang Zheng casually stretched his limbs. From the sidelines, he had a funny appearance, almost like a puppet.

"Seems like Student Wang Zheng is currently warming up his body. He will be the final pilot; so would you all please give him a round of applause and encouragement," the commentator said. They were, indeed, part of the same team.

I hope this guy doesn't have stage fright.

Thunderous applause resounded throughout the stadium.

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu had already closed their eyes. "Fuck, this guy had better not act like a hero. The reputation of room 007 is at stake here."

“Tyrant Su, what’s Wang Zheng trying to do? Does he even know what he’s getting into? Didn’t you say he’s very capable?” An Mei angrily asked.

“Eh… Boss loves mecha, but he has yet to practice using a real one. Maybe he’ll create a miracle…” Yan Xiaosu timidly said, his voice getting softer as he spoke. He clearly did not have much confidence in his own words.

“Miracle your head! We’re going to be on the headlines tomorrow!”

Ma Xiao and the others sent blank looks of dismay among themselves. Perhaps falling to the depths of the valley was a good things for the Ares College; and suffering from such a defeat would grant them the spirit to rise and fight again.

“Student Wang Zheng, are you ready?” the commentator asked. He could tell that the entire stadium was starting to get impatient.

Wang Zheng replied with an OK sign.

Bang…

With this gunshot, the last round of competition began!

The engine of the mech roared, slightly shocking Campana and the rest. Such an explosive start… this guy was indeed courageous. Wasn’t he afraid of falling?

However, as the gunshot went off, the WE rushed forward.

The noisy stadium suddenly quietened down. Who the fuck is this person?

The mech advanced in a straight line towards the target and totally ignored all the different obstacles.

Frequency conversion movement!

No!

This was pressured frequency movement!

It wasn’t a passive frequency change of his own, but a proactive interference of the attacker’s frequency, causing their attacks to miss.

The roaring WE flew suddenly flew into the air like a rocket; it was impossible to block. A crucial point was that Wang Zheng did not make any big movements. Only this way could one reach their highest speed!

But what about the attack?

Time was running out!

Bang... Bang...

Why had there only been two shots? What happened to the last one? Regardless of one's accuracy, at least three shots had to be taken! But if they were to take all three shots, not enough time would be left.

Ping...

A cold light simultaneously hit the target.

Bang!

The mech rotated on the spot at high speed four times before finally stabilizing to a stop.

The silence in the stadium continued for a moment before it broke into a resounding roar of cheers.

1 minute 29 seconds!

God!

Everyone was going crazy. Through this final outcome, Zeus College had been eliminated.

Ares College entered the finals!

In order to save that final second during the attack, the titanium alloy knife had been thrown towards the target as the lasers were being fired, accurately hitting it from a distance of over 30 meters.

All these actions had been executed in great harmony. Such coolness!

Everyone was stupefied. Jamal and Adonis looked at each other. What happened?

“Keke. Old friend, to have saved such an exceptional student until the last moment... you’re simply too much,” Jamal said with a smile, and eyes filled with envy. This fucker is also from Earth. He’s indeed a treasure!

At the thought of the Zeus College’s glory being snatched away at the very last moment, anger, despair, and a trace of confusion clouded Adonis’ heart, leaving him the greatest wretch of them all.

The squad members had thoughts of eating the fatty at this moment.

The fatty grabbed his head and was sitting helplessly on the chair. What’s happening? He had merely wanted to put on a show, yet he managed to completely screw himself over it.

An Mei and the other beauties jumped up, “Good job, Wang

Zheng!”

“An Mei, An Mei, An Mei, An Mei, you’re pulling my ear. Please be more gentle,” Yan Xiaosu helplessly said. Soon afterward, An Mei hugged and kissed him, causing this Tyrant Su to grin from ear to ear.

“Not bad, the two of you are quite dependable!”

Ma Xiao and the rest burst into joy, jumping up and bumping their fists in the air. In that moment, something inside them seemed to have caught fire.

Nobody would willingly wish to be looked down upon.

The biggest issue the Ares College faced was their lack of a leader—someone with the charisma and ability of a leader!

Ma Xiao did not cut it. He was too easy-going and he lacked ambition. Masasi was not a good fit either, as he didn’t belong to the Earth so the success of Ares College did not mean much to him.

The whole stadium was currently overflowing with cheers and shouts. Yet the celebration was only temporary, as the competition had not yet ended. The most important event was coming up next. During this final event, the two winning teams would send out a representative to engage in a mech battle.

Apollo would definitely choose Campana. He was currently the

only one to maintain a win streak during the previous Inter College games, as well as the Earth Federation.

What about Ares College? While Apollo had no need for discussion, as Campana was their overall winner, it was a little more problematic in the case of Ares College.

During the special training, Ma Xiao and Masasi had performed the best in mech combat. Ma Xiao had many years of training and battle experience while Masasi displayed great strength. However, Wang Zheng had suddenly turned up.

Those eye-opening movements he had displayed earlier. Could they be used in battle?

“Maybe a safer option would be to choose Masasi!”

“I support Masasi. Ma Xiao will not do, he will definitely lose to Campana.”

“Why not give Wang Zheng a try? He was the one who turned the tide just now!”

“Eh. Being able to run fast doesn’t necessarily also mean being able to fight well. Masasi remains a safer option.”

As the students discussed among themselves, the stadium unknowingly became packed.

Not even in their dreams did the students expect Ares College to reach the finals; upon hearing about it, many of them had rushed over.

Many of them were playing CT before they came. Only through CT could they find a reason to keep living after having their confidence shaken.

Zhuo Mu was also struggling. “Wang Zheng, have you battled before?”

“No. I have only practiced movement during previous training sessions.”

Actually, during OMG’s training, he had only walked a few steps with the mech.

Masasi suddenly stood up, saying, “Instructor, I think we should let Wang Zheng participate in the final battle. He was the one to turn the tides at the last moment using his insane movements.”

Masasi’s voluntary withdrawal helped everyone decide. As for Wang Zheng, he didn’t mind either way.

Actually, this had also been Zhuo Mu’s intention. Although Masasi had excellent ability, whether he won or lost this battle didn’t matter much to him.

“It’ll be Wang Zheng then. Wang Zheng, you must be confident during this final battle. It doesn’t matter if you win or lose, as long as you uphold the prestige of the Ares College.” Zhuo Mo firmly slapped Wang Zheng’s shoulder, showing his excitement.

Campana had long since finished preparing. He hoped he’d face the strange kid who could run well. Unexpectedly, such a player had been a reserve.

As Wang Zheng stepped forth, the stadium once again erupted in cheers. In truth, nobody held very high hopes for him, yet they had to encourage him so that he could feel some hope.

They didn’t fear to see failure. What they feared, though, was cowardice.

Those of Zeus College sat indignantly at the side, with the fatty being the public target of criticism. Lear had however already recovered his calm and was looking forward to the upcoming battle.

Upon entering the cockpit, Wang Zheng lightly touched the windows at the side. He could clearly see everything outside. It was this feeling of being able to touch things on the outside of the mech which allowed Mankind to fulfill their potential using them.

He was finally going to battle.

“Don’t panic, Wang Zheng. Campana’s right hand might be

formidable, bu you must also take note of his left. He is left-handed and has a very aggressive style of combat," said Zhuo Mu.

He had to fulfill his role as an instructor to the fullest at this last moment, even though he wasn't sure how much it would help.

To Wang Zheng, however, none of that mattered anymore. The outside world had already disappeared from his sight. At this moment, the only he knew was that he could finally live as a mech warrior on the battlefield.

Under the resounding cheers, the competition started.

As soon as the titanium alloy knives were unsheathed, an aura of battle filled the stadium, instantly exciting the audience.

This strange existence known as 'mankind' actually had the taste for battle buried deep inside their genes.

The two mecha roared and rushed towards each other. Bang...

A fierce vibration was released when the two mech collided. This was totally different from CT where the body wouldn't feel any vibrations. In real life, muscles would obviously contract and any clash would have some sort of effect on the body.

The moment they exchanged blows, Campana was able to clearly feel that his opponent was not used to experiencing this kind of pressure on the body. The way he dispersed the force was also very

unskilled.

The titanium alloy knife dazzled under the sunlight, sending continuous strikes towards Wang Zheng. Campana was known for his great situational awareness and attention to detail. These skills allowed him to understand his opponent status through a single exchange and also to fully display his own strength.

This was a chance to let the whole world see how he would walk the path towards becoming a future military officer.

Campana's WE jumped about the whole stadium. He had already fully comprehended all of the different attack patterns of a mech. On the other side, Wang Zheng only seemed capable of defending himself and looked rather pathetic. At least he hadn't yet been defeated.

The cheers from the audience were unceasing. Aina sat quietly with both hands supporting her chin as she watched Wang Zheng in battle. She was aware of Wang Zheng's strength in CT, but how would he fare in reality?

Some people could become gods of the virtual world, but were then unable to translate that strength into the real world.

Having already saved her once, Aina did not believe Wang Zheng to be one of those people.

Even though the situation seemed dire, the students of Ares

College did not lose their vigor. They kept cheering Wang Zheng on, trying to give him strength. This was, after all, the only thing they could do.

Zhang Shan was also hurling his fist into the air and ignoring the disadvantage that Wang Zheng was experiencing. “Wang Zheng, control the engine and hang in there! He will be useless if you can get through this!”

The attack might be fierce at first, but its fierceness would only wane over time.

Although Campana’s attacks were powerful, Whang Zheng’s staggering defense was also not half-bad. Of course, part of it had to do with Campana treating this fight as a performance. To him, victory would not be hard to achieve, the important thing instead being able to fully showcase his abilities to the audience.

However, what he did not know was that Wang Zheng’s muscles were familiarizing and memorizing the various strengths in the battle.

Bang…

The staggering WE suddenly regained its footing, as the titanium alloy knife forcefully blocked Campana’s strike.

With this, the crowd went wild. Wang Zheng knew that it was time to retaliate.

Chapter 14 – The Celebrations Of The Champion

The sudden surge in force pushed Campana back, stunning him momentarily. He didn't expect the opponent to possess such a strength.

Just as he was lost in thought, Wang Zheng's WE already rushed over.

A jumping attack!

Bang...

When a mech jumped, intense pressure was placed on the pilot. In the virtual world one could easily perform beautiful movements, but in reality this required quite a bit of physical strength. Most of the time, simple actions were used unless one was confident enough to end the opponent in one strike.

Rumble...

With a fierce strike, Campana, who had been on the attack all this time, fell back. As he fell he performed an intricate side kick that pushed him back up.

There were no gaps in that action.

Bang…

Campana’s mech was slammed toward the left, causing him to clench his teeth. This guy was on fire. As he was about to strike back, a blade lunged at him.

Ping…

Two titanium alloy blades clashed fiercely, causing sparks to fly everywhere. Only during this fierce and short exchange did Campana realize his opponent wasn’t one he could take lightly.

However, this thought came too late as a fist was already heading toward him.

Kang, kang, kang, kang…

Campana’s WE was hit directly in the chest, causing him to move a couple steps back. The energy shield was down 33% in an instant. His previous assault on Wang Zheng had only removed 20% of Wang Zheng’s energy shield.

Wang Zheng didn’t follow up on his attack, but instead stabilized his mech and stood quietly.

It was in this moment that Wang Zheng completed his metamorphosis. Perhaps many hadn’t felt it, but to Wang Zheng it was as though he had been a caterpillar that suddenly broke through and transformed into a butterfly.

He could do it!

He was strong!

Campana's face was dark. He switched the titanium alloy blade to his left hand; there was no room left for accidents.

The shoulder of the mech sank lightly and its engine roared. The image seemed to portray Campana's fury.

The audience's heart tightened. Everyone knew what Campana was capable of.

With a roar, his mech rushed toward Wang Zheng's with large strides. Its movements were unlike before. Campana was finally serious.

As his mech closed in on Wang Zheng's, Campana launched a couple of illusory attacks. It was difficult to see which of these attacks were real.

Bang...

His left blade pressed down, an abnormal strength behind it. In the next instant he launched a fierce triple strike toward Wang Zheng.

The advantage was gained in an instant, but the true battle had just begun.

After the fierce attack, Campana didn't stop. Instead, he held his breath and launched a quadruple strike.

One blade... Two blades... Three blades... Four blades...

Such a continuous attack put great strain on the body, especially when it was in a situation like Campana's. Campana could handle it though; his opponent was usually the first one to crash.

His confidence stemmed from his non-stop daily training. He had always believed he could do it!

Bang bang bang...

Another triple strike was launched. Under those fierce attacks and the pressure, Wang Zheng's mech seemed a bit wobbly. Even though he managed to block them, his energy shield was reduced to half.

The eighth blade!

Bang...

Wang Zheng's mech stepped back from the attack. At this moment, both of their strength had been reduced by half. Whoever

gave up first would lose.

Suddenly, as though he wasn't tired at all, a ninth blade struck out.

A direct attack had the shortest travelling distance. From the way it moved toward the cockpit, it could be seen as a powerful attack even to the naked eye.

This was Campana's Nine Continuous Lightning Strikes. This move hadn't ever been blocked by anyone!

In this crucial moment, Wang Zheng's mech reacted. He took a step back, kept his gaze up, and pulled off a difficult reverse bow.

Such a maneuver created a huge toll on the pilot's body. The force from moving backward which ran counter to the inertia was usually enough to cause a person to vomit blood.

Yet, at this distance...

Would he be able to dodge it?

A direct strike was the fastest and most effective, but it was also the easiest to see and react to.

At this distance, with that speed, it seemed like the strike would miss.

Would Campana's forever victorious move have its record broken today?

No one was clearer about the result than Campana. This distance was just perfect for Wang Zheng to dodge his attack.

But, he was Campana from Apollo College!

His mech trembled fiercely, then moved forward suddenly in an inconceivable manner. This was an attack done by pushing through the limits of the human body—a double strike!

There was no way for Wang Zheng to block this now.

The tenth blade!

This was Campana, the king who would never stop improving!

This attack similarly brightened the eyes of many of the observers. What they wanted to see was a Campana that was constantly improving, not one that stood still.

This was what they wanted.

A person with strong technical attributes and a heart that was never satisfied with the status quo.

Bang...

The whole stadium was stupefied. Campana's unblockable double strike had actually missed.

Wang Zheng's WE had its left hand clasped tightly around his opponent's wrist.

In this hopeless moment, how could he still think of this?

Even if he was able to think of it, how could his body actually keep up?

Zhang Shan and the others were so nervous that their bodies were drenched with sweat. Wang Zheng had actually grabbed hold of Campana!

Wang Zheng unleashed his strength in this instant and pulled Campana. This tug, along with the forward force from his missed strike, made Campana lose his balance.

Just as the two mecha exchanged this sequence of actions, Wang Zheng swept past with a backhanded blade.

A cold light shot past. Bang, bang, bang...

The defensive shield broke apart at this moment and the mech

activated its emergency stop.

The two mecha stopped at the same time and everyone held their breaths. What had just happened in that blink of an eye?

Then a cockpit suddenly opened and Campana jumped out. His mech's head tilted forward and fell off.

Sparks flew everywhere.

The whole crowd was silent. The WE was designed to be a practice mech. In the instant when the energy shield disappeared, it should have shut down both mecha. However, it was clear that even the emergency system wasn't as fast as Wang Zheng's final attack.

As the two mecha exchanged blows, Wang Zheng's backhand strike was a high frequency triple strike.

This was a move which resulted from training the strength of the wrist and fingers.

On the battlefield, this would be designated a killing strike that would cause unimaginable damage.

"Ares College's Student Wang Zheng, wins!"

As the referee announced the result, all of the students in the

stadium jumped and waved their arms in joy.

This was a heaven-defying rhythm!

☆ ☆ ☆

Jamal stood up and congratulated Gu Te. “Congratulations! Perhaps Ares College will be able to nurture a God of War.”

“Thank you.”

Only then did Gu Te regain his senses from the victory. Never in his wildest dreams could he have imagined it would end like this today.

“Old friend, you are too modest. It wasn’t nice of you to use your trump card only at this critical moment,” said Adonis.

“Keke. Old friend, Lear has the potential to be a general. It seems there will be more competitions like this in the future!”

Both of them knew that with Campana’s graduation, the new generation would belong to Ares College and Zeus College.

Adonis felt regretful. This college exchange was supposed to be Lear’s stage and no one was supposed to be able to stop him. Who knew that fate would allow Wang Zheng to hog the limelight instead.

But for Lear, this was a great thing. He was simply too strong and had no equal. A suitable obstacle would help him develop further.

In the future, there would be many chances for them to fight each other.

Who knows? This Wang Zheng might be able to revive Ares College's glory.

☆ ☆ ☆

Right now, Wang Zheng was being tossed into the air by countless people.

Today, Wang Zheng was Ares College's hero!

He had allowed this old college to emit a new sense of vigor.

In the crowd, Masasi smiled slightly. Nearby, Lear glanced over and their eyes met. It seems the future would be very interesting.

Masasi's mission had been completed successfully. Lear was indeed very strong and he had a perfect disposition seeing how he wasn't angered by any of his teammates' mistakes. At the same time, he discovered another target, Wang Zheng.

The two stars of Earth.

They would lead to the rise of the Sol Federation, but who would become the true King of the Galaxy?

There was only one king in Masasi's head, and that was Aklutis Victor!

It had been a long time since everyone had tasted victory. Today there would definitely be a big celebration, one greater than the school's anniversary.

Wang Zheng would naturally be the star, but Ma Xiao, Masasi, Meng Tian, and Zhang Shan would also bask in the glory. This was a team. Had they lacked any one of them, they wouldn't have been able to achieve any of this.

As the battle ended, Meng Tian was hailed as the Beauty of the Battleground, a well-deserved title for the prettiest person in the school.

Wang Zheng actually wanted to have some alone time with Aina. However, it was impossible to achieve this while inside this exciting atmosphere.

He was the main star today and had already been surrounded and carried off by everyone.

Outside the crowd, Aina displayed an understanding smile. She was happy for Wang Zheng and believed he would become better

and better as he fulfilled his dreams.

As for her, she had to leave eventually.

Every girl always dreamt of having a love they desired. However, not all love stories had a happy ending. For Aina, this was especially so.

She had gathered her courage and came here as she believed she would be able to control her emotions. As the future queen, she was trained this way from young. To put her country first, she had to control her own emotions.

However, when she looked at the invincible Wang Zheng who was currently trying to find her, she felt her heart softening. She knew Wang Zheng was looking for her. Yet she knew that at this moment, she should let him experience the joy of victory.

☆ ☆ ☆

Outside the school, an ordinary looking black magnetic levitation car appeared without a sound.

“Your highness, are we leaving?”

Aina nodded her head silently. Sometimes, she wondered how good it would be if she was just an ordinary person. To do what she liked, to rebel and enjoy to her heart’s content.

What a shame. As a princess, such love could only be a luxury.

☆ ☆ ☆

“Hoho. Meng Tian and Wang Zheng are too compatible a match, just like the Prince and Princess in a fairy tale!” An Mei said as she ate.

Headmaster Gu Te was holding a banquet. Even though he was very old, he wasn’t old-fashioned. After all, the students of Ares College needed an avenue to release their emotions.

Yan Xiaosu curled his lips. What a shame, boss already has a real princess.

“What is that look on your face? Even though Aina is pretty and has a great disposition, can it be eaten as rice? Don’t say I’m biased, I have always felt she could never stay here for long. Furthermore, she was always very secretive about everything. Right, where is she? Why is she not here at this moment?”

Chapter 15 – Determined To Become A Tyrant

An Mei's words hit the nail on the head and caused Yan Xiaosu to instantly gawk.

No one understood Wang Zheng better than Yan Xiaosu. Since he was young, Wang Zheng had always been extremely stubborn. He was as obstinate as a mule regarding his love for mecha, and it was no different when it came to making friends. However, Wang Zheng had been drunk with happiness and forgotten about Aina's true status.

Was this possible?

It might have been. After all, he had read many romantic fairy tales when he was young.

However, Yan Xiaosu felt he was deceiving himself.

"See? It looks like I hit the nail on the head. As his brother, you should go and give Wang Zheng some advice. Be it Meng Tian or Ye Zisu, either would be an incredibly good pick. Although I do not know the exact details regarding Meng Tian, her family is definitely not ordinary. As for Ye Zisu, there's nothing else to say—she's OMG's little princess. A goal cannot be something based purely on a dream. You must have enough strength and capital to fulfill your dream. Wang Zheng already has the strength. The only thing he's lacking now is capital."

An Mei's words rang true.

"Cough cough. Mei Mei, can't our relationship be a bit more simple?"

"Childish!" exclaimed An Mei as she stared at Yan Xiaosu in contempt

"So, the reason you like me has nothing to do with myself..." Yan Xiaosu felt slightly hurt.

An Mei made a childish pout at Yan Xiaosu before replying, "So you think you have a lot of money, don't you? Calling you a local tyrant must be praise to your ears. Hmph!"

Yan Xiaosu broke out into hearty laughter as he said, "I knew that our family's An Mei is the best! Relax, I'll definitely work my way to become a true tyrant!"

An Mei tapped against Yan Xiaosu's forehead with her scallion-like finger before she scowled, "Show some ambition! I want to be a rich and powerful madam! "

"Good. I'll work my way up to become truly rich and powerful!"

Student Yan Xiaosu started to become motivated.

The dance came after the banquet. All of the girls had already left the grounds to prepare. In a while, the students from the Zeus and Apollo colleges would arrive. With the competition having ended, as the hosts, and more importantly as the victors, the students of Ares College had to carry themselves with even better conduct. Naturally, it was also only logical to entertain one's guests.

After this win, the students of Ares College were able to walk with their heads held high. Evidently, everyone was feeling much more enthusiastic. Rumors had it that some people wanted to express their gratitude to that fatty, Luo Fei. If not for him, the results might have been very different.

Although Lear had been unable to participate in the final battle, his strength was clear to all. It was even possible that he had yet to show his full strength. Even so, his luck was just slightly lacking.

There was no doubt, however, that future skirmishes would unfold between Lear and Wang Zheng.

The Physics Department also managed to receive full-blown publicity this time around. They not only had Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan who brought them out of the fringes and straight into the limelight, but also Xiao Fei. The results of her research further solidified the popularity of the Physics Department.

The Federation would definitely increase their investment in Ares College. This will open the floodgates to research and increase the contribution of resources. All of which represents the strength and grade of a college.

A double blessing had descended on the house. There was no reason for the Ares College to not properly celebrate for once.

Gu Te's position was thoroughly stable now. With those two results, his prestige triggered the media to turn their attitudes 180 degrees. He received praise and compliments from all angles, including on how he was able to patiently suffer, how he could plan good strategies, or on having a trump card. This kind of inflated praise incessantly fell on one's ears.

To Gu Te, who had long since seen through the facade of vanity, these praises and compliments meant nothing compared to the happiness he felt at the transformation of the Ares College. It was a nest, and it had to attract golden phoenixes.

The strength of an individual was limited, yet if someone were to be able to bring about change and enter the Ares College, their talent and standards would definitely reveal itself.

☆ ☆ ☆

Mu Zhou remained in his office resigned to his fate. This sudden outburst of Wang Zheng's had saved many people, and while Mu Zhou's method had been right all along, there had always been a lack of talent.

Mu Zhong felt rather guilty since he didn't have much relation with him, yet Gu Te only made one statement regarding this—if he had not let Wang Zheng go up on the stage, today's Wang Zheng

wouldn’t have appeared.

This was an instructor’s analyzation ability.

And at times, it was the most important factor.

☆ ☆ ☆

Soon, voices of astonishment could be intermittently heard coming from the ballroom. It appeared that the beautiful ladies in their splendid attire had entered the room.

The students from the Zeus and Apollo Colleges also entered the ballroom at the same time. Wearing black had always been the classic attire for such events..

Although he had lost, Campana didn’t display much disappointment. He might have had some regrets, but the ability to endure defeat was one of the necessities of a soldier.

Meanwhile, Lear’s arrival stunned the entire ballroom. He was handsome by nature and well-ironed. His exquisite black suit served as a contrast to himself, while the aristocratic air he exuded was not something that could be trained in a few days. Every gesture he made had a sense of indifference and calm. Compared to him, even Campana was a few notches below.

A number of the female students of Ares College were attracted to him.

“I gotta say, this fellow is truly handsome, but he’s a bit cold.”

“He’s heartless by nature!”

Quite a few female students mulled over the possibility of dancing with this handsome guy.

Yue Jing had also appeared, wearing a pure-white evening gown matched with a pair of delicate diamond-drop earrings. Lain on her chest was a massive oval-shaped pink diamond necklace, and her hair had underwent meticulous treatment. She had prepared a very long time for this moment. The Ares College was originally her domain, and now that she returned, she would still be the focus of attention of the masses.

Yue Jing gently hooked her arm around Lear’s, whose eyebrows faintly wrinkled in response. Yue Jing softly spoke into his ear, “To handle a girl, you must first make her feel jealous and let her feel your charm.”

Lear turned his head to look around, but Meng Tian had not yet arrived.

Their two families had a long-lasting relationship and their engagement had been decided since they were young. Lear saw such a thing as the norm, yet Meng Tian held no such thought. She wanted to have her own dreams and her own life.

Lear and Yue Jing had, without a doubt, become the focus of the entire ballroom. A handsome man and a gorgeous lady gave off a blinding brightness when next to each other.

At the moment, Yue Jing was as arrogant as a white swan as she looked around the ballroom. She thought of Meng Tian as a typical example of someone who would never see what she wanted even if she was to stare it in the eye. To have actually rejected an outstanding man like Lear... In any case, Yue Jing would not give up the opportunity to take him for herself.

To conquer a man, the woman had to make him need her.

Campana and the rest also had quite a few fans in their surroundings. While they had lost, that didn't affect his prestige too much. Something he accumulated over so many years would not just disappear overnight.

With the arrival of Masasi and the rest, the ballroom was immediately filled with applause. This was, after all, the celebratory event after their victory.

Wang Zheng tried to find Aina's figure within the crowd when he suddenly thought of her status. An appearance within such a public venue would not have been ideal and it was obvious that it would be better for her to lay low.

Meng Tian and Ye Zisu walked in together, hand in hand. The appearance of these two beautiful ladies immediately attracted the gazes of countless people. Meng Tian seemed like a proud and aloof

snow mountain lotus, while Ye Zisu was like a gentle, soft, dainty water goddess—slender and elegant.

Their complementing styles, coupled in strength and gentleness, immediately became a fixture of the films of many.

Student Wang had learned many things in his life, and the number of these things further increased with Bonehead's torturous training. Dancing, however, was not included.

The others were accustomed to such situations. Even Zhang Shan who seemed like a cumbersome brute was actually very capable in this aspect.

Yan Xiaosu and An Mei had also arrived to the ballroom. Looking around the place, An Mei asked, "Our hero doesn't even have a single dance partner. Where's Shishi?"

Wang Zheng gave a smile and replied, "She isn't comfortable with events like these."

"Okay. But even so, we can't just leave our hero by himself. There's nothing I can do. I want to accompany Tyrant Su, so I can't be your partner," An Mei said while seemingly signalling someone by blinking her eyes.

Yan Xiaosu immediately pointed at the two pearl-like women and said, "Boss, Mei Mei is mine. We might have worn the same pants while growing up, but you can't just randomly borrow her like

that. There are two beautiful ladies over there that you can choose from."

Wang Zheng replied with a bitter smile, "Brat, are you itching for a beating? I won't borrow her. It's fine as long as you guys enjoy yourselves as much as you want."

He then walked alone to the balcony. These events were good for people to interact and build relationships, but Wang Zheng preferred being free and unfettered. With such banquets happening more frequently, it seemed like the university was getting higher and higher in class.

At that moment, he truly felt like ferociously drinking a few rounds with Yan Xiaosu and the others and then counting the stars.

"Wang Zheng is such a blockhead. What good is that Shishi other than being a pretty face anyway? She's too reserved and she doesn't even give any face to her boyfriend. How could she leave Wang Zheng by himself at such a time! Hurry up and get him to dump her!"

An Mei felt indignant since the happiness she was currently feeling was thanks to Wang Zheng. Therefore, she tried to desperately save this crisis. To her, this victory was simply a miracle.

As his girlfriend, Aina should have been over the top with happiness, yet she actually had stage fright! How was that

possible?

It didn't seem like the way a person from Aslan would behave. Rather, it would have been more likely coming from someone from the countryside.

Yan Xiaosu gave a bitter laugh and said, "Cough cough. Mei Mei, by all means, please don't make any irresponsible remarks. Everyone has their own... preferences. It might just be that she doesn't like this sort of lively environment. In fact, even I am not quite adapted to it."

An Mei stared at him with her eyes wide open and said, "You liar. You spent all afternoon tossing and turning to prepare for this. That suit you're wearing is freshly bought, and look at that honest Milky Way brooch on your chest. It looks to me like you're quite knowledgeable; why don't you get Wang Zheng one too?."

Feeling wronged, Yan Xiaosu replied, "How could that be. I've said this from the start, you don't understand Wang Zheng. If I were to do so, he would certainly beat me up."

Yan Xiaosu was just joking. In reality, as the hero of the night, Wang Zheng really should have prepared a sparkling outfit for himself.

As roommates, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailing were like fish in the water—expertly making their way through the great hall, seeking for targets. Their dormitory was seen as legendary, as they had four geniuses within, with two of them have already shown their

awesome capabilities.

With the arrival of nighttime, the gentle and beautiful light and the splendid outfits coupled with the exciting atmosphere caused the youthfulness of the students to bloom out. Everyone was in an extraordinary mood, with the handsome looking even handsomer and the beautiful looking even prettier.

As soon as he saw Meng Tian appear, Lear immediately abandoned Yue Jing, causing her to stand by herself somewhat awkwardly. She was welcomed by Ye Zisu to whom she remained a long-time friend and schoolmate no matter what. However, Yue Jing disregarded Ye Zisu and walked past her. She hated not only Wang Zheng, but everything from her past, including her previous friends.

“Lear, the only relationship between us consists of some wishful thinking of our ancestors. I hope that you are not the sort of person who would care about such a thing,” Meng Tian indifferently said.

A faint upward curl appeared on the corner of Lear’s mouth as he replied, “I don’t really care. But I recognize you as the most honest girl I’ve ever met. I believe that the ordinary wouldn’t even enter your sight. Why won’t you consider me? What flaws do I have?”

Upon hearing this, Meng Tian was at a loss. In truth, Lear was absolutely flawless. There was no need to mention his family background. In terms of strength, he was the kind with far-reaching ambitions, and he didn’t even have a hobby of bullying ladies. His goal in life was very clear and he would undoubtedly

persevere on his path. He would definitely become an outstanding person in the future, as he had everything he needed to succeed in life.

Chapter 16 – Romantic

Meng Tian had never really considered the issue before, but having thought it over carefully, there really wasn't any aspect of Lear that she actually liked.

Sensing Meng Tian's hesitance, Lear's smile grew brighter. This was a smile that came from his sincerity and confidence. Sure, Yue Jing was rather ravishing, but such inferior goods weren't enough to garner his interest.

Meng Tian wasn't just attractive, her body also exuded an enticing and fascinating aura which he found attractive.

Such an aura could only be found on people who were pure and sensitive.

"Don't waste your youth, just because you haven't found the right person, why not give a relationship with me a chance? After all, we have many similarities."

It was such an asinine and clichéd line, yet when Lear delivered it, it was done so with confidence. For Lear, he acted prudently even in matters of love, carefully choosing his target and settling for no less.

All of that was for the sake of perfection.

Meng Tian shook her head, "What you really want is a perfect

robot. Perhaps the reason why I do not like you is because we really are too much alike. Besides, I already have a person I like."

Lear was incredulous, "You're joking right? Meng Tian, you should be very clear that you were acting just now. Don't use an excuse like that to distance yourself from me. It's below people like us."

"If you really know me, then you should know that I wasn't lying, and that I hate to lie."

"But that's impossible! No one here could possibly match up to your brilliance. Don't even mention Masasi, he's just Victor's lackey."

Lear was in complete disbelief.

"Who it is really isn't what's important. What matters is that it's not you. My good friend, I wish you all the best in your stay at the capital."

Meng Tian smiled faintly. Meng Tian and Lear were similar in that regard as both of them rarely smiled, but when they did, they emanate an enigmatic allure.

By now, Lear was very certain that Meng Tian wasn't lying to him. More importantly, it was even clearer to him that the person Meng Tian liked was definitely stronger than her, but who, in such a destitute place, could ever compare?

There simply wasn't anyone!

In Lear's mind, it was a certainty that any person Meng Tian took a liking to would have an upstanding family background, flawless appearance, and unparalleled ability.

Yet, the Asian region was not high on the political ladder, so Lear's envisioned suitor was nowhere to be found.

Meanwhile, Ye Zisu had finally escaped her endless pursuers to find Wang Zheng.

"How did our champion end up alone?"

Ye Zisu took two glasses of champagne from a passing waiter's hand.

Embarrassed, Wang Zheng laughed, "I'm really not used to this kind of thing."

Receiving a glass of champagne, he took a sip, "Thanks, though I still think I prefer beer."

If it were any other person, such an act would be seen as tarnishing the enjoyable atmosphere of the party. Who else but scum would dare to be so ill-mannered in front of a beautiful woman? Yet when Wang Zheng did that, Ye Zisu felt it was

completely natural and in good sport.

"Actually, I don't really like drinking either, it's all just a formality anyway. By the way, she won't be coming to the party, will she?"

Although she said that, Ye Zisu had no doubts. Aina needed to keep a low profile, and if she dressed up to go out in such a situation that would be taking too big of a risk. Once exposed, any hopes of having a peaceful stay would be completely dashed.

Such was life: every so often one has to make sacrifices.

Not even considering Ye Zisu's background, Aina was a person of a completely different world who should never have appeared in the lives of normal people. What could she ever hope to bring Wang Zheng in a relationship?

"Tonight's moon is stunningly gorgeous. As a friend, and an old classmate, I can't just leave you alone; let me be your dance partner tonight."

Ye Zisu gently pulled Wang Zheng's arm.

Wang Zheng rejected, laughing, "I don't know how to dance, It'd be best to let an expert go first."

"I'm afraid that's impossible, the man of the hour definitely has to lead the first dance," Ye Zisu retorted.

“Zisu, I think I am more suitable to be his dance partner.”

Meng Tian appeared on the overlooking balcony. Under the moonlight, she seemed like a transcendent being. Meng Tian’s tall, slender figure was beyond compare when clad in a white evening gown. Those gentle-types and cute-types couldn’t even hold a candle to her.

Ultimately, banquets were places for people to get noticed.

Only, Ye Zisu didn’t falter, “Shouldn’t you go and accompany your friend?”

“Oh, Lear? That was just the meddling hands of the older generation. Wang Zheng, you should remember that I once asked you to promise me to help out with a certain matter. Now is the time for you to fulfil that promise.” Meng Tian said.

Student Wang was caught off-guard and suddenly recalled that he did once promise to help Meng Tian when he was sparring in the MMA Club.

“I remember, what do you need me to do?”

“Since your girlfriend isn’t around, you can help me in blocking other people’s approaches.”

Meng Tian turned back to look toward the hall.

“Help in blocking approaches?” Student Wang rubbed his nose.

“It can’t be that you’re afraid to, right? “ Meng Tian added, “Relax, I’ll explain to your girlfriend after.”

Wang Zheng shook his head and laughed, “No need, I’ll help you out, I’m sure she won’t mind.”

Though Meng Tian didn’t know of Aina’s status, Ye Zisu was crystal clear. She just couldn’t understand where Wang Zheng got his confidence from. Did he really not fear offending the little princess?

In a secluded corner of that same balcony, there were five suspicious figures lurking about.

“Damn, Elder Brother Zheng is my idol!” Chen Xiu was envious to the point of speechlessness.

“Che, I don’t know what magic potion Zisu and Meng Tian took, but this brat really scored big time. Just how much charm can a person have!”

An Mei was exceptionally indignant.

“Ahem. You’d better not develop feelings for Boss, that fellow is

scary, attracting both genders' affections. That's exactly why I fell for him."

Disgusted, An Mei whapped Yan Xiaosu on the head, "Pervert! That brat isn't elder sister's type. Such a storied individual, who would seriously play with him at this age?"

"Definitely not, I think Elder Brother is full of vigor." Chen Xiu said foolishly.

"Little Xiu, sometimes saying nothing is the smartest move. Qingqing, would I have the good fortune of having your dance?"

Student Ailun gracefully proposed. Dressed in a splendid evening suit, his bearing was in complete contrast to the Yao Ailun who wore only a large pair of underwear and raved in front of his computer when he was in the dormitory.

Du Qingqing smiled slightly, "Of course, and I had thought that I would be left alone to myself for tonight."

Chen Xiu was petrified, fuck, now he was the one left alone tonight. This was a true expert! God! Why didn't he open his mouth earlier?

"So this is where our hero has been hiding, enjoying a romance by yourself, hmm."

Carrying a glass of wine over, Campana had a dashing smile on

his face.

“Wang Zheng, congratulations on your victory.”

“Senior, thank you for your guidance earlier.”

Wang Zheng smiled, raising his champagne glass in sincerity.

“I never would have thought I would meet two experts so close to my graduation. You two are the future of our Sol Federation!” Campana praised.

Naturally, the other person he was referring to was Lear.

“Senior, are you planning to join the Sol Federation Army?” Wang Zheng asked.

Campana nodded, smiling, “Originally, I’d planned to use a final victory to end my schooling days. Though I lost in the end, it still serves as a timely reminder for me.”

Not considering other things, Campana’s disposition of staying humble in victory and undeterred in defeat was worthy of admiration.

“That was just luck. Does Senior Campana have any advice for me?” Wang Zheng said.

Even though he had defeated Campana this time, it was just a small competition, and wasn't indicative of the two's true ability. In Wang Zheng's eyes, Campana was no worse than him.

"Since you and Lear are definitely stronger than me, entering the Sol System Rank A Competition shouldn't be a problem. I look forward to you bringing glory and honour to our Earth Federation."

"Rank A?" Wang Zheng Was confused.

Campana didn't explain further, only saying, "There will always be stronger powerhouses. Masasi is an example of that. He only displayed 50% of his true strength this time. He serves under a person named Victor, and I'm sure you will bump into him sooner or later."

"Victor... You mean?" Meng Tian gawked.

"Hehe, you're correct. Holy Knight Victor, The one praised as the perfect soldier. Although he's only a second year student, he is the fiercest combatant I've ever seen."

Wang Zheng smirked, "Senior, only by facing challenges will life become interesting."

Campana stared at Wang Zheng, and chuckled. He recalled nostalgically that, back then, he thought the same way. It was completely normal, and it would be useless to tell him otherwise.

Either way, people mature the fastest when experiencing things for themselves.

Only, Campana never would have thought that the self-confident young boy in front of him would one day reach such great heights.

In the memoirs of Lieutenant General Campana, the first time meeting Wang Zheng, he'd assumed the tranquil self-confidence in that person's eyes was just unbridled youthful arrogance. Yet only time would tell him...

"Now, we would like to invite our champion to the stage: Physics Department Student, Wang Zheng!"

In the hall the host, Zhang Shan, called out enthusiastically as he waved his hands and intense emotions arose within him.

It had been Wang Zheng's performance that had salvaged a win from his mistake. Until now, Zhang Shan still felt a bit absent minded when thinking about the victory.

And yet, they'd somehow done it!

Meng Tian and Ye Zisu glared at each other. Both weren't the type to back down, and smiling faintly, they followed Wang Zheng into the hall.

Whom Wang Zheng chose was his decision, but neither refused to shrink back.

“Local Tyrant Su, why are you so nervous!”

An Mei knitted her eyebrows.

“Che, I’m just worried about Boss. First, he has never participated in an occasion like this, do you think I wouldn’t be anxious? More importantly, he doesn’t even know how to dance!”

Yan Xiaosu agonized. Wang Zheng was responsible for starting the first dance, and any excuses given now would just be seen as retreating.

In middle school, the two of them were like random passers-by. Even if they suddenly experienced a complete change in college, there still needed to be a transition process where they could have new experiences. But Wang Zheng had amazed everyone with his brilliance during the exchange meet, and basically never had the chance to experiment.

“Our champion, please grace us with a few words,” Zhang Shan passed the microphone over to Wang Zheng.

The banquet hall quieted down and everyone gazed at Wang Zheng and a pressure unknown to him bore down. While some enjoyed the thrill of fighting and others enjoyed being the centre of other people’s attention, these two preferences were rarely both seen in a person, especially when one was first starting out.

Even though Wang Zheng hadn't yet said a word, Yan Xiaosu was already extremely anxious. He remembered back in elementary school when talking about hopes and dreams in a class discussion, Wang Zheng had spiraled down into a stuttering wreck. Although Wang Zheng would mess around a lot, on formal, serious occasions like this he would become inept.

Wang Zheng wasn't nervous or anything, and though he had not prepared anything good to say, he was prepared to thoughtlessly spout off a few sentences before giving back the microphone. That was until he caught sight of a figure at the hall's entrance.

Though she was rather far away, her presence still lit up Wang Zheng's world.

Wang Zheng hadn't expected her to come. The two's gazes met and melted into one. Their first time meeting was like a wondrous work of fate, and their second time was like a dream.

"I'm not sure what the future will hold for us. I even think that I might be dreaming right now, but here I want to say thank you. Thank you for being the light of my world. I will always remember you, my princess!"

Wang Zheng's voice had a magnetic quality. For Wang Zheng, this was his first time he had spoken heartfelt words—the first time in his entire life. From the time when he came out of the Rubik's Cube, uncertainty, anxiety, and confusion dominated Wang Zheng's innermost feelings. While he seemed strong on the surface, he was actually rather frail at that time, and might possibly have just lost himself in the gentle embrace of virtual

reality. It was then that Aina appeared.

Everyone was stunned. They'd expected Wang Zheng to talk a bit about his victory, or even to praise other things. No one thought he would come up with such a revealing and personal speech.

Any way you looked at it, Wang Zheng clearly wasn't a romantic!

Following Wang Zheng's line of sight, one by one, the audience turned their heads...

Chapter 17 – Dormitory Love Affair

Everyone seemed as though they had been struck by something when they saw the young lady at the door.

How could there be such a beautiful and graceful girl in this world? From the door, the bright and exceptionally round moon could be seen in the dark night sky. The stars also shone brilliantly. Yet the radiance of the young lady was outshining them both.

Aina gave a light smile, walking towards Wang Zheng as she did.

“Haha, let us now invite tonight’s prince and princess to give us our first dance. Music!”

Zhang Shan roared. Man, this kid looks stupid most of the time. Who knew that at the crucial moment he would actually become a Casanova?

Wang Zheng did not know how to dance, but Aina was an expert. So all he had to do was follow her. This was still within Wang Zheng’s capability. All that mattered now was that their feelings had taken the helm.

Bang…

Yue Jing’s glass had fallen on the table, “This….is not possible, not possible at all. She…she…”

Although she did not recognize Aina at first, the current scene and Zhang Shan calling her princess had made her instantaneously recall.

Even so, how was this possible?

Aina, who did not belong to this world, was currently spending her time with Wang Zheng. Was this a coincidence?

An accident?

A miracle?

Yue Jing's body seemed to have lost its energy as she sat down on the chair. Was this the guy who was a nobody in her high school? She remembered saying that the streets were filled with people with such a low calibre as him.

"Fuck, I thought you said that Wang Zheng does not know how to dance?" Yao Ailun spat. This seemed more like an expert than a complete novice!

"Tyrant Su, this kid is an expert. Are the two of you tigers who are pretending to be pigs? Did I get fooled by you?"

An Mei glared fiercely at Yan Xiaosu.

Yan Xiaosu raised both of his hands in surrender, “My dear Mei Mei, Boss and I are actually from different paths. In this area we are actually not familiar with each other!”

Tyrant Su immediately drew a line with Wang Zheng.

Everyone started to enter the dance floor. In the eyes of the two in the middle of the dance floor, there was currently no one else but each other.

Meng Tian glanced at Ye Zisu. In essence, Lear and her were really of the same character. Both of them were determined people and did not get discouraged easily. However, Meng Tian knew that Ye Zisu did not have such a character. A child that had been born to a family of soldiers was different from a child who had been born to a normal family. Ye Zisu did not seem like she would be able to withstand such a blow.

However, Ye Zisu’s eyes were calm. Though there was actually a hint of sadness in them, this sadness did not seem to be for herself.

“Do you know something that I don’t?” Meng Tian suddenly asked.

Ye Zisu came to her senses. Only now did she realize that Meng Tian was looking at her. She smiled lightly and said, “Don’t you find this to be a perfect sight?”

Meng Tian shook her head, “It seems so perfect that it makes

people feel like all of this is a dream.”

Meng Tian was always confident that she would have an advantage when facing anyone. Ye Zisu was already very outstanding, but in many areas she was still pressured by Meng Tian. However, the young lady that was in the centre of the dance floor was different. The moment she appeared, she seemed to be able to naturally pull everyone’s gaze to her as though it was the most natural thing in the world.

Meng Tian had seen many people with a great aura, but none of them seemed to be able to compare to this young lady. When considering her age, this seemed unfathomable.

It was not something that could be faked.

Up against anyone, Meng Tian would definitely not give way; she was not the type of person to do so. However, when faced with this young lady, such thoughts did not surface. To ruin the perfect scene in front of her would be a sin.

“Such a happy occasion! Mei Mei, come, let us join in as well!”

What’s the point of thinking so much? The most important is that Wang Zheng is happy!

It was normal for an abnormal person to encounter abnormal circumstances.

While everyone was dancing wildly, Wang Zheng pulled Aina and ran out of the grand hall.

When they left the commotion of the party, their worlds actually only had the two of them remaining.

Wang Zheng was going crazy just by looking at Aina. Aina's neck started to blush as she felt that her heart beating wildly.

"At this moment, is the Prince supposed to kiss the Princess?"

The Aina today was exceptionally pretty and exceptionally bold!

Yue Jing was constantly looking for a chance to talk to Wang Zheng. This chance appeared when Aina was just taking a short break.

"Student Wang Zheng, never would I have expected you to have such a handsome transformation upon entering college. Congratulations."

Yue Jing displayed her most beautiful smile, one that all men coveted. Before coming, she intentionally pulled her top low to reveal her snow white, deep cleavage. It was not something that a little boy would be able to resist. Under the lamp light, her breasts were barely covered and looked like they would bounce out if they just shifted a little.

Such fullness was not something that untrained girls would be

able to match.

“Thank you.” Wang Zheng said courteously. He and Yue Jing did not have much to talk about and she was the type that he would want to keep as far away as possible.

“The reality is that Ares College has already fallen far behind. You should consider joining Zeus College. You would be able to obtain a much better treatment there. I am also there to keep you company. It is strange that in the past, I did not realize that you are actually so exceptional.”

Yue Jing displayed the disposition of a young girl. Under the lamp light, she was very charming.

Wang Zheng smiled, “I think that Ares College is the best fit for me. My dance partner is here, please excuse us.”

Yue Jing had already noticed from the corner of her eye that Aina was already coming over. She suddenly turned her body and leaned her milk-white bosom towards Wang Zheng. There were actually many ways to deal with a girl!

Such a petty trick would be able to knock a nail between the two of them.

However, just as Yue Jing was very close to Wang Zheng, Wang Zheng lightly spun and avoided Yue Jing. This caused Yue Jing to fall head first into the celebratory cake. She got up in a pathetic

manner. On her face, it was no longer clear what was cake and what was skin.

When a damsel was in distress, naturally there would be someone to rescue her. Wang Zheng and Aina left quietly while smiling.

Wang Zheng was someone with great memory. He had already had his guard up against a girl like Yue Jing who was obviously up to no good.

Under the moonlight, a pair of sneaky shadows snuck into the male dormitory. At this time, everyone had gone out to celebrate, so the dormitory was empty. Even the person that was in charge of the dormitory had disappeared.

Aina was really too bold. Since she had come to Earth, she had done things that she'd never even dreamed of doing and even snuck into a male dormitory in the night.

With one leg, Wang Zheng shut the door and held Aina's face with both his hands. Her face was so beautiful that it seemed like a piece of art. The distance between the two of them was so close that they could feel each other's breath.

Aina's red lips opened slightly. Was there anything else in the world that held a greater temptation?

Legend had it that moonlight was able to stimulate the secretion of hormones. On this night where the both of them were

hopelessly in love, Wang Zheng finally took the relationship to the next level. He caressed Aina's beautiful skin as though she was his entire world.

The exquisite gown fell to the ground under Wang Zheng's hands. At this moment, the sight in front of him caused him to suffocate.

He knew that beauty existed but had never knew that it had the power to stop one's breath.

Aina closed her eyes and allowed Wang Zheng to do as he pleased, biting her lips gently. She had already mentally prepared herself for this today when they were coming here.

As Wang Zheng slowly hugged Aina, his body seemed as though he was electrocuted.

This caused Wang Zheng to do a somersault.

The Skylink that was on Aina's wrist emitted a powerful electric shock that blasted Wang Zheng and sent him flying. Even though Wang Zheng had a hard head, the force still caused him to become dizzy.

Aina was so shocked that she opened her eyes. She stuck her tongue out at Wang Zheng's pathetic state and quickly took off the skylink. After hurling it to the side, she helped Wang Zheng up.

“Are you ok? I forgot about that.”

The princess’s defensive system had enough voltage to knock a man unconscious. However, Wang Zheng had an abnormal resistance like a cockroach and only became dizzy from the attack.

“I thought that God was jealous of me and decided to punish me.” Wang Zheng said with a laugh.

Seeing how Wang Zheng was still in the mood to joke around, Aina knew that he was fine. Biting her lips, she asked charmingly, “I’m not sure, is big brother still able to continue?”

Fireworks went off in Wang Zheng’s head. Such a small thing had no effect on him. Even a nuclear warhead would be unable to damage his great strength.

In one move, he swept Aina off the ground and carried her to the bed, fully admiring her beautiful body. The initially brave Aina was very quickly defeated.

“Big brother, give me an unforgettable night.” Aina said with a defeated look and closed her eyes.

Wang Zheng gently kissed the eyelashes that were trembling due to nervousness. Previously, the blood had rushed to his head but he sobered up after this shock. He knew that Aina was expecting something significant to happen. Perhaps she did not realize that this was her way of proving herself through her actions.

As Wang Zheng finished kissing this beautiful skin inch by inch and leaving his mark, his heart made a decision. With every kiss, Aina's body would tremble slightly, her red lips letting out a soft moan that sounded nervous and full of enjoyment.

After completing this big task, Wang Zheng did not know where his immense self-control came from. Unfortunately, due to that stupid BoneHead, it was difficult for him to lose his self-control.

Wang Zheng gently kissed this beautiful piece of art and hugged Aina.

After a long time, Aina secretly opened her eyes, "Is something wrong?"

"Silly girl." Wang Zheng lovingly caressed AIna's face. "It would be great if you are a little more selfish."

"What about you?" Aina retorted. She believed that this was the only person in the whole world that would reject her.

"I have already placed my mark on you, you are mine tonight!" Wang Zheng said softly.

On this lovely night, Wang Zheng felt as though he was able to transcend into sainthood. Not even a night under the willow could shake him.

Aina was sleeping very peacefully. Even the way that the princess slept was exceedingly graceful.

Wang Zheng was unable to fall asleep and was deep in thought. It was difficult to bridge the gap between him and royalty, but with his strength, it was not impossible. He wished to have a proper and open relationship with Aina and not let her carry such any unnecessary burden.

As Wang Zheng grew drowsy, he gradually dozed off and had a peaceful sleep. That wretched BoneHead did not appear and give him nightmares.

Bang bang bang…

“Why won’t this open. Chen Xiu, did you take out the wrong key?”

“No, this key is to our room. Don’t tell me what we drank too much?”

Chen Xiu tried swiping the card through the other way. Both of them appeared to be wobbly and looked like they had drunk a lot.

Wang Zheng opened his eyes. His arms felt slightly numb. At the same time, Aina also awoke.

Both of them looked at each other in the face, their eyes opened wide. We’re dead!

This is going to be in the headlines!

“Brother Shan, can you try? This door seems to be broken and won’t open.”

“Is it locked from the other side?” Zhang Shan seemed like he was still sober.

“Can’t be, there’s no one inside.”

“Step aside, I’ll punch this door open!” Zhang Shan said, rolling up his sleeves.

Yao Ailun shook his head, “You are becoming less like a student of the Physics Department. Keke, let’s just find the dormitory manager and have him deal with it.”

Chapter 18 – I Am Skeleton

“Where could I find a manager at this time? This elder brother has to use the bathroom now! I can’t hold it in any longer!” Zhang Shan glared at Yao Ailun.

The inside of the dormitory room was in a state of confusion. As last night’s evening attire definitely couldn’t be worn again, Wang Zheng hurriedly found a set of gym wear for Aina to put on.

“Stop yelling so early in the morning, I was just sleeping a while ago!” Wang Zheng raised his voice to yell.

“Hurry up then, I have to go now!”

“Coming, why shout so much? I still need to put my clothes on properly.”

Wang Zheng opened the door, and Zhang Shan dashed into the bathroom while Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun fell into bed embracing each other.

“I’ll never drink so much again. Is it just me or is the floor on the ceiling?” Chen Xiu shook his head, “Elder Brother Ailun, you’re crushing me.”

Wang Zheng hurriedly blocked the two of them from noticing as Aina speedily ran out, both of them sticking their thumbs out to signal a successful operation.

Closing the door behind him, Wang Zheng escorted Aina out of the male dormitory. All the while, Aina had a deep blush on her face.

They'd definitely drunk too much yesterday. Why else would they be so courageous?

Although nothing really happened, last night was definitely an advancement in their relationship. Most importantly, however, was that Aina was now clear that Wang Zheng was the one she'd been waiting for all her life.

Without saying anything more, Aina took the initiative to give Wang Zheng an early morning kiss.

Gazing at Aina's departing figure, Wang Zheng humorlessly smiled to himself. Even if he tried, he definitely wouldn't be able to sleep, so why not do some training first. Though in future, he really shouldn't continue on with such an unregimented lifestyle!

After Wang Zheng ran one lap around the dormitory's perimeter, it was already 6 o'clock, and he planned to shower first before training a bit more.

Opening the door to the dormitory room, Wang Zheng had a shock, as three people were waiting behind the door in ambush.

He was detained by Zhang Shan the moment he entered the

room, “Sit!”

In the centre of the room was a small stool.

Touching his glasses, Yao Ailun, whose face didn’t show any signs of being drunk, lectured, “We have always practised and upheld democratic values. Confess in detail for leniency, resist and risk severe punishment. Student Wang, do you agree?”

“You three must still be drunk. Say what you have to say, I’m going to to go train.” Wang Zheng took the opportunity to check the wardrobe where Aina’s evening gown was stowed away. Looks like no one saw it.

“Big brother Zheng, we couldn’t be any soberer.” Chen Xiu said.

“Little Xiu, save your words. Let us try instead.” Zhang Shan persuaded, “Wang Zheng, uh, as a comrade in arms, we have to share our breakthroughs. Confess in detail about what you did last night.”

Wang Zheng played dumb, “I slept the whole night.”

At this point, not feigning ignorance would be true foolishness.

“Tch, you still want to deceive us? This room has a female fragrance. Don’t tell me it’s yours.”

“Cough, cough, it’s possible that I got some on me when I was dancing last night.”

“I just knew you wouldn’t come clean. How would such a small amount of fragrance linger around for so long? And how will you explain this away? Such an attractive earring, who could it possibly belong to?”

Yao Ailun held a teardrop shaped earring in his hands.

Damn, Aina must have been accidently dropped it .

Wang Zheng took it, “Oh, maybe it accidentally got caught on me last night.”

“Brat, you really are stubbornly argumentative. It’s not like you would drop dead even if you just humoured us three brothers. Its Wang Shishi, right? Don’t deny it, I’ve never seen a more beautiful girl than her. I wonder how she took a liking to you!”

Zhang Shan cuffed Wang Zheng by the neck, excitedly speaking.

“Yes, that Big Sister Shishi is too mystical. She doesn’t live on campus, and we don’t usually see her.” Chen Xiu said.

“Not only that, did you guys see that earring? I just checked, that’s a limited edition piece in the produced in the Milky Way Federation, and only three pieces were made. It’s made out of ice crystals drilled out from the Terracotta Star, and each piece costs

13 million!”

Yao Ailun said excitedly. He was basically a walking encyclopedia; no wonder he would be nicknamed the All-Knowing, All-Capable God Ailun!

Zhang Shan and Chen Xiu sucked in a cold breath of air, “What? Something that small is that valuable?”

“Don’t be so uncultured, this is something only the rich can get!” Yao Ailun rolled his eyes.

Wang Zheng turned the earring over in his hands, “How could this little accessory be so valuable? Maybe it’s an imitation. Ha ha, you brats got so flustered over such a small matter.”

“Student Wang Zheng, if I could trouble you to blow on this earring.” Yao AIlun said, “Really, blow harder.”

Wang Zheng was also rather curious so he blew on the earring. Unexpectedly, a rainbow appeared around the earring.

“Well done, I didn’t expect it to actually be genuine. I had only vaguely heard before that real ice crystals will form a rainbow when water vapor is blown over it.

Yao Ailun stared dumbly.

“Big brother, you’re my idol, don’t tell me that last night you really…?”

The three stared dumbfoundedly at Wang Zheng. Feeling that remaining longer would just destroy any skeleton of innocence he had in their eyes, he grabbed his bag, saying, “I have to go, you three continue talking among yourselves. Don’t over think things, nothing happened!”

“Ai, what you’re doing now is wrong!”

“It’s unscientific!”

“Why didn’t I grow up sooner!”

Strange whines issued from within dormitory 007, almost resembling the ravenous howls of unsatisfied wolves.

Wang Zheng made his way to the MMA Club’s fitness center, only to discover that some people had actually arrived before him.

Meng Tian was just completing a chain of kicks when she happened to notice Wang Zheng arriving, and stopped to wipe off her sweat.

“Did you not sleep last night?” Wang Zheng asked.

Meng Tian looked at Wang Zheng, “I went to sleep on time. I

began my morning workout on time too. I think the one who didn't sleep last night should be you. No wonder its said that when a beauty calls, men indulge in pleasure and forget their discipline."

"Cough, cough, sorry about not being able to be of help to you last night, I..."

"No problem, you've actually assisted me quite a bit. I spoke to Lear and told him that I liked you. Finally, he stopped pestering me. It's a shame for you though, since your days are going to be tough from here on out."

Meng Tian cunningly winked.

A bead of sweat rolled down Wang Zheng's forehead.

"Be careful, ok? Lear is very strong, and even now there hasn't been anyone he couldn't defeat.

Wang Zheng smirked, "I love a good challenge. Though, if he can't win against me, wouldn't he just go off and disturb you?"

Meng Tian was dumbfounded. This person really is...

"Say that once you win. You came at the right time. Practice with me for a while."

"Sure!"

Wang Zheng put on the protective gear. Bonehead often said, “True experts are able to take hits!”

☆ ☆ ☆

In contrast, it was a completely different situation for Aina who had just returned to the Shangri La Hotel.

A large group of bodyguards stood guard as Prime Minister Kashaven Lin Aslan appeared on a screen.

“Aina, since you violated the rules on going out, your vacation will end here.”

The surrounding bodyguards lowered their heads in shame. They did not have any choice in the matter since the princess’s actions needed to be reported. Especially since she had removed her Skylink last night, the situation had really escalated into a huge matter.

As Aslan’s noblest symbol, Princess Aina had to remain perfectly chaste and flawless.

“But Aunt, Huiyin will be arriving on Earth shortly. Can’t I just return with her?”

Aina acted like a spoilt brat in front of her aunt. Though she had

anticipated that a day like this would come eventually, she hadn't expected the day to come so soon.

Kashaven sighed, "Aina, the current situation in the Empire is extremely delicate, and you, as the princess, are needed here. This was decided by the royal family. I've already done my best to cover for you, and you should know that if information on what happened last night spread out, other people would take more drastic measures, and even I would be unable to help cover for you."

Aina pondered, and silently nodded, "Prime Minister Kashaven, I understand."

"Princess, your highness, you... have to shoulder the glory of the Aslan Empire!"

Kashven exhorted Aina. As a woman, and as the Iron Fist Prime Minister, she understood Aina's sentiments, as a similar situation had happened with her before. Time would have to wash away everything. That was the cruel reality for a princess."

"I just wish I was born a normal person!"

"Aina, ignoring your responsibilities and pushing them onto others is wrong. If you want to be the master of your destiny, become stronger. Grasp the Empire in your hands!"

Kashaven encouraged Aina. She didn't know how capable Aina

would be in the future, but since she wished to resist her fate, why not show her the correct path? Then again, no one had ever succeeded on that road.

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng sat quietly in the classroom. It had been an entire day since Aina stopped attending lessons.

Even Aina herself had once said, when she left, it would be quietly and discreetly.

He looked out of the window. Even though everything had been progressing smoothly before, should he feel discouraged?

“Discouraged” wasn’t a word in Wang Zheng’s dictionary.

Was becoming a super soldier truly his ultimate goal?

In the past, becoming a Super Soldier was in and of itself, his motivation and goal. Yet now, he had a real target!

For the first few days after Aina left, Wang Zheng immersed himself only in attending class and training himself. He needed time to adapt to all the changes around him.

Yan Xiaosu seemed to have realized a peculiarity about Wang Zheng’s current state of mind. Sometimes, situations like these

would appear in life. As a brother, Yan Xiaosu believed that it was best to end things earlier, since one would eventually have to awaken from the dream, and waiting longer would just bring about more pain.

Thus, he accompanied Wang Zheng every day. When Wang Zheng attended classes, he too slipped into the physics department lessons. Of course, he couldn't understand anything.

When Wang Zheng trained, he carried a towel and water bottle, squatting to the side.

Yan Xiaosu didn't need words to understand Wang Zheng's feelings, and didn't need to waste time talking.

"Yan Xiaosu, what have you been doing these past two days? Come over to me quickly!"

An Mei was a little annoyed, suddenly vanishing for three days wasn't something she could get used to.

"Mei Mei, I have stuff to finish here, give me some more time."

Yan Xiaosu said. Wang Zheng's matter definitely couldn't be spread around on the outside. While he liked to gossip, it wasn't as if Yan Xiaosu was incapable of controlling his mouth.

"Tyrant Su, you're really daring, eh? Either you roll over here for me, or you give this Aunt here a good explanation. Otherwise,

we're breaking up!"

An Mei was enraged. This bastard used to be so timid and obedient, yet now he seemed to have gained some skill since he dared to talk to her in that manner.

"Don't be so long-winded, I'm hanging up, this tyrant loves you!"

After ending the call and turning off his Skylink, Wang Zheng had already finished training.

Wang Zheng chuckled, "I'm just training by myself. Why fight with Mei Mei because of me? You should go and make up with her."

"Damn, didn't I say it before? Women are like clothes, but good brothers are worthy of spending a lifetime together!"

Yan Xiaosu patted his chest. Although Tyrant Su was typically an amiable person, when his bottom line was touched he became more decisive than anyone else.

Back in the girls dormitory, An Mei was dumbfounded. Never in her dreams would she have thought that Yan Xiaosu would dare hang up on her Skylink.

Only, Ye Zisu seemed to have guessed something, "Mei Mei, you've wronged Yan Xiaosu. He was definitely together with Wang Zheng."

“Even so, what can’t be said?!”

“Sometimes, girls cannot be too clingy. After all, men have their own dignity and bottom lines, too. Yan Xiaosu’s personality can already be considered as pretty good.”

Ye Zisu advised. She was very clear on the two’s relationship, and keeping Yan Xiaosu from staying with Wang Zheng at such a time was simply impossible to accomplish.

Exiting the training room, Yan Xiaosu looked to the sky and said, “You should do something this evening, don’t go back to study. Your three roommates are also such boring people. Let’s all go drinking!”

Wang Zheng shook his head, “I feel like moving around more often, maybe even fight a few rounds.”

Yan Xiaosu stared at Wang Zheng, and teased, “...ah, how strange, you seem to have become addicted to CT recently. With your level, could it be that you’ve become used to getting oppressed?”

Wang Zheng helplessly laughed, “Actually...”

Yan Xiaosu patted Wang Zheng on the back a few times, and consoled, “I understand, alright. This brother here will lead you tonight. Even if I fall from the bronze tier, I’ll accept it. Your

Grandma's leg! Tall Rich Handsome is going to go crazy today!"

"I'm Skeleton!"

"You're a skeleton? Why bring this kind of skeleton nonsense up late at night... What did you just say?"

Looking at Wang Zheng, Yan Xiaosu's eyes almost shot out, ... Skeleton... Skeleton...

"You're... that Skeleton?!" Yan Xiaosu immediately shot up almost half a meter from the ground.

GOD! No one could be more surprised!

Late at night, a sudden howl startled a pair of mandarin ducks in a little grove...

Volume 05 – Invincible!

Chapter 1 – God Is A Benevolent Lord

Ever since he'd been young Yan Xiaosu had always believed that Wang Zheng would achieve great things in the future. Perhaps it was because of how good Wang Zheng was at doing homework. However, as time passed, the truth could not be more cruel. They had suffered huge blows to their confidence when they received their gene scores. Even though it was not inferior to the extent of being a degenerate, it was enough to shatter both of their dreams.

However, God had always been a benevolent lord. At the point that Wang Zheng was at his lowest, Aina appeared. It was from then that Yan Xiaosu felt that some enigmatic strength had returned to him, though he hadn't been sure until he'd begun his military training and his excellence. Perhaps it had just been just luck.

However, all this did not exist. Wang Zheng's true self was shocking and a game could not hope to measure his worth properly. Only in the real world could he properly display his strength.

Perhaps the fantasy would really become a reality.

Aina's departure was very abrupt and quiet but Wang Zheng had not been too shocked about it. In actual fact, he had not been heartbroken at all during these last few days. Instead, he had been full of gratitude. In their relationship, the one who had given the most and had carried the greatest burden was Aina.

As a man, giving up and pitying himself was not Wang Zheng's style. Regardless if they would have a future, he would give his best and let no one belittle him nor ridicule Aina for choosing him .

Yan Xiaosu opened his eyes wide. His eyes had never been so big and round before.

When Skeleton's ID appeared, Yan Xiaosu sealed his own mouth. At this moment, Tyrant Su started to remember that, during the first time when he got Wang Zheng to make up the numbers in his team, the name that Wang Zheng had registered was Skeleton.

At that time, he had thought that their astonishing victory had only been a coincidence. Who knew that coincidences in this world were not actually coincidences but immutable outcomes?

Wang Zheng smiled lightly, "If something this small shocks you, how are you going to achieve great things in the future?"

"Great things?" Yan Xiaosu was dumbfounded.

"Some things only happen one percent of the time; others even less. When you try it, however, you'll get some kind of a result one hundred percent of the time."

Wang Zheng smiled as he said this. Actually, he was powerful. Even if the world was more powerful than him, he would show no fear!

Yan Xiaosu scratched his head, “About that, Boss, can you say it in a simpler and more straightforward manner?”

“In the beginning, CT was only a pastime for me. Now, it seems like it can become a source of income for us. Scheming is your specialty so go think one up.”

“Fuck, how did I not think of that? Have I turned into a pig-brain?” Yan Xiaosu slapped his head suddenly. Once it was a matter pertaining to money, his brain would immediately spin rapidly.

That was definitely a big source of income!

It only required Wang Zheng to keep on winning!

It seemed like the issue concerning Aina wasreally bothering Wang Zheng. It was just the way that each of them approached it that was different.

“I only have one condition, which is that it must remain a secret. I do not wish for this to affect our lives in school.” Wang Zheng said.

Yan Xiaosu zipped his mouth with his fingers. “Rest assured, Boss’s decision is wise. Since you are a big star in CT, it may not be the greatest idea to let the whole school know.”

On the military department’s board there were quite a large

portion of people that opposed this activity as it caused people to neglect their work. On the surface, they would be supportive. However, as the people's ability increased, the higher they would climb the CT ranks and the more it would cause them to neglect their work.

☆ ☆ ☆

Skeleton Corps Committee

A new member had caused quite a commotion in Skeleton Corps. That person was Hunter of Darkness, Johnson Douma, from Skeleton's previous battle. Everyone's respect for him had grown especially when they'd learned of his past.

Nobody had expected Johnson to join Skeleton Corps. Ever since Cai Hong had joined, everyone seemed to have an interesting past which made the members of Skeleton Corps elated.

This was the first time that Johnson appeared after joining. Naturally, he joined because of Skeleton. Due to Skeleton's absence, however, he was immediately surrounded by countless members that fanatically worshiped him.

Even though he had lost, Johnson had earned a great deal of respect from the way that he performed during the battle. This was considering the fact that he had problems with his vision.

Cai Hong had also appeared. With regards to Johnson's background, Cai Hong couldn't be more informed. He had specifically investigated him on a prior occasion. Johnson was indeed an expert in the Special Forces. Due to an accident that happened during a mission, he had suffered permanent injury and had to serve as the rear guard.

Of course, Cai Hong did not believe that he couldn't be fully treated. It was probably too expensive for the inflexible bureaucrats. The important thing was that no matter what

happened, Johnson's strong will did not falter.

This caused Cai Hong, a military man through and through, to have great respect for Johnson.

This world was unfair and only the weak would complain about and fear it.

"Johnson, please share with everyone how you felt during the battle. You are the closest one among us to victory." Cai Hong said.

Several people immediately shared Cai Hong's battle to Johnson.

A slight smile tugged at Johnson's lips. Compared to him, Cai Hong was the representative of the new generation.

"When that battle ended, I spent a whole night thinking about those times when I had a winning chance. I would have won had I grabbed any of those." Johnson said.

Everyone started discussing amongst themselves. In that battle, Johnson was indeed pressuring Skeleton the whole time and was in an advantageous situation.

"However, the next day, my mind became clear. In reality, there weren't any opportunities to win from the very start." smiled Jameson.

The Skeleton Corps already possessed a strength of over 50,000 members. The atmosphere did not feel like a battle guild but more like a chit-chatting group. This was fine as Chen Xiu and the other founders had no goal when they created the guild.

Johnson's words caused the audience to become awfully quiet. That was because, during the fight, Johnson had been heavily pressuring his opponent. The Wargod No.1 was already breaking down towards the end. If not for the usage of the terrain, Skeleton would have lost.

Looking at everyone's bewildered faces, Johnson smiled, "Cai Hong, I believe you understand what I am trying to say."

This was the difference between their levels. Cai Hong nodded his head, "I can understand but I still can't believe it. My apologies, I had investigated your background prior. In the darkness, CT is able to unleash 90% of your strength. I do not believe that someone that can utterly crush you exists."

Johnson smiled. "I can't believe it either, so that's why I am here."

"Sister Cai Hong, come on, say something that we understand!" Yao Ailun lamented.

"Yes, don't use such profound words, we don't understand!"

"What really happened? What are you guys saying about

something that exists or did not exist?”

Cai Hong forced a smile, “His integration with the darkness is obtained only after harsh training. I noticed some strange things when I replayed the battle. At the start, Wargod No.1’s movements were unnatural, meaning that Skeleton was not used to operating a mech in the darkness. It might have been his first time or one of first times in darkness. However, he became used to it very quickly. Either he’s gone through similar training or he has unbelievable talent.”

Johnson shook his head, “He is someone who has gone through training. Even geniuses need some time before they are able to adapt so well in the darkness. When the eyes are blinded, the heart becomes much brighter. Actually, in the darkness, I can utilize one-hundred-ten percent of my strength. Depending on my eyes will result in a greater handicap.”

More and more people gathered, attracted by this high-level discussion.

“So what conclusion did you come to?” Chen Xiu asked.

Cai Hong forced a smile, “We are discussing it because we were unable to come to a conclusion. The people who are able to fit the bill are soldiers who stand at the top of this world and would not be bored enough to play CT in the beginner arena.”

“You can count such people on Earth with one hand, and it cannot be one of them.” Johnson added.

“No, it cannot be the people that you are referring to. Does everyone remember Little Mo’s interview question previously? His mannerism when answering were not like that of a middle-aged person.” Yao Ailun suddenly said. He was quite confident of such details and his belief was firm.

That kind of cold humor seemed to belong to someone who was young and eccentric of character.

“I agree more with this view. During the battle, I noticed that he had strong basics and was superb at adapting to changes on the battlefield. However, he does not have much battle experience. He appeared to be new to battle and was gathering experience.” Johnson said.

Cai Hong suddenly clapped his hands, “That’s how I felt too and that’s the scariest thing!”

“However, his method for improving is also somewhat extreme. Wargod No.1 has many flaws and limitations. Some of them are unavoidable no matter how skillful he is. He is brave to put himself into those kinds of desperate situations despite the difficulty.”

Johnson showed a complicated expression on his face. “He definitely has potential. At the same time, it also hints that he could be on a path to become a god. However, it can also…”

Yao Ailun said, “However, even until today, I continue to wait!”

“Me too!”

“Me, too! Fuck, even if I am blind, I will still believe that he can do it somehow!”

“Me too, let that stupid Fawn go and see ghosts!”

“Either live like a coward or live eternally on the battlefield!”

As the world became bigger, humans’ hearts became smaller and yearned for more miracles.

Why did humans look forward to risk? They knew that the uncharted territories in the galaxy were filled with death but many people still continued to take the risk to go out to explore. This was because everyone believed in miracles and desired miracles.

At the brother’s internet cafe, Yan Xiaosu was looking at the conversation but he did not say anything. He only kept on shaking his fist.

“Boss, you should take a look at this.”

Wang Zheng smiled, “You are enough.”

Wang Zheng was not in a rush to find an opponent. Actually CT had a large scope and had several specific training grounds like

target practice, movement and places to adapt to various environments. Wang Zheng did not care about such things in the past, but he was not suitable for battle today. In Instructor Bonehead's words, his heart was not peaceful.

Yan Xiaosu had already joined the conversation. He had found something even more fun than battling—that was to accompany the others in theorycrafting and imagining.

The more advanced the mech, the more add-on systems it would have that specifically targeted different kinds of situations.

For example, the magnetic storm field that Wang Zheng encountered previously was very problematic as it could shift attacks. This was only one of the many environments that included the magnetic storm, lightning, and so on so forth. The greater the ability of the add-on system to deal with an environment, the more complicated it was. When factoring in different battle styles and attack moves, more coordination was required.

From the words of an expert, the beginner arena was simply crude and brainless. However, when entering the high-level arenas, one must be equipped with the state of the art equipment in order to become the best. Furthermore, the different kinds of weapons, equipment, and synchronization with battle tactics must be well understood.

In a one on one fight, an even greater understanding about mecha and weapons was required.

...Wang Zheng did not think much about this. When he had encountered the magnetic storm field previously, he had a strange idea.

The phenomena of lasers shifting due to the magnetic field could cause it to increase in speed and strength, potentially resulting in amazing results.

Chapter 2 – Bonehead, It Hasn't Even Been Two Years!

At that moment, Wang Zheng felt a sudden urge to test out his new revelations. Opening a training room for himself, he began to operate his Wargod No.1 Mech and enthusiastically train.

Losing oneself in training was a great way to forget one's problems

Upon seeing Skeleton enter the training room, everyone who was waiting in anticipation could only continue to wait. The training area was unique to the novice tier, and experts rarely practiced there. After all, it wasn't like training in virtual reality would manifest tangible results.

"It can't be. How could someone of Skeleton's level need to train anything?"

"Yeah, all of it is just for better comprehending how to operate mecha and their equipment — nothing that difficult to grasp."

"I don't know, but it's a pity that he set the room to private mode. I really want to watch his progress."

As the conversation heated up, Yan Xiaosu had already grown impatient and after opening the VR pod, what he saw caused his brain to ache.

Wang Zheng was undergoing shooting practice... only his gun technique was rather peculiar, bordering on comedic even.

His mech's movements were strange and mysterious, he was constantly moving his laser gun as if solely attempting to improve the gun's rate of fire. However, the movement was too wide, impacting accuracy so greatly that Yan Xiaosu could only shake his head in discontent. He didn't know what exactly Wang Zheng was trying to accomplish.

It seemed he would have to devise a more suitable plan in order to claim them their first pot of gold.

The initially brazen words uttered by the lakeside had now become even more of a monumental task

The more Wang Zheng practiced, the more he lost himself in the training. Since he had chosen a trainer mech with a force field generation device, and since Wang Zheng's shots were extraordinarily imprecise, Wang Zheng's mech was continuously blown up by the trainer, time and time again.

Even Tyrant Su, who had been spectating at the side the entire time, found it hard to watch. If it weren't for the visible ID, student Yan would have thought it was just a dream. At such a level, just one hand was all he needed to accurately hit a target.

In contrast, Wang Zheng's mech had been demolished by the Trainer who knew how many times, and all the while Wang Zheng's mood was jovial as he continued to execute his obscure

and eccentric shooting technique.

Unnoticed by Wang Zheng, the Rubik's Cube mark on his chest began to glow faintly.

"Recording information...1%... 10%... analyzing data... analyzing data... continuing to record information."

It wasn't clear how long it took, and even Wang Zheng himself wasn't sure of how many times he had been crushed. Yan Xiaosu had already fought in quite a few matches. After Wang Zheng had revealed himself to Yan Xiaosu as Skeleton, Yan Xiaosu had chosen to pilot the Wargod No.1 as well, taking the chance to improve his piloting skills in the short while, and unexpectedly achieving a three win streak to the high praises of his teammates.

Yet looking at Wang Zheng over there, still fighting against the same trainer mech, and the training statistics at the side... it was cringeworthy, ah.

Not even sure of what Wang Zheng was practicing, Yan Xiaosu was uninclined to guess. He had accompanied Wang Zheng mainly to relax, but this was a matter that required thought. Anyways, the best treatment after ending a relationship was to start a new one. That was something he'd personally experienced with An Mei. After making progress with An Mei, his crush on Yue Jing had already passed from his heart; he now treated it as ignorant first love.

Both Ye Zisu and Meng Tian were pretty good, and absolutely top

quality beauties. However, their backgrounds were a bit problematic.

It seemed that he would have to rack his brains even more to save enough money to help pay off the bride price for both of them.

Only after training late into the night did the two of them finally leave the CT gaming shop, and the rarely online Skeleton didn't even end up fighting a single match. However, the Skeleton Corps were still extremely lively, trying to guess what Skeleton was training for this long. The fact that CT could not be considered real training since it did not require blood, toil, tears, and sweat did nothing to stop the zeal of the players. The inner circle of the Skeleton Corps grew larger and larger. They all shared the same hobby of CT; if they lost they lost together, if they won they won together. Cai Hong and Johnson even got drawn into the practice spars people, and to the approval of many within the corps, even began to hold instructional matches. In terms of experience those two were, without a doubt, pros especially in comparison to the rest of the corps.

Due to his health condition, Johnson could only take part in individual matches. Although it didn't detract from his potency: he was matchless and indomitable when it came to dark stages. In dark environments the disparity in experience was only accentuated; in Johnson's case the mechanics and mech operation knowledge seemed to be ingrained into his very bones whereas others couldn't even tell north from south. While Johnson to darkness was like a fish to water, the other players were light years behind in terms of reflex and that's not even taking into account their disadvantage from having to heavily rely on their equipment. Even their movements lagged behind, which only served to widen

the chasm that was their difference in ability.

Aside from Cai Hong's exquisite mech piloting, his distinguished leadership, sagacious and big-picture decision making, and battle direction earned him praise and admiration from the other Skeleton Corps members.

As for Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu, they took up the role of match commentators within the corps. Their chemistry could even be compared to the standard of Fawn and Little Suds. Most importantly everyone was contented and joyful

Meanwhile, Wang Zheng hadn't returned to campus, opting instead to visit his home. Aina's departure had allowed him to collect his thoughts. Questions about the elusive identity of the old merchant simmered inside of him. Why would someone with such prolific knowledge of science — where even a few words of his could cause an uproar in the scientific community — choose to stay in such a low-key town? What exactly is the Rubik's Cube? And why was it given to him?

He wanted answers. What was his destiny? His purpose?

When Wang Zheng finally arrived, the bookshop's door was, to his surprise, locked up, and a "Sold" sticker was plastered onto it. When people leave, the house is empty; it seemed the Old Merchant would never come back.

Gazing into the sky, Wang Zheng felt the stars were breathtaking. However, when he thought that Aina was probably

below those very same stars, far away, his mood took a dark turn.

After making his way to his little nest, Wang Zheng's eyes gleamed. On the dusty floor... there was a footprint...

An average person wouldn't have noticed it, but it didn't escape Wang Zheng's eyes. Considering that his room emanated poverty with barely anything other than the floor and walls, a thief wouldn't agree to rob it even if you paid them! Unless...

Taking a sweep of the room, he discovered a note on top of the table. Wang Zheng was excitement incarnate, he rushed over to take a look. After all was said and done, Wang Zheng was still a sixteen-year-old teen: he still cared about his family even if it were only a scrap of information about them.

Opening the note, Wang Zheng discovered the Old Merchant's crooked and disorderly handwriting running across it like chicken scratch

"Knowledge is wealth. Stay true to yourself, and good friendships can be found anywhere. This house has already been sold and even I never thought it would sell for such a favorable price Don't miss this old merchant too much."

Wang Zheng blinked his eyes in confusion.

"That damn old geezer, he probably only came back to take the real estate documents," Wang Zheng opened the cabinet to check.

“They really aren’t there anymore. His grandma’s leg, how poor was that old man, ah!”

If the notice pasted on the door was correct, he was only left with a few more days. Wang Zeng felt like fainting.

After spending quite a while ranting, Wang Zheng collapsed onto bed. The bookstore was closed, and the house was sold; his last link to the Old Merchant had vanished.

How could this even be happening?

At that moment, the Rubik’s Cube hidden in Wang Zheng’s chest began to glow faintly, covering Wang Zheng.

Suddenly, he was overcome with what felt like electric shocks. Wang Zheng stared blankly at the ceiling. It couldn’t be, could it? Was it really true that on the night of a heavy downpour, cracks on your roof will always appear?

Bonehead, two years haven’t passed yet, do you know how to count?!!!

When Wang Zheng opened his eyes, he once again was greeted by the familiar visage of Bonehead, though this time his expression was a little more grave.

“Ha ha, my beloved Instructor Bonehead, long time no see. I’ve really missed you!”

An outstretched hand would never slap a smiling face. With regard to Bonehead who never operated on common sense, Wang Zheng decided it was better to remain subdued.

…

……

……….

Wang Zheng felt a little bead of sweat drip down his neck. Every time Bonehead thought in silence, bad things would happen to him. Moreover, he felt a chill as both of Bonehead's eyes, which were emitting a red light, raked over his body inch by inch. Even though 'dauntless' and 'resolute' could have been used to describe his previous actions, Wang Zheng didn't want to leave this world like this after experiencing so little.

"An anomaly has presented itself. Scans up till now have failed to detect the presence of the Randt Empire. After analysis, it appears an unknown 13th dimensional space has invaded. Implementing the Randt Empire's first protocol!"

Bonehead meticulously articulated.

Wang Zheng helplessly shrugged his shoulders, "In any case, whether you say north or west, you're the one calling the shots anyways. What's this first protocol? You couldn't possibly be

thinking of destroying me again right?

"After reconstructing the Randt Empire, you will be crowned as the 521st King of the Randt Empire. I will be responsible for finding subjects in your world to migrate to the new empire."

Looking at the serious expression of Bonehead, Student Wang's mouth grew slack. It must be one of those situations described in stories where those who were originally doomed to die, didn't, but are forced to become King, and to emigrate from their dimension. Could it be that reality's system had started to glitch again?

"Cough, cough, Bonehead, ah, come, sit down, no need to be so serious. That matter can be discussed later. Look, two years haven't even passed, and you're already treating me like this. I have other things to do now, let's just me out, and I promise I'll collect enough Battle Energy after two years."

Wang Zheng began to bring out his unscrupulous and underhanded methods.

"Your Majesty, reviving the Empire is my first priority, and so I will have to carry out the supervisory plan anyway. Please cooperate willingly, or I may have to resort to stronger methods of persuasion."

Bonehead remained stubborn and immovable, yet Wang Zheng couldn't afford to lose out in a deal. Fuck, regardless of whether inside or out, that Bonehead refuses to adhere to proper principles. This king can only yield to injustice.

“Say it then, what do I have to do?” Wang Zheng asked.

“Your Majesty, currently there are insufficient resources. I need more information on this dimensional space. You also need to begin the second stage of training immediately, with a few adjustments made in accordance to this dimension’s characteristics.”

Bonehead earnestly spoke.

“Bonehead, relax a little. There’s no need to be so harsh about it, isn’t it just reviving a nation? Relax, let’s first talk about the achievable goals in the near future. Last time when I collapsed during the special training, the Battle Energy I’d accumulated disappeared. What was what all about?”

“Your Majesty, Your Battle Energy is also the Rubik’s cube’s primary source of energy. To carry out the Empire Revival plan, Your Majesty’s genetic material and energy was needed, which resulted in a period of temporary weakness, mainly because you were still too weak.”

Student Wang opened and closed his mouth… he kind of understood now, that Randt Empire definitely was an abnormal military empire filled from top to bottom with experts. He really couldn’t guess how they functioned on a day to day basis.

However, one thing was confirmed, and that was that the shackles of the two-year deadline had been lifted. The Rubik’s

Cube only needed more battle energy to complete the plan.

Originally, Wang Zheng was hesitant. With his freedom restored, he had countless methods of delaying the plan, but then he thought of Aina.

Perhaps this was his opportunity!!!

The Rubik's Cube was his best trump card for competing in this world.

It was only that the second stage of training made Student Wang feel a bit flustered.

The first level of his Return To One exercise trained the body, or in Bonehead's words, was the initial stage of stepping into the Wargod level, and only scratched the surface of true strength. Humanity's most formidable strength came from the spirit and simply explained, referred to the development of the mental domain. Only after opening it, properly controlling it and refining it, would one step into the Wargod level. With the Rubik's Cube, one would be able to raise his strength to the limits of heaven, and become the Wargod.

Chapter 3 – Beautiful Ladies, Don't Stare Too Much At This Brother

Only after enlightenment could one enter the second level!

Student Wang listened to this like a fairy tale.

Earth, water, fire, wind, space, the Five Major Elements. These were spatial characteristics of the second level in the Rubik's Cube.

With time, youths always seemed to become engrossed in what they did. Wang Zheng was likewise very interested but soon enough, he was hit with a sudden enlightenment.

The five elements were split into two levels. One was a superficial training held in a myriad of environments, each portraying an element. The second level gave a feeling that was indescribable.

The earth element contained different kinds of exotic environments. From the viewpoint of a spectator, it would definitely make a decent vacation destination. However, it had a different ambiance for Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng experienced being chewed by monsters, primarily by gigantic bugs. It was only through this that he understood that the harshness of the first level was child's play. Compared to here, it was heaven.

For the water element, the training was intended to allow Wang Zheng to gain an understanding of the ocean, particularly in the different oceanic environments and utilization of strength when fighting underwater. The objective was to become familiar with fighting underwater, to the point where one has become one with the water, so that rather than being hindered by it, it became enjoyable.

The ultimate goal was to have full comprehension of the water element.

The environment of fire was even more explosive and unsuited to life. However, a super soldier must adapt no matter the situation, absorbing everything and turning it to their advantage.

Very quickly, Wang Zheng lost track of time. Even if one's concentration was at its peak condition it wouldn't be enough for this kind of training..

Wind, a shapeless element. Under the swirling pull of a tornado and the ever-shifting changes of the wind, Wang Zheng gained insights about the windy environments. Almost as if he was possessed in ardour, he had begun to even relish the never-ending training. It was a little bit insane but somehow enjoyable.

The reason? He had begun to obtain an indescribable and extraordinary strength; a strength which he could scantly believe existed was growing inside of him.

Bonehead quietly recorded down the ongoings of the training, as

well as Wang Zheng's brain patterns. Previously, the reason why Wang Zheng was unable to advance in Unity Arts was because his brain had not been fully unlocked. Thus, this training had two purposes: unshackling his brain to let it reach it's fullest potential, and to improve his understanding of the elements.

There were many ways to open up one's mind. One was to forcefully excite the brain. Another was to gain enlightenment through training. Both methods had their pros and cons. The first one was too dangerous while the second was too demanding. Randt Empire employed both methods to achieve the same goal.

Wang Zheng had complained a lot in the beginning, but now it had been a while since Bonehead had heard even a single whine.

Space was the most challenging and on a higher level. It contained the primordial portions of the universe and it's overarching principles.

The harsh training would lead to greater enlightenment about the universe and a higher attunement with the space element.

When he was in the sea, Wang Zheng had been snatched away by a sea monster. Although he did not die, the excruciating pain of being chewed alive had been seared deep in his mind. Initially, he screamed his lungs out, but now, he contemplated and reflected on his mistakes when he was being chewed by the monster.

Wang Zheng was a born soldier!

Bonehead did not rest either. He was constantly analyzing Wang Zheng's body and spirit readings to customize a follow-up plan. Some of that data was incorporated into the Rubik's Cube's parallel world; that was it's power.

The Rubik's Cube had also begun to analyze the main weapon of Wang Zheng's world: Mech Fighters. However, due to a lack of energy and data, it was unable to conduct an in-depth analysis. It could only leave the rest of the analysis to Wang Zheng.

Due to the differing situations in the parallel worlds, it was impossible for the Randt Empire's God of War to appear in Wang Zheng's world. However, it could set up the conditions necessary to give birth to a god of war of this world.

After a long time, the training ended. Although the second level training had yet to be completed, Wang Zheng felt that he, at the very least, had a basic understanding of the five elements, but the Rubik's Cube's energy had been depleted.

The departure this time was different from the previous. Wang Zheng was calm and bowed to Bonehead before leaving.

Time...

Wang Zheng could not really remember.

When Wang Zheng opened his eyes, he noticed that he was in the hospital.

Yan Xiaosu was beside him. The moment he saw Wang Zheng open his eyes, he reached over with tears in his eyes and awkwardly rubbed his nose against Wang Zheng's body.

"Boss, you are finally awake. I thought that you were dead."

"You wish. Why am I in the hospital?"

"You have been unconscious for the last 3 days." said An Mei, shaking her head helplessly. "I did not expect that Wang Zheng would be such a romantic. Wang ShiShi is also to blame, leaving just like that."

"There are other fish in the sea. As a man, this is only a lost love. Those that do not know how to treasure you do not deserve your love. Let Big Sister introduce someone better to you!" An Mei said, patting her voluptuous chest.

A bead of sweat fell from Weng Zheng's brow. Three days, that meant that three years had past. In the Rubik Cube, there was no sense of time. The nearly unending training which had put him through an assortment of exotic and bizarre experiences seemed like it had been just yesterday.

"Boss, the doctor said that your spirit was weak and unstable, as if you'd suffered from a severe shock." said Yan Xiaosu.

The instrument's reading of Wang Zheng's brain waves had

fluctuated unceasingly, and since it was a result of his training, it would be difficult to explain.

Wang Zhang laughed bitterly, “Actually I went a bit crazy when I was training the breathing technique that was passed down in my family.”

An Mei and Yan Xiaosu looked at each other and nodded in understanding. Pride was important to men.

“Wang Zheng, you can be considered decent. Don’t worry, you’ll definitely be able to find a good partner. Meng Tian and Ye Zisu are not bad choices. If not for Yan Xiaosu stopping me, I would have already called them over.”

Wang Zheng smiled lightly. Yan Xiaosu understood him best. “Sorry for troubling you guys.”

The three of them performed the discharge procedure. The doctor was not too alarmed by Wang Zheng and treated it as a weak body from the result of a lost love.

As Wang Zheng walked down the streets, they gave him an entirely different feeling from before. The whole world seemed brighter, clearer. If he were to concentrate, he would almost be able to hear the sounds of nature.

“Boss, we are brothers for life. Here, a gift for you. Don’t say that I have not been a good friend!”

Yan Xiaosu used all of his effort to reluctantly hand something to Wang Zheng.

A ticket...

“Lin Huiyin’s concert?” Wang Zheng was shocked.

“It is an opportunity for you to relax. Lin Huiyin has already reached the capital. It would be her first concert on Earth this weekend!”

It was only at this moment that Wang Zheng noticed that the surrounding buildings had advertisements for the concert. The ads portrayed a young girl that looked like a fairy from the heavens.

Wang Zheng smiled lightly and gave the ticket back to Yan Xiaosu, “The two of you should go. I am not very interested in it.”

The two of them sent An Mei back. Wang Zheng could tell that the relationship between An Mei and Yan Xiaosu was getting closer and closer.

“Boss, I have negotiated with CT. For the first quarter, you will get 1 million each time you battle!” Yan Xiaosu said.

Wang Zheng was dumbfounded, “Milky Way Coins?”

“Hehe, of course, did you really think it would be Earth currency? I bet that you didn’t expect this. Even I was not expecting so much!” Yan Xiaosu said proudly. Business negotiations could be said to be his specialty, an ability passed down in his family. After all, sanitary pads were also a form of business.

Wang Zheng shrugged. He was not suited for doing business, so this was for the better.

“I feel good today. You should go and make your preparations.”

“Good, but you should head back to school first. Professor Xiao Fei is looking for you.”

Yan Xiaosu’s eyes curved like crescent moons. “Boss, actually Professor Xiao Fei isn’t bad either. She is quite mature!”

“Fuck you, since when have you become so perverted?”

Yan Xiaosu shrugged, “One must always lead a happy life. Furthermore, that’s just a thought and in no way illegal.”

“Don’t tell me you…”

Wang Zheng looked at Yan Xiaosu. Yan Xiaosu stuck out his chest, “Boss, sorry, I have to head off first. We are real, pure men. However, I have to thank you. If not for you being sick, I would not have obtained such a good opportunity!”

Hospital....

Fuck, this fellow was really good at grabbing opportunities.

Upon returning to school, Wang Zheng headed straight for Xiao Fei's office. Xiao Fei had also just returned from her overseas trip. She had countless interviews recently due to the results of her research. Currently, her work that was submitted to the Milky Way System Alliance for assessment had already passed the verification stage.

"I heard that your heart was broken?" Xiao Fei said, raising her head.

Wang Zheng touched his nose, "Hehe, Professor, you are too straightforward."

"Hehe, only after failing at love can you become more mature. Not bad, it feels like you have become more handsome than last time. I have good news to share with you. Lin Huiyin has reached the capital and our Ares College is going to be a venue for her visit. However, she does not want to make a big fuss and wish to keep a low profile. Currently, she is thinking of finding a few guides."

"Oh, sounds good."

Wang Zheng did not know how this matter was related to him.

“Yes, the thing is, she specifically selected you to be her guide.”

Xiao Fei’s eyes stared intently and walked to Wang Zheng’s side, sizing him up and down. “Say, how did she get to know you?”

Wang Zheng was dumbfounded. Did Lin Huiyin know that he was Skeleton?

Impossible, this matter was only known to Yan Xiaosu and Aina.

It would be a miracle if such a big celebrity knew his name.

“I guess that you are not acquainted with her. Perhaps this is because your name appeared on the research paper. Currently, you are our Ares College’s trump card.”

“No, no, this is due to the excellent teaching from the Professor.” Wang Zheng smiled.

Xiao Fei charmingly rolled her eyes at Wang Zheng, “At least you are sensible. Besides you, there is also Ye Zisu. The two of you are responsible for taking care of Lin Huiyin. Please do a good job, I am actually a big fan. Remember that I want a signed CD!”

Wang Zheng started to sweat. He did not know that Xiao Fei would be into that kind of music.

“What kind of face is that?! Art has no boundries!”

Xiao Fei stuck out her waist. Among the girls that Wang Zheng knew, Xiao Fei was indeed the most mature.

Looking at Wang Zheng departing, Xiao Fei was laughing inside. This fellow did not seem to be as dispirited as she had imagined.

After leaving Xiao Fei's office, Wang Zheng headed straight for the Brother's Internet Cafe. He needed a battle to clear his mind.

Based on logic, so much time spent in the Rubik Cube would translate to a long time in the real world. However, it had been more like a long dream. Wang Zheng's thoughts were also in a slight disarray. Even though he knew that Aina had no choice but to leave, his heart still longed for her. It was as if he'd lost something precious. Although the experience was extraordinary, Wang Zheng was only a normal man.

The boss of the cafe received Wang Zheng with a laugh and kept turning his head around. He was most likely looking forward to see Aina.

After opening CT, he needed to give the officials some preparation time. So he decided to warm up in the training room.

After undergoing a period of training, the feeling that Wang Zheng had when entering the mech was different. Previously, the mech was the mech and the pilot was the pilot. He had been able to control the mech, but there was a difference between that and gaining insight. Now, when he entered the mech, the thick mech

armor no longer felt like an obstruction, but rather an extension of his body.

This feeling was marvelous. Wang Zheng piloted the Wargod No.1 around zipping about as if it were dancing.

Chapter 4 – Magical Bird

While Wang Zheng relaxed and enjoyed himself, the entire CT system was a flurry of activity because of Skeleton's extended inactivity. Solon had even been chanting his name in his dreams. Solon had a solid plan but it required Skeleton to appear more frequently: at least once a week.. However, the contract stated no such requirement and Solon did not push for it.

At this moment, Solon was like a great general, directing with ease and competence.

The list of challengers had already grown quite long. Previously, Skeleton appeared but did not battle, whetting the appetite of many. This time, many more appeared.

Furthermore, this time the officials even sent out an advertisement.

The problem was the opponent!

During his last training session, Wang Zheng had felt a bit off. He was quite confident with his shooting skills and felt like he could do it, yet he had continuously failed.

However, after undergoing the five elements training, Wang Zheng had a completely different understanding of his body and the world.

The laser rifle in his hand was waved about in big movements as he shot. This was not the conventional way of shooting and even a child would not do what he was doing. However, Wang Zheng was ecstatic.

In the natural world, laser was a kind of light and light was a form of matter.

In the domain of the element Space, everything existed. Mystery was just the unknown.

It could not be perceived.

Hence, to perceive the void around him, Student Wang trained with zeal.

Solon was still busy when Fawn and Little Suds arrived.

In Europe, Lear was sitting in a big room. In front of him was an enormous information screen.

“This is the strange fellow that you spoke of?”

“Yes, after analyzing many of his battles, his strength is decent. Under the circumstances where the quality of the body is irrelevant, his holistic battle quality is excellent and suitable for being your practice opponent.” The caretaker said respectfully.

Lear had already returned to Europe. The unfavorable situation at Ares College was only a small interlude. The entire team from Zeus College had been picked by him. He did not punish the fatty. Instead, he identified their weakness. After all, a team needed to bond through hardships. However, mistakes could only be made once. That was his principle.

The Three Great Military Academies meet was just a small springboard. The laymen were there to watch the fun and that was his only his warm up match. His true objective was the Sol System military trials.

Earth only had a quota of five people and he was naturally one of them.

“You feel that this person is a better choice than the military soldiers to be my opponent?”

Lear was quite trusting of the caretaker and the caretaker had an eye for things. His opponents were all chosen by the caretaker. Various mecha in the dozens were lined up in his family’s backyard. His house could barely be described as a home.

From a bird’s eye view, the entire manor sprawled about the hills, taking up tens of hectares. There was even a landing site for planes. It was more like a military base.

Previously, Lear’s regular training opponents were picked from the army.

A compilation of Skeleton's matches were being played on the big screen. Initially, Lear was quite disinterested, but after viewing for a while a trace of a smile appeared on his face.

"Seems like this guy is quite decent."

The caretaker smiled lightly, "Young master, he can be considered of the highest standard that Earth has to offer. Taking into account that he uses Wargod No.1 and seeing how he operated it, it can be said that he is skilled."

Lear nodded. "Go and settle it, I will go and prepare."

"Yes."

The caretaker left the room with a wave of his hand. In another room, there were all sorts of machines flashing. Over 10 employees were currently busy.

On the CT's side, it had chosen an opponent for Skeleton.

ID: Magical Bird.

In half a year, he achieved a stable position in the top 10 snipers on Earth. He is a Diamond rank and frequently uses a certain mech: Shadow Demon A.

Shadow Demon A was currently the best mech Earth's military

owned. It was limber, agile, and possessed incredible flight capability. It also performed acceptably on land. Magical Bird specialized in city maps and held an amazing record of 20 straight wins.

Magical Bird was definitely a very strong opponent.

Little Suds and Fawn had already appeared on the screen.

“This time’s opponent is Magical Bird. Magical Bird has had a good performance recently and this will be Skeleton’s first time fighting a flying mech. I wonder how he will perform. I’m really looking forward to this match.” said Little Suds. Her outfit today was carefully chosen as she knew that Skeleton might be able to see her.

Fawn chuckled. “last time Skeleton left us hanging. It seems he felt a bit in over his head. Let’s hope that he’s not so craven this time.”

Little Suds rolled her eyes. “My friend Fawn, you should faced the reality. I heard that you started a beginner CT class. Have people even joined?”

Fawn smiled confidently, “It’s full of course. I have a wealth of knowledge and welcome anyone to join my class. You’ll become god-like in no time. For pretty ladies, there will be a 30% discount.”

“Just how many pretty ladies’ skylink numbers are you after?”

Fawn’s face was solemn as he shook his head, “I am an upright person. Learning would mean only learning. How could I go after pretty girls’ skylink numbers? Actually, if there are any ladies who have any questions about their skills, please open a room and wait for me. It is better if I teach you face to face.”

Little Suds was turning into stone.

Fawn’s commentary was falling to new lows. Initially, it was thought to be a rumor but now it seems that it was true. It was said that when people suffered from a blow to their spirit, they would go to extremes.

“Do you think Skeleton will win this round?”

“If I were Magical Bird, I would not plan on killing Skeleton first. Instead, I would destroy Wargod No.1’s weapons. Once I did that, my victory would be imminent and I would just play around with him.”

Wargod No.1’s weapon systems were quite standard, while Shadow Demon A was fitted with a long distance targeting system.

Shadow Demon A’s flight system was not primarily used for air battles but for its maneuverability when sniping opponents. It was also great for agile tactical retreats and armed with an amazingly powerful Driss Heavy Laser Sniper Rifle that was devastating from

a long range.

This kind of Heavy Sniper Rifle had an advantage: even if the shot was off by a bit, so long as it was in range, its powerful magnetic field would wreak havoc upon the Wargod No.1's equipment such as the laser rifle.After all Wargod No.1 had been phased out for many years.

In order to deal with newer models, countermeasures were installed in older mecha. If they hadn't, they would be obliterated.

The Skeleton Corps was ablaze with activity. The key members: Chen Xiu, Yao Ailun, Cai Hong, and Johnson were already prepared. At the moment, Skeleton Corps was also Asia's most active group.

Cai Hong and Johnson had a very deep understanding about the mech: Shadow Demon A. They had also fought it in battle. Currently, Milky Way Federation did not have any large scale battles. However, regional conflicts had always been present since the existence of mankind and mecha were merely a tool of war. Mecha were chosen based on circumstance and Shadow Demon A was intended for tactical operations. Could Magical Bird defeat Skeleton using such a mech?.

Both of them were skeptical as they had fought Skeleton before. They were very clear of his outstanding ability to adapt to circumstance.

The discussion online was mixed. The strange thing was that

even with his disadvantaged position, half of the opinions were in support of him.

If it were anyone else battling, they would lose for sure.

Wargod No.1 vs Shadow Demon A?

This was a hopeless fight.

However, many people believed that, no matter the situation, there was always a way to win.

Wang Zheng was lightheartedly practicing as his opponent made his preparations.

The battle was about to start but Magical Bird suddenly went offline.

This kind of situation was rare. The officials urgently tried to get in contact with Magical Bird. Contact information for experts like him were public knowledge. This was a live broadcast not something done for fun.

Thankfully, after a few minutes, Magical Bird came back online.

In a manor in the European Alps, Lear had finished preparing.

The caretaker at his side quietly made his leave. The Cronus clan was omnipotent on Earth.

Lear Cronus was basically a god in the Cronus clan. He had no intentions of further consolidating his family's position. His family was already the most powerful on Earth. The influence of his family was already unshakeable and that had been so for over 200 years. Now his goal was to expand his influence beyond just Earth.

Since humans had originated from Earth, the Milky Way must be controlled by someone from Earth!

For that goal, Lear had withstood inhumane training since he'd been young and reached unreachable heights.

Actually, Lear was not the only case of this. The Moon and Mars had already begun ambitiously nurturing the next generation in a grab for control of the Sol System as if by a unspoken tacit agreement.

Long ago, the Sol System had ruled the Milky Way System Alliance for one hundred years. Now their position deteriorated to the point it was merely symbolic.

However, not a single country had a pride akin to citizens of Earth.

Lear did not think of it as a burden. The training had come naturally to him, he had no problem taking in any knowledge, and

not to mention he had an S rank genetic score.

A person with an A rank was one in one hundred. An S rank genius, on the other hand, was one in ten million.

Only a handful of people with an A rank had Ability X, however, all S rank geniuses had Ability X!

During the battle at Ares College, Lear had not put in much effort. At such a level there was no need to be serious, but, unexpectedly, Wang Zheng suddenly appeared and turned the tables.

It had taken some time, but they had managed to get ahold of the opponent.

The caretaker who had left just prior pulled out his skylink, “A pleasure working with you.”

On the other side, Magical Bird was dumbfounded as he stared at his bank balance. Another million had just been deposited into his bank account.

“Aren’t you afraid that I’ll log in to boot you out?” Magical Bird did not understand why these people would spend two million dollars just to obtain a chance to battle with Skeleton.

The caretaker smiled lightly, “I believe that you know the value of two million dollars. It may not be enough to buy a life, but it is

enough to buy a new leg with change to spare."

Magical Bird shivered. "Haha, just joking. It's been a pleasure working with you too. If there are any more opportunities feel free to contact me."

With that, Magical Bird hastily hung up. What's with these people?

Now that he couldn't take part in the battle, he could only watch.

Both parties were now selecting maps and mecha.

Skeleton stuck to his usual and did not choose. Surprisingly, Lear could care less and selected 'random'.

Battle Map – Easter Island!

This was an island on Earth that had a long history. On the surface there were huge stone heads that were said to have been created by aliens. Hundreds of years ago this could have been said to be one of Earth's mysteries, but that was no longer the case.

This was the mark that had been left behind when the Atlanteans left.

Chapter 5 – Evenly Matched

What Wang Zheng picked was Wargod No.1!

At the same time, his opponent also chose Wargod No.1.

Such a development left the two commentators shocked, and Fawn and Little Suds exchanged looks, “This…This seems a little… excessive.”

Little Suds helplessly shrugged. After witnessing Skeleton’s earlier matches, nobody believed that Skeleton could be defeated in piloting Wargod No.1. His understanding of that mech had exceeded even that of a god.

Although Magical Bird was a strong opponent, high ranked players like him mainly relied on their customized mech to obtain results; the second they used another mech, they would turn into a rookie.

It could even be said that a customized mech accounted for seventy percent of a person’s victories.

In such a serious matchup, choosing to pilot a Wargod No.1 was extremely foolish.

Seeing that choice of mech, doubts began to arise and questions raised post after post began to fill the comments area. Unsurprisingly, Lear cared little about such things.

Easter Island

Wargod No.1 VS Wargod No.1.

Stuck inside the CT control room, Solon felt helpless. Such a development was out of his control because many players were unable to let go of their arrogance and take advantage of the situation. In doing so they would end up handicapping themselves.

On the screen, the number of viewers did not exceed the number of the previous match. After all, many spectators would wait until they saw Magical Bird's choice of mech before deciding to pay to watch the live streamed match.

When Magical Bird finally chose Wargod No.1...

Two mecha dropped from the sky. Lear was no stranger to CT. He had played before; however, it wasn't much of a challenge for him.

Although he had never used Wargod No.1 and this was his first time piloting it, the type of mech he piloted made no difference to him.

Of course, before the match, he had familiarized himself with the mech's characteristics and performance abilities.

“Wow, Magical Bird has made the first move. Everyone, how long do you think Skeleton will take to finish the match?”

Little Suds was brimming with confidence since she was already a fan and Skeleton Corps member.

Winning was the priority and providing a splendid performance was second.

Fawn on the other hand, was upset, having originally set his expectations high, “That moron! After the match ends, I’ll definitely go over to scold him black!”

The Wargod No.1 on screen was currently in the midst of stretching it’s arms and legs, then it began to wave about the titanium-alloy knife and fiddle with the laser gun as if the pilot were an amateur.

This raised an uproar among those watching. What kind of bullshit was Magical Bird trying to pull? Looking at the aura coming off of Magical Bird made them want to fall to the ground in shame.

Wang Zheng, however, just watched silently as his opponent stretched, and similarly, his opponent leered back at him vigilantly.

This time, he felt like there would be some value in this fight.

Magical Bird finished his stretching, and with a clanking sound, both Wargod No.1s simultaneously began to move, dashing towards each other, their strides large.

At that moment, no one had realized what the battle held for them.

Bang!

Titanium-alloy knives violently clashed with each other.

Sparks exploded outward, both Wargod No.1 groaning and creaking. The tremendous recoil of that exchange brought both mecha to an abrupt stop. The harsh sounds echoed about, and with nearly identical control over their respective engines, both mecha managed to hold their ground without falling. There had been a 0.1-second difference, but that hadn't even registered in the spectator's eyes.

Both mecha's titanium-alloy knives moved simultaneously, but the one who managed to strike first, their knife a blur, was... Magical Bird!!

He had unexpectedly taken the offensive!

Skeleton wasn't any slower. Both people forwent defenses, electing instead to advance in an attempt to grab the initiative, much to the surprise of others. In the blink of an eye, dozens of knife blows had clashed and the audience merely saw the

unceasing blurs and sparks that resulted.

Skeleton lashed out with his foot, but Magical Bird had unexpectedly stepped forward to intercept the kick. Although he had taken the kick, it affected him little and his fist shot out in response.

At the same time, the titanium-alloy knives clashed.

Both Wargod No.1s simultaneously staggered backward three steps, before managing to stabilize.

The audience was completely stunned silent. Fawn's jaw dropped as he began flipping through the information sheet in his hands, "When did Magical Bird become a close combat expert?"

"Wasn't he a sniping expert?"

"Damn!"

Back on the battlefield, both mecha pilots hadn't stopped their skirmish. Skeleton took the initiative and launched an offensive. Once Skeleton began to attack, his opponent would have a fair share of defending.

Arc Slide Step!

Taking advantage of a directional change while executing a high-

speed maneuver, Skeleton fiercely sliced his knife horizontally.

Magical Bird, however, surprisingly didn't evade. Instead, his mech twisted itself in a strange way, its knife raised high in a reverse grip.

Bang!

Skeleton completed the Arc Slide Step with ease, but the strange reverse grip borrowed the force of his attack to knock him off balance and put him into a disadvantageous position.

With his mech's engine thundering, Magical Bird leaned forward, skating across the ground as he rapidly closed the distance and slammed into Skeleton.

His intent there was to destabilize Skeleton, not to kill.

Completely unable to defend, his mech took a blow. Wang Zheng had high standards when it came to maintaining balance, but this was the first time he had experienced an opponent that could execute a move so exquisite it was on an entirely different level.

Bang...

While Skeleton was still recovering, Magical Bird's stab rumbled towards the cockpit of the mech.

It was a terrifying chain attack. All of the movements unfolded sequentially without a single breath in between, not to mention the gravitational burden Magical Bird's mech would have to withstand. Yet, Magical Bird had been capable of executing such a powerful attack in a situation like that.

This body...

For Lear... it was like breathing.

His steward quietly stood outside, watching. Perfection, this was Lear's only requirement.

No one was permitted to win over him.

It didn't matter if it was in reality, or in CT.

When both body and mind reach perfection, one can achieve the level of god!

A lone knife slashed forward, intent on reaping life.

The netizens were all shocked silly. Fucker, what kind of stone did this god jump out from to be able to dominate others in close quarters?

Unbalanced and unable to dodge, Skeleton could only twist sideways to avoid a fatal blow.

Unexpectedly, a miracle occurred.

Skeleton didn’t attack nor defend, but rather violently twisted sideways to make some distance, grabbing the titanium alloy knife with an arm.

Moving backward in unison with his opponent, his left fist suddenly lurched forward.

The fist solidly struck Magical Bird on the head.

Having suffered a blow, Magical Bird fiercely pulled out his knife, kicking Skeleton in the chest as he did.

Bang!

Both Mecha fell at the same time.

Magical Bird retreated three steps before regaining balance, while Skeleton spun, planting a fist on the ground to disperse the force, then stood.

That exchange had merely swapped their starting positions.

An uproar arose in the spectator’s area, this was truly a battle of experts!

Fawn and Little Suds exchanged glances, “This definitely isn’t Magical Bird!”

“I’ve commentated on Magical Bird’s matches before, he’s a long-distance expert, and only average in close combat.”

“I once saw a broadcast he’d participated in, and he didn’t have even 10% of his present strength.”

“Damn, if you add such close combat skill to his long distance ability, he must be a Throne!”

Such an opening led many players who’d originally adopted a “wait and see” approach to join in, for both sides were on an equal playing field, and neither side was at a disadvantage, making this appear to be a worthwhile match. It had all the makings of the birth of a new god.

It seemed Skeleton’s prior performances had finally attracted a true expert.

Lear laughed. This truly was an unusual occasion. He never thought that he would be pushed so far by an opponent in CT.

Solon chewed his lip nervously, “Execute BT!”

“Yes!”

All of the staff were ecstatic and immediately began to alter the battle arena.

Easter Island suddenly began to shake, the sky turned into a sea of blazing red, as if it were countless red dots that seemed to cluster, shrouding out the sky.

“Are they setting off fireworks?”

“Isn’t this change a bit too drastic?”

Among the maps that players could choose from, some maps were unstable in nature: occasionally containing phenomena like earthquakes. Most of the time these were maps of other planets which the planets themselves were in the midst of geological flux. Unlike the rest, the Sol System worlds were rather stable.

However, the Easter Island map was an exception in that it was unstable, although such phenomena were rare.

In the event of unstable conditions, the difficulty would multiply and normal players would be unable to cope.

Lear’s mouth curled into a cold sneer. Such child’s play, the developers must love their gimmicks.

Huge fissures tore open the ground, magma boiling and bubbling

at their depths, and giant ardent fireballs, meteors, began to descend.

If it were to be hit by any of it, Wargod No.1 would, at the very least, cease to function, if not be entirely annihilated.

Over at CT, the anxiety was palpable. Today was a special day.

Everyone gazed at Solon, and even Solon's palms were sweaty. He wasn't sure of the consequences of his actions, but since the new system would have to be tested eventually,rather than remaining passive, it would be better to take the initiative.

Solon nodded, "Begin!"

What appeared before the audience's eyes was a system prompt: Realistic simulation has been activated.

In other words, injuries sustained from the environment would have the same effects as they did in real life. The pressure of exerting difficult movements would increase by fifty percent as well.

It was the equivalent of raising the difficulty by an entire level.

The audience were stunned into silence. Was there any point to playing anymore?

In normal mecha combat, the influence of the environment of the fight was minimal, especially regarding injuries from the environment, which were set to extremely low levels. The focus was on player's control over their mech, since, after all, it wasn't real combat.

However, recently many experts had complained that the difficulty was too low and that it lacked realism in environmental mechanics. CT had already made changes to some of the maps outside of the Sol System, but this was the first time they had employed it within the Sol System.

The first time this system appeared was in such an important match!

Solon stared tensely at the screen. He believed in Skeleton!

One minute of invincibility was given to both sides to get familiarized with the changes to the map.

Wang Zheng could feel that the rocking of his surroundings had become fiercer. The difficulty in controlling his mech had suddenly increased greatly. It was the same for Lear.

The innumerable meteorites in the surroundings caused the temperature to skyrocket.

But regardless of how unstable the environment became, both Wargod No.1s maintained their balance.

The staff grew nervous. What if, what if... Skeleton was unable to adapt to such a situation?

Solon was excited, extremely excited. His decision had been made in the spur of the moment. Since both players were able to operate Wargod no.1 to such a degree, they definitely wouldn't be nobodies.

No one in the Sol System had tried the system out, and though rumors stated that Mars had already begun preparing for a beta test, he had been the first to take the crab meat.

How would they respond?

Inside of their respective mecha, Wang Zheng was laughing, while on the other side, a smirk had appeared on Lear's face.

Now things were getting serious!

Two mech pilots with indomitable wills were clashing today, and both of them burst forth!

Chapter 6 – Godlike Defense

The VIP viewers could feel the vibrations of the ground and see the meteors prepared to take a life at any time.

Normal players who hadn't experienced such a situation may even forget how to operate their mech.

The two Wargod No.1s, on the other hand, raced toward each other at full throttle, gracefully sidestepping meteors via intricate and challenging maneuvers. Since the Wargod No.1 lacked a shield a single meteor could be fatal and the shaking ground tested the limits of their balance.

Bang...

A meteorite exploded into a cloud of smoke and Skeleton broke through the cloud, striking downward with his titanium-alloy knife.

At this moment, the ground below Magical Bird split apart and, under the strength of the aftershocks, his mech lost its balance.

His strike was direct and lethal; it was clear this explosive environment had no effect on Wang Zheng.

At that moment, Magical Bird used its arms to reclaim its balance and lashed outwards towards the side of Skeleton's vision.

Bang!

The kick beelined straight from Skeleton's wrist and the strength of the clash would be enough to break his wrist if not, disarm him.

However, at that moment, incredibly his fingers flicked downwards propelling the knife downwards.

At that moment, the mech's fingers were moving at a speed beyond what vision could capture.

Bang!

Both mech rebounded off each other

Bang...

The ground sheared apart and the two mecha once again backed off and dodged the hail of meteors.

The audience was extremely quiet, each and every one of their mouths were opened so wide that a goose egg could fit inside. What the fuck happened?

The real Magical Bird, who was also sitting in the VVIP room, was similarly dumbfounded. He thought that the other party had spent two million just to use his name but it turned out that it was a top expert. If it were him, it wouldn't be bad if he could even

bring out thirty percent of that strength.

Even ninety percent of the so-called experts would die in this ever-changing environment while piloting a lousy mech like the Wargod No.1.

Fawn and Little Suds looked at each other. Fawn, in particular, looked like he had drank one hundred cans of Red Bull. “Do you see that? That is a true expert. Of course I am referring to Magical Bird. The greatest geniuses often remain concealed. Those that are able to use Wargod No.1 are countless.”

Fawn felt quite proud and elated.

As both mecha were evading the falling meteors, the bottom left of the screen was replaying the previous exchange.

When Magical Bird lashed out with his leg, Skeleton’s mech’s fingers had moved eight times in an instant to rotate the knife into a reverse grip all while offsetting the recoil of inertia.

That instantaneous retaliatory kick from Magical Bird had then been adjusted to skim past the titanium-alloy knife rather than clash with it head on.

Somehow such a savage kick still had room to make a minor adjustment.

In a single set of attacks, there had been three reactionary

adjustments.

Little Suds tried to imitate what Skeleton did but her fingers very quickly jumbled up together. If it was already difficult in person, it was needless to state the difficulty of executing it with a mech.

Wang Zheng was delighted. Regardless of his opponent's identity, he was the strongest opponent he had ever met.

His opponent had a strong foundation and was extremely adaptable. It was clear that they had no lack of battle experience and maybe even exceeded Wang Zheng in this aspect.

This was what he had wanted!

The wave of falling meteors made the terrain even more complicated. The terrain was uneven with ravines, gullies and zones of ruptured fire intermingling.

The two mecha were less than thirty meters apart. After making no movement for half a minute, they simultaneously drew their laser rifles.

Such impossibly similar judgement.

Bang!

As both rifles spat out lasers, both mecha evaded at the same

time.

The next thirty seconds were a test of their offensive and defensive capabilities. Everyone knew of the ferocity of Skeleton's shooting, but Magical Bird did not seem to be at a disadvantage.

In high-rank arenas, Magical Bird was known for his long-range sniping.

However, firing from a close range and firing from afar were entirely different. If Magical Bird was this capable at it, he wouldn't merely be Diamond Rank but would be a god in the King Rank.

This person…isn't Magical Bird?

That question arose in the hearts of many, but it was no longer important.

The two mecha ultimately maintained a distance of thirty meters. The continued to endlessly execute a myriad of high level evasive maneuvers staying within 5 meters of their original positions.

Close range shooting was definitely exciting and dangerous. Not only did one have to hit the opponent, one had to avoid the other's shots. Frequency conversion steps were a must in disrupting the opponent's judgment.

There were many capable of that kind of movement, however, not when the current environment was taken into account.

In this kind of hellish environment, even walking would be problematic, not to mention frequency conversion. However, due to their stupefying concentration abilities, it looked like they were walking on flat ground.

Slowly, without anyone realizing, both mecha had started to inch towards each other. Their rate of fire had slowed as well since every shot required more and more caution. In their current proximity, the first to fire would lose the initiative, so the shot had to be lethal.

Lear smiled. The guy on the other side really thinks too highly of himself. Now that the warm-up is done, it's time to end this.

"Bo....boss, we've exceeded one million."

The operators looked, dumbfounded, at the number on the screen. For the VIPs to exceed one million, it could be called heavenly defying.

Within a short five minutes, a large number of onlookers had paid to become VIPs. The operators were full of praise and admiration for Solon. The environment simulation system had been big risk that had attracted a lot of instantaneous attention.

The unexpected part was that the hellish environment did little

to affect the two experts.

When the mecha were ten meters apart, Magical Bird's actions suddenly changed.

His mech whirred and gravity seemed to lose effect on it for a moment. He made a sharp sidestep in about 0.2 seconds where the norm for the match had been 0.5.

Such an explosive increase was fatal.

Instantly controlling the momentum, light gathered around the laser rifle.

Bang bang bang bang bang!

In an instant, five shots exploded out of the barrel in an X pattern.

Everyone was stupefied. What the fuck is this?

Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix!

A perfect light circle!

In a 1.5 timeframe, a series of of shots interspersed half a meter apart in a X shape with the gun as the center point. It was a fatal

close range gun move!

There was definitely no way to dodge this!

Fawn immediately jumped up, “Haha Skeleton, You’ve definitely lost this one for sure!”

The Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix was not merely shooting 5 shots in an X shape: that was something a lot of people could do. To perform the Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix , there were stringent requirements in terms of firing rate, angle and distance. If all these were performed perfectly, this would be a sure kill move.

On Earth, this was the first time such a move appeared in CT!

Displaying this move in the Earth Zone would make one invincible.

Skeleton did not attempt to sidestep as it was undodgeable in it’s perfect execution. An attacker’s limit was the defender’s despair.

However, this was not Wang Zheng’s despair.

With a bang, Skeleton’s mech shot into the air, its engines whirring as it fiercely maneuvered.

However, it was hopeless. No matter how he operated the mech,

there was no dodging this shot.

In the Skeleton Corps, everyone stopped breathing. Cai Hong and the rest were already suffocating.

Cai Hong grabbed his fists. This fucker is an ace in the military. Anyone that can execute the Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix would be a king in the army.

It might look simple but it was extremely difficult to do.

Who is this guy!

After displaying that killer move, all that was was left was to admire the opponent's demise.

Bang!

One shot struck Wargod No.1's left foot and ruptured it. The titanium-alloy knife blocked another shot, causing it to fly out of its hand.

After performing such forceful maneuvers, Skeleton was unable to hold the knife firmly.

Doomed!

The hearts of Cai Hong and the others thumped, cold sweat running down their backs. Both parties were tied in mech operation. If an arm was lost, not all hope was.However, if a leg and a knife were lost, it would be over for sure.

A lot of people closed their eyes. Although it had only been eleven straight wins, many dreams had been fulfilled in that period of time.

However, all dreams must come to an end. It was just that no one had wanted it to come so quickly.

Solon's face was white. He had believed that everything was under his control and that he had won his gamble. He had never dreamed, however, that such an opponent would appear. In all of his years of service, such an expert unlike any before had chosen to appear!

Fuck this Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix!

In mid-air, the mech's leg had been tragically torn asunder, bursting into fireworks. This seemed to embody Solon's career and dreams.

Even though the knife blocked a lethal shot, the momentum caused Skeleton to twist.

Skeleton's Wargod No.1 looked like a spinning top that lost its spirit as it landed on the ground.

However, at that moment, warning bells were going off in Lear's heart. There were goosebumps covering his body. He'd only experienced such a feeling twice in his life and this was the second time.

Not good!

As the one legged mech touch the ground it seemed like a taut spring that had been loosed.

Whoosh...

The engine of Skeleton's mech suddenly rumbled, its armor emitting a fierce groan, ...this was Forced Control?

Laser Rifle!

Yes, he still had a laser rifle with one final shot. With Skeleton's aim, there had to be a chance!

However, at this moment, a meteor landed, obscuring the vision of both mecha.

Lear made a decision: he would never neglect his intuition; it could never be wrong.

As Lear made his move, his opponent fired a laser.

However, this attack had no angle!

Everyone had a feeling of hopelessness. This battle, like the last one against Johnson, required using terrain to the maximum.

Skeleton used it to attack during the previous match, but this time Magical Bird was using it in defense.

In such a tumultuous situation, a warrior’s heart was as cool as ice.

Chapter 7 – God Move

It was over.

Bang…

Fireworks shot everywhere.

Skeleton WIN!

End of battle.

There was a silence so dead that even the drop of a pin could be heard clearly.

Fawn, who had jumped up previously, sank into the chair. He was like a deer that had pranced out of the forest only to fall to the ground, shot dead.

On the battlefield, Magical Bird's Wargod No.1 had exploded into a flurry of dazzling sparks

On the other side lay a Wargod No.1 with a single leg. The seething flames had come to a stop. Everything was quiet.

For the next 3 minutes, no one said a word.

After which everyone started whispering privately. What happened just now?

He was able to retaliate even after facing the Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix?

Was it because the Kill Matrix had a problem?

The previous engagement was played back slowly. Magical Bird's Kill Matrix was magnified and the data about the Kill Matrix was displayed at the side.

This was a perfect Kill Matrix!!

This was actually the first time that it appeared on the Earth Zone!

This was the legendary killer move and was perfectly executed. But... how did he end up losing?

Without a doubt, when Skeleton was in the air, he had dodged three shots, blocked one and taken the other.

Therefore, it had been hopeless.

As Wargod No.1's leg landed on the ground, it had endured a large amount of force. From the slow-mo playback, Wargod No.1's engine seemed to have suddenly exploded with energy. On the

right side of the screen, there was some data regarding the engine's energy. Upon landing on the ground, the engine's power had been raised to the maximum. Without a doubt, that was Forced Control!

What followed was a miracle.

Using the remaining leg as the fulcrum, coupled with Forced Control and residual force, the mech accelerated rapidly. At that moment, the laser rifle fired a shot.

With a bang, the shot exited the rifle.

Fuck!

Such a beautiful curved path!

It curved around the meteorite that was in the center!

After the slow-mo playback, a silence followed again.

It was said that in the whole Milky Way, there were no more than ten people that could fire that kind of curved shot!

All of those people were viewed as Gods of War and were deemed valuable assets by many different alliances.

A thought-provoking yell immediately penetrated the silence.

This was an even crazier rhythm.

This was the invincible God's Rhythm!

Solon's face went from white to blood red instantly, jumping on the table like a gorilla as he howled, "Fuck, fuck, fuck, that's the rhythm, just like that, just like that!"

At this moment, nothing else mattered.

The hope that people saw in a time of despair represented everything!

Everyone of the operators went apeshit, jumping up and down.

The VIP broadcast instantly exceeded 1.5 million viewers and the number continued to rise ferociously.

It had the Sol Federation's first simulation system. It had the Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix. It had the God Move, Curved Shot!

Two ultimate skills were displayed for the first time on Earth.

As for the Curved Shot, it was definitely a first for the Sol Federation!

This was God's Rhythm, the strength of God!

Wang Zheng pulled down the sensor device and closed his eyes tightly as he recollected the feeling of his last shot. Bonehead had spent 3 years to conduct special training for him. As a result, he had experienced the five elements training countless times and persevered. However, he had still been a bit away from enlightenment and could not comprehend the second level of Unity Arts. Nevertheless, his understanding of the first level had indeed become stronger and his comprehension of the environment had become deeper.

Right now, he had been able to clearly feel the flame-like energy in the previous battle. Since he was in CT, he was unable to utilize it's strength. If it were reality, he would have been able to attune to and use it.

In most people's eyes, such a power would be unfathomable. However, in Bonehead's eyes, it was still far from his expectations.

Even though Bonehead was a robot, Wang Zheng could feel that it had a deep attachment to Randt Empire and in the core of its very being, there was a soldier's disposition.

This shocked Wang Zheng and made him wonder as to how monolithic the Rand Empire had been.

As the battle had ended, Wang Zheng was not in the mood for an interview. He wanted to go home and have a big rest before welcoming the next day.

Lin Huiyin?

That kind of lady would not be easy to deal with. Luckily, with Ye Zisu at his side, there shouldn't be any problems.

Wang Zheng casually said bid farewell to the boss, but the boss did not have the time to take care of him. Either way, since he was a regular, it was fine if Wang Zheng cleared his bill on his own.

There were approximately one hundred people gathered in the hall, staring at the big screen as it replayed the video. This was the kind of thing that had to be viewed in VIP mode or viewed with a group of people to be satisfying.

Wang Zheng did not concern himself with the commotion around the big screen. Stepping out of the internet cafe, he looked at the sky and sighed. He hoped that Aina was faring better than him at the moment.

Wang Zheng did not take city transit, instead... he ran.

Little Suds gently pat Fawn's shoulder. It appeared that Fawn's surroundings had no effect on him as he sat there, dumbfounded.

It had been an intense rollercoaster ride, and although the vitality of Fawn's heart could be put on the same level as a cockroach, even cockroaches had their limits.

“Curved… Shot… Curved… Shot…”

Fawn had been commentating for 3 years and could said to be a senior in his field. He had longed to witness legendary moves that were a rarity on earth. Each and every one of those moves was a work of art. When Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix had been displayed, he was overjoyed. For him, however, the Curved Shot was what he adored the most. It was something that went against the laws of physics, a true work of art!

As the Curved Shot had arched through the air, Fawn’s resolve had fallen to an all-time low.

“Old Fawn, Old Fawn, are you ok?”

Little Suds felt that Fawn’s behaviour was strange as though something bad had happened to him.

“Say, do you think that he is God?” Fawn suddenly asked.

Little Suds was taken aback, “Old Fawn, are you alright? What is this God that you speak of?”

Little Suds’s career as a commentator was relatively shorter. She had used her beauty and knowledge to make a name for herself. However, the stubborn Fawn was actually more of a senior. In actual fact, his stubbornness was a result of his seniority.

However, that shot seemed to have broken his stubbornness. As a

commentator, all he wished was to see someone displaying such skills one day and make the people of Earth proud.

Such a day had come, and the moment it appeared there were two of such people.

Seeing that old Fawn was fine, Little Suds continued to wrap up her commentary on this battle. Skeleton's performance this time was miraculous and his legend would continue on.

Lear sat quietly in front of a big screen. The last battle was playing on repeat on the screen as he analyzed the battle.

The caretaker stood quiet at the side and was flabbergasted. Initially he had thought that this guy was rather interesting and could be a decent opponent for Lear to practise with. Little did he know that it would end the way it did.

Lear was quietly analyzing every action and detail. From what he could see, he had completely controlled his opponent till the end.

Was the Curved Shot dodgeable?

The answer would be a resounding yes. However, he had been careless and assumed that the meteorite in front of him would block the shot. Coupled with the fact that his opponent had already been handicapped, he had assumed his victory was imminent. Alas, nothing was certain on the battlefield.

Even the tiniest mistake could be the difference between victory and defeat.

He had actually lost!

Furthermore, he had made such a silly mistake!

“Can we find out this person’s identity?” Lear asked seriously.

“Young Master, this person most likely has some family background. We had tried to follow him but had come up with nothing. It would be dangerous to continue so we could only stop.” De Lupu said quietly, lowering his head.

Lear nodded his head. With such a strength, he definitely isn’t anyone normal. He should have the support of a large alliance behind him.

But who is he?

Knowing that Earth is his territory, what was this person trying to do?

Was this person deliberately trying to lure him into something?

Was it the guy on Mars or the guy on the Moon?

Recalling Masasi, perhaps it was more likely that it was the guy on Moon.

However, just who was it that he fought?

Lear sank deep into his thoughts.

“You may leave. Increase the difficulty of tomorrow’s training by 3 times!”

Lear waved his hand. Failure came with a price!

De Lupu left and Lear turned off his screen. He opened the gravity room to his side and set the training level to 8 times gravity. After which he went straight in and all that could be heard from the room was beastial roars and an unceasing bellowing noise.

At this moment, Wang Zheng had already run back to school and was eating supper at a stall nearby. Beside him were five empty bowls. In total everything was just 20 dollars. Life was indeed beautiful.

The number of people in the VIP viewing area continued to grow in CT and finally peaked at over 1.8 million viewers, setting a new record in Asia.

The real Magical Bird had also come out. He was a veteran at the diamond rank and many people were familiar with him. If that guy

really had such ability, he would have become a God long ago.

No matter what, this could not be faked. Magical Bird publicly admitted that it wasn't him but a mysterious friend. However, his friend was very strict with keeping his identity a secret and merely wanted to duel Skeleton.

His friend was able to display the Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix and was able to operate the Wargod No.1 like a God.

However, no one could imagine that a move that could dominate the Earth Zone would actually lose. Unfortunately, nothing could be done. In front of Curved Shot, even a God of War would have to give way.

The crucial thing was that Skeleton's Wargod No.1 had used one leg to display the shot. That level was simply horrifying.

Many people were not satisfied with viewing it once and entered VVIP to experience it themselves. In VVIP, the hellish environment could be more clearly sensed from the quaking of the ground to the searing heat. It was different from the usual CT. The environment was more explosive and the terrain was enough to bring the blood of many to a boil.

This was what many had been asking for for a long time. Many experts were unsatisfied with the unchallenging terrain. It didn't need to be as brutal as reality, but it should at least be surprising.

A shot that could shock the Gods, this was Skeleton's God Move!

This was said to be the first curved shot in the Sol Federation!

The mysterious expert had lost and Skeleton reigned undefeated!

Many discussion forums had exploded with this topic. The level of the battle and the level of the moves displayed were simply insane.

The Skeleton Corps was currently celebrating. This was a battle full of surprises and dangers before resulting in a magnificent victory. It seemed like the result would have been different at the slightest mistake. The imposter Magical Bird had held the upper hand the entire time but had eventually lost.

In the girl's dormitory, An Mei and the rest were currently having a party, as they ate and watched at the same time. As young women of the military academy, they loved these kinds of battle and were perfectly capable of understanding the ongoings of it. What was deemed to be a hopeless situation by them, had actually been reversed by Skeleton.

Chapter 8 – The Smell Of Earth

“These two people are definitely experts from the army, otherwise they would not be able to display those kind of skills!”

“Who would have that much free time on their hands? Regardless of who they are, at least we are able to broaden our knowledge by watching them fight.”

The small group of girls were chit-chatting and very soon the topic shifted to the gender of Skeleton.

An Mei felt that Skeleton might be a girl because Skeleton was too calm. Usually, female soldiers were more subtle and meticulous.

Wang Zheng initially was having a fine rest, but, suddenly, he sneezed a few times as if he had been brushed by a cold wind.

In the dormitory, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun were creeping about like night cats. Their Skeleton Corps had just begun to play together. If not for the fact that both of them were bad at fighting, they would have gone with the rest to the battlefield.

Initially, they had led their teams into battle, but had ended up in miserable defeat. The key reason was that, during battle, their knowledge seemed to fly from their heads. It was as if they were theorists through and through.

Wang Zheng was sneezing in bed in the ackground as the two looked at each other. When it came to Wang Zheng's lost love, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu had nothing to say. Experiencing something like that at this age was beneficial, especially since the two of them had been loners from the start

Zhang Shan had yet to return. That fellow had been practicing like a maniac since his battle factor in his genes had become fully awakened.Using Ailun's words, he had gone down the path of bodybuilding and it was a path of no reurn.

The meeting between the Three Great Military Academy had ended not long ago and the news about Masasi quitting the school had attracted quite a lot of attention.

The foreign talents that the Ares College had been proud of were leaving one by one. Gu Tei had tried his hardest to retain them but Masasi was determined. The lifestyle there did not suit him well.

Masasi had arrived grandly but had left silently; arriving with nothing and leaving with nothing. As Masasi's performance had been rather unimpressive, his departure caused only a small commotion among the students. Furthermore, he had always maintained a low profile.

Carrying only a simple backpack, Masasi headed for the Moon-bound space lift. From the windows of the space station, Earth could be seen clearly. His time there had left him with some memories.

His Skylink rang and Masasi opened it. A beautiful young lady with short hair appeared, dressed in a graceful silver uniform, unique to Moon.

“What, are you missing Earth already?” Milu teased.

Masasi smiled lightly, “Earth is indeed beautiful.”

“You are just saying what everyone has said. After going to Earth, it seems like you have become more sentimental. How do you feel about Earth? How high is their current level?”

“Roughly speaking I would give them a C grade. Their average levels are, indeed, low but there are several people who are passable. Lear is quite powerful.”

“Hehe, those who Boss takes note off are naturally strong. Laying down a foundation is never a poor choice. You should come back quickly. Everyone has already gathered and, overall, we are still the strongest.”

Milu smiled sweetly.

Wang Zheng suddenly flashed across Masasi’s mind. In some ways, Wang Zheng was childish, but in others, simply shocking.

“Why? Did you make some accidental discoveries?”

“I may have discovered that person,” Masasi said softly.

Milu was stunned. “Are you sure?”

“Not really, from my investigation, his gene score is only 28. His body is pretty strong but he does not possess Ability X.”

Masasi shrugged.

“My intuition might be wrong. However, if there’s one thing that we are sure of, it’s those that do not possess Ability X have a limit. So it’s probably not him.”

Both of them chatted for a while. It was clear that they were quite knowledgeable about the key forces in the Sol Federation including the most remarkable people in the younger generation of each planet.

However, Wang Zheng was still on Masasi’s mind. His performance at the college exchange was superb, but to be frank, this was also within Masasi’s own capabilities. Masasi was confident in his ability to perform even better than Wang Zheng. However, that was not the main point; During his interaction with Wang Zheng, Masasi was unable to feel his “presence”.

The space shuttle arrived and Masasi looked at Earth one last time. He would surely meet some of those people again.

When they met again, it would be as opponents.

☆ ☆ ☆

Wang Zheng woke up early in the morning, having completely reverted to his previous schedule. He would go to class when it was time for class and practice when it was time to practice. Even though Aina disappeared without a trace, Yan Xiaosu was less worried now that Wang Zheng had, more or less, returned to his old routine.

Now, the key thing on Yan Xiaosu's mind was the arrival of Huiyin. The thought of seeing Huiyin made both An Mei and him utterly ecstatic.

With Ye Zisu joining them, the four of them were eating lunch. Ye Zisu did not know whether to feel happy regarding Aina's departure. Actually, she had seen this coming long ago, but, it was still somewhat painful regardless.

When they were talking in the dormitory, Ye Zisu's behaviour had caused An Mei much annoyance. She should have been happy that her competitor had left and quickly seized the opportunity to capture his heart. Why should she bother with whether he was hurt or not? From what An Mei could see, Ye Zisu was quite interested in Wang Zheng. An Mei had no idea how someone like Weng Zheng was able to capture Ye Zisu's heart. Besides his above average intelligence and his small amount of time in the limelight, he really wasn't anything special.

From what she heard from Yan Xiaosu, even though the two of

them had been school mates, they had walked different paths and had rarely ever interacted with each other.

Love at first sight?

Ye Zisu was not an impulsive girl, but a guy that she had been silently noticing would be someone special in her heart no matter their identity.

Due to her pride and dignity, she was unable express her feelings. Ye Zisu had often wondered if should would have ended up with Wang Zheng if she hadn't feared Yue Jing's mockery.

"Wang Zheng, Huiyin is almost here. Have you thought of where to bring her?" Ye Zisu suddenly said as she ate.

An Mei and Yan Xiaosu immediately turned to stone, "Little Ye, what are you saying? Lin Huiyin?"

Girls naturally like to form cliques. Even four people could split into two groups of two. In the dormitory, Ye Zisu was closer to An Mei and Meng Tian was closer to Du Qingqing. Even their forms of address were more affectionate.

"It is a job arranged by the school. They wanted Wang Zheng and I to be representatives in bringing her around but I do not know what she likes."

Wang Zheng slapped his head, "Damn, how did I forget about

that?

The three of them looked at each other blankly. Yan Xiaosu felt like bursting. If not for fear of spilling Wang Zheng's big secret, he would have jumped up long ago.

"Boss, Lin Huiyin, Lin Huiyin!" Yan Xiaosu looked at Wang Zheng with a face full of exasperation.

Wang Zheng smiled, "An Mei, you must teach this guy a lesson. He actually dare to be so arrogant in front of you."

An Mei pinched Yan Xiaosu's chubby face, "I will give him special approval for this. If this guy has the ability to charm Lin Huiyin, I can be the second wife."

Wang Zheng was shocked and showed a big thumbs up to Yan Xiaosu, "A true man!"

Yan Xiaosu smiled like a chrysanthemum in full bloom.

"A big celebrity would be hard to please. We cannot do what we would normally." Wang Zheng said as he shrugged.

"True, I also think that would not turn out well."

"Sigh, the two of you really do not know how blessed you are. If it were me, I would get her to sign 100 autographs and sell each one

for 10,000. With that I would have 1,000,000!”

Tyrant Su immediately thought of a way to profit from this.

Wherever Yan Xiaosu went, he would bring joy with him. This fellow’s crazy thoughts always brought shock and joy to everyone.

☆ ☆ ☆

At this moment, in the far away Aslan planet, Aina had already returned. The whole planet had been preparing a big celebration for Princess Aina’s coming of age ceremony: her sixteenth birthday.

Without a doubt, this was not only a day of celebration for Aslan, but also a joyous occasion for the bachelors of the the Milky Way Federation.At this banquet, the princess would choose someone to lead the first dance with her.

The Aslan royal family controlled a large amount of wealth and power in the Aslan Empire. Due to this, bachelors from many different families would do their best to get their names on the attendance list for the banquet. If they were able to take the first dance with the princess on such a momentous occasion, they would be able to leave a strong impression on her, regardless of their future chances.

Even though there was still sometime before the banquet, there was already a jovial and celebratory atmosphere in the Aslan

Empire. There was even more festive spirit than on Aslan's Easter Day.

As Kashaven looked at Aina, who was very calm at the moment, she was quite happy. Aina was always someone who thought of the big picture — more so than Huiyin — and Kashaven had faith in her.

Aslan needed a great queen and only Aina could achieve that. Naturally, she would have to sacrifice a lot for that.

"Aina, the royal family had already begun their preparations. If you have any special requests, feel free to speak your mind and everyone will do their best to satisfy them."

Aina smiled lightly, "Even though this is my coming of age ceremony, this is also an occasion for others, so I hope they will be happy as well"

"Silly girl. Even though you are not the only one undergoing the ceremony, yours is the most important. After all, there is only one Aina in the entire Milky Way Federation." Kashaven understood Aina well. Aina's mother had passed away when she gave birth to her. As the king had often been busy managing the empire, Kashaven had been the one who had taken care of Aina most of the time.

Aina maintained her smile. Kashaven understood well that a girl that was experiencing her first love would not be able to get over it so quickly, "Aina, let me ask you a question. You have a property

on your hands right now valued at $100,000. However, in three years you would be able to sell it for $1,000,000. Would you choose to sell it now or three years later?”

“Naturally three years later.”

Kashaven smiled and nodded her head. The royal family would only tolerate her actions to a certain extent. She believed that Aina would understand that the current her would make different decisions compared to the her three years later. What was fine for the average girl was not for her. She was the symbol of Aslan and could not make any mistakes.

Aina’s blinked her eyes. She naturally understood what Kashaven was saying. As the Iron Fist Prime Minister, not only was she decisive, she was also skilled in influencing people.

“Auntie, let’s make the ceremony grander. I hope that more people would be able to share this joy with me!”

“Hehe, rest assured. The President and Commander-in-Chief of the Milky Way Federation will attend, as well as VIPs from other planets. Your coming of age ceremony will be the Aslan’s pride.”

Kashaven’s tone was filled with pride towards the Aslan Empire. That was something that was buried deep in the veins of every Aslan citizen.

The Alsan Empire had been built on pride and confidence, and

it’s citizens were willing to sacrifice themselves for the country. As such no one would dare offend a powerful country like the Alsan empire.

Kashaven believed in Aina. That was because since she had left Earth, her Skylink had never contacted anyone on Earth. Furthermore, Kashaven did not believe that there would be anyone that was exceptional in that backwater place.

Perhaps after seeing gems for a long time, one would occasionally yearn for the smell of soil.

Chapter 9 – Big Brother is not brokenhearted!

On the Moon, Milu was watching the battle between Magical Bird and Skeleton with great interest.

“Adonis, who do you think this Magical Bird is?”

Adonis crossed his legs. There was an imposing triangular tower atop his shiny, bald head. It was said that this was the latest hairstyle on Mars and was called the Protruding Tower.

“Milu, since when were you interested in such things. It’s just a bunch of people stroking each other off.”

Lear Adonis said. “When is Masasi coming back? We are only left with him. There’s nothing much in Earth anyway.”

“Keke, Adonis. You should buy a wig and hope Boss doesn’t kill you.” Milu smiled. “Masasi is already on his way back.”

Milu continued to show great interest in the fight in CT. The Yasopp Close Range X Kill Matrix was simply too perfect. Moves that were executed in a virtual world did not count for too much, but to be able to perform it to such a level, they would have had to have gone through tough training.

Although Magical Bird was at a very high level, he still lost. That

Skeleton guy was quite interesting to have actually executed a Curved Shot, especially in that kind of volatile environment.

His weapon handling had seemed rather stiff, as if he was unused to shooting.

Either way, the scene of that Wargod No. 1 standing on one leg sparked Milu's interest in battling him.

This Skeleton had become very popular recently. Milu had seen the previous battles and how precarious each of the situations had been. Ignoring the other aspects, just Skeleton's calmness in the clutch moments was almost inhuman.

In their circle, the most important aspect of a soldier's capability was their ability to stay calm. No matter the situation they had to maintain their cool to make decisive and timely choices. Only then would they be able to make accurate decisions.

Not only was this important for individuals, but also for teams.

After all, a game could only account for so many possibilities. Milu had tried CT before since she was quite adventurous, but the game posed no challenge to her even at Diamond rank. Of course, considering Milu's efficiency in rising through the ranks, she hadn't actually spent too much time on it. Her initial interest was sparked by the CT Company's abnormal understanding of foreign mecha and had prompted her to try the game. Though when she found out how high the mechanical skill ceiling was and that it was not a place that everyone could reach, herself included, she gave up

on the game.

From her perspective, Skeleton's team battles were just a show of individual skill and required little to no cooperation with his teammates. No matter how powerful a person is, there is a limit to what they can do alone.

Even so, she wanted to duel him 1-on-1 to test her own skills.

☆ ☆ ☆

Currently Wang Zheng was quite focused on classes and had been attending his the key courses for both the physics and mech curriculum. Naturally, Wang Zheng favored the mech courses and Xiao Fei's physics lessons. The other physics courses were too easy for him. In the words of Xiao Fei, Wang Zheng's current level was on that of a formal researcher. In various aspects his understanding was nearly on par with her's so she cared little for Wang Zheng skipping the other classes.

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu also displayed their extraordinary capabilities. Perhaps due to the positive influence of Wang Zheng, their understanding was a step above the rest.

Xiao Fei intended to nurture those two.

Once the lesson was over, Xiao Fei called Wang Zheng into her office. It seemed that she had been in a good mood recently, her face blissful.

“Wang Zheng, I have applied for a patent for the Spatial Displacement theory. Several large companies are planning to invest in this. As one of the contributors, you would have a share in it.”

The gorgeous teacher, Xiao Fei, had not only a high IQ but a high EQ. The researcher profession could easily lead one to dead ends and the support that the school would provide was limited. A massive amount of funding could be required especially when nearing the completion of the research. Rather than begging for money from her family, Xiao Fei woud rather produce her own funding.

She idolized Alan Tuck, but he had been mistaken to have believed so deeply in bureaucrats. Once his funding had been cut, all of his effort had gone down the drain.

Xiao Fei had a great masterplan but had little intention of revealing it to Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng also believed this was the correct approach in order to prove Spatial Displacement Theory. Causing a paradigm shift in the scientific community would not be an easy thing to do and so the research would require insane amounts of funding.

If it failed, their efforts would have been for naught.

“Teacher, there are actually people that want to invest in such a risky venture?.”

“Currently there are a couple interested companies. OMG is being the most sincere and promising the most freedom. The other companies have more stringent requirements but there main objective is not the profit. If they can support me in my research, they are worth considering.” Xiao Fei said.

Wang Zheng considered briefly. He and Xiao Fei both believed in the theory.“Teacher, I also want to invest.”

Xiao Fei was stunned and looked at Wang Zheng, dumbfounded. “Are you sure? The initial investment would be in the billions and later on, even more..”

Wang Zheng laughed, “I can say without a doubt, that both my friend, Yan Xiaosu, and I are interested in investing.”

“If you are interested, that would be great. I will talk to the other investors since the minimum threshhold will not be decided by me.”

“Thank you.”

“No need to thank me, I am only investing for the long term. By the way, Lin Huiyin has already arrived. You and Zisu should prepare because they could call for you anytime now.”

At this moment, Xiao Fei’s opinion of his rose a bit.

That change in attitude made Wang Zheng go a little bit numb. Women were especially good at manipulating the mood.

Leaving the office, Wang Zheng was wondering what to do with his earnings. He didn't have a small amount at the moment, but he was still a long way from a hundred million. He should probably talk to Yan Xiaosu about it.

Upon hearing Wang Zheng's idea, Yan Xiaosu did not react in a shocked or exasperated manner. Instead, he was silent for quite a while.

"One hundred million is not really a large sum. The problem is that the investment required will become massive later on. It won't be a problem if it takes a long time. The problem will be: how confident are you in this investment?"

This theory was currently the talk of the town and had made Ares College very popular. Progressing from theory to something with real-life applications, however, would require a lot of time. It was common knowledge that investing in scientific research was a bottomless pit that only very rich companies could support.

Hearing Yan Xiaosu's queries, Wang Zheng smiled, "What's your thoughts on the matter?"

"Boss, we also need to consider how big a slice of the pie we have. All these are very important. If it's too small, it would be pointless since my father is the one we need to convince."

“Say, if I were to have the core formula of the theory, what would it be worth?” Wang Zheng suddenly asked.

Stunned, Yan Xiaosu’s eyes lit up. “If this theory is widely used in the future, you would have at least 50% of the share.”

Wang Zheng waved his hand, “The core formula will not have that much impact. The entire theory requires a great deal more of calculation and that would need to be done by Xiao Fei.”

Knowledge was power and power was wealth. Wang Zheng did not expect that the random nonsense that Old Merchant had spewed out to actually be of value.

Old Merchant, I will treat this as remuneration for my money that you ran off with.

Yan Xiaosu was overjoyed, “Boss, let me properly discuss this with my father!”

Looking at Yan Xiaosu’s eyes, Wang Zheng knew that this fellow would be thinking of relying on his father again.

Old Yan was an easy-going uncle that had always doted on Yan Xiaosu. However, Wang Zheng had not expected sanitary pads to be so profitable.

The truth was, a family like Yan Xiaosu’s would rarely have an opportunity to participate in such an investment because of the

minimum threshold. Only the super-rich would have a chance to invest. Of course, it was a different story for those related to Wang Zheng. As to whether it would succeed or not, that would be up to fate.

Yan Xiaosu was also amazed. Boss really has a heart of steel to be able to recover so fast and forget about Aina.

He felt that his Boss wasn't to bad and had Aina not been an Aslan princess, they would have been perfect together.

Although there were many things in life that could be chosen, one's lot in life could not.

After parting ways with Yan Xiaosu, Wang Zheng went to the MMA club. Meng Tian had already become the new President. Ma Xiao had stepped down since he was graduating soon and he had not perform very well at the college exchange. For Meng Tian, it was natural that she would be the one to succeed Ma Xiao. Since the celebration, Wang Zheng had not interacted much with Meng Tian.

The members of the MMA club were a lot more numerous than and the training was even more taxing. The win at the college exchange had inspired everyone. Zhang Shan was now the Vice President and that fellow had been very hardworking recently. Naturally, there was an ulterior motive to his actions.

Meng Tian was still very cold towards everyone as though there were few things that would pique her interest.

When she saw Wang Zheng coming in, she signaled her partner to practice on his own.

“Wang Zheng, you have been very lazy recently. Are you slacking off just because you did well at the college exchange?”

Student Meng Tian was rather blunt, her large eyes focused on Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng touched his nose. He had been in a coma for 3 days, so naturally, he was unable to come, “There were some things that I needed to deal with. I only finished recently..”

“I know, Wang Shishi has left the school. Even so, your fate belongs to you. Do not waste your talent!”

With that, Meng Tian shook her hands and walked away, leaving Wang Zheng stunned.

The past few days had not been easy on him, why was it that everyone seemed to be making things difficult for him.

Even though he knew that Meng Tian was only consoling him, her approach had been too blunt.

Shrugging his shoulders, Wang Zheng changed clothes and started training.

After doing 10 barbell reps, several people had appeared at his side. Zhang Shan was squatting beside him.

“It’s boring to train alone. Let’s partner up and compete.”

Wang Zheng smiled, “Sure, how do you want to do it.”

“Simple, how about push-ups?”

“Ok.”

The moment they heard the word competition, everyone stopped their training and gathered around to watch the show. These were two of the top figures in the school, especially Wang Zheng. It was rare to see him around since he did not like participating in club activities and, unlike Meng Tian and Zhang Shan, very few people were familiar with him.

“President, please count for the two of us.” Zhang Shan said, taking off his shirt and exposing his explosive muscles.

Ever since Zhang Shan had begun to treat training more seriously, his body had started to become more and more shocking. His strength was also growing explosively.

Zhang Shan was blessed with a great physique and an even greater intelligence. Thus, he chose the best ways to train himself

rather than going in blindly. This allowed him to reap much better results.

The two of them started. This was not a battle of speed but of endurance, so their rhythm was pretty much the same.

Chapter 10: For Aslan

All of the surrounding students were discussing about him, Zhang Shan build is pretty good and he's an outstanding student of the Physics Department while also being from a famous family of scientists, and no matter how you look at him, he seems like an outstanding man who will be pursued by a grand number of girls.

Wang Zheng and Zhang Shan are adjusting their breath, Wang Zheng is also fond of challenges, and in competing in push-up, he occupies more advantage, because Zhang Shan build is quite big and in such exercise his burden will be heavier, but despite this, Zhang Shan is still not willing to compete with him in strength, because it won't be at all interesting if he occupied advantage.

They quickly completed a hundred reps with the same rhythm and their breath is still steady.

Zhang Shan looked at Wang Zheng and thought, this fellow is unexpectedly this strong.

"Let increase the difficulty."

"With one hand?"

"Yes"

After replying, Zhang Shan started using one hand, and Wang Zheng also followed him and used one hand, and in such difficulty,

they completed another hundred reps with the same rhythm.

Even in such era where gene optimization exists, their performance can still be considered quite admirable, especially since they are still students.

Meng Tian quietly observed them, Zhang Shan is doing his utmost to control his breathing, and it's obvious that he's forcing himself, but the breath of Wang Zheng is still calm and steady and it's still unknown where his limit lay.

In a flash, they completed another 200 reps and in the process, they both switched to another hand. the surrounding peoples already started applauding for their excellent performance.

After completing 300 push-up with one-hand, Zhang Shan breath already become heavy and his bare upper body is covered in sweat.

After another 100 reps, his breath already become messy, but he clenched his teeth and persisted in, what the hell? this guy doesn't seem at all sturdy, so how can he be this valiant?.

The surrounding peoples are still cheering for them, and after he arrived at 490 reps, Zhang Shan finally couldn't push himself up and fell down, he then turned around and lied facing the ceiling, gasping for breath.

The ground was already soaked in sweat, so Wang Zheng stood up. and extended his hand and wanted to pull Zhang Shan up.

Zhang Shan waved his hand in dismissal and said “You monster, let me first gasp for breath”

After such intense exercise, Wang Zheng complexion is only slightly red, and although he is also covered in sweat, but his overall condition is still steady. Meng Tian isn’t at all surprised by such results because she witnessed how Wang Zheng trained, and how he train by using a single finger to stand upside down.

According to Ye Zisu, in middle school, he was training regardless if the weather was sunny or rainy, and it’s his astonishing willpower and firmness which attracted Ye Zisu toward him.

“Zhang Shan, I said you can’t defeat him, his stamina can be considered excellent even among soldiers.” Meng Tian faintly smiled and said.

The surrounding corp members were dazed by her smile. many among them come here for her, training while looking and appreciating a beautiful woman is a kind of enjoyment.

“Even if I know this, I still wanted to compete with him, how can a man cower up.” Zhang Shan said.

Wang Zheng pulled Zhang Shan up and said “I welcome your challenges at any times.”

Zhang Shan strength is also quite good, and even after such

intense exercise, he recovered in only 5-6 minutes. Wang Zheng trained for another hour before leaving, under the gaze of all those peoples, Wang Zheng was only doing some basic training, when he trained to a certain extent, he can feel the liveliness of his cell, which emitted a bit of a faint energy, And he didn't know if it's a misconception or not, but it seems as if even the Rubik's Cube appeared in that instant, he didn't carefully look into this matter and simply believed his senses.

Zhang Shan which is beside him, stupified looked at his training, this guy, he's truly a monster, what kind of training is this.

It's no wonder that Meng tian admires him, Zhang Shan is a straightforward person, and he directedly confessed to Meng Tian, and she replied him that as long as he's stronger than Wang Zhen, then she will consider it.

Afterward, Zhang Shan challenged him and lost, but he didn't hold any grudges against him, he's a stubborn person, and as long as he has an objective, he will be more motivated to work harder,

Inside the club president room, Zhang Shan in appreciating this room decor, which is brimming with a girl meticulousness, despite his looks, Zhang Shan is a very attentive person, contrary to Wang Zheng who is carelessly drinking big mouthfuls of water.

"IG will soon start, and because our Ares College won the exchange meeting, we gained the right to send four people to participate in it, and since Masasi left, then the three of us will surely go." Meng Tian said.

IG?

Zhang Shan and Wang Zheng looked at each other then asked: “what is that?”

Meng Tian was stunned, these two are quite excellent in their specialty, but they are completely ignorant about other things, as peoples fond of Mecha, they unexpectedly don’t know IG.

“IG is the Milky Way various military academy competition and it’s held every two years, and Earth is subordinate to Sol, so if we were chosen, we will represent the whole Sol system, but those last ten years very few peoples were chosen from Earth and our Sol system achievements were all average.”

“Isn’t this a big competition for humans elite.” Zhang Shan asked with interest.

“That’s right, if there is an opportunity to represent Sol and participate in it, then one can experience the strongest contestant coming from all over the Milky Way, this year, the competition will be held in Aslan, so the competition will be more intense.” Meng Tian said.

The name “Aslan” deeply stirred Wang Zheng up.

“When it will start?”

“Soonly, but I don’t know the specific time, we must still wait for the official notification, the Sol area selection competition will be held on Earth and the quota is limited, Earth will only occasionally be able to send one person to enter in and the other places were all monopolized by Moon and Mars.” Meng Tian said.

“It seems like Moon and Mars aren’t that good, they come back every year without any good achievement, so they might as well let us go.” Zhang Shan smiled and said, it’s truly more interesting than studying physics, he can’t help but feel excited when he thought about being able to compete with so many experts.

Meng Tian shook her head and said: “They once had a historic achievement and entered in the top 20.”

When he heard her, Zhang Shan almost burst out laughing “Even top 20 can be considered a historic achievement?”

“It’s already quite good, we once set a record of being classified beyond hundred”

“Haha, this time, they have us, so we can definitely enter the top 10!” Zhang Shan laughed and said.

Meng Tian helplessly shrugged her shoulder, how can this fellow be this optimistic?

“Can we participate in the competition as long as we pass Sol selection? ”Wang Zheng asked.

“Of course no, after Sol selection, we must pass various solar systems elimination competition, and at that time, one can face imaginable opponents and competing ways, and it’s rumored that those officers responsible for setting the competition theme are taking pleasure in oppressing the future elites, and they do it also for face, because if they can’t obstruct even us, they will lose all face.

“When it’s time to sign up, notify me.” Wang Zheng said, he will definitely grasp this opportunity.

“You can feel relieved, I won’t forget you.” Meng Tian nodded “Zhang Shan, you must prepare well, the school hasn’t expected our performance to be this good, so I can only apply myself for a Mecha training, Zhuo Mu will continue to be in charge of us and although the Mecha condition isn’t that good, but it’s quite good to be able to at least be familiar with a Mecha.”

“F*ck, this truly too awesome.”

“Don’t be too excited, what we will be using is only an inferior Mecha, and in the competition, what we may be using is a high grade combat Mecha, so I recommend that on one hand, we train actual control ability with it, and on another hand, use CT to be familiar with all kinds of Mecha skills.” Meng Tian said.

Zhang Shan was stunned, “Is this alright?”

“CT simulation mode is quite excellent.”

“Simulation mode? why I didn’t hear there was such a mode?”

“Sol doesn’t have it, but it’s in other places, and as long as we apply for it, we can log in it.”

Fighting against people from other solar systems?

“Doesn’t this mean we can bully other region rookies” Zhang Shan eyes brightened.

“Hehe, you must have enough strength for that, it’s fine as long as you aren’t bullied, in that side, the more wins you accumulate, the more difficult it will be to continue on”

Meng Tian looked at Wang Zheng and found him unexpectedly quite calm.

Currently, Wang Zheng is thinking about how he can reject Lin Huiyin assignment, he didn’t have any interest in squandering time by accompanying such big star.

Thinking about it seems quite easy,, but it’s truly difficult to reject her, and Xiao Fei already refused him, because such opportunities of becoming famous are quite rare, let alone she specially choose him, he’s well-known because of the theory of spatial manipulation, and can be considered as Ares College representative.

Everything about Wang Zheng is good except the fact that he hates to be in the limelight, how can a youngster be this mature?

Life must be spent magnificently and one must test and experience everything.

After they learned what he's worried about, Meng Tian and Zhang Shan looked at him as if they are looking at some sort of strange monster

"Why are you looking at me like that?"

"What the f*ck, do you want to reject such priceless opportunity, My god, I truly can't understand how you think"

Zhang Shan become quite speechless, how can a sane man miss an opportunity of being close with Lin Huiyin.

Contrary to Zhang Shan, Meng Tian actually quite appreciates Wang Zheng handling.

"I'm afraid of trouble, and since there is no way to avoid it, I can only hope that young miss wouldn't be too meddlesome."

Zhang Shan helplessly shrugged his shoulder "You are thinking too much, her actions are only a gesture of goodwill"

"Haha, I was really afraid that she will love me."

Meng Tian can't help but roll her eyes and Wang Zhen loudly laughed at him.

.....

Lin Huiyin is staying over at Shangri-La grand hotel, it's a first-rate hotel that even Aslan has a share of it, and all of its aspects and services are considered quite good.

Her room security and protection is even more exaggerated than Aina's, but it's normal, because a princess can't be too excessive and exaggerated, contrary to Huiyin which is in the entertainment industry.

As a matter of fact, her true status truly needs her to be under strict protection.

The concert is already being prepared, and as for her dressing aspect, she's familiar with such things, and she can decide it out a day before the concert start, she comes this earlier because she has an important matter to settle.

"Anglia, are Ares College matters arranged?" Lin Huiyin was already slightly impatient.

Who is the person who made her cousin who has such high eyesight think constantly about him, and waste her precious adulthood wish for him, only to be caught and dragged back.

“They were already arranged, it’s their honor to accompany your highness, moreover, It seems like Headmaster Gu Te wants to pay a visit to you.” Anglia nodded and said

Lin Huiyin true status isn’t any secret to peoples in high position, but they tacitly didn’t reveal it out.

“Politely refuse him, I’m only a singer, moreover let those two people which you arranged to came see me tomorrow.”

Lin Huiyin gracefully turned around in circles, she’s quite curious about every matter which Aina is interested in.

Chapter 11: The mischievous loli Huiyin

Inside the wide reception room,

It's Wang Zheng first time seeing Ye Zisu so nervous, and he can't bear laughing.

"Why are you laughing so sinisterly, are you scheming something"

Wang Zheng innocently waved his hand and said "I'm not scheming anything, it's just that it's my first time seeing you so nervous."

"It's because the song which I most loves is Huiyin 'sound of nature', and at night, it's easier for me to fall asleep while listening to it."

"They aren't bad, but I feel like only her song 'not afraid' can be considered good, as for the others, they are simply like lullabies, after all, she's only a little girl and her ability is limited."Wang Zheng said with a smile, he also listened to many of Lin Huiyin songs, and her voice is truly attractive, but he didn't like them because there isn't any story behind them.

"You should be careful from her fans, them may castrate you if they heard you."

"It's unlikely they will be this savage?" Wang Zheng pitifully

stared at her.

“They may not be this savage, but I will surely remember what you said about me behind my back.” a crisp sound sounded out from the door, which let Wang petrified in his place.

An adorable little girl appeared beside the door, she’s wearing casual clothes, with golden hair and naturally wavy hair, she seems like a delicate cute doll, her skin is sparkling like gems. and her eyes which are as clear as a limpid spring water will let anyone have a favorable impression of her.

After listening to what Wang Zheng said, Anglia frowned her eyebrows, this kid doesn’t know what good for him, if this what another place, she will surely teach him a lesson, he unexpectedly dared to say unpleasant remarks about Lin Huiyin.

Wang Zheng doesn’t care about her opinion of him, because he looks forward to Lin Huiyin driving him away. But unfortunately, this little girl didn’t mention this matter anymore

“Miss Lin, what are you interested in? we are responsible for leading you sight-seeing.” Ye Zisu said, Huiyin is more lovely and cute than she seems on TV. and she truly wants to hug her

Lin Huiyin sweetly smiled and said “Sister Zisu, you can simply call me Huiyin, I’m interested in everything, and I want to play to what you are playing at usually”

Being addressed as sister by Huiyin almost made Zisu faint, she pulled Huiyin hand and started happily chatting with her.

Wang Zheng silently stared at them, in his impression, Ye Zisu is a very calm and steady person. he hasn't expected she has such side of her. and that she was conquered by simply being called sister.

The female bodyguard is hostilely gazing at him, and Wang Zheng didn't go to greet her, and simply peacefully waited, why will such a girl look for him? after recalling the dormitory beasts 'threat', Wang Zheng forced himself to persevere on.

The two female chatted while laughing, and once for a while glanced at Wang Zheng, he doesn't know what Ye Zisu is saying to her which made Lin Huiyin unceasingly laugh. It's too difficult to resist such cute little girl charm, let alone Lin Huiyin is Ye Zisu idol, so Wang Zheng can guess that Ye Zisu probably sold him out.

"Anglia, I must go out with Sister Zisu, don't follow us."

"Young lady, it's my duty to ensure your safety." while saying this she looked at Wang Zheng with a hostile gaze.

It seems like this woman is small-minded and still bear a grudge against him

"You can feel relieved, I prepared well." while saying this, Huiyin quickly tied her hair and wore big sunglasses which covered half her face and after wearing a hat. it will be improbable that she will

be recognized

Anglia stubbornly shook her head and said “I will follow you from afar.”

Lin Huiyin helplessly complied, and the three people slip out from the back door, because there is a big group of reporters waiting before the front door.

Going out made Lin Huiyin extremely happy, because although she’s extremely renowned, but in Earth, she still can relax, unlike in Aslan where they are people staring at her regardless where she went, and it’s even difficult for her to freely took a breath of fresh air.

“Wang Zheng, are my songs that bad?” Lin Huiyin earnestly asked.

Wang Zheng blanked for a while, this lovely Little girl truly took his remark to heart “They aren’t bad, but I prefer songs that narrate a story, something like ‘Not Afraid’ which you have sung.

“Huiyin, don’t care about him, Wang Zheng is only a fight madman, and he doesn’t understand anything about music, so what are you interested in ?”

“Many things, I want to know what Earth university students are playing at usually, I heard that you also love playing basketball and baseball” Lin Huiyin curiously said.

Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu looked at each other, how can you ask if we also love them, those sport were spread out from Earth.

“Can I go take a look”

“If you want it” Ye Zisu will naturally comply with all her requests, moreover no matter how you look at Huiyinn, she’s only a cute and innocent young girl, and her temperament isn’t like those arrogant successful and important peoples.

Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu are unable to bring her to the college because she’s too conspicuous, and the closest university from Ares College is Shangjing university, and it’s one of the Earth best universities, and naturally, it isn’t a military university.

Shangjing university is five times bigger than Ares College and its overall strength is quite terrifying, Ye Zisu familiarly led them to it because she’s often visiting it, which made Wang Zheng blush with shame because he didn’t even know there was such university in Shangjing.

The three people took the city’s public transportation instead of a taxi under Huiyin request, which shattered Wang Zheng hope of taking a free ride.

He thought that Ye Zisu won’t know how to use it, and didn’t expect that her Skylink also has the transportation sign card.

Wang Zheng dumbstruck looked at all of all of this, and Ye Zisu faintly smiled and said “Why are looking at me like that, don’t tell me it forbidden for me to take public transportation”

Wang Zheng awkwardly said “Cough cough, I thought peoples of your status wouldn’t ride it.”

“You mean Yue Jing and me, you shouldn’t judge people based on their appearance” Ye Zisu meaningfully said.

At this moment, Lin Huiyin suddenly held Ye Zisu hand and asked “Sister Zisu, this building is quite big and majestic, is it producing Mecha?”

There is OMG written in a massive banner in the building top.

Zisu faintly smiled and said “It is, Huiyin, are you also interested in Mecha?”

“I wasn’t interested in the past, but recently I saw a video of a strange Skeleton fighting, and found it quite interesting.” Huiyin said.

Wang Zheng rubbed his nose and thought, how I’m strange? where can you find a person more decent than me?

“Skeleton is very popular on Earth, and many people are watching his fight in live streaming, and it is said that it has almost 2 million VIP watching it” Ye Zisu also likes watching his battles,

and Almost in every match, all of the female students in the Dormitory will gather together in her house to watch it, after all, her family runs a business of producing and repairing Mecha.

Lin Huiyin strangely smiled and looked at Wang Zheng, which made Wang Zheng shiver because her gaze is truly strange.

.....

Beside Shangjing university,

Shangjing university gate was quite aesthetically chosen and it can be described as high-end and imposing, and it went through many rebuilding because it represents the university, and it should shock every outsider who looks at it.

The population of this university is quite great. Moreover, the girl accounts for 70% of this university students. and It is rumored that they are many beautiful women in it, and one of the Ares College Seniors famous words, is to attend Ares College. and pick Shangjing university girls. Ares College students are very fond of this university beauties. they are many grudges and disputes between the two schools, and it's rumored that Shangjing university established a guard group for protecting the university pretty girls, and they are often strolling around Ares college to deter them, and they are protesting against Ares College students immoral behavior of picking girls from other universities, although such protestation didn't yield any effect.

"In the past, I almost entered this university." said Ye Zisu, she

prefers more Shangjing university over Ares College which has a military ambiance, Moreover, for the business aspect prospect, it's more appropriate for her to attend Shangjing university.

"Then why you didn't attend it, did Sister Zisu went to Ares College to pursue her beloved?" Lin Huiyin suddenly said.

Ye Zisu can't help but blush, because Huiyin words laid bare what in her heart, "It isn't at all something like that, I attended it because I love Mecha."

Lin Huiyin is younger than them by several years, and short by half a head, so looking from outside, they seem like two sibling leading their younger sister to visit the university.

In the way, Ye Zisu often turned her head to look all around, Ye Zisu in casual clothes can be considered outstanding even in this Shangjing university where there are many beautiful women, let alone today she prepared and dressed well because she mustn't be disrespectful toward Lin Huiyin.

In Ares College, they are many training fields all over which isn't the case for Shangjing university, and as it's currently the season of love, they are many couples all over. This university populated degree is something Ares college can rival it in, and the campus inside is considered quite good and proper, although it isn't as exaggerated as the university gate.

In the sports field, many males with excess hormones are wiping their sweat under the girls cheering

There are many students facing the pitching machine and waving their club to hit the balls, and the one who caught the most limelight is a handsome man who just scored a home-run.

This man waved his hands toward the girls which caused their cheers to become more louder and resounding, this man gaze suddenly looked toward them and come over.

Wang Zheng forced a smile, why did he meet an acquaintance here?

Zhao Ling Feng, in Daybreak school, he was always in the limelight, and was more well-off than the current Wang Zheng in Ares College, at that time, Yan Xiaosu said to him many times how much he hoped to become like Zhao Ling Feng

With a height of 1m89 and a weight around 80kg, he's a student quite proficient in all subjects, with impressive achievement, if we don't count the military major aspect, then he will undoubtedly take the title of the best student in Shangjing City,

Judging from his current situation, he's still in the limelight even in such university brimming with talented people.

"Zisu, I didn't see you for a long time, you finally recalled you old schoolmate." Zhao Ling Feng said with a smile, and revealed his neat and tidy sparkling teeth which Yan Xiaosu dreamed of getting several of them.

Let’s not talk about Xiaosu past and return to the present.

Ye Zisu hasn’t excepted that such coincidence will occur “Ling Feng, you are as graceful as before, it seems like you bewitched many of Shangjing university girls.”

Zhao Ling Feng faintly smiled and said:“They cannot compare with you at all, this is?”

Zhao Ling Feng looked at Wang Zheng blankly.

“Weren’t you attending the same school?” Lin Huiyin suddenly said.

Zhao Ling Feng then paid attention to Lin Huiyin, this little girl cap is covering her, and he can only see half of her face, but she still seems extremely cute.

“He’s Wang Zheng, although we aren’t in the same class, but we are in the same grade at Ares College.” Ye Zisu said, then looked at Wang Zheng, he was almost like an invisible man in Daybreak school.

Chapter 12: Is he a professional player?

“Wang Zheng, I remembered, you managed to enter Ares College?” Zhao Ling Feng surprised said.

“I was only lucky.” Wang Zheng only said a few words, his capabilities are probably known to all in Daybreak school, this Zhao Ling Feng seems a bit sensible since he didn’t embarrass him by prying further in.

“Ling Feng, who are those people?” A tall girl come over, her hair is tied into a ponytail and she’s wearing a neat gym suit, and her slim figure is quite attractive, they all said Shangjing university is a love Paradise, and it’s truly so, Wang Zheng took several looks at her.

Maybe it’s because she was just exercising that her face is slightly flushed red, which it gives her a special seductive charm

“Qingqing, let me introduce them to you, this is the most beautiful girl in Daybreak school Ye Zisu, and now she’s in Ares College Mecha Department, and this is her schoolmate Wang Zheng, Wang Zheng, you are now in any department?” only after saying half, did Zhao Ling Feng remember that he didn’t know much about Wang Zheng

“Wang Zheng, I’m an average student from the Physics Department.”

“I’m Liu Qing, and I’m currently pursuing Ling Feng” Liu Qing

openly revealed her intention “Who this cute little sister?”

After she said this, Zhao Ling Feng revealed a quite proud look, His attractivity towards girls is undoubtable, and he didn’t lack beautiful women wherever he went to, he didn’t pry further how Wnag Zhen managed to enter Ares college not because he did approve of him but it’s because he’s too lazy to, since there aren’t in the same level and belittling him will only disgrace himself.

“My name is Little Yin and I’m big brother Wang Zhen distant cousin” she retreated to Wang Zheng side and pulled his arm, Wang Zheng doesn’t know what he should do about this, should he shake her off or not?

Her actions surprised Ye Zisu, because as one of her fans, she clearly knows how much Lin Huiyin dislike contacting strangers, especially if they were men.

“Hehe, Zisu, we didn’t see each other for such long time, why don’t we go and eat a meal together and chats well, I’m the president of Daybreak school Alumni Association, and it passed quite a period since we entered university, so we should hold a meeting of all our old schoolmates.”

Zhao Ling Feng looked at Ye Zisu with shining eyes, when one entered university, he’is considered as having almost entered society, Ye Zisu status and appearance, make any outstanding student desire conquering her.

Liu Qing pondered a bit then said. “It seems like I heard about

Wang Zheng somewhere.”

A trace of peculiar glow flashed through Zhao Ling Feng eyes because where he was at, he was always the girls center of attention. and Liu Qing unexpectedly kept staring at Wang Zheng for quite a long while.

“When Wang Zheng was young, he was impulsive and made shocking matters, which were posted in Shangjing newspaper, you probably had seen him in it.” said Zhao Ling Feng.

He’s keeping Liu Qing by his side, because on one hand, she’s quite pretty, and on the other hand, she can increase his charm, what is snatched is definitely good, and it’s the same with peoples, with her beside him, he can further attract girls, and stir them to want to snatch him from her.

Ye Zisu slightly frowned and said “Ling Feng, don’t mention the past matters.”

Zhao Ling Feng uncaringly shrugged his shoulder, he’s truly wondering why Ye Zisu is accompanying such person as Wang Zheng.

Nearby, there is someone who scored a nice hit, and Lin Huiyin immediately clapped and said “Cousin, I want to look at you playing at this sport.”

Wang Zheng slightly sweated, he and Yan Xiaosu never played

such type of sport.

“I can’t, I never played it.”

“Wang Zheng, I’m not criticising you, but since you come out from out Daybreak school, and managed to enter Ares College, you mustn’t disgrace our Daybreak school, come over, I will first demonstrate for you how to play at it.” while saying this, he lifted a club and walked toward the pitching machine “You should use this posture, pay attention to my arm and wrist. you must see through the ball trajectory to successfully hit it.”

Zhao Ling Feng made several elegant movements which are the most standard ones to use, Zhao Ling Feng is one of this university top students in sports, his genetic score is quite high, and his learning ability is excellent, and he’s practicing various sport in his free time. in Yan Xiaosu words, this fellow is a natural scourge for other male students.

One ball was shouted toward him, and Zhao Ling Feng elegantly struck it far away, the angle of striking is quite good and was a good strike which gives rise to waves of cheering. It seems like he frequently comes here.

“Wang Zheng, try it.” Zhao Ling Feng handed over the club to Wang Zheng

Wang Zheng waved his hand in dismissal and said “Today? I come here only to accompany my cousin, and I’m not here to play.”

“Cousin, if you continue on like this, you wouldn’t be able to obtain any girls, I’m supporting and cheering for you

Lin Huiyin enthusiasm surpassed Wang Zheng’s, and she lightly pushed him, and Wang Zheng can only conveniently receive the club.

Zhao Ling Feng stood on the side, with a smile hanging on his face, while waiting for Wang Zhen performance.

Did you really thought baseball is this simple? this pitching machine is adjusted to the highest speed, he isn’t interested in playing in a low difficulty like those peoples in the surrounding, if it isn’t because he played at a high difficulty, why would every ball he struck gives rise to cheering from the surrounding peoples.

After grasping the club, Wang Zheng assumed a posture for hitting the ball, which made the nearby Liu Qing eyes brighten because his posture is quite excellent.

BANG!

The pitching machine shouted a ball at high speed, in such speed, the ball will seem as if it reached him in the twinkle of an eye in ordinary people’s eyes, but it’s truly slow in Wang Zhen eyes.

BANG!!!

With an explosive sound, the ball was sent far away and in an instant disappeared in the horizon.

Wang Zhen heart thumped, what the hell? I misused my strength, it seems like my heart isn't steady enough, and I still want to show off a little.

The surrounding students after several moments of quietness burst into cheering, what the f*ck? it's my first time seeing such fierce hit.

"This brother is a professional player."

"Eighth or nine out of every ten peoples who come to our university are only here to chase after girls."

Zhao Ling Feng awkwardly said "Hehe, this Wang Zheng is truly lucky."

Peoples always say beginners have good luck, and it seems it's indeed true

"Since today your luck is this good, you might as well continue on and hit two other balls, and honor our Daybreak school." Zhao Ling Feng smiling said.

Wang Zheng doesn't like stirring trouble, but this fellow does not know when he should give up, he's really too idle to come over here to be oppressed.

“Fine, in any case, this is a rare opportunity of showing off.”

Wang Zheng started striking a ball after ball, and there were all powerful hit like the first one.

This scene made the whole audience descend into silence.

What the F*ck, is he truly from a professional team?

Ye Zisu and Lin Huiyin continuously applauded for him, regarding Wang Zhen, except those especially complex sport, all other sports are simply a child play to him, because they all depend on reflexes.

Zhao Ling Feng feels shamed by his performance. so he didn’t continue coercing him.

“Sister Zisu, let’s go to another place.” said Lin Huiyin

Today, Lin Huiyin is their guest, so Zisu and Wang Zheng will naturally comply with all her requests.

“Zisu, let’s meet at noon, to discuss about the matter of the meeting of all our old schoolmates.” Zhao Ling Feng is still not willing to let go of this opportunity.

“let’s discuss this another time, I still have matters with Wang

Zheng, so I will first take my leave.” Ye Zisu said.

In the way, Lin Huiyin excitedly said with a low voice in Ye Zisu ear “Sister Zisu, I thought that you and Brother Wang Zheng are well-suited to each other, do you want me to help you to date him?”

Ye Zisu blushed and said. “We are only friends. and it isn’t like what you imagine.”

“Is it?, on my planet, girl bravely pursues their happiness. if you missed this opportunity, you won’t have another chance” Lin Huiyin with a tone of a grown-up said.

Under Lin Huiyin urging, they went to the amusement park, although it is true that girls of her age love such places, but it seems like she intentionally creating an opportunity for Ye Zisu

Anglia who is following them from some distance like their shadows, confusedly looked at them, why her highness is interested in such childish games?

Lin Huiyin said she’s afraid of riding the roller coaster, and insisted that Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu ride it for her to look at.

Lin Huiyin blinked her big eyes and thought, this man can be considered outstanding among common people, but he isn’t suitable for her older cousin Anna, and their relationship will only be a burden for both of them, and she knows well Anna character,

she seems mature but in fact she's extremely rigid and stubborn, however, if Wang Zhen got a girlfriend, she may give up on him

"Ah, those so-called adults always make me worried." Lin Huiyin helplessly shook her head.

Although Ye Zisu frequent a military college, but this type of extreme roller coaster are still terrifying for her, and in such situations, girls are always more feeble.

Wang Zheng was tormented by Huiyin, running back and forth until almost fainting, but seeing Ye Zisu happy smile let him feels that it's still worth it, in the past, Ye Zisu helped him many times, and he didn't do anything for her, so if he can at least make her laugh heartily, he would feel more at ease.

After they got down from it, they discovered that Lin Huiyin disappeared, and a woman with a poker face is at her place.

"Hello, Miss Lin had some urgent matter to deal with and she already went back, to thank you, she ordered a dinner for you at Xiangfeibin, and in addition this is a small gift from Huiyin for taking care of her." while saying this, she took out a gift box, and from its size, it must contain something like a record disk.

Traditional record disk and mechanical watches already become a sort of art, and it's rumored that some nobles dislike using Skylink.

A long magnetic limousine is waiting for them at the gate, and it’s obvious that they plan to carry them to the restaurant.

Xiangfeibin is one of Shangjing City famous five-star restaurant, and it’s rumored that to be able to dine in it, you must order a month ahead, and even high-level VIP must at least order a week ahead. It seems like it’s worth it being tormented by that little girl for an entire day if it’s to be able to dine in such place.

“The young miss already prepared everything for you, so you can at ease enjoy yourselves.”

The VIP private room is situated on the 188 floor of Shangjing trade center, with a beautiful scenery and fine food, it’s an irresistible place for any glutton.

Although Ye Zisu has dined in this place several times, but she’s still grateful toward Lin Huiyin arrangement, and it seems it’s a bit better than what she enjoyed the previous times

Since there is fine food before him, Wang Zheng unreservedly enjoyed it, Lin Huiyin ordered for them many and various kind of sumptuous food,which stirred his appetite, he didn’t refuse any food offered to him, and heartily ate. contrary to Ye Zisu which didn’t eat much and passed most time gazing at him.

In the surroundings, many young men and women with good manner and bearing, dumbfounded looked at Wang Zheng, with a beautiful woman beside him, and in such romantic place and ambiance, he’s only ferociously eating.

“I’m truly envying you grand appetite.” Ye Zisu said with a smile “you should go to the meeting of Daybreak school old students, it will be helpful for you to befriends some of them .”

Wang Zheng waved his hand in dismissal and “Let it be, it’s a meeting of elites, and it has nothing to do with me, and it’s you who Zhao Ling Feng invited, so it will inconvenient if I went over.

Ye Zisu lightly sighed and said “I know that you look down on us.”

Wang Zheng blanked for a while before saying “What are you saying? I’m truly envying them”

Chapter 13: Boiled water from a ten thousand years old Arctic Ice

“If even you isn’t considered an elite, then we are nothing, you are one of the creators of the spatial manipulation Theory, your Mecha operation skill will definitely be one of this year’s IG selection best, and you will become well-known in all of Earth.” Ye Zisu bitterly said, she doesn’t care about Wang Zheng strength, but only about his attitude, because she thought that they can at least be considered friends.

Although Wang Zheng is quite dense, but this time he still realised his mistake, he scratched his head and said “Zisu, I’m sorry, it seems like although I believed that I still maintained my calm, but it seems like I was slightly irritated today, I apologize to you, you are my friend.”

Seeing Wang Zheng becoming so serious, Ye Zisu sweetly smiled, she knows that from this moment, Wang Zheng truly accepted her.

“I really hope that you attend the meeting, and slightly suppress them, I heard that these last months, Zhao Ling Feng is quite tossing about in Shangjing university, his family business has opened a branch in Mars market, which brought to them ample profit, this time he will surely spend much to show off, and although it isn’t refined, but it’s still a way of enjoying his life.”

While listening to her, Wang Zheng sliced a big chunk of cow meat and ate it, , he heard from Yan Xiaosu that this type of cow is raised naturally in Moriarty Outer Space City, and it’s feed the best grain, with a specialist charged to massage them, and a small

chunk of its meat cost a thousand, he truly wonder how much cost this big chunk which he's eating, it's truly delicious.

"It's not that bad, every person has his own lifestyle, if you require it, I will accompany you, After all, we represent Ares College , oh right, we should also invite Yan Xiaosu."

"That's natural, your two are always together. I truly envy you" Ye Zisu sincerely said, she has seen many so-called good friends, but there isn't anyone of them who can compare to Wang Zheng Yan Xiaosu, and in crisis they will all reveal their true faces.

Lin Huiyin is truly yoo kind. We didn't make anything worth rewarding, and she offered us such treat, I hope to meet such good deals more often."

Ye Zisu smiled, she suddenly discovered that such opportunities of going out to have fun with Wang Zheng are truly rare, today she only remembers having fun with Wang Zheng, and although she truly likes Lin Huiyin but she almost completely forgot about her.

Thinking of this, she slightly blushed and cursed herself.

Wang Zheng is gorging up food and drinking. and Ye Zisu is helping him and pouring beveragedrinks for him, and she seems quite enjoying gazing at Wang Zhen eating.

"In here, even normal boiled water is quite delicious." Wang Zheng said while drinking a cup of water, and the waiter who

happened to pass beside him almost fell down when he heard him.

“Sir, please don’t insult us, this is a Ten Thousand Years old Arctic Ice Spring Water which was Boiled at 99 degrees, so it’s natural it will be delicious.”

He’s quite unsatisfied with Wang Zheng table manners, such country bumpkin is bringing down the restaurant quality.

Wang Zheng was stunned, “Ah, it turns out it’s that legendary water, which is rumored that it’s able to grant one eternal life and resurrect deads?”

It seem like it isn’t a normal boiled water, it’s a plain boiled water from the Arctic Pole.

The waiter complexion stiffened, when he just wanted to say something, Ye Zisu said. “Pays attention to what you say, although my friend temperament is good, but you shouldn’t be rude to him, it seems like this restaurant standars has become worse.”

The Waiters blanked for while before recalling this is an A-grade private room, and immediately lowered his head and apologized before hastily slipping away.

“Hehe, Zisu, it seems like even you have a fierce face.”

Ye Zisu rolled her eyes at him and said “Did you just discover that I’m like the wolf-grandmother.”

Wang Zheng laughed and said “I quite want to possess such cute wolf-grandmother.”

Although he said it jokingly, but it didn’t seem so in Ye Zisu ears. and she was extremely pleased and fell grateful for Lin Huiyin who created such opportunity for her.

After opening the gift box, they found inside it a signed record disk, several posters and two tickets for the front seat of Huiyin concert, these two ticekts were obviously prepared for them.

Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu surprisedly looked at each other, this gift is too good and thorough.

“Perhaps, in Huiyin eyes, such things aren’t considered much, or Aslan peoples are always this generous.”Ye Zisu smiled and said.

When she mentioned Aslan, Wang Zheng trembled a bit, but he quickly recovered, and completely eat all what Lin Huiyin ordered for them.

After finishing the dinner, Ye Zisu invited Wang Zheng to take a walk together,, Wang Zhen almost pass all of his time at home and only go out to train, and he isn’t familiar with any place other than the college surrounding, and in this stroll, he found how beautiful is Shanjing City.

They chatted while walking around, and it’s his first time

happily chatting about some interesting matters which happened at Daybreak school.

“How you know all of this, where you stalking me I?” Wang Zheng teasingly said.

Ye Zisu lightly punched him and said “I’m not stalking you, I only thought you were qiute interesting, you don’t know how much you are different from others, you are often sleeping in class and barely got passing score in tests.”

Wang Zheng scratched his head, he was forced by the Old Merchant to do this, and he may be deliberately forcing him, could it be it’s because he’s drowning in debt?

“You know even those thing, you know too much”

“then what you will do about it”

Wang Zheng smiled, and just when he was about to tease her, suddenly six peoples jumped out from a nearby alley.

“Tsk tsk, such fresh beautiful woman, I don’t know what he will do about it, but we, want to have a nice chat about life with you.”

“Boss, you should also include chatting about dreams, I heard university students love chatting about them.”

“fool, I naturally know that, I will carefully and slowly train her on the bed!”

“Big brother, from how she’s walking, she should be still virgin, you are truly lucky.”

“Hehe, if it’s true, all of you will be rewarded.”

Ye Zisu panicked for a moment, because those peoples are completely covered by tattoo, and are smoking while holding a knife or other kind of cold weapons.

If she was faced with military college student, she wouldn’t fear them and can even fight against them.

“it seems like this young girl practiced martial arts, I like her, in a while I will serve you well, come over and get rid of this eyesore kid.”

Five bald holigan approached him, Wang Zheng knew this fight is unavoidable, so he immediately attacked, swiftly and lightly.

Altogether there were five peoples which come after him, and there are now laying down in the ground, Wang Zheng doesn’t have any good impression of such peoples, so he naturally gave them a memory which they won’t easily forgot, they won’t be able to leave bed for at least several months.

The leader with a scar on his face was scared by Wang Zheng and

hastily took out a gun and said “kid, you are truly agile, but you dared to attack my brothers, even if you are more quicker. can you evade a bullet?” after saying this, he prepared to pull the trigger, but Wang Zheng already arrived in his front and seized his hand and broke it.

“Speak, who sent you?.”

Wang Zheng squatted, and lightly patted his head.

“I don’t know anything, kill me if you dare.” The leader unyielding said.

If it isn’t because Ye Zisu is beside him, he has 10,000 methods to let him speak out, and it’s Bonehead who taught him all of them.

“Fighting and killing is dangerous. if I broke your hands and legs, can you still live on, or maybe I can simply hand you over to the police, a group of hoodlums is attacking two university student which are the Nation future pillar, or maybe I should employ both methods?”

Wang Zheng gaze is similar to a wild beast’s, and made the leader tremble, because that gaze is that of someone who killed peoples before.

“Big, Big brother, I made mistake, actually I was only frightening you, there is some people who handed us 50.000 to teach both of you a lesson and after accomplishing it they will hand us another

50.000.”

“Who made you do it”

“I don’t know, Big brother, Big Sister, there was an intermediary between us.”

“Then this means that you are useless” Wang Zheng smilingly extended his hand, which extremly scared the leader, because his hand can easily break off their Bones,

The leader was frightened and continually begged for mercy, he’s a typal bully fearing the strong and bullying the weak.

Wang Zheng can sense the fluctuation of his mind and it seems that what he said is true, who knows who found them an eyesore and sent those thugs after them.

He took the gun and patted the leader head with it and said, “You possess able hands and feets so why you don’t you engage in honest work, if I see you another time, I will not let you off this easily .”

After he said this, he pulled Ye Zisu and left, although Ye Zisu seems gentle, but she’s firm and strong-willed, and exepet her slight panic in the beginening, she was even eager to fight them, but because Wang Zheng is present, she didn’t have such opportunity.

The leader struggled up and picked his gun, and he sucked in a

cold breath of air when he looked at it, because he found it's tip bent

It's truly difficult to continue living in such ways, are all military college students powerful to this extent?

On the way back, Wang Zheng hasn't mentioned this accident again, as if what happened earlier is just an insignificant event. and he accompanied Ye Zisu to the dormitory, but fortunately, Ye Zisu isn't some ordinary girl and her mood was still quite good, although it's a pity that such romantic time between them was ruined by it.

"Zisu, Have nice dreams, good night, and thank you for today."

"good night Wang Zheng."

Ye Zisu lightly nipped her lips, and didn't say anything more, she was already quite happy today.

As OMG young miss, from when she was still a child, she underwent training for resisting kidnapping, and although Wang Zheng attacks are firm and callous, and for common peoples, they would seem a bit too ruthless, but in Ye Zisu eyes, he only seems domineering, he instantly solved them, and it seems as if there isn't anything he can't accomplish.

When Wang Zheng pushed her behind him, Ye Zisu could clearly hear how intense was her own heartbeat and how much happy she

was.

Inside the dormitory, Meng Tian is quietly reading a book, An Mei is putting on make-up, Du Qingqing is painting, those three beautiful women's are carelessly relaxing and are all dressed casually, Meng Tian is slightly better, but An Mei has worn very sexy small underpants, and crossed one of her legs over the others while frowning, Du Qingqing is also wearing only a thin loose pajamas, which revealed her lovely and delicate small waist, and she also seems engrossed in her own world.

"Our beautiful Zisu come back" the three of them let go of what they were holding and threw themselves at Zisu.

"Is Lin Huiyin as beautiful as in TV"

"Did you got her autograph"

"What were you doing together"

They were all extremely curious about today happening, and they quickly divided up the gift, and the girl in the surrounding rooms all come over, and bursts of cheering transmitted out from the dormitory, which made the male students passing beside the dormitory can't help but halt their steps and gaze at it.

At Wang Zheng side,

After he entered in, Zhang Shan, Chen Xiu and Yao Ailun come

over and seized the gifts and divided it among themselves, and didn't leave any share for him.

"cough cough, brothers, leave several for me and Yan Xiaosu."

"you can feel relieved, we keep up his share"

"And mine?"

"you aren't a fan of Huiyin, so you don't need her stuff, so us brother will help you and take care of it."

"Is Huiyin more beautiful than she seems in stage?"

Wang Zheng helplessly shrugged his shoulders and said "She was wearing a cap and big sunglasses, and I didn't manage to see her face, she should be a lovely and cute little loli."

"Animal"

"You are even worse than an animal"

Wang Zheng was dumbfounded, did he say anything inappropriate?

Chapter 14: Only a top student can suppress a top student

“Tomorrow, we will have a special event, so invite her to our college.”

“Yes, the three of us set up a plan for this.” the three of them mysteriously said.

Wang Zheng directly jumped to the bed and said “Stop daydreaming, we already concluded leading her sigh-seeing today, and ended our duty.”

Yao Ailun and the other two guys were extremely disappointed, but soonly were attracted by the gift, Yao Ailun, and Chen Xiu aren’t patient and immediately ran over to Skeleton Corps to show off, and brought many envying gaze.

Wang Zheng helplessly shook his head, and started to plan for the future matters, he must participate in Xiao Fei research, and even if they got sponsors, they mustn’t carelessly squander money, Wang Zhen isn’t stupid, with his current mastery in addition to Xiao Fei corps, and with the cooperation of professionals, he had a quite big assurance of succeding, accumulating enough capital for beginning is the most difficult step, and this is a good opportunity of obtaining it.

Now, he can only wait and see if Yan Xiaosu is capable of persuading his father.

He thought that he already completed serving Huiyin, and didn't expect that after he entered the afternoon class, he received another assignement.

Lin Huiyin made Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu accompany her to watch a movie, did this big star come here only to play around?

Wang Zheng was truly speechless, but he's unable to refuse it because it's a political assignement of the school, let alone he happily eat to his hearth content yesterday. and Ye Zisu was extremely happy, Lin Huiyin is quite cute and amiable and doesn't have those big stars bad temper or Aslan peoples arrogance.

After they heartily eat snacks and drunk Cola, Lin Huiyin choose one of these days popular films, A youth gift, it's shoot by a quite talented director Wu Xiaolong. and it's about understanding oneself and enjoying youth, and it's a love story about pursuing love regardless of everything.

Ye Zisu watched it avidly, and in climax time, she couldn't bear being existed. contrary to Wang Zheng who almost fell asleep.

Lin Huiyin took a look at Wang Zheng out of the corner of her eyes, and helplessly thought how can this person be this stupid?

After the end of the movie, Wang Zheng and Ye Zisu interaction were quite rare, but Lin Huiyin and Ye Zisu intimately chatted, and it seems like Wang Zheng is only interested in playing CT.

Originally Ye Zisu planned to lead Lin Huiyin to visit OMG, because Lin Huiyin expressed her interest in Mecha in her new MV, and it's also to advertise her family business, but Ye Zisu suddenly received a call in Skylink that her father got hospitalized. and she must hurry back, and can only let Wang Zheng to entertain Huiyin.

"Cough cough. Miss Lin, I know that you are very busy, so if you want to go back. I will escort you back." Wang Zheng warmly said.

Lin Huiyin was silent for quite a while and didn't reply.

Did he want to get rid of me this badly?

From her birth, there wasn't anyone who doesn't like her, and there are countless peoples spilling their lives only to be able to pass a moment with her, and although Aina is also a princess, but she assumed many responsibilities and didn't enjoy being spoiled and pampered, contrary to Huiyin who was doted upon by myriad peoples.

Huiyin saw in Wang Zheng eyes something she didn't see before, it's impatience.

"Invite me to a drink" Lin Huiyin said.

Wang Zheng honestly went to a shop beside the cinema and bought a fruit juice, which made Lin Huiyin speechless.

How could Aina love such person?

Is it because he’s skilled in games or because he’s quite skilled in fighting.

My GOD, such person, if you simply took a stroll in Arslan street, you will meet many like him.

“Let’s look for a place to sit in, I have something I want to discuss with you.”

Lin Huiyin comes here because she has a duty to accomplish.

Wang Zheng was stunned, is there even anything they can chat about, but it’s his responsibility to accompany Lin Huiyin, and satisfy all her request.

Wang Zheng cannot bring Lin Huiyin to Ares College, because she’s too conspicuous, if she was seen by that flock of wolves, she might not be able to come back.

Therefore, Wang Zheng brought her to Shangjing university, such elegant and refined place as Shangjing university, wouldn’t lack peaceful coffee shop, he went to one who looks quite decent and sat with her beside the windows.

”Wang Zheng, I want to ask you a question, what do you think of

someone who knows well that something is impossible but still persist in it, is he clever or stupid”

“Stupid!” Wang Zheng firmly said while drinking a cup, what’s up with this little girl, did she want to chat about life with me?

“Indeed, one youth is limited and one must treasure the people in his side, isn’t this true?” Lin Huiyin faintly smiled and said.

This time, Wang Zheng realized that this little Miss is discussing with him another matter.

Although he knows that Lin Huiyin came from Aslan, but he didn’t think too much of it, but now when thought about these two days matters, it seems like she’s making opportunity for him and Ye Zisu.

“Who are you speaking for” Wang Zheng smilingly said.

Lin Huiyin cunningly smiled, “You can freely guess, and it isn’t important who I represent, you are a man, so you should be more decisive, and this would be better for both of you”

Wang Zheng started carefully sizing up Lin Huiyin, it seems like she resembles a bit to Aina, it was said that Huiyin origin is still a mystery, and that her origin are quite impressive, but it’s a matter of entertainment world, and nobody took them seriously.

“It’s definitely not Aina”

“Why are you this confident about that.” Lin Huiyin said while her small mouth drunk a bit the of the kiwi juice, it’s truly has a strange flavor.

Wang Zheng shook his head and said “If it’s Aina, she will clearly and directly inform me, and she won’t waste time in such roundabout ways.”

“You only recently got acquainted with my cousin, so how much can you know about her, but it’s truly not her, and on the contrary, she requested me to help in, but I don’t know if I should help or not.”

Lin Huiyin carefully looked at Wang Zheng and paid attention to his expression change, and it seems as if he isn’t secretly delighted.

Only now did Wang Zheng knows that Lin Huiyin is that cousin which Aina mentioned, if Yan Xiaosu knows that what Aina will introduce to him is Huiyin, will he become insane from excitement

“Little girl, you are only this big, so leave alone adult matters.” Wang Zheng laughed and said, he won’t discuss his matters with a child.

Lin Huiyin almost spurted her juice.

Little girl? little kid?

She, Lin Huiyin, a super genius with S grade genetic, was actually despised!

What era is this, did ability have any relation with age

“My older cousin is actually quite selfish.” Lin Huiyin suddenly spoke out.

Wang Zheng was stunned, he expected that she will say something like there is a great difference between them, or he’s like he’s a toad lusting after a swan and so on, and didn’t expect she will say such thing.

“Did you thought it’s strange that I didn’t despise you“ Lin Huiyin pupils seem like they had the power to see through peoples heart.

Wang Zheng subconsciously nodded.

“The reason is very simple, it’s because this matter won’t have any bad influence in my cousin, but you are different, your life may be ruined, and although I believe that the feeling among you are true, but they occurred in the wrong place and time, which will let its outcome become different, and the more my cousin isn’t willing to give up on you, the more you will be harmed, so why don’t you simply give up on her”

Wang Zheng can’t help admiring her, Aslan people are truly fierce, even such young girl has such ability to persuade peoples,

and such special point of view.

Wang Zheng laughed and said “I and Aina are quite smiliar, we won’t , and furthermore, the of adults matters isn’t something children should worry about, you should better focus in your concert, many of my friends are your fans.”

Lin Huiyin stared at him until her eyes become round.

She, Lin Huiyin, never been so much ignored and disregarded, and her invulnerable argument, was unexpectedly regarded as a child random talk, she was only kindly trying to solve their problem.

They aren’t young, so why they don’t they face reality and why they are this impulsive.

Aina mustn’t be occupied by any matters, in case such thing occurred, she would be forced to replace her and assume and shoulder heavy responsibility, and she isn’t willing to,

“Wang Zheng, you were extremely idle recently, and you aren’t even attending class, you barely managed to enter Ares College, so you should work hard to not be expelled.” said Zhao Ling Feng with a tone like if he’s talking to an old friend, but his words were inappropriate.

Wang Zheng looked at Zhao Ling Feng, and wondered if this fellow took the wrong medicine, is he jealous of him because he

managed to enter Ares College.

“Hehe, I wanted to come to compete with you in the baseball, but suddenly recalled that I don’t have your contact info.” Wang Zheng indiferrently said.

Zhao Ling Feng face darkened, that day when he returned back, many people inquired from him about Wang Zheng, and he almost exploded from rage.

“He’s only a simpleminded guy who work out, only all brawn and no brains peoples will think about such things everydays.”

“Ling Feng, who this is he your friend” Several girls curiously asked.

Zhao Ling Feng proudly smiled and said “In high school, I doesn’t have any qualification to become his friend, his genetic score is only 28, so I can’t enter his world.”

The surrounding girls were stunned for a while, before bursting out laughing.

“Is it true,is there is a person nowadays who in the same level as an animal”

Although Lin Huiyin is young, but her experience is distinct, and normally won’t be angered, but facing such matter, she becomes a bit angered, who is this person, although he was in the same school

as Wang Zheng, but he seems as if he won't be comfortable if he didn't step on other and show off.

"Zhao Ling Feng!"

From the stair, Liu Qing ablaze with anger ran over, and when she saw Zhao Ling Feng surrounded by girls, she clenched her teeth and said "you are truly a scoundrel!"

Zhao Ling Feng faintly smiled and said "Liu Qing, I said we aren't suitable for each other, since you love sports then Wang Zheng will be a good match for you, he will properly take care of you with his trained body ."

Yesterday, when Zhao Ling Feng went back, he was depressed and in a bad mood, therefore he wanted to force himself on Liu Qing, only to be slapped off, what kind of person is he, there are many women who want to sleep with him, so how can he tolerate her, he immediately drove her out.

"If you want to imply that he's simpleminded, then I will inform you, that compared to him, you are inferior to even a pig "

"Liu Qing, let it be, even if Ling Feng doesn't like you, you mustn't deride him, and this Wang Zheng genetic score is so high that it reached 28, we are truly incapable of competing with him."

Liu Qing disdainfully said "Wang Zheng is one of the creators of the spatial manipulation theory, and was specially recruited by

Ares College Physics Department, and he also helped Ares College to win this year exchange meeting.”

After they heard this, those several female students were petrified, and even Zhao Ling Feng was dumbfounded, how is this possible

Chapter 15: So That's What it is.

"It's the professor Xiao Fei and her colleagues merit, and I was only lucky to be with them, little Yin, let's go to another place."

Wang Zheng calmly said, because of the Rubik's Cube training, he already doesn't have any interest in bickering with a group of little kids, and it's only a waste of time.

Liu Qing contemptuously looked at Zhao Ling Feng and said "Did you see it? truly talented peoples don't go all around showing off, Wang Zheng, if you want to meet me, you can call me at any time." While saying this, she wrote her Skylink number in Wang Zheng hand, then leisurely left, and didn't forget to give Zhao Ling Feng another despising look before leaving.

The others female students, and even the surrounding peoples also heard what she said, and their gaze become enthusiastic, is he the famous Wang Zheng?

Wang Zheng didn't know that he's now quite famous.

"it's impossible for you to accomplish such things!" Zhao Ling Feng is definitely unable to believe such fact which subverted his understanding about this world, a fellow who was almost invisible in daybreak school suddenly become an influential figure after he entered university, it's impossible.

Wang Zheng shrugged his shoulder, he doesn't care about what others thought of him, and he doesn't have any interest in arguing

with him, and he's too lazy to explain.

"It seems like it's truly him!"

"it's truly him, he's indeed fierce, and it's due to him that Ares College got the first place in the exchange meeting."

"He's truly handsome, isn't he the so-called master of pen and sword?"

"Don't use such outdated words, but he's indeed handsome, I truly wish to be his girlfriend."

Zhao Ling Feng face becomes completely red, he clenched his teeth and said "Wang Zheng, you aren't suitable for Zisu, so don't vainly attempt to be the toad who eat a swan, and don't bring trouble upon yourself, you won't have good luck every time!" Zhao Ling Feng threateningly said, his handsome face become somewhat ferocious.

Wang Zheng stared at him for a while before saying "Was yesterday's incident set up by you?"

The Zhao Ling Feng arrogantly said"It was only a warning, and the next time won't be that gentle."

From Zhao Ling Feng smug manner. It seems like those several hoodlums haven't truthfully reported what happened.

Wang Zheng helplessly shook his head, we can be considered as old schoolmate, so why he....

When Wang Zheng was about to walk away, he was obstructed by Zhao Ling Feng “I’m talking with you.”

Lin Huiyin couldn’t bear it anymore and said “you must clearly understand that it’s Ye Zisu who is pursuing him, you are so bad!”

“Little girl, It isn’t your matter.” While saying this, he pulled up Lin Huiyin hat.

Although Wang Zheng temperament is good. and isn’t willing to bother with a stranger. Because in his eyes. Zhao Ling Feng is only a spoiled child, but this doesn’t mean he will tolerate his unscrupulous behavior.

He caught Zhao Ling Feng hand and said “You mustn’t attack girls, especially if they are still children, since we were schoolmate, I will let you off this time, but the next time I won’t be this merciful.”

At this time, the entire coffee shop turned silent, and only Zhao Ling Feng struggling sound remained.

“Doesn’t this little girl resembles to Lin Huiyin?”

“Indeed, and she’s truly cute and beautiful!”

“I really want to hug her”

Lin Huiyin hastily wore her hat, and lightly pulled at Wang Zheng cloths and said “cousin. let’s go out.”

Wang Zheng throws Zhao Ling Feng away, and pulled Lin Huiyin and left the shop, he truly didn’t want things to reach this extent, but he hasn’t expected Zhao Ling Feng will do such things.

On the way, Lin Huiyin indignantly said “Are you willing to let him off like this? why didn’t you teach him a lesson!”

Wang Zheng faintly looked at Lin Huiyin and said “you sent people to tail us.”

Lin Huiyin blinked her big eyes and said “I wanted to know your progress, and I did it out of good intention.”

Wang Zheng patted her head and said “You can feel relieved, I won’t make trouble for Aina.”

He said this because he felt that Lin Huiyin was well-meant, otherwise, Wang Zheng wouldn’t talk so much.

“I didn’t know that you were a bit skilled, did you truly create the spatial manipulation and Geo-Positioning Theory?” Lin Huiyin

curiously asked.

She quickly changed the conversation topic.

“I’m only one of the participant in it.” Wang Zheng doesn’t want to talk much about this matter, or maybe he doesn’t want to talk much with Aina cousin.

Such explanation is reasonable, so she stopped prying further in.

Lin Huiyin curled her lips because until now, Wang Zheng is still treating her as a little kid, and didn’t seriously discuss with her.

Lin Huiyin suddenly stopped and said “I want to return to the hotel.”

Wang Zheng nodded and said “I will send you back.”

Lin Huiyin shook her head and said “You don’t need to, there are many peoples who want to accompany me back.”

Wang Zheng indifferently said, “Since it’s the case, I will take my leave.”

He isn’t worried about Lin Huiyin safety, because she isn’t only a big star, but she also has another impressive status, and after the matter of Aina assassination attempt, they would definitely strengthen her protection.

In Aslan, because of the assassination attempt matter, many military operations were set off, and naturally, Wang Zheng doesn't know anything about this.

Wang Zheng has his pride, and he believes that there mustn't be anyone meddling in the matter between him and Aina, regardless of where it reached.

Suddenly his Skylink sounded, it's a special email from CT.

Solon found a new opponent for Wang Zheng, and it's a very powerful one, it's a Diamond Rank female assassin from Moon, she set up a legendary consecutive kill, and was extremely popular for a month in Moon CT, but afterward, she mystically vanished. who will expect that she will suddenly appear again to fight against him.

The funding from CT are already quite high, and along with the increase of his popularity, his income will increase, before he only needed enough for surviving, but now Wang Zheng want to participate in the project of space technology development, and naturally the more money he has the better, and he mustn't always count on Yan Xiaosu.

He immediately replied Solon, and decided the match date, it's better to directly fight her, so he set it at this evening 8 pm.

Solon properly handled this matter, and he immediately sent him various material about her as well as the best video of her matches.

In the road back to the college, Wang Zheng watched those video, and they quite picked his interest.

This Female Knight player, uses one of the Moon most famous Mecha especially made for females, it's the Assassin Type Mecha Bright Moon 8th Generation.

This Mecha posses speed and agility, and it especially suits meticulous females, and along with their gene promotion, the female soldier rank in the army will also raise, and the Mecha ability will also be getting bigger and bigger. some special battlefields suit females more than males, and each country has its own big construction.

The Bright Moon Series was already extremely powerful after being developed to the eight generation, and it's weakness and superiorities are quite obvious, and it's extremely suitable for an assassin, although controlling this Mecha is quite difficult and it's a Mecha for elites.

What most impressed Wang Zheng is her piloting ability, along with the increase of her wins record, she faced more and more experts, and her battle with the fake Magical Bird was quite intense, they were on the same level, but their styles of fighting was completely different.

Suddenly, Wang Zheng fell that CT can help him understand more opponents, and accumulate more experience, naturally, Wang Zheng won't lose himself in gaming, he will only use it to

train himself at being able to face all kinds of opponents.

Such experience isn't something Bonehead can teach to him. in Rand Empire, each soldier experienced a hundred battles, before creating a fighting style suitable for them, and one of the reasons of the empire strength is that they constantly fight in its planes. but on Earth, there aren't many fights, and even if there are, they won't send a student like Wang Zheng.

.....

On another side, Anglia is quietly standing beside Lin Huiyin and gazing at her,.

That hateful guy said he will leave then truly decisively left.

She is Lin Huiyin, moreover, she is also Aina beloved cousin, there are still not married, yet he dares to offend her.

Anglia is forcing herself to not laugh, it's her first time seeing Huiyin defeated, with Huiyin sweetness and ability to look through other, regardless if she's in Aslan, or another place, all go smoothly for her, and this can be looked from the fact the the imperial family turned a blind eye in her joining the entertainment world despite her status as a princess, and to accomplish such thing while she's still a child., she must truly be truly skilled,.

But this Wang Zheng is quite an interesting person, for him to be stubborn to that extent, if he isn't too simple and naif then he's a

lunatic.

“Anglia, in your opinion, what kind of person is Wang Zheng?”

Anglia thought for a moment before saying, “I don’t know him, so it’s hard to say.”

“Snort, he’s only pretending to be mature and reserved, I must have a look how long can he continue pretending”

He’s only older than me by few years, and he’s already talking in a very old manner. as a youngster, in such situation, he should have high-spirited fought with Zhao Ling Feng, contrary to how he stayed calm in such tense situation.

Wang Zheng truly doesn’t have a youngster rashness and hot-bloodedness, he has been tormented by Bonehead for five years in Rubik’s Cube where he underwent an unimaginable training of body and mind, in addition, he was raised and educated by the old merchant from he was small, and all of this made him more steady and calm.

Only when he’s with Aina, will he reveal an appearance adequate with his age.

Lin Huiyin big eyes were turning around while scheming, suddenly, she spoke out a her idea, which stunned the nearby Anglia

“This isn’t quite appropriate, will Headmaster Gu Te comply?”

“Hehe, he will surely comply because I am Lin Huiyin!” the little princess confidently said while she patted her small bosom.

Anglia helplessly shrugged her shoulders, Wang Zheng is truly unlucky for having offended Lin Huiyin, she’s Aslan greatest little demon, who is disguising as a cute angel.

After he got rid of Lin Huiyin, Wang Zheng was more relaxed, from his speculation, Aina should have withstood a lot of pressures for him. so as a man, he mustn’t cower, and what he most needs now is enough time.

Wang Zheng directly went to look for Zhuo Mu. and started preparing for IG competition, it is said it’s a team competition, and this time there will be more peoples allowed in. they will be brought to the Moon to undergo training, and during it they will pick up the most outstanding genius. and because Ares College, performance in the exchange meeting was the most outstanding, their quota will be the highest.

Wang Zheng, Meng Tian and Zhang Shan, as well as another person which Wang Zheng didn’t expect.

Zhang Runan!

Why is the fine arts club president a part of the training team?

While Wang Zheng went out because of his assignment, the others have been training, and Zhuo Mu did his utmost to help them. after seeing that Wang Zheng come back, Zhuo Mu was extremely delighted “You little kid truly become popular and all peoples are trying to snatch you, but no matter how much popular you become, you shouldn’t forget you official duty!”

Chapter 16: The formidable Miss Nan

Zhuo Mu believe that Wang Zheng is a good seedling whichshould grow and develop inside the army, when the collective training just started, the Headmaster ordered them to not randomly choose anyone to make up the numbers, Ma Xiao and the others potential is limited, and there isn't any meaning in sending, so they give the four quotas to those who truly deserve them.

Beside Wang Zheng, Zhang Shan and Meng Tian also had a quite promising potential, and Zhang Runan was invited by Zhuo Mu, because she's one of Ares College strongest peoples.

Wang Zheng was truly surprised, Zhang Shan and Meng Tian cannot help smiling, but didn't say anything, Zhang Runan looked at Wang Zheng surprised appearance and lightly said "is there is anything strange if women participate when men aren't competent enough."

Wang Zheng continuously shook his head like a rattle-drum and said "with Runan President Runan in our group, we will be even more powerful."

While speaking, he dragged Zhang Shan to a side and said, "why she did come?"

Zhang Shan smiled and said "we already experienced her strength, she'a true expert, if she was present during the exchange meeting, then we would have passed it easily."

Zhang Runan is the President of both the Fine Arts Club and females Judo Club, and she's a genius specially recruited by the Commander Department.

While being bold and powerful, she still loves such exquisite art such as oil painting.

In a while, Zhang Shan while laughing spoke out all what he knows about Zhang Runan,

In the past, Ares College choose talented peoples based on their fame, and obviously Zhang Runan doesn't have any interest in fame, but this time it's different, in the exchange meeting they will only represent the college, and if they lost they will only damage the college prestige, but in this time competition they will represent the whole Earth.

Gu Te was determined to make things better.

Zhuo Mu and Luo Mu already become good friends, they are responsible for strengthening the training, one of them is a tenacious and firm soldier, and the other is a Mecha expert. and they heartily discussed it, moreover, their temperament is also similar, and they both prefer training focused on one single thing.

Except Wang Zheng who was too busy, the other peoples were daily training, naturally, they also brought some students with them, because they are too few peoples participating in the training.

In the past, Ares College wouldn't allow such thing, but Gu Te also becomes more open-minded, and ignored such a thing, as long as they can train out talented peoples. all is fine.

Shortly after. Wang Zheng confirmed Zhang Shan words. Runan ability truly surpassed males. her ability in various aspect is quite tyrannical, and she isn't inferior to any man!

She's calm and resolute, and her commanding skill is quite astonishing. and Zhuo Mu praised her as an inborn female commander.

She's and Meng Tian are completely different types of person, Runan should be weighted and examined with males standard.

After the training concluded, Zhang Runan directly left, and didn't stay to chat with anyone. recently, Meng Tian is also somewhat busy, and it seems as if she"s also desirably maintaining distance from Wang Zheng.

Zhang Shan patted Wang Zheng shoulder and said "stop gazing at her, and leave your brothers a way out, you mustn't take all the girls for yourself."

Wang Zheng helplessly shrugged his shoulder, he's disinclined to explain, and he can't explain even if he wanted.

He didn't provoke anyone, and simply focused on his objective,

he and Aina are similar to each other, they are both pursuing unrealistic thing. they were peoples from different worlds who shouldn't run into each other, and their meeting only harmed both of them, maybe this is their destiny.

But it's still uncertain if they can or not surmount the gap between them.

.....

Yan Xiaosu was waiting for Wang Zheng, and when he arrived, they started chatting while eating, "Boss, I want to make that gamble with you!"

"Hehe, have you convince your father?" Wang Zheng said while eating big mouthfuls of noodles.

"Although my father isn't cultured, but he believes in fate, so he looked for a fortune teller to divine for him, and the resultant was that good luck is ahead in it."

"ah?" Wang Zheng doesn't believe this fellow nonsense.

Seeying Wang Zheng wasn't deceived, Yan Xiaosu shook his head and told him the truth "my father inquired from all sides and assessed, and found out that those companies which want to participate in this project need to spill their all, and the rich ones aren't qualified to enter in, and although at present the only compagny which is partcipating in it is OMG, but it's one of the

Earth bigbest company, and she at present only got 21% of shares , and as long as we can invest in, the extent of our share isn't important, and what is important is raising our status in society, my father said that he wants his company to grow into a financial group."

Yan Xiaosu vividly imitated his father expression, and Wang Zheng can't help smiling while looking at him.

In business, particularly one of higher scale, invisible assets are more important than money.

Although the Yan family main businens is only producing daily necessities, but they don't lack money, and are suffering from lacking means of investing, and taking a step further on, the good projects all have a minimum threshold, if they don't have adjacent status, then even if they have more money they can't invest in, and there is another type of situation where you don't have the right of participating in even after investing in, and would only be taken advantage of by big family, so such opprtunity of directedly participating in are quite rare.

Even if it come to compensating for loss, the wealthy and powerful OMG won't care of it. and the entire Yan company will take a step further, and their share price will be largely raised.

Old Yan isn't stupid.

"my father wanted to invite you to a meal, and properly thank you, but I told him, that you are busy, and to leave it for another

occasion.” Yan Xiaosu said with a smile, he understand that Wang Zheng doesn’t like such dinner party.

Wang Zheng smiled and gave him a thumbs up “since it’s the case, I will negotiate with Xiao Fei and strive for more benefit for us.”

“Boss, I’m supporting you, bravely face her, and if it’s necessary, you must sacrifice your body and chastity.”Yan Xiaosu heroicly said.

Wang Zheng immediately hit his head with a plate, this guy brain doesn’t think of any appropriate stuff.

“Boss, what I wanted to say, is that if by chance you need to sacrifice you body, I will make such sacrifice instead of you.” Yan Xiaosu caressed his head and aggrievedly said.

Since Wang Zheng has a match in the evening, they didn’t waste time after eating, and directedly went to the Brothers Net Cafe, Wang Zheng started preparing for battle, and Yan Xiaosu called Solon and consulted him.

Yan Xiaosu knows how powerful is Wang Zheng, and he didn’t see anyone more powerful than him, but he’s walking in a limited road, Yan Xiaosu is a veteran player despite his weak skill in the level of a newbie, Wargod No. 1 has too many limits, and not only in the Energy shield. . The high-end Mecha all aspects are quite terrifying, and they are extremely popular because their strength is known to all.

At present, top-ranking players started appearing, so the following battles will become more and more difficult, and every win will be strenuous, therefore he must negotiate with CT. as a businessman, Yan Xiaosu understands what fate they will have in case they lost.

Wang Zheng is one of the investors in the space manipulation technology project, and Yan Xiaosu isn't sure how much he can negotiate with them, but if Wang Zheng can also provide some funds, they will have more rights of speaking.

Yan Xiaosu wants to discuss with Solon a 'big event' of five battles.

Solon was extremely existed when he received Yan Xiaosu negotiations request, what he's worried about isn't Xiaosu request, but if he didn't request many funds, because he doesn't care about money, and only if it's worth it or not, and if he can promote CT, as well as expands its influence,

What Solon most care about, is if the region he's responsible for can create higher records, which will let him hold his head up inside the company.

Wang Zheng doesn't have time to study such things, but Yan Xiaosu understood it well, because he was born in the Yan family, although the Yan Family company scale can't be compared to CT, but their structure are almost same, and because of his skill in it, Yan Xiaosu would brag that he's EQ is quite high.

They cooperated and divided up work, Yan Xiaosu continued discussing, and Zheng closed the door, and waited for the start of the match, the VIP room is very big, so Wang Zheng didn't stay idle, and trained while standing upside down.

The Magical Bird matter already made it obvious that expert started using various ways to challenge Skeleton.

They thought that Throne rank expert or several Diamond Rank peak expert from Earth will fight him, and didn't expect the first to fight him is a Diamond Rank expert from Moon.

Sword Storm Maiden!

She's a player who once in one short month raised the fame of female swordmen in Moon, and in a very short time, entered the Diamond Rank, with an astonishing win rate, she excels at using the Mecha Bright Moon 8th Generation, and she was unrivalled in her peak, moreover even in team battles, she displayed incomparable leadership Ability, but when peoples were guessing how long she will take to enter the throne Rank, she suddenly disappeared.

No one has expected she will come back to challenge Skeleton.

This is the first time a Moon well-known player challenged one of the Earth players, so when the notice of match come out, it was extremely popular.

Like what Solon said, outsiders match are always valued, especially if they were from a region with a higher level of achievement.

The Moon was always the region with the highest level of achievement in Sol System CT, and they were proud of this, they have many experts, and they always occupied the first place in the competitions wich CT holds in the Sol System, , and if they weren't divided into different groups, they may even always occupy the first three places.

Sword Storm Maiden is the player using the Bright Moon 8th Generation Mecha with the highest achievement.

This match wasn't only given extremely high attention by Earth players, even some Moon players started paying attention to this match against a player from a "primitive land".

Before the war started, these two players best previous matches were watched by a terrifying number of peoples. On Earth, Skeleton supporters were loudly exclaiming how he will surely and easily defeat Moon little girl, but those voices quickly quietened after witnessing her previous matches video.

Fawn and Little Suds already arrived and took their seat. as the host, they must give their guest some superior treatment, so they started commenting and discussing the Sword Storm Maiden skills and special traits.

As a girl, Little Suds is also fond of Bright Moon Series, Earth specialised Mecha for females are quite lacking compared to the Moon exquisite ones, but she’s only able to use the six generations one, operating the eight generations one is quite difficult and complex, and even in CT game, it’s still the same.

Chapter 17: The Sword Storm Maiden

The Sword Storm Maiden can completely display Bright Moon 8th Generation true strength, such Assassin-Type Mecha is quite suitable for performing a pentakill, and it can be a trump card that saves desperate situations.

(note: pentakill is five consecutive kills)

Skeleton also once performed a pentakill, but this isn't the Sword Storm Maiden terrifying place.

The Sword Storm Maiden can use a set of chained Strikes to directedly and instantly kill five of her opponents.

The Bright Moon 8th Generation Mecha was displayed on the screen, it's similar to a silver light chain, harvesting its opponent lives.

It's an extremely fast Mecha, and its opponent can't even see its shadow. and it posses terrifying silent attacks.

As a girl, Little Suds almost wanted to go and worship The Sword Storm Maiden, and it's because of her that girls are able to walk with their heads held high. but she's also for the first time worried about Skeleton.

She isn't worried for him because he's only using a low-end Mecha, because Mecha are like weapon, and one must use the one

most suitable for him, and if one can't control well a high-end mecha, he will only be seeking death if he forcibly used it, but it's another matter if he can control it well.

Therefore, all peoples are worried how can he use Wargod No.1 deal with a person who can perfectly control such super Mecha.

If she were from Earth, he can still justify his loss as being careless or something of the likes, because in general males are always proud and careless facing females. but, she comes from Moon, so she will definitely not rely on luck to win.

The discussion area of major forums are quite lively, and all kinds of discussion were opened, but 70% of them are favoring the Sword Storm Maiden, while only 30% favored Skeleton, and they favored him only because the Sword Storm Maiden left CT for a long time, and it isn't certain that her skill is still in the same level as in the past. but all of them believe that as long as she can use her lighting continuous Strikes, she will be invincible, because until now there isn't anyone who was able to block such skill.

Bright moon series Mecha superiorities lie in its sharp attacks and fast speed, this Mecha ability is quite high, and its only shortcoming is its poor defense, but if it was properly operated, it won't need any defense.

It's a type of Mecha that compensate for its poor defense with its attack. and its defense is considered poor only compared to other high-end Mecha, and it's still much better than Wargod No.1's.

Inside the room, Wang Zheng is leisurely doing warming-up exercises in various postures, at time he felt his body soft like it doesn't have any bones, and at times, he felt it's hard and firm and has a false feeling that his fist posses the power to shatter space.

Bonehead said that such rough technique as Leaning Landslide is only for building a firm foundation, and it only trains his explosive force and stamina.

As for The five elements training, it only training his soul foundation, and he still needs to create moves and techniques to use his power himself.

In another side, Solon and Yan Xiaosu are intensely negotiating, and in end the Solon complied with Yan Xiaosu shares division a condition that they win all of the five matches, and if they lost their share will be cut in half.

Yan Xiaosu knocked at Wang Zheng door then entered it, and gestured an ok signal toward him, the match will soon start.

Wang Zheng wore the sensor device and entered CT.

In the Moon, Milu also wore her sensor device, she doesn't need to go to an Internet cafe, because her spacious and comfortable room of 3000 square meters has all kinds of equipment.

Masasi and Athos are drinking beer while chatting, Masasi went to Earth, and Athos went Mars to inspect it, these two did their

utmost to blend in those planets, and properly understand them.

From their observation, it seems like in the overall standard, Mars is still a powerful enemy of Moon, while Earth is too lacking, but in the history of the human race development. Earth was a very strange place, whenever it was almost forgotten, there will be several extraordinary characters born in it.

In human race long history of interstellar expeditions, they encountered two great disasters, the first one come from internal fights between the various influences within the Sol System, and at that time, a person named Li Feng appeared and alone saved Earth.

The second one is shortly after the human race started traveling beyond the Sol System, The Zagora race invaded the Sol System, and the human race was almost exterminated, at the time a person named Wang Dong appeared in Earth and saved the human race and after that Earth experienced a short magnificent and flourishing time.

However, along with the progress of science and technology, and the unceasing development of Milky Way System, especially after experiencing many other civilizations, the Earth influence gradually withered away.

Traditional Mecha which are manually piloted and genetic biological weapon, were replaced by a new generation of mecha created by fusing these two technologies.

The new generation of mecha not only could unleash the human

body full potential but can also display the terrifying strength of mechanical weapons.

But, will Earth still abruptly rise another time?

In the past, Moon peoples were still considering such issue, but it was only in the past, now, Moon habitant already discovered that the Sol System is only a small group within Milky Way System, and it will be extremely difficult if Earth wants to rise another time like in the past.

Milu already completed the warming-up exercises, there isn't, any Internet cafe in Moon, but there is a CT club, and It is always placed beside the sports clubs, and only from this point one can see the difference between Earth and Moon.

In Moon, they care more about the quality of fights that their numbers, and such situation of fighting several matches in succession are quite rare, and they mostly fight in moderation, and they can't understand why Earthling lose match after match, then start cursing, and after cursing to their heart content, they continue on and fight another match, without taking the effort of analysing why they lost.

CT is considered a sport in Moon, while on Earth it's considered a game. such difference comes from the disparity between their civilization, and they debated and argued several times because of this difference, although currently, they aren't interested anymore in arguing over such matter, because in any case everyone has his own style of life, and what is worth arguing about is whose skill is higher.

The Earth players care more about how much wins you get fighting against outsider than how much ferocious were you against Earth players.

Solon and Yan Xiaosu had just signed a contract, and its price is quite high, but Solon can't refuse it, Yan Xiaosu chooses a price quite close to his upper limit, and if he didn't comply, they won't be fighting for him. and it will be a quite grave hit against him because he already announced the match.

Yan Xiaosu can be considered a quite cunning profiter in negotiating business matters, but once he finished negotiating, his IQ will instantly sharply drop and return to normal, and he's now chatting with a group of peoples inside the Skeleton Corps.

Cai Hong, Wild King and the others are now analyzing the Bright Moon Series characteristic, and they come to the conclusion that it will be extremely troublesome if they faced such Mecha, because such assassin type Mecha attack in 1v1 is extremely terrifying, and such Mecha are often only used to carry out special mission, because in large scale fight, assassin-type Mecha will be almost useless because of its poor defense.

"This Sword Storm Maiden already has a thorough understanding of the of Bright Moon Series."

"Cai Hong, I heard that you were pursuing Little Suds?"

"cough cough, didn't you thought that Little Suds voice is truly

beautiful?”

“What the f*ck, Cai Hong, you are truly shameless, it isn’t only her voice which is beautiful, but her look is also beautiful. don’t tell me that you are using roping her in the corps as a pretense to approach her?” Wild King teasingly said.

They are many high-school students in Skeleton Corps, and Cai Hong who contrary to them already has an official position in the army become their target and was teased the most, In the beginning Cai Hong firmly resisted them, but he discovered the more he resisted and struggled, the more they are interested, so in the end he can only yield.

“Alright, alright! the match will soon start, so stop talking nonsense. Brothers, let’s go and oppress that little girl from Moon!”

“Cough cough, Little Xiu, you’re in the wrong, we must be courteous and polite toward females. Even if they were Moon females, so we should together sing a song to conquers them!” Yao Ailun loudly roared, in CT world, he’s truly completely unrestrained and wild

Yan Xiaosu also joined him and started roaring while hiding his voice under Ailun roaring so that he won’t be recognized, He does such because Wang Zheng is just in the room adjacent to them.

.....

War map: The imperial arena

The Imperial arena is an extremely beautiful and gorgeous map, and it is quite to the liking of Moon peoples who like imperial family plots, for the past years, they quite envied and admired Earth noble places, that they unfortunately don't have.

Empires like Aslan are quite far away from Earth, so they won't be influenced by nor will they covet it, but the Moon is too close to Earth, and was greatly influenced by Earth, which let them inseparable regardless of what happened in them.

This also a type of fate.

"This girl Milu is quite ruthless." Athos said with a smile.

"She only wants to have a look at his skill." Masasi faintly smiled and said, in such complex map, Skelton experience and adaptation ability will be put to test, contrary to a simple map which only depends on the skill of frontal fight.

Milu is the one among them, who most studied various countries' technique, and because of this, she's a good at analyzing her opponent attacking style, and come out with suitable ways to deal with it.

She's an eight-star military strategist.

Once a fight is related to their honor and dignity, the Earth

peoples will always watch it.There is almost 1.5 million VIP observing the fight, and the number is still rapidly rising, and in the audience, many of Earth important character where spotted.

“My god, isn’t that the Prince?”

“isn’t the one beside him Zhuanlun Wang?”

The audience noticed a prominent ID with a sparkling crown in it. It is the ID of Earth strongest Throne. and only the Earth strongest player can inherit the name ‘Zhuanlun Wang’.

It seems like the performance of Skeleton picked the interest of these top experts.

The fight video will be quite magnificent after being edited, but those experts value more observing the fight at the scene.

Besides the strongest Throne players, many Diamond Rank players were present, because there is already many Diamond Rank who suffered defeat under Skeleton.

If he were using a Mecha of equal rank, then there isn’t anything special about defeating a DiaMOnd Rank, but Skeleton only used Wargod No.1 to achieve such results.

“there are many great characters who come, and even the Prince come.” Fawn quite surprised said.

The Prince isn’t a true prince, and it’s only his title because he occupied the spot of the strongest Throne for a long period, and his unique spear skill can truly be considered invisible, and everyone believes that he can only be imitated and not surpassed, and he’s the Earth true representative.

Both the individual matches and team matches contestant are of the strongest players, and there isn’t any side occupying any distinct advantage.

Even if they were pigs, after experiencing so many matches, they will surely learn to be cautious and prudent.

In the commentators’ side, although Fawn isn’t a pig, but he’s more tenacious than a pig, although his style still has a slight change.

“The player Skeleton is against the strongest opponent he ever faced, The Sword Storm Maiden never lost an individual match, and Moon peoples style is also more steady and sharp, so under such situation, he hopes the player Skeleton can bring honor to us and he shouldn’t by any means be an expert facing peoples of his homeland, and only a noob against outsiders.”

When Little Suds heard the first half, she even though that Fawn changed, but it seems like the crux is in the last half.

Chapter 18: A true warrior from soft shelled turtles

(NOTE: soft shelled turtles refer to Wargod No.1)

What the Earth audience most loathe is that type of peoples who are only powerful and domineering in their planet, and once they go out and fight with outsiders, they will be oppressed and bullied like a dog.

“We should wait and see.” Little Suds is unable to comment any more about this matter, from analyzing their skill and data, it’s impossible for Skeleton to win, and almost all people come to the conclusion that as long as the Sword Storm Maiden is still in her peak condition then it’s impossible for him to win.

what peak condition?

Masasi and Athos looked at each other then smiled, for the last 20 years, their eight people were proclaimed as the Moon strongest.

……

The two mecha arrived in the arena wich resemeble an ancient times sowrdmen confrontation arean, in the pursuit of extreme speed, swordmen were using rapier, and Bright Moon 8th Generation achived such extreme speed, such Mecha isn’t suitable for head-on battles, and it uses its seperior speed and agility to strike down its opponent, this Mecha was equiped with the newest

rapier, and it's the produit of the Moon lastest technology, and it's both extremly hard and flexible, and in extreme speed attack, the sword can bear thousand times its weight witout bieng damaged. and it can be used to deliver fatal attack without being detected.

Although it was a long time since Milu last time-fighting at CT, but this didn't mean she didn't fight in such period, although most of them were real battles. while fighting in CT she won't have any burden and pressure, and she will be able to display power above her real level, and use skills that don't exist in reality.

Mecha in CT have unlimited withstanding Ability, and as long as the pilot can support on, then there are infinite possibilities.

Wargod No.1 is indifferent regardless of who he's facing, and you can't look out any imposing manner from it.

The audiences are quite interested in this match, and although the opponent is using a high-end Mecha, but Skeleton already defeated many opponents using high-end Mecha.

"Quickly defeat her!"

"Quickly defeat her!"

The Skeleton audiences started roaring, to them, it's unquestionable that he will win, and what they care about is how he will defeat her.

Some cool-headed peoples from the audience can understand their mood, it's like what Fawn once said, they are self-hypnotizing themselves.

Does someone who never will lose truly exist in this world?

Indeed they exist, there are dead peoples.

As long as it's a human, then he will definitely experience defeat, and it's only a matter of time before he experiences it, and this is a truth that never once changed since ancient times, and because of this he stuck to his job, and he believes he will be the one who will laugh at last, although such process is quite devasting to his mind.

The match started.

.....

The Sword Storm Maiden gracefully pulled her rapier out, and several sword beams appeared in the air, and the extremely fast sword wind formed a gorgeous sign.

this is a swordman greeting toward his opponent.

she struck nine times with her sword in one second.

Instantly a sword and flower sign appeared in the air, and this also demonstrated her current skill and progress, because in the

past she was only able to strike seven times in a second.

This greeting is a polite gesture while also being a demonstration of her skill. and it also let those who were worried if her skill waned relieved.

In the audience, there are a group people that are quite calm and arrogant, they are the audience from the Moon, and many of them are pursuers of The Sword Storm Maiden, but Moon peoples are quite rational, and they rarely will be too obsessed with someone, unless he's too exceedingly good.

In Moon. This match was also broadcasted, although it isn't as popular as it is in Earth, because to them, fighting an Earth player is like fighting a newbie, and even those who are watching it, are only watching it for the Sword Storm Maiden, because it's her first match after reappearing.

Wang Zheng pulled out his titanium alloy saber, and drew an X signal in the air, and exhibited a defensive posture, facing such extremely fast Mecha, attacking isn't different from courting death.

"Um, little Skeleton imposingly declared the start of the fight, his X cross signal is quite imposing, although it's nothing compared with the Sword Storm Maiden's, He truly a firece fighter among all of those soft-shelled turtles!" Fawn sarcastically said.

Little Suds cannot help lightly laughing, Fawn and Skeleton have gone through many together, and everyone is already used to Fawn

mocking of Skelton, and he's always coming up with new ways of mocking him.

Seeing Little Suds confused, Fawn sincerely said , "Since Skelton is only a bumpkin who's too poor to afford a high-end Mecha, I can help him and buy one for him, so that he doesn't have anything to say if he lost while using a Mecha of the same rank."

Fawn remarks always attract peoples hostility, but he didn't care at all about this, because even if he attracted more, will they bite him?

Milu interestingly gazed at her opponent, she thought he will first attack her, but he unexpectedly exhibited a defensive posture, but if she attacked, will he ever have an opportunity to show off his strength?

She launched her Bright Moon 8th Generation, and when she moved it, her agility made every pilot in the audience understood how lacking they were compared to her.

She didn't use any fancy movement, and directedly thrust toward Wargod No. 1, and she almost instantly appeared before him.

Bang!

The titanium alloy saber blocked her attack, but with a rumbling sound, the Wargod No. 1 was forced to move Backward by two

steps.

This scene made the audience silent, what the f*ck? who said this Mecha is lacking in strength.

This strike strength was quite fierce, and the Mecha control depends on the pilot ability

Wang Zheng sweated because of this ferocious strike, an attack intensity is decided by the degree and intensity of impact, and strength is only one of the factor deciding the intensity of impact, and if speed is used well, it can also form a formidable impact, and his opponent is skillfully able to use it.

Wang Zheng recalled Zhang Runan, and it seems like the Sword Storm Maiden is also a female who surpassed many males like her.

Seeing Wargod No. 1 still maintaining a defensive posture, Milu continued with bursts of attack after attack, even simple attack become ferocious if they were used by Bright Moon, although it's obvious she's only thrusting with one hand, but it burst out with rumbling sound similar to that of heavy-type Mecha.

She continuously attacked Wargod No.1 and didn't give him an opportunity of retaliating.

"Although Bright Moon is a light-type Mecha, but even such Mecha can burst out with heavy attacks."

“She can use heavy attacks safely if she uses the energy shield to cancel out the reflective energy.”

“It is indeed true, but only few peoples can achieve such feat.”

Masasi and Athos looked at each other and smiled, “it seems Milu skill went further on since we went out.”

“It is natural, she is one of the Boss sparring partners. so even if she doesn’t want to improve her skill, it will naturally improve.”

“I a little bit looking forward to the rest of match.” Athos narrowed his eyes until they become like a crescent moon.

Bang bang bang bang

The Bright Moon Mecha nimbly moved around in the arena like a shadow, while unceasing thrusting toward him, and every thrust from it feels like a heavy strike, and Wargod No.1 cannot follow her rhythm.

If we said Bright Moon War Machine is a race car, then compared to it, Wargod No. 1 will only be like a tractor. He only has enough strenght to turn his head, and even turning his head felt too strenuous.

Milu is also a bit curious about him, because although he very well defended against her attacks, but her dozens of moves are only for him to familiarise himself with her rhythm, is he still not

familiar enough with it?

BANG!

Facing another attack of Milu, this time Wang Zheng titanium alloy saber directly chopped toward her.

The Bright Moon Mecha was forced backward by several meters, while Wargod No. 1 didn't budge, and calmly gazed at its opponent.

At this moment. Milu finally understood, that her opponent was also giving her a time to be familiar with his rhythm, and they were both trying to give each other advantage.

A person using Wargod No.1 is so confident to this degree.

Milu was truly interested in him, she's a girl, and generally female pilot doesn't need to give their opponent an advantage, and now since her opponent is this "magnanimous", then she will take a look whether he can block a serious attack from her.

.....

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Bright Moon held it rapier and slashed two times in the air.

Masasi and Athos blankly looked at each other, they never witnessed someone so calm facing the Mecha Bright Moon, and he even let Milu attack him to her heart content.

BANG!

Milu forcefully controlled Bright Moon to attack with speed surpassing its limit, and she rushed toward Wargod No.1 like a beam of silver light.

Its speed reached a level letting anyone witnessing it dumbfounded, and different from a moment ago, she didn't frontally attack him, but she gracefully turned around him.

Arc Slide Step!

It was the first thing everyone thought off, but it's unlikely because such steps are too simple for her.

Because what she's using is Bright Moon Mecha.

An after image after another appeared in the air, and instantly they become three afterimages encircling him, when bright moon truly attack, it will let its opponent enable to look out its true track and place.

When Milu thought that she completely confused her opponent, she found out that Wargod No. 1 is still directly facing her.

She only slightly stopped, then continued displacing, Milu is capable of directly attacking him, but true experts are competing with their skill, and it's unacceptable for her to fail to completely shake off an opponent using Wargod No.1 while she's using bright moon.

Bright Moon instantaneously used arc glide step three times, and what appeared in front of the audience is a chain of silver afterimages, which formed an image resembling a blooming flower.

1 or 2 times Arc Slide Step are enough for one to become famous on Earth, but she instantaneously used it six times.

However, it seems like Milu failed in shaking him off, by using such rapid movement, she would be able to shake off most of her opponents, but this Wargod No.1 is always facing her, and she's able to imagine the pilot inside the Mecha faintly smiling while looking at her.

It's only a feeling, but her feeling isn't mistaken.

After making such intense movement, Bright Moon didn't attack but distanced himself from his opponent.

The audience were talking and whispering about this, and many players were shocked by bright moon nimble and quick movement, its speed is truly terrifying.

Why didn’t she attack? is she teasing her opponent?

The Prince and Zhuanlun Wang looked at each other, then slightly nodded.

Even if it were them confronting Bright Moon, they won’t carelessly attack it, and it’s already good for a mecha like Wargod No.1 to be able to continually face her, and as long as he didn’t attack he won’t expose any flaw, and if he did attack then it will be troublesome for him, currently Skeleton can only depend on pressuring his opponent mind, and as an expert she will continually look out for a flaw, and such strategy is his only hope for victory.

There isn’t any experts in the scene who was disappointed by Wargod No.1 performance, because all expert at his levels has their own pride, and it’s natural he won’t go and seek death by attacking in such disadvantage situation.

Wargod No. 1 can remain motionless, but it isn’t the case for Bright Moon, her pride won’t allow her.

Milu won’t be stumped by this, and in such confrontation, she knows that her opponent isn’t that easy to deceive, and since it’s the case, then she will truly come at him.

The Mecha Bright Moon exhibited a posture of attack, this is one of Milu custom, and it’s also many of Moon players custom, and they particularly pay great attention to such polite gestures, and in

such manner, they can express their own pattern and arrogance.

Bright moon used arc glide step and rushed toward him, and different from the previous times, this time it truly attacked him and its rapier thrust toward him.

BANG!BANG!BANG!BANG!BANG!

Chapter 94: The Ultimate Defense

The Brightmoon 8.0 struck hard as it made high level arched movements, each blow landing precisely at the end of the movement of each Arched Slide Step. If the previous face off was not considered stressful, this high frequency attack would definitely elicit a response.

Attacking was always easier than defending.

In between the consecutive stabs, the Brightmoon 8.0 was kept busy. The Arched Side Steps followed one after another, and the blows had to be delivered in between each of the arched steps. Missing even one would mean trouble because it would be breaking up the flow of attacks.

Even though the Brightmoon 8.0 was a lightweight mech, the stabs could easily pierce through the opponent, especially a mech like the Wargod No. 1, which had such thin and brittle defenses.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

The Wargod No. 1 had actually successfully defended a flowing sequence of Arched Side Steps. However, the Brightmoon 8.0 did not stop. Upon completing the sixth step, it made a sudden turn. The engines roared. In an instant, it made another turn in the opposite direction.

Boom… boom… boom boom boom boom…

Who could have thought that there would be another series of Arched Side Step attacks in the counter-direction following a powerful turn?

But the Wargod No. 1 anticipated every single one of them, accurately blocking every blow with its knife.

After another round of Arched Side Steps, in the final blow, the Brightmoon 8.0 mech rapidly fell back.

This blow was not about killing the opponent, but borrowing strength to build distance and separate herself from the opponent.

Milo adjusted her breathing. She did not expect to face such a steady opponent here. The counter-arch's final blow could have been even fiercer, but Milo changed her mind. She felt that she would still not be able to break the opponent's defence.

The Wargod No. 1 was not good at defending itself. The pilot was key to the successful parries.

Masasi and Atos kept silent. They were not paying attention to Milo, but to the movements of the Wargod No. 1. Most people were engrossed in the exquisite arches the Brightmoon 8.0 made, but nobody noticed the Wargod No. 1 moving. This was the best part in the eyes of masters like Masasi and Atos.

The tiny steps taken was like an art. Every step was just right.

The estimations were perfectly accurate. The problem with arcs was that its curvature could be easily determined, meaning Milo's attacks could all be calculated.

What was difficult was moving while calculating. There was no use in being able to keep up with the battle mentally but not physically.

The Wargod No. 1 absolutely made the right choice. Passive defense on the same spot was an airtight and complete defense.

Masasi and Atos felt that they could applaud this player.

But...

Milo adjusted her breathing, her short hair lightly blowing. She had not encountered such an opponent for a long time now. It seemed like she had no choice but to make a move.

While it was being a little unfair, she could not stand losing to someone else.

The Brightmoon 8.0's assassination sword pointed diagonally at the sky and swept down lightly. It was as though she was delivering some kind of salute.

The spectators in the Moon became visibly excited. This was the female assassin's proudest form of victory call.

What it meant was telling the opponent this: You will not be able block this move, even if you see it coming.

This was also the ultimate trick that made Lady Stormsword famous across the Moon - the Song of the Storm.

A song to break the skies.

The Brightmoon 8.0 moved, turning into a ray of silver light. The engines were fully engaged, and the energy shield dissipated. This attack no longer needed one to possess any defense, plus it was important to conserve energy in case the mech's core could not produce enough.

Boom boom boom boom...

The Brightmoon 8.0 appeared in front of the Wargod No. 1 in a ghostlike fashion. This was the only time the tracks were visible. The sword attacked and then disappeared.

Although the 12 consecutive arched skills were powerful, it had a certain rhythm and pace. The Song of the Storm had a rhythm as well, but it was a rhythm without a beat.

Frequency-changing arches. The arches were all joined together, sometimes going north, sometimes south, sometimes forward, and sometimes backwards. It was like teleporting, unable to see where it was exactly. The sword reflected the light in all directions,

blinding and consuming the Wargod No. 1.

The audience could only hear the unending clashes and sparks.

The broadcasting rooms, countless net cafes, and countless CT clubs; whoever walked by stopped in their tracks.

Lady Stormsword's unsolvable Song of the Storm - 64 Heavenly Strikes!

The advantages of the Brightmoon 8.0 mech were perfectly utilized. It attempted to grasp hold of the opponent's weakness and kill it quickly while moving at a high speed.

Yet Masasi and Atos wore concerned looks on their faces. In the time elapsed, there were more than 64 strikes. 81 consecutive attacks???

They looked at each other, perplexed. It's had only been some time, and Milo had made such a great leap in performance?

No, it might be that it was only attainable in an environment like CT.

An anaerobic forced operation of 81 consecutive attacks, even players with Ability X matched with a Brightmoon 8.0 would probably choke to death under the stress of the attacks.

But it was possible in CT.

It seemed that Milo had gotten serious.

People. Even the more rational and well-tempered ones can get provoked.

BOOM!

An earth-shaking explosion.

Sparks flew all over.

It was over!

Masasi and Atos smiled. Doing 81 consecutive attacks in CT was also a good gauge for doing the same in real life as they would remember how it felt. As they grew in capabilities, using it was only a matter of time.

Skeleton did a considerably good deed.

Then the sound system rang. "Skeleton, win!"

The audience from Earth had yet to react, but the normally calm Moon crowd had already stormed out. Some even jumped from their seats like flocks of ducks whose food was taken.

That was absolutely impossible. The consecutive kills had never, ever failed on the Moon. It was impossible for it to be defeated on Earth! It was rigged!

The ultimate move had the potential to take down a group of people all at once. In the battle that brought her to fame, Lady Stormsword had used it to kill five platinum class players in an instant, bringing her up to the diamond class.

Now that her skills improved, she lost the battle instead.

How was that possible?

Compared to the rash audience from the Moon, the usually rowdy Earth viewers were calm. Those who had watched Skeleton battle were long accustomed to it. There was no need to hurry. Even if the analysis took longer, the slow-mo replays would definitely be screened. The truth would be out in no time.

In less than a minute, the glaring reflection from before was presented in front of the audience once again.

It was important to note that the Brightmoon 8.0's functions had been risen to a ghastly level, so it could perform an attack on all sides. Even the Wargod No. 1's functions did not allow for a timely turnaround. The difference in levels was stark.

The thing is, nobody said that an opponent's attack could only be

blocked from the front.

Shortly past the 10-second mark, people were no longer paying attention to the Brightmoon 8.0's boundless, thunderous Song of the Storm, but the Wargod No. 1's boundless defense.

Mech and man were one. Any part of the body could always make the most appropriate defense at any angle. Of the attacks, there were no less than 7 that could not be defended against. But successful defense could be exchanged with minimal costs - some cuts and injuries at non-vital parts were necessary. The Wargod No. 1 had a thin cover, but it was not made of paper. There had to be some sacrifices.

After the 70th defense, there was a complete psychological change. Milo was mentally breaking down bit by bit. She felt that the opponent could not be defeated. The Wargod No. 1 had barely moved. It stood in front of her like a tall, unwavering mountain. It was clear that an upfront stab would take the opponent down, but not a single attack made it.

The 64th stab was her sharpest and best. It was the strike that had the best chance of killing the Wargod No. 1. But the Wargod No. 1 did not put up any defense. Instead, he slashed out with the alloy knife. The blow came crashing towards her, ready to take both of them down at the same time. In that instant, she decided to dodge instead. No fatal injuries were sustained as she escaped, but from then on, the strength and will behind her attacks drastically fell. Although 81 attacks would be way more suave, it could not be done.

It was too late for Milo to regret.

Decisions made in the spur of the moment always turned the tables on the battlefield.

The braver man wins.

This blow was magnified and replayed. Countless Moon people sighed in pity.

They were awed by the Wargod No. 1's defense skills, but it was a sure-win opportunity for Lady Stormsword, her strongest attack. Yet Lady Stormsword turned "greedy."

When the 81st attack was made almost out of pure instinct, the Prince and his company could tell that the air of confidence had evaporated.

The Wargod No. 1 had grabbed the assassinating sword with its left hand, its alloy knife piercing through in one stab.

This was the only time the Wargod No. 1 made an attack in the entire course of the battle.

What an easy, relaxed kill. The Brightmoon 8.0 had helplessly thrown herself at it.

For some reason, the spectator stand turned silent at this scene.

They could feel the hopelessness the Brightmoon 8.0 mech felt.

Lady Stormsword's fighting spirit was completely torn. She lost all confidence in herself.

This level of defense was... terrifying.

Winning without fighting!

Hung on the alloy knife, the Brightmoon 8.0 was like a token of victory in an archaic hunt.

And the Wargod No. 1 was the hunter.

There was no other!

Having been through so many battles, the Skeleton Corps shared the same chemistry. They pointed at the rotunda in unity.

It was the hand sign of the Skeleton Corps. Only the space was the end.

Silent cheers were the loudest!

Solon punched his fist in the air. He won! This was not a show-down, but the first ever time the Earth he represented defeated a

player from the Moon.

He had a bet with the CEO of the Moon district, and he had an all-time win.

Money was secondary. Their status in the CT Solar System Conference were to change from this point on.

Who said a single man could not change the world?

"It's been hard on all of you. We'll double all your wages for the month!"

Solon waved his arm. The team burst into cheers. They cheered "long live the Boss!"

Bubbly Foam looked calmly at Little Deer. "Comrade Old Deer, you don't seem any surprised at the results!"

Old Deer was indeed steady. "I think... that Lady Stormsword is on her period."

Forum. The vast population of players were swift in responding.

"Old Deer, your mom's calling for you to go home for milk!"

Masasi and Atos watched the replay in silence. They couldn't

bear to remain in their seats for a second longer. This person's style was unlike any on the Solar System, but more like....

But it was no time to discuss that. Atos looked at Masasi. Masasi grabbed the door handle, only to realise it could not be opened.

"Will you open the door, Milo?"

Masasi tried to use his calmest voice, but there was still no response.

They sighed and resigned to fate. Failing was not scary. What's scary was the opponent using the textbook operations to take you down when you were serious about the game.

Chapter 95: The Old Merchant Is Back

An absolutely exciting show that was no different from dancing on the edge of disaster!

Lady Stormsword was crushed!

The victorious all-rounded defense!

To know the extent of the Wargod No. 1's defense capabilities, you just had to watch the video. He continued to defend perfectly, even when the Brightmoon 8.0 made its sharpest attack.

There were too many people who were good at attacking. What about those who were good at defending?

The consecutive skills made by Brightmoon 8.0 were considered highly ranked even among the high-end mecha. How, then, was such a perfect defense achieved?

Live viewership among VIP players skyrocketed. It exceeded 2 million, setting yet another new record. However, it was not the usual bout of rampaging attacks, but a defensive one, acting mostly passive during the battle, yet winning upon making the first strike!

Tyrant Su burst into Wang Zheng's room, flailing in excitement. Student Wang was doing sit-ups. It was as if he could train anytime, anywhere.

Yan Xiaosu stared at him for a moment. "Aren't you tired?"

Wang Zheng started. "Tired? What?"

Yan Xiaosu smiled forcibly. Talk was going around that the tough battle must have taken a toll on both players even though it was in a CT environment. Forget about other things, just the accurate defense moves alone used enormous amounts of energy both physically and mentally each time there was a clash. This was definitely something that everyone experienced when they played CT. The more they fought, the more energy-consuming it was. It was not just a physical activity, but a mental one too.

The sort of extreme output and extreme defense made earlier on would have knocked anyone else out. Yet this one behaved as if nothing had ever happened.

"Take it as I didn't say a thing. You wanna go on?" Yan Xiaosu asked.

"Anything."

Yan Xiaosu thought for a bit. "Forget it, there aren't any good opponents at the moment anyway."

Tyrant Su called himself the Dog-headed General. Although Wang Zheng was good at other aspects, he was king when it came to having business acumen.

They settled the bill. The boss hadn't time to give two hoots about them. Every time Skeleton competed, his business would be exceptionally good. The number of consumers who bought drinks were numerous times that of the usual.

The audience savoured the slow-mo playbacks. The wild attacks Lady Stormsword made were once considered the ultimate swordplay by countless players from the Moon. It was theoretically known to be the ultimate set of attacks. No one thought it could have been defended against right upfront.

The whole set of 81 moves and attacks was as smooth as silk. It was not random. There was a strategy to it if you looked at it and analysed closely. Channels that analysed battles were all putting up their own versions of analysis.

The official channel, speculation from forums, masters players... every take on the matter varied.

Chen Xiu and Ailun took charge of Lady Stormsword and Skeleton respectively. It was evident that the layered, progressive attacks were anything but messy.

Chen Xiu broke down and analysed every single move in the consecutive attacks Lady Stormsword made, highlighting the key points in red.

And to be honest, Chen Xiu was shocked when he completed his analysis. The movements in the 81 attacks were just like that of a constellation diagram.

If not for the fact that he studied physics and that he had a knack for remembering everything he'd seen, it was likely that nobody would have ever took notice.

Super Xiu was already pretty well known in the Skeleton Corps. His analysis videos were different from the official ones. He had his own unique way of interpretation. As for Lady Stormsword, everyone thought it was a wild, spontaneous attack. Who would have thought that there were so many theories and reasons behind them? Plus, hardly anyone studied a loser.

But when the constellation diagram was shown, people began to feel differently. Could it be a coincidence?

Do such coincidences exist?

Ailun was in charge of Skeleton's steps. The results made both men drop their jaws.

It was a mirror image of the constellation diagram...

The closely sewn defense looked like an act. But no matter how much training one normally underwent, it was difficult to achieve such a level.

This victory had made an infinite number of Earth players proud. Their excitement would not subside. The Wild King, Rainbow, Qiangsen, and the rest naturally went on to organise their team

battles.

Under such circumstances, it didn't matter if they won or lost. They'd be happy either way. Even Chen Xiu and Ailun could not stop themselves from joining in the battle.

Every time there was an important match, the activity of people in the Ares Pact's social circle would skyrocket.

The social circle was a community of virtual friends. They could make mecha spare parts and trade all sorts of memorabilia.

At this point of technological advancement, it was considerably huge that virtual trading made up 30 percent of the normal market.

The Ares Pact depended on the mecha battle games, but its main profits still came from trading within the social circle and around its perimeters. The game itself mainly garnered users and popularity.

At the same time, the Pact was constantly being renewed. Maintaining the position of a trend-setter had become an indispensable part of the virtual life, and there were those who made a living around the Pact.

In the Earth district, all sorts of Skeleton figurines were in trend. Nobody knew what Skeleton looked like, but caricature figurines designed according to his name were extremely popular.

Just like the throned master players, each one of them had their own sizeable fan club. It was like an industry of its own, no different from TV and movie stars. Take for instance the more renowned, good-looking Prince. He endorsed a number of products, and over 60 percent of the viewers of his live streamed battles were female.

Also one of the hottest, most popular players, Wang Zheng's videos' views were hitting the roof, and they could make it into the top ten. But he did not pose a threat to masters like the Prince; it was just that he attracted a great deal of attention. The Prince and his fellow master players had numerous years of experience. It took them countless classic battles to get them where they were. Little Skeleton was just a newbie no matter how you looked at him. His toughest opponent was no more than a diamond class.

But because of the titles, the best of the best would not make a move on a whim. A small pebble could create big ripples. There was not much glory to winning, but losing the game also meant losing face, so most of them only watched.

Back on campus, An Mei was waiting for Yan Xiaosu. She did not care to be courteous in front of Wang Zheng. "I say, Wang Zheng, you can't just take my Xiaosu away so often! Go get yourself a girlfriend, quickly!"

Wang Zheng laughed. "Alright, alright! I'll make it a point to report to you in the future, Sister-in-Law."

"Meimei, Boss and I were discussing important stuff. Money-making stuff!"

"Tsk. What important things could the two of you be up to? You must've been out partying."

An Mei rolled her eyes at Xiaosu. It was deniable that the present An Mei was wildly attractive. She gave off a youthful and womanly air from head to toe. She was beautiful. People often said that women in happy relationships were the most attractive, and this was absolutely the case. She barely wore any makeup recently, but her great condition made her unstoppable.

Yan Xiaosu did not have a handsome face, but he was a dutiful boyfriend. He had a great personality, was generous, and was considerably popular at school.

Wang Zheng had had a taste of An Mei's shrewdness, so he quickly bade goodbye. "OK, I will leave you to yourselves now."

He did appear lonely, but in reality, Wang Zheng did not feel devastated like most other people would. He thought it to be weird. He had a great fighting spirit. Perhaps it was fair to say that in some aspects, he was just as special as Aina.

Lin Huiyun's Angelic concert was about to arrive, so Beijing was crowded like never before.

The whole area surrounding the concert venue was jampacked.

Barely anyone could pass through anywhere. As the perfect representative of the younger generation's idols, Lin Huiyin was unparalleled when it came to satisfying young people's desire for innocence. Moreover, celebrities from the Aslan Kingdom attracted tons of fans wherever they went.

Students from Ares College, Beijing University, and other top schools were infinitely passionate. Campuses barely had such youthful energy.

Everyone from Dormitory 007 were out, except for Wang Zheng. It was needless to talk about to the girls. It was totally like a festival.

All media live streamed this particular concert. On the streets, screens on the skyscrapers were all streaming live footage from the concert. The whole city was singing in celebration. There were also many who came from other cities in the Solar System. Even though interstellar commuting was convenient, it was still very costly. But that did not stop enthusiastic fans.

The latest single. "Not Afraid." gave everyone a pleasant surprise. Even judges who were usually picky had given nods of approval. They thought that apart from her pretty face, Lin Huiyin had a beautiful voice that had great flexibility and potential. Her musical intelligence. especially, was extremely high.

There was another highlight for this concert. That is, Lin Huiyin had an inspiration on her way to Earth. She had written a new piece, and she was going to perform it for the first time ever in her concert.

This was really encouraging for her Earth fans. Nobody could have imagined that Lin Huiyin valued her Earth show so much. Even though she was popular there, the market was rather small. Such an important event would usually take place in Aslan. It could only be said that Lin Huiyin indeed meant it when she proclaimed her fancy of Earth.

Backstage, the humongous crew was busy operating organizedly. The Earth fans' enthusiasm was way beyond the crew's imagination. Sometimes, trying out new things would reap a bountiful harvest.

Lin Huiyin, together with everyone else, was very excited. Music brought her joy, and it was her favorite thing to do.

While everybody was busy partying, Wang Zheng came to the bookshop.

More accurately, he came to the pancake stall opposite the bookshop.

An odd thing to do, but Wang Zheng came without giving any second thoughts.

At the stall, an old man was gulping his pancakes. The stall owners, an elderly couple, were very hospitable.

"Old Merchant, you're back! You plan on staying long?"

Old Merchant chuckled, shaking his head. "I've got some things to do. I'm old now, so I've got to make good use of every single second."

"Ah. Well, Wang Zheng has done you proud! He's a student at Ares now. Your many years of guidance did not go to waste!"

The couple were honest people. They had insisted on standing by the traditional skills passed down from the older generations, but fewer people knew how to tell the good stuff apart. They made beancurd in the mornings and pancakes during other times. The couple was not wealthy, but were very happy with their lives.

Wang Zheng spotted that familiar silhouette from afar. He couldn't help but feel agitated. His parents had not been there for him since young, so Old Merchant was his only family.

Seeing Wang Zheng appear out of nowhere, Old Merchant laughed. "You lad! Still so childish at your age!"

Wang Zheng ruggedly took a seat, staring at Old Merchant without saying a word.

Old Merchant stroke his beard and struck a pretty impressive pose. "Well? You've guessed who I am? Don't idolise me and don't feel touched!"

Wang Zheng rolled his eyes and put his hand out. "Smelly old

man. Pay up!"

Old Merchant was stumped. His shocked reaction was immediately followed by a tight hug from Wang Zheng.

"Welcome back, old man!"

Chapter 96: Peeping Tom

"Alright! Can't you be more gentle? My old bones can't take your brute force!"

Alan Tucker chuckled, patting Wang Zheng on the shoulder. "You've done well. Better than what I had expected."

Wang Zheng ordered the no. 5, the extra large Pancake with extra toppings. He had always had a big appetite.

During this period, Wang Zheng had actually guessed that there was only one scientist who had such vast knowledge -- Alan Tucker!

He looked up Alan Tucker's information online. Tucker disappeared ten years ago, and that was also about the time he showed up here.

"Old Merchant, just what happened? I have a stomach full of questions. Just what is this dastardly Rubik's Cube?"

Old Merchant smiled. "The Rubik's Cube is the Rubik's Cube. The Rubik's Cube chose you!"

What Old Merchant said made Wang Zheng's jaw drop.

After Old Merchant escaped from the Galileo Stars, he had

planned to return to his hometown, Norton Star. However, he was met with an interstellar storm. There was too much turbulence in the time and space around Galileo, and even space fleets had to be wary, let alone a small ship that flew all over the place. He thought that he wouldn't make it through this time, but that was when the Rubik's Cube, which had the properties of scrap metal after so many years of study, finally activated. It made an incredible long-ranged teleport.

When Earth appeared in front of Old Merchant, he got a huge shock.

With directions from the magic cube, Old Merchant found Wang Zheng. Wang Zheng was still a mischievous young child back then.

That was Old Merchant's destiny: receiving guidance and help when he needed them.

Old Merchant was a stranger to Earth. But very soon, he fell in love with it. As a top scientist, he had an entirely different understanding of the universe. Yet during his time on Earth, he felt a force he had never felt before and saw something which scientists could only see after making it through their bottlenecks.

Many early scientists believed in materialism. But as their studies went further in-depth, a number of them began to study "destiny." Their research was of a different type. The universe was ruled by laws of nature, but did these laws have some form of awareness?

The type of awareness was not mankind's narrow form of

awareness, but awareness on a large scale. That was to say, God, or destiny.

After so many years of research, Alan Tucker had entered some kind of insane, stubborn research. To study the cube, not only did he make a breakthrough in the laws of physics, but also in many other areas. He could well live up to the title of one of the greatest men who ever existed, with the ability to change the world's history. Yet he had no explanation for the cube.

Alan Tucker spent a long time pondering after arriving on Earth. Just what was his destiny?

Was it to become the greatest scientist in all of history?

He could do it if he wanted to. However, that could not be called destiny.

As he pondered, Wang Zheng appeared, and the Rubik's Cube reacted. Looking at this playful boy, Alan Tucker suddenly understood.

Men were the origin of everything.

The cube appeared where something special existed. This child's presence, him coming from the faraway Galileo Stars, none of it could possibly be a mere coincidence.

Wang Zheng's parents were odd people. They were a clan

determined to carry on their ancient traditions. While they were called a clan, their status had been drowned out and they were just an ordinary family. But Wang Zheng's parents were still very proud. They believed that their family carried the blood of the once glorious Wang clan. Wang Zheng was the 81st generation. Of course, that was just what they liked to talk about. Wang was one of the main surnames. There were too many people with the last name Wang.

Wang Zheng knew that his father had always talked about such nonsense to others. But what one says may not mean what the listener hears. The walls opened in Alan Tucker's heart. He saw his path.

Wang Zheng listened as Old Merchant spoke. If not for the existence of the Rubik's Cube, he would have thought that the man in front of him was nothing more than a convincing conman who was great at spouting nonsense.

Was he someone who could change the destiny of the world?

The world was in a pretty good state. What did it have to do with him? Moreover, what age were they living in? The times where individual heroes could make a change had long gone. The vast, interstellar community ruled by the great Milky Way Alliance. It was completely, absolutely different from when there was just Earth, the Moon, and Mars.

Other things aside, the Zerg still existed, and this being was as indestructible as cockroaches. But have you heard of roaches destroying humans?

The Zerg tribe was now merely part of humans' goals to exterminate. The only limits for mankind was the universe.

This was not merely Wang Zheng's views, but everybody else's as well.

Alan Tucker understood Wang Zheng's doubts, but it was impossible to understand the meaning of life without having lived to his age and without going through what he went through.

"Kid, you've got pretty good taste, huh? That girl, Aina, she's not bad at all. Compatible with you."

"Damn, old man. Have you been peeping? Didn't you go on a vacation?"

Wang Zheng asked.

Old Merchant laughed. "I had to do my work, but I had to keep an eye on you too. You do your thing, I do mine. No need to talk about stuff, but if you want to marry the princess of Aslan, you've got to work hard."

Wang Zheng scratched his head. "Old Merchant, do you think I'm being ridiculous? But I really believe that I can do it if I work hard enough."

Old Merchant wagged his finger. "You're wrong. You're the most special form of existence in the world. No matter who you like, nothing is ridiculous."

Words like that would come off as arrogant if someone else said it. But he was Alan Tucker. His existence was once the peak of the world.

"To be honest, only you know what your future brings. The purpose of my existence is to help you, to share my experiences with you. The stuff you've been doing with Xiao Fei is very good."

Wang Zheng giggled. "It was because of this that I guessed your identity and made some money, Old Merchant!"

"Aha! That's enough. You don't have to worry about such things, I will do them for you. You only have to do what you want to."

Old Merchant took out a data drive as he spoke. "This contains the post-work formula. Take them out step by step."

Wang Zheng got worried. "This.. actually, with your current situation, if you published these theories, the world would see you in a new light."

Old Merchant chuckled. "At this age, I don't care about prestige anymore. Moreover, what happened ten years ago made me understand the rules of this game. I haven't just been idling and running a bookshop on the verge of closing down all these years!"

A genius with S class genetics; it was a frightening thing to see once the Old Merchant was enlightened. Moreover, he had plenty of resources in the Milky Way Alliance.

But Old Merchant had his own questions too. When Wang Zheng told him how the cube had changed before and after, Old Merchant was stumped. Student Wang was rather pleased that he had managed to stun the world-renowned super scientist.

What could this be if this was not destiny?

To him, success and failure no longer mattered. It was enough that he could witness the coming of a new age.

"Don't tell anybody about this."

"Don't worry. I'm not dumb. By the way, where will you stay now that the house has been sold?" Wang Zheng asked.

"I still have much work to do. Just in case anything happens, I will reach out to you."

Wang Zheng could do whatever he liked, but Old Merchant had to keep a lookout on him.

An all-rounded genius warrior would be highly sought-after. But if people were to find out he was behind this, it would be a

completely different narrative.

Old Merchant came and left hurriedly. He left after telling Wang Zheng what to look out for. Wang Zheng was kept in a good mood for half the day and finished every single bit of the pancakes. At his age, he desired a family. Having been through a period of loss and disorientation, he was clearer of his goals and had a lot more confidence.

But Old Merchant's habit of teasing others had not gone away. He was already at the door when he suddenly turned around and said, "That girl, Ye Zisu, she's not bad either."

Student Wang had no comment for this old gossip monger.

As Wang Zheng and Old Merchant discussed their plans, Lin Huiyin's concert peaked. Every single one of her songs were familiar to young people. They used to attract more girls, but her one song, "Not Afraid," had attracted countless male fans.

When the soothing voice suddenly stopped, a Wargod No. 1 appeared on the big screens. The whole stadium fell silent. Everyone knew what was going to happen. A retro storytelling sing-song session coupled with dance steps. This was also the first time Lin Huiyin was going to fly.

Sparks flying, an enormous Wargod No. 1 descended from the skies. The whole stadium erupted and went wild. The hatch opened, and Lin Huiyin slid down. Wearing a military uniform, she looked brave.

In the video, the Wargod No. 1's strength was unparalleled.

I'm not afraid, to take a stand

Everybody, come take my hand

As soon as Lin Huiyin opened her mouth, the audience began singing along. It was full of stubbornness and rebellion. It was full of young dreams and young passions. It spoke to the hearts of hundreds of thousands of young people. Everyone waved their hands wildly in the air.

Everybody, come take my hand

Rain or shine, we will finish this together

No matter harsh winter or summer

Yan Xiaosu and Anmei were standing in the audience. Anmei was dressed extremely sexily, emitting youthful energy from head to toe. They jumped up and down, holding hands. Beside them were Ye Zisu, Meng Tian, Du Qingqing, and the wolves of 007. They were acting unlike their usual, elite behaviour, dancing as they liked.

The usually high class elite, Yao Ailun, on the other hand, wore a cheeky, casual outfit. He danced like a snake, full of groove.

Student Ailun was known to be good at everything.

The tickets were not from Tyrant Su. Such things naturally came from the generous, beautiful Ye Zisu. It was a pity that Wang Zheng didn't join them.

"Not Afraid" brought the whole concert to its peak. But this also meant that the show was coming to an end. The fans could not bear to for it end, as no one knew when would be the next time Lin Huiyin would come back to Earth.

When the song ended, everything fell silent. The lights were dimmed. This didn't seem like an ending, but...

Chapter 97: War of the Blind

Only then did everybody recall. It was said that Lin Huiyin had written a new song on her way to Earth.

Preceded by the championing single, "Not Afraid," everybody had high expectations of the new piece.

When word of the new song got out, people were doubtful. Writing a song required good inspiration and pouring in the soul. The song's unique style had gained much attention, but the question was: was it that simple to come up with a new song?

How much skills could a little girl like her possess?

The lights were still dim when the large screens came alive.

It was like a world of darkness.

The world gradually grew bright. A soldier wearing the Earth Alliance uniform appeared. He seemed to be from the special forces. Judging by the medals he wore, he had been through many wars. All of a sudden, he was encapsulated in a dark, underground battlefield. The whole section was surrounded by enemies and there was no choice but to activate the nuclear weapon. And him, the soldier, the leader of the team, executed the final task.

When all his section mates had evacuated, his mech blew up. Although he survived the ordeal, his world became dark. He was

blind.

What did this mean for a soldier? A warrior?

His name was Johnson. He was a soldier.

These videos came from war records. Right about then, the narration began. A low voice said, "To soldiers, only death is the end. The fight never ends."

The screens changed into a CT battle scene.

Wargod No. 1 versus the Dark Lord.

Everyone was surprised. What was this concert about?

But very soon, the audience was astounded. This was the final pride of a blind warrior. He was battling in a different way.

He was as skillful as ever. Nobody could have thought that this lead role was a warrior from Earth. That was their pride!

The singing began, accompanying the bewildering battle.

If I could see, I would tell day apart from night

I would hold your hand in the crowd

If I could see, I would drive you all around

If I could see, my life would not be the same

But what I want...

The darkness I see is not the dark. The light you describe, what is light?

Nobody had thought that Lin Huiyin's new song would be so lyrical.

Yet it was different from the feeling of refreshment in the past. Her sweet voice rang in their ears, but what their eyes saw was war on a battlefield.

How did a blind person achieve this?

But his opponent was no less than him. Riding a Wargod No. 1 to battle in such a complex, underground environment?

The song and the battle. An ultimate pair. The tension in the battlefield was at its highest. Johnson made a move.

It was also then that the song suddenly came to a climax.

You are my eyes, you bring me through the changes of the seasons.

You are my eyes...

Even though it was a new song, in that moment, the audience erupted. Just what was this?

Determination. Perseverance. A clash of the titans. This was the meaning of life!

When the last line of "you are my eyes" faded away, the Wargod No. 1 saluted his opponent on the big screen.

Such failure was, in a way, success.

Lin Huiyin took a deep bow. "Thank you, everybody. Earth is a beautiful planet. Everything here has left me a deep impression. This song is for you, and for all the brave warriors!"

All of her fans went wild. The crowd continued to cheer for a long time after Lin Huiyin left the stage.

If "Not Afraid" expressed deep seated rebellion, this new song had come to a whole new level. Lin Huiyin had begun to look at the very nature of mankind.

There were plenty of media reporters and commentators present.

Just by looking at her fans' reaction, you could tell that Lin Huiyin had successfully conveyed her message.

Without doubt, this was going to become the headline on the cover page.

An unstoppable, changing voice of an angel!

During the curtain call, a row of naked men came running out. They spelled out Lin Huiyin's name in the Aslanic language, topped with a huge heart shape.

Seeing that the camera was facing them, the well-built men struck a pose to flaunt their muscles while wildly screaming Lin Huiyin's name.

The men and women were all cheering. The audience's excitement did not subside. Everything was already perfect when "Not Afraid" was performed, and no one could have thought that a surprise would top it off, like a cherry on the icing.

In just those few moments, the live broadcast viewership came to an all-year high everywhere in the Solar System. Many other places in the Milky Way also did live streaming of the Earth concert. This untitled new single was simultaneously made known to everyone.

Within an hour, Lin Huiyin's latest single, "War of the Blind," had received over 8 million pre-orders.

Some faraway countries in the Milky Way Alliance also began to pay attention to this planet on the fringe.

Members of the Skeleton Corps lost their minds. The lead characters in the MV were Skeleton and Johnson, the vice captain of the Corps.

Songs and their stories were inseparable.

Johnson could not see clearly. Everything in front of him was just a blur, but he could clearly hear the voice. The voice that touched his soul, the voice that sang his desires.

At that moment, his Skylink rang.

"Johnson, to celebrate your outstanding performance, the nation would like to bear all the costs of your restoration surgery."

The entire procedure was extremely costly. It involved organ reconstruction. Johnson did not bear any hopes, neither did he have a single word of complaint. There were simply too many men who were like him in the army. As soldiers, they never complained. Not from the moment they put their uniforms on.

Now there was hope for him... there was a chance that he could see the light again.

He was willing to give anything just to put on his uniform and ride a mech again.

His spirit would have continued to burn even if his body was destroyed.

Wang Zheng heard the new single too. On his way back, many pedestrians and magnetic force vehicles had stopped in their tracks to listen to this song.

The earlier songs could put people in good moods. They provided an outlet for people to express themselves comfortably. But this song was on a different level. It moved people. It touched souls.

Wang Zheng listened to the whole song in silence. He changed his mind about Lin Huiyin. He could feel that there was something admirable about this girl for her to be able to compose a piece like that.

Back in his dormitory, Wang Zheng began to study the things Old Merchant gave him. He had only prepared the for the formulae in stage one and could only take part in the remaining stages. Wang Zheng believed that given Xiao Fei's capabilities, she just needed some time to make the plan work. But with Old Merchant's help, it would definitely, 100 percent, work.

Old Merchant had given the final three step formula. It wasn't just a guide to space navigation, but also an introduction to teleportation.

Having spent so much time with Old Merchant, Wang Zheng also became addicted to arithmetic and could easily work such things out through calculations. These days, Wang Zheng only truly idolised Old Merchant. He really lived up to his reputation.

How did he come to make his calculations this way?

Student Wang smiled to himself as he did the math. The theories required, Old Merchant had taught him. Even though the final results were given, going through the whole justification process still took quite some time.

In reality, there was no need for Wang Zheng to be too hard on himself. Even if Alan Tucker provided the formula needed, there would be no more than ten men in the whole Milky Way who could solve it.

There was a particular type of genius, who could stand proudly amongst heroes. Alan Tucker was one of them.

Wang Zheng was so engrossed in his study that he lost track of time. Footsteps came crashing in, and all sorts of whining and lamenting came from the corridors.

The doors opened. Yao Ailun and gang skipped in, pouncing right at Wang Zheng.

"Where on earth did you go? Let me tell you something: missing out on such an exciting concert, you'll regret that for a lifetime!"

Yao Ailun exclaimed.

Zhang Shan could not let the concert go. "Wang Zheng you really should have came! I dare say, Huiyin will become the greatest musician of this generation!"

"Of course! She's a goddess - my goddess!" Chen Xiu's cheeks and eyes were all red. It seemed like he had been crying.

"Look at you! She's all our of goddess! Wang Zheng, are you a man? You actually missed Lin Huiyin's concert!"

Yao Ailun shook his head and sighed. The kid standing in front of him was of no hope. Zhang Shan and Chen Xiu looked at Wang Zheng too, as if doubting his orientation in a particular aspect.

Wang Zheng was speechless. What was wrong with these people! Was being obsessed with Lin Huiyin human nature? Even if eggs were delicious, there was no need to befriend the chicken that laid it.

"Damn. When did you become such a hard learner?"

There was a pile of mathematical workings on Wang Zheng's desk.

"Are you for real? You didn't show up for Huiyin's concert and cooped yourself in here to do these things? What a hypocrite!"

Zhang Shan was hysterical. This lad spent significantly more time in the Mecha Department than in Physics. Soon, he was expected to spend more time in special training, and now he was dabbling in calculus?

Yao Ailun could not stop looking after he glanced through the first page. It could have been the post-concert high that made his brains work better than usual.

"Good.... Lord... What on earth is this???"

Chen Xiu joined in. The two of them had pretty high standards, and Xiao Fei had taken special interest in grooming them. But they could hardly make sense out of Wang Zheng's workings. It seemed like...

Because Zhang Shan had completely turned his interests to mecha, and because he was slower than the rest, he could not understand a single thing.

"What's that? I've never seen some of these formulas. Is this Bolre's Rule? It's applicable?"

Zhang Shan wore an incredulous look. He knew that Wang Zheng behaved like a monster. Could it be....?

Yao Ailun flipped through the pages. "Don't tell me you've...."

"I'm not through with it. But seems like it's possible."

Wang Zheng explained. He did up the first stage all by himself, but it was better not to tell them. It would freak them out.

The three of them looked at each other and screamed.

Xiao Fei was also at the concert. She was a special guest. She had great seats and could even take pictures with Lin Huiyin after the concert.

She was Lin Huiyin's fan, Lin Huiyin was her fan. Different Industries, but each a shining star in her own area.

Lin Huiyin was also elated that her Earth show went so very well. Ever since arriving on Earth, she's had some great inspirations and had finally made a breakthrough. She was no longer "just a beautiful voice" now that she could create music with soul.

Music told stories. Stories came from people. Now that her music embodied people, they had stories and souls. Her music could now convey more messages. The unique feelings it evoked could cross borders, cross the boundaries of race, and even cross generations.

Chapter 98: Return of the Top Student

Xiao Fei enjoyed listening to music while she did her research work. Following the melody, she would enter a whole new world, in her own beat and rhythm. Once she entered the world of research, the music would appear to disappear. The music would resonate with her. This was why Xiao Fei liked Lin Huiyin.

In the Aslan empire, scientists had a status that was right after the royals. Where Aslan was today had all come from the vast amount of technologies it possessed, all of it brought forth by scientists. They had extended their warm invitation to Xiao Fei, and it was a pity that Xiao Fei had turned it down. Even then, the Aslan School of Science continued to sing high praises of her. They believed that the woman would become a shining star in the scientific world. Xiao Fei had proved that right in no more than a few years. Because of her young age and her S-class genes, almost all sciences in the physics branch would give mention of her. She easily ranked among the top hundred scientists in the century.

Lin Huiyin had even more admiration for Xiao Fei. The relationship between physics and human development was a very deep subject. She could not understand much of it.

Xiao Fei had studied in Aslan for a period of time and was familiar with the place. The two women had too many topics in common.

Xiao Fei's Skylink rang. Very untimely. She had adjusted her settings to private, with a few special exceptions.

Yao Ailun?

What's the lad up to in the middle of the night?

"Yao Ailun, it better be something important, else you watch out!"

Teacher Xiao, pretty harsh.

Yao Ailun threaded carefully, "Well, Prof, Wang Zheng says he's derived the formula for space navigation."

Xiao Fei was talking to Lin Huiyin as she listened, and her mind stopped working for a brief moment. "Derived it? So be it... what did he derive?"

"Space navigation formula!" Yao Ailun was agitated beyond words. It was a very big deal!

"What happened, Sister Xiao Fei?" Lin Huiyin blinked her big bright eyes. What has this got to do with Wang Zheng?

"One of my students, Wang Zheng, you know him too. He's made a breakthrough in the theory of space navigation. I've got to go back and take a look! Sister Huiyin, do stay for a few more days if you haven't got much to do."

Xiao Fei's heart had already made a move, but holding on to Lin

Huiyin's hand, she still could not bear to leave.

"I'll have to discuss that with my crew. Sister, your work is more important."

"Okay, you rest well. The concert today was amazing!"

The more Xiao Fei looked at Lin Huiyin, the more she thought her adorable. She couldn't help but take Huiyin's cheeks in her hands and kiss it.

This naughty, naughty sister.

Xiao Fei had returned to the laboratory at top rocket speed. The heroes of 007 were already waiting for her there.

Wang Zheng had seriously made the deductions for part one. These were his own derivations, different from Old Merchant's. It was hard to tell whether it was for the better or for worse, because Old Merchant never made comments in this aspect. He preferred letting Wang Zheng develop freely.

Xiao Fei was straightforward about this. She threw her coat aside and jumped right into the research. She looked at it and cried, "Bring me my equipment!"

Theory deduction still required hypothesis testing on a model. Only when the test works will it be the first step to success.

Building the model was rather complex; it was not something ordinary students could achieve.

Xiao Fei smiled as she looked on. At times, she would burst into hysterical laughs. But no matter what, Pretty Lady Xiao was always sexy and attractive.

The whole process took quite some time. Wang Zheng could only sit and wait. Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu were also working, but their speeds were way slower. It took a lot of effort just to understand it.

Xiao Fei walked up to Wang Zheng all of a sudden. With an intimidating aura and an energetic look in her eyes, she asked, "How did you do it, young man?"

Wang Zheng shrugged. "Teacher taught me well."

Wang Zheng was referring to Old Merchant, but Xiao Fei had no idea.

"What a sweet talker! Let Sister reward you."

She gave Wang Zheng a hug as she spoke, and she kissed him. The sweet fragrance from her skin and her full bosom almost made Wang Zheng fail to resist.

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu stared in shocked. Damn! How was that

fair? He was so lucky!

"Uhm... Professor, I reported it to you, shouldn't I be rewarded too?"

Student Ailun spoke out daringly. In this day and age, speaking up reaped pretty good benefits. Who knows, there might be a chance?

Xiao Fei glared at him. "How dare you try to take advantage of me. Are you tired of living?"

"Only my Little Zheng is reliable. Consider becoming my boyfriend!"

Having studied under Xiao Fei for a long time now, everyone knew that this "rough" pretty teacher was serious in public, but she could joke about all sorts of things in private. She was like a crazy elder sister, which made her even more attractive.

Wang Zheng was taken aback. Xiao Fei burst out in laughter. "Oh, look how scared you are! Little Sheep, wait till you're older! Else tongues will wag and people will say that I prey on minors!"

"Professor, does my deduction work?"

"I've already looked through the theory. I am 80 percent confident of it. We should build a model soon. Once that is done, we can be 90 percent sure," said Xiao Fei. She fancied Wang Zheng

more and more as she looked at him. The path of science was sometimes unfair. Success was 1 percent talent and 99 percent hard work, yet the factor that determined success was that 1 percent talent.

Xiao Fei had actually made some of her own deductions, but it was still incomplete. She did not think that her student would finish it first. That was proof of a greater genius than her.

Marcus rushed down overnight. He was sleeping when Xiao Fei yelled him awake. Thankfully, Professor Marcus's wife knew him well, or she might have thought something horrible had happened.

When Marcus heard of what had happened, his sleepiness went away. They were all mad scientists. He woke his entire team up.

The whole team arrived at the laboratory. This time round, Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu were also given the opportunity to participate. Being able to participate in this process was also very useful for their future endeavors.

Wang Zheng had unknowingly become the core player of the team. The interactions between him and Xiao Fei were almost telepathic. He was a fast learner and could apply his knowledge to different aspects. What he and Xiao Fei communicated, others might have taken half a day to to even react. This team was possibly the best in the entire Solar System.

Marcus was overcome with emotion. This was heaven-defying speed! Where in the world did this lad come from?

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu were also given some tasks. Even though it was mainly for them to learn, it was a great encouragement to them both.

"Brother Zheng, you're awesome!"

"This lad is god-like! Ever so steady, awesome!"

Yao Ailun did not like losing, but he had to give it to Wang Zheng this time.

As Wang Zheng and Xiao Fei debated, they kept making improvements on the formula. There were still some problems to Wang Zheng's deductions, even though the results were accurate. But what was important was the process, and not the end results. Only the steps taken could bring about technological improvement. There were issues in his procedures, of which Xiao Fei had corrected. The final results were still exactly the same as what Old Merchant derived.

Wang Zheng was thoroughly in awe of Old Merchant. He was no different from a grandfatherly old man!

Wang Zheng had asked if it was really a good idea to do this in their name, but Alan Tucker shook his head. He said it was most important to him that they did it.

It was as if everyone on the team was possessed. They spent a

whole night, and the model was successfully constructed.

Wang Zheng was confident that it would be successful. Old Merchant had said it, so it couldn't be wrong. But he felt that there was still some distance to go. He was still too new to this.

Once they made it through the crucial stage, other phases would be way simpler. The laboratory was filled with cheers and happy chatter. They popped a champagne to celebrate.

Xiao Fei once again generously kissed Wang Zheng in front of everybody and teased him, asking him to be her boyfriend. Everyone laughed and applauded. Student Wang thought to himself, "You all better watch out! I'll make you pay back with interest as well!"

Beauty Xiao loved making fun of him.

Now that the theory was successfully proven, the shares allotted in the building project were going to change. The companies that invested had to put in even more shares, but even then, they would do it willingly, since the risk was way lower than before. It had gone from fishing for the moon's reflection to being able to touch a piece of the pie.

The scariest thing about this technology was that it could be used militarily, on combat vehicles, and for civilians, to speed up interstellar travel. There was no doubt that this technology was going to affect countries and people's lives.

Once the results were announced, many more companies would flock to fight for participation.

And the present team would form the foundations of the future team.

As for phases two and three, Wang Zheng had to figure things out on his own before it could be implemented. Moreover, as Old Merchant had instructed, these two ultimatums were important chips in negotiating for financial support.

When the team began to function, there was nothing much left for Wang Zheng to do. He continued to go for training regularly with Zhang Shan.

Zhuo Mu and Luo Mu had custom designed a training program for them, one that was very different from the traditional ones. It focused more on practical combat skills and was aimed at making a break in the IG selection.

The mech Luo Mu had prepared was more than enough for these few youngsters. It was dirty and tired, seemingly unrelated to a warrior.

In Luo Mu's eyes, a pilot who did not understand a mech was a half-wit.

Lin Huiyin's new single, "War of the Blind," had broken her own personal record, topping 11 charts. This intense wave was crazier

than ever before.

There was a huge change in style. From music telling to an expressive, soothing energy, one had to admit her songs were flavourful.

Of course, there were still controversies, mainly on the material used in her MV. There were plenty of A-list countries in the Milky Way that complained about the MV coming from Earth. There were plenty of big countries and strong warriors out there, and yet she chose Earth. It could only be said that Lin Huiyin was no good in this.

But the Earth was home to all other stars. It did not feel right to comment on home. It was not a good thing to forget one's roots.

CT Headquarters had reached out to Lin Huiyin's manager immediately to discuss product endorsement.

CT was, in reality, extremely large-scale. They would not even look at ordinary celebrities and did not pay much attention to Lin Huiyin in the past. There was no use in relying solely on fame, but the power of Lin Huiyin's two singles could not be belittled. A big, fat contract lied in wait for her.

But Huiyin was still thinking about Wang Zheng. What did he want to become exactly?

A warrior? A scientist?

Chapter 99: Tyrant Su's Farsightedness

Call him a warrior, but he had made new contributions to space navigation. Even though Lin Huiyin did not understand the difficulties in that, she knew that Aslan's School of Science was doing research in the same area but had not made progress. Yet Wang Zheng had made a breakthrough.

Call him a scientist, but he performed stunningly in CT. Even Angela approved. Impressing her cousin was no easy feat.

It was just that the more things played out this way, the more worried Huiyin felt. If Wang Zheng showed any weakness, she would cut such thoughts off. But in situations like that, it was difficult to tell reality apart.

Huiyin wanted to stay for a few more days, but her schedule did not allow so. Her cousin's milestone ceremony was up and coming, and she had to attend. Before she left, Huiyin wanted to have more interactions with Wang Zheng. On one hand, it would clarify things for her. On the other, it was to make him give up on her cousin. But... this man had turned her down, saying he had no time.

Him? He actually had no time!

Sitting in her ship, Lin Huiyin was still fuming. Just like an adorable little frog.

This was the second time!

Wang Zheng and gang were training hard. Wang Zheng was leading an exciting and fulfilling life. Training and participating in research had taken away his personal time, so he had no spare time for Lin Huiyin.

He would not easily accept others, but once he had done so, he would never give it up.

In the following week, Student Wang was indeed very busy. Theory testing and correction were going at top speed. Xiao Fei and Marcus were in their peak, and the whole team was very excited. Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu had also made outstanding contributions and were acknowledged by the team. If not for Wang Zheng's presence, they'd have been given pretty much all the attention.

But Wang Zheng was present.

Wang Zheng's A Theory created an uproar in the entire Milky Way. The team had always thought it best to name the law after Wang Zheng. Even though Xiao Fei and the rest did a lot of work, especially in the post-theorizing stages, she and Marcus believed that the key to their work was done by Wang Zheng, and teachers ought not to rob their students of their achievements.

Wang Zheng tried to debate it, but he could not win. He could only add an A in the name. A for Alan Tucker.

A super genius had risen in the scientific world. Unknowingly,

the whole team began to work around Wang Zheng's theory.

Unconvinced? That wouldn't do!

Didn't believe in it? That wouldn't do!

Everyone in the science industry was trying to find out exactly what sort of monster this lad called Wang Zheng was.

Wang Zheng's name spread far and wide. It eventually reached the Aslan media. But the A-list allies knew that this technology was first and foremost a combat asset, especially sensitive technologies like that. Some multi-star corporations had already gotten in touch with Xiao Fei.

As the two confirmed investors, OMG and Little Fortune Star also attracted attention from everywhere.

The two companies' stocks skyrocketed. One increased by 10 percent, another by a whopping 30.

Who could have thought that a napkin manufacturing company could take part in such a massive project?

But it didn't matter what they produced. The key was their capabilities.

A number of companies had started making plans to work their

way to Old Yan. The Yan family had 71 percent share to the Little Fortune Star company. An absolute control. It was not what Old Yan wanted. He had no choice. Who cared for their business?

But now it was not easy to buy any shares over from their hands.

Yan Xiaosu bought everyone dinner. He spoke as they dug in, "Damn, guys! You believe in me now? I've always known that Boss was the reincarnation of the literacy deity! I've thought well of him ever since he was still a toddler! Sigh, I have great foresight."

Knock!

An Mei knuckled Yan Xiaosu's head. "Keep it low! Low profile!"

"Ha! We're a family! I'm just telling the truth!"

Wang Zheng had the greatest say in the patent. How else would Little Fortune Star Company be able to play a part? Meng Tian was oblivious, but An Mei, Du Qingqing, and the rest were from average families, at most in the middle class. They knew what this meant. It was like soaring into the sky.

Friends may be friends, but who could ever be so generous? Yet Wang Zheng acted like it was nothing.

"Wang Zheng, Rich Man Su is extremely lucky to have a friend like you."

An Mei chirped. She thought her boyfriend had struck it rich by mere chance. But now she was truly on her way to becoming the mistress of a wealthy family.

Wang Zheng was not as excited as his friends. He had never thought material possessions to be important. Hearing what An Mei said, he shook his head. "An Mei, you're wrong. It's me who's lucky to have a brother like that. There's nothing we can't share.... of course, except for girlfriends."

Wang Zheng chuckled. But no one else laughed. Ye Zisu just sat and watched Wang Zheng in silence. She was in love with him. She knew it best. How much assets did Little Fortune Star gain, what would the future bring... none of that mattered when she was with this man.

Even though they were the same age, Ye Zisu had always thought that Wang Zheng was more mature than her. He was much more stable, as if he had everything in control.

When Wang Zheng was dating Aina, Ye Zisu had always found them incompatible...

"Boss, don't be emotional at a time like this, alright?" Yan Xiaosu said.

It was a law of nature that men could suffer together, but they could not enjoy richness together. But that law was not applicable to them.

Meng Tian and the rest were deeply envious of their relationship. Such ties could not be sought.

"Come, everyone! Let's drink to friendship! We can definitely make it big in the future!"

Out of the blue, Ye Zisu stood up magnanimously.

Everyone rose from their seats. All along, Meng Tian and Ye Zisu did not see eye to eye with each other. But even if Meng Tian did not click with her, she had to gain Meng Tian's approval at the very least. Ye Zisu was a rival.

Yao Ailun and Chen Xiu naturally cheered their loudest and chugged. After dinner, the group moved on to a karaoke session. And that was when they all realised the weakness of the Unbeatable Student Wang.

"Student Wang, don't be shy! We wouldn't be able to make a living if you were good at everything in the world!"

Du Qingqing laughed.

In the end, the one who sang best was not Ye Zisu, it was Zhang Runan. Brother Nan had given her all. Her soprano voice was out of this world. Everybody was in awe.

Zhang Shan had to do something. He challenged Zhang Runan, representing all men. And two mic-hoggers were born. After a few trying rounds, Zhang Shan was finally defeated.

The men could not help but lament. Brother Nan was invincible!

Partying and singing. That was college life. Even though he could only listen, Wang Zheng felt content and happy. Even Meng Tian sang a song after a few rounds of drinking. She picked a gentle, romantic song despite her cool appearance.

Xiao Fei did not idle. The Milky Way Alliance Institute of Science was still verifying the results, but Xiao Fei was not at all bothered by their certification. She had applied for a patent from the Solar System Federation. On top of that, she also picked out CT and Magard Interstellar Flights Corporation from a long list of bidders apart from OMG and Little Fortune Star Company. The project was very costly. OMG and LFS had no problem supporting the first stages, but if the project was to expand, funding and technology would pose a huge problem. CT and Magard were galactic players. The first Milky Way galactic game, Warriors' Pact, belonged to the CT Group, along with many other companies that were related to strategic resources. With such a complete set of data and information, CT's capabilities were obvious. There's not even a need to talk about Magard - the largest interstellar group in the Solar System, one of the top ten in the Milky Way.

At first, these two companies were uninterested in the technology. But it was now a different story. Other than providing financial support, these two corporate giants could also provide substantial backing in the relevant fields of technologies.

The team's key members, mainly Xiao Fei and Marcus, had 51 percent of the shares. This was the the condition of the negotiations. OMG to have 8 percent, Little Fortune Star three, and CT and Margard 24 percent each.

The two giants had intended to kick OMG and Little Fortune Stars out of the project. It was a pity that these two small enterprises had been confirmed early on in the project, and even if they were offered an enormous sum, they would not sell their shares unless they had lost their minds. It was clear that once on board, money was not at all a problem.

Moreover, the two companies had gained a huge advantage. Being able to take action first was a benefit of having great foresight.

Within the technical team, Wang Zhen had 30 percent of the shares, and Xiao Fei had 15. The remaining 6 percent were shared equally amongst the other team members, and that alone was already a frightening sum.

Naturally, the shares were confidential. Xiao Fei continued to represent the team on external affairs. It was not appropriate for Wang Zheng to be in such a spotlight given his tender age.

When the contracts were officially signed, a new billionaire was born. While he was not the youngest, Wang Zheng was clear that this only meant one thing: knowledge is wealth.

The signing of the contracts was also a low-profile event. This was agreed upon by all parties. The project was, regardless, still in the theory research phase. The two corporations were similarly aligned, but they already knew all that there was to know.

At school, Gu Te had given all his approval and support. It would bring Ares College a great many benefits if Xiao Fei and her colleagues succeeded.

All in all, it was a 50-50 situation. If the theory could be practically applied, it would not be a simple matter of billions. And surely, if it were to fail, there would be no value to speak of.

But Xiao Fei's team was highly confident. They might not have had a good foundation if not for Wang Zheng's deductions for stage one. It was definitely a positive narrative now.

In the early stages, 2 billion Milky Way Dollars were invested into the study. A huge number of high-end technologies were imported from all over the galaxy. The study could be described as a money sucking project. The first round of investment and funds could only last a year at most.

Wang Zheng watched in silence as his Skylink connected to Xiao Fei's.

"Lad, the contract has been sent to you. You're now our biggest shareholder, do take care of us well in the future." Xiao Fei giggled. To her, the problem she had been worried about for the longest time was finally resolved.

In terms of equipment, those provided by Ares College were too limited. Conducting the experiments was not something a layman could achieve. Back then, Alan Tucker had the backing of the whole Milky Way Alliance.

"Professor... can I exchange the shares for some pocket money?" Yan Xiaosu had heard that even one percent of the shares could be exchanged for an astronomical figure.

"Of course... not. We work on a limited shares basis. You can't do anything with the shares for three years unless there's a breakthrough success and the board of directors approve of it unanimously." Xiao Fei chuckled.

Chapter 100: Class Reunion

Wang Zheng felt sorry. "Well, three years is a pretty good deal too. You'll have the money to get married then."

"Ha! There'd be enough for a whole palace of concubines. Provided that you contribute to the study. My guess is that we have to make progress in the next three years, or as you, Mr. Businessman, know, the investors will pull out."

Xiao Fei knew this better than Wang Zheng. There was no free lunch in the whole of this world.

"Professor, I have absolute faith in you. We'll definitely succeed!"

Wang Zheng clenched his fist in confidence.

"Oh, really? I was pinning all my hopes on you! You'd better not slack off, you've got the biggest slice of the pie!"

Wang Zheng shrugged. He was responsible for the theories, and with Old Merchant, he had nothing to worry about. He just had to be patient.

That was even more so in terms of realising the theory into practical use. More researchers in the field were making their way to Earth.

As much as they tried to maintain a low profile, the forming of King Universal Space Technology Company inevitably drew a fair bit of attention.

Xiao Fei was always very casual when she spoke with Wang Zheng. A white lab coat draped over a basic t-shirt, the most ordinary outfit. When on break, Xiao Fei mainly dressed for comfort. But the thing is, was she not in the least aware of what a great figure she had?

Wang Zheng was an adolescent. He was full of passion and energy. While he used most of this energy on training, he could not help but take notice of Xiao Fei's amorous behavior from time to time.

And every time, Xiao Fei seemed to tease him intentionally. A slight movement, and fair, supple skin was revealed. That deep cleavage could drain the blood out of a man's nose. But Teacher Xiao Fei was always so serious about their discussion.

Wang Zheng felt that he could not take it any longer. In the Rubik's Cube, Bonehead's training, "Kniving S.E.X.," was wonderfully conducted, but that was all virtual. Wang Zheng knew in his heart that what was in front of him was something different. Xiao Fei was one of the few women who could affect him.

"Oh, Professor, I've thought of something! Let me go and write it down!"

Whenever they were done with business, Wang Zheng always felt

something wrong when he saw the look in Xiao Fei's eyes. Pretty Xiao seemed to take teasing him as some form of entertainment.

Xiao Fei found Wang Zheng leaving hurriedly to be something amusing. This lad was great fun! She hummed a tune as she got back to work. She was always in a better mood after teasing Wang Zheng.

Wang Zheng was befuddled as he left. Dammit. Just what was he afraid of?

If not for the fact that Xiao Fei was a teacher, he would have long taken her down. It was odd that he could remain steady in front of others, but Xiao Fei always had him.

King?????,????????????,????,????,????????????,???????

The formation of King Company did not affect Wang Zheng very much. He attended classes as usual and trained as usual. Zhuo Mu and Luo Mu had very high expectations of him and were strictest towards him.

The two of them had a feeling that Wang Zheng was going to become the ultimate ace of Ares College. His potential knew no bounds. No matter how tough training got, he could always adapt to it.

Wang Zheng was also made the team leader of the group of four. For that, Meng Tian, Zhang Shan, and Zhang Runan did not

oppose. They had known him for some time now, and Wang Zheng was indeed brimming with potential in the various aspects. Him being their leader was what they had hoped for.

As they were about to be dismissed from class, Wang Zheng saw Yan Xiaosu looking around at the doors. "Great job, Boss!"

"Why are you here? Don't you have to spend time with An Mei?" Wang Zheng asked mockingly, waving goodbye to the others.

"Oh man, did you forget? We're having our middle school reunion dinner tonight! Zisu has arranged transport, it's waiting for us now." Yan Xiaosu was keen on being thorough with his rich man image. He was dressed in branded apparel from head to toe.

Because of Rich Man Su's contributions, Old Yan could not stop singing praises of his son. He was constantly talking about how the ancestral graves were smoking, and how it was an auspicious sign. And so he laxed his discipline of Xiaosu. Yan Xiaosu was now leading an easy life.

"Alright, give me a moment." Dawn's homecoming. Wang Zheng remembered Zhao Lingfeng and wondered if he'd be there. He hoped Lingfeng had better memory.

Getting changed was a piece of cake for Wang Zheng. He did it within 5 minutes. As of now, he had no interest in all those fancy clothes. Yan Xiaosu did not find it weird; it was simply Wang Zheng's style.

An electromagnetic limousine was parked at the gates. Ye Zisu was waiting.

Ye Zisu's dress was low profile, but you could tell that she had put in a lot of effort in her appearance.

"Ah, the school belle living up to her name! Zisu, you're going to outshine all the other ladies tonight." Wang Zheng gave his sincere compliments.

Yan Xiaosu nodded his head vigorously. "I think Zisu has grown prettier after coming to college."

"Classmate Xiaosu, are you trying to say that I was a plain Jane in the past?" The three were good friends. Ye Zisu would also joke from time to time.

"That's not the same. Elegance, yes, elegance. You seem to give off an air of elegance now. How graceful!" Wang Zheng praised. Ye Zisu was different from other girls. This was accentuated in college. It was as though she was a fairy.

"Even though I suspect some bootlicking at work, I still accept your proposition. I will put in a few good words for you in front of An Mei," Ye Zisu said.

The limousine had a luxurious touch within. It was spacious, and even though it could fit eight passengers, the compartment could be lifted to create a private space for three.

"This is great! I've got to make my dad get one too," Yan Xiaosu exclaimed as he put his short legs out.

"Wang Zheng, aren't you very busy lately? You've got to go for training and do research at the same time, so you better take good care of your health!" Ye Zisu barely got the chance to catch a glimpse of Wang Zheng lately, except during gatherings. Even then, gatherings were always full of people.

"Don't worry about him! He's as tough as a bull. When I picked him up just now, Zhang Shan was still trying to catch his breath, but this guy did not even break a sweat! As for the research work, Demon Xiao is in charge. Boss only attends meetings."

Yan Xiaosu laughed.

"Damn you! I do work too! I've starved so much that I lost weight lately."

"Oh, make sure you eat more later!" Ye Zisu quickly added.

"Do you really believe that? Boss has obviously ripened," Yan Xiaosu teased. Deep inside, he believed that Ye Zisu was most suitable for his boss. She was pretty, meticulous, and did not throw her weight around. As for the princess, sigh. The Moon looked delicious in the sky, but what's the use of it if it could not be eaten?

Ye Zisu blushed. She pulled her hair back a little to hide her

shyness.

"Right, is Zhao Lingfeng coming? I've got some sort of conflict with him," Wang Zheng asked.

"He said he's got something on and won't be able to make it. This reunion was organised by Li An and I."

"Oh? Didn't Li An get expelled by Feiyue College?"

Yan Xiaosu was uncomfortable at the mention of Li An. In school, Yue Jing was rumoured to have been with a few people, and Li An was one of them. He had gotten into Feiyue College on the Moon with stellar academic performance. He was even more prideful than Zhao Lingfeng. The best-performing school in Asia, Dawn, was never short of high flying figures.

Ye Zisu giggled. "How is that possible? It's vacation week, and he took a few days off to come back."

"We'd not attend if we had known he would be there." Yan Xiaosu was unhappy. Middle school was one of the lowest points in his life. He was discriminated by many from all walks of life. It was an unbearable past.

"Things are different now! You're one of the top few figures around." Yan Xiaosu blinked. "Little Fortune Star is very likely to receive the Leap Company Award for Earth! As the crown prince of Little Fortune Star, your family is one of the case studies

researched by Feiyue College!

"Oh, is that the case? Then no problem." Yan Xiaosu straightened his chest. He felt a lot more confident at once.

Nobody was born to enjoy being humiliated. Same for Yan Xiaosu. He could not bear it, especially when the spoiled brats made fun of him from time to time.

What's wrong with manufacturing tissue paper? Was that not business?

Business that could make money was good business!

As they made conservation, the three of them arrived at their destination. The Liz Carlton Hotel. Ye Zisu's tastes would never go wrong.

Even though it was just a class reunion for a bunch of college freshmen, the event was pretty impressive.

Seemed like parents were more open now that they were all adults.

Many people had changed as they moved from middle school to university.

The moment they entered, a couple of girls flocked over. "Wow,

Ye Zisu has gotten prettier!"

"Xiaoxin, it's not just me, you too! That necklace is great! A rare natural jade!"

"Our Zisu has great taste! My boyfriend gave this to me for my birthday. It costs over 50 thousand!"

Lu Xin. Wang Zheng and Yan Xiaosu were classmates. Even though Lu Xin tended to be over dramatic, she was straightforward and spoke whatever came to her mind.

"Yan Xiaosu, I heard you struck it rich! You've got to look after your classmates, alright!"

Lu Xin blew him a kiss flirtatiously.

Yan Xiaosu used to stare at her bottom in class.

Compared to Little Fortune Star and OMG, not many knew Wang Zheng, the invisible number one shareholder. People these days only looked out for benefits and did not pay attention to researchers. Who could have thought that Wang Zheng was the core of this project?

"Wang Zheng, you haven't changed a bit," Lu Xin said. "That's no good. Listen to me, men have to dress up too."

Wang Zheng did not know whether to laugh or to cry. "Don't worry, I'm used to it."

Lu Xin looked at him in bewilderment. "That won't do, it's not good for your health."

In the past, Lu XIn was given the title of "Blabbermouth" in class. To think that she had gotten worse in just months!

Yan Xiaosu felt a lump in his throat. He hated it when others looked down on Wang Zheng. These simpletons, didn't they know that the master never showed his face?

Seeing Yan Xiaosu hemming and humming, Wang Zheng said, "What a pity, you've got a boyfriend now, so I can't do anything."

"Oh, you have a crush on me too! Sigh, why didn't you say so earlier? I'm attached now," Lu Xin said, half-jokingly.

"Alright, let's not block the doorway, we can catch up inside."

Events like reunions depended largely on the organiser's ability to bring others together. Ye Zisu and Li An were undoubtedly big shots, and if Zhao Lingfeng was present, it'd have been even more boisterous.

More than 80 people from Wang Zheng's graduating class had attended, and there were 20 odd who were Wang Zheng's and Yan Xiaosu's classmates. Seemed like Ye Zisu had paid special care and

attention to it.

"Wow, Lu Xin's figure has grown fuller than before! Tsk tsk, that ass... almost going upwards now," Yan Xiaosu said in a low voice.

"Why, do you wanna do something?"

"No way! I'm pure and pristine. I just said it for fun; you know, men." Yan Xiaosu said. He was indeed a real man now. Even though his hands had been through some training and had plenty of experience, An Mei was his first woman. He was very serious about it.